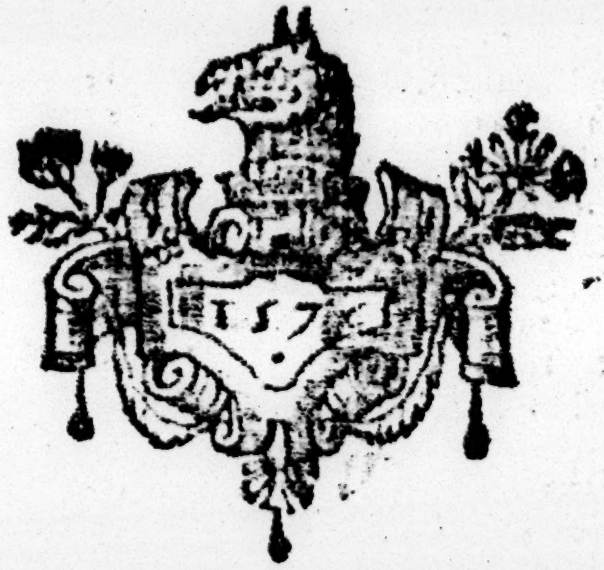
THE

NEWE TESTAMENT OF OVR LORDE IESVS CHRIST, TRANSLATED OVT OF

Greeke by Theod. Beza, and Englished by L. T.

Beholde, I bring you glad tidings of great ioye that shalbe to all the people. Luke. 2, 10.



IMPRINTED AT LONDON BY CHRI-
stopher Barker dwelling in Paternoster Rowe
at the signe of the TIGRES
head. 1577.

Cum privilegio.

THE ORDER OF THE BOOKES OF THE Newe Teſtament, the number of their Chapters, and the leafe in which eche booke beginneth.

The Goſpell written by Matthew			
Chapters	28	Leafe	1
By Marke	16		38
By Luke	24		59
By Iohn	21		97
The Actes of the Apoſtles	28		126

The Epiſtles.

Paul to the Romanes	16	185
The firſt to the Corinthians	16	178
The ſecond to the Corinthians	13	192
To the Galatians	6	202
To the Epheſians	6	207
To the Philippians	4	212
To the Coloſſians	4	216
The firſt to the Theſſalonians	5	219
The ſecond to the Theſſalonians	3	222
The firſt to Timothie	6	224
The ſecond to Timothie	4	228
To Titus	3	231
To Philemon	one	233
The Epiſtle to the Hebrewes.	13	234
The Epiſtle of Iames	5	245
The firſt Epiſtle of Peter	5	249
The ſecond of Peter	3	253
The firſt Epiſtle of Iohn	5	255
The ſecond of Iohn	one	259
The third of Iohn	one	260
The Epiſtle of Iude.	one	260
The Reuelation of Iohn	22	261

TO

TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE M. FRANCIS Walsingham Esquier, chiefe Secretarie to her excellent Majestie, and of her Highnesse most honorable priuie Counsell: And to the Right worshipfull M. Francis Hastings Esquier.

L. Tomson wisheth prosperitie in this life, and in Christ life euerlasting.

IF I had to render a reason of this my trauaile in translating into our mother tongue, that that hath bene fruitfully laboured and put forth in the Latine to the great commoditie, and profit of such to whome our good God hath giuen vnderstanding therein, I might truly and iustly say, it was for my poore brethrens sake, which want the blessing before said, for the vnderstanding of the Latine, and yet haue great riches of the Lord, in that he hath giuen them the benefite to vnderstand and reade their owne. For as the Sonne, which shineth vpon the iust and vniust, was not made for the benefite of our Countrie only, but of all the VVorlde, nor the Sonne of God sent into the VVorlde for the Iewes onely, but also for the Gentiles, part of whome we are: (for he shut vp all vnder vnbeliefe, that he might haue mercie vpon all:) So neither were the Scriptures left for the Grecian onely, but for the Barbarian also, both for the wise and vnwise, both for the learned and vnlearned of what Nation and tongue soeuer they were, that we altogither through patience & comfort of the holy Scripture might haue hope: For so

farre

farre haue the Scriptures of duetie to go, as the Apostles had commandement to preach, & in so many tongues should the Apostles preach, as by their gift from aboue they might. And as they themselues are in this sort to be applied to our vse, through the gift of tongues, which God doeth still poure vpon his Church, (though not after the same sort as at the first,) euen so, whatsoeuer holy men haue written vpon them through his vnspeakable mercies, and by the working of his holy Spirit in our tongue, ought likewise, by the same gift be deuided to the profite of the brethren elsewhere, which differ in tongue, but agree in vnitie of faith: For so it commeth to passe that we communicate one with an others benefites, and become to haue a fellowship in those thinges, which otherwise seemed to be seuerall to some one of vs. The benefite of God for his part, and consideration of euerie one of our duelies for our parties, brought the Scriptures themselues first out of Iudea, and the Hebrewe tongue, into Grecia, and the language of that Countrie, though not so happily as might be wished, frō thence, to the Romanes, and into the Latine tongue, and so through the louing visitation of our God, into Dutch, French, English, Italian, and so forth, which, no man repineth at, (that Antichrist of Rome onely except, who hateth the light, because he is not of the light, but of darknes, as his Father the Prince of darknes, the Deuil is,) but all that loue God, and feare God, most humblie thanke him for, as obedient and duetiful children, shewing their obedience toward him in studying in his Lawe both day and night.

And as our Brethren and Saintes of God haue done for our behoofe in this point touching the Scriptures, so

haue

haue they done for the workes of good Fathers and Prophets, causing them to speake familiarly to vs, as home borne children with vs, which otherwise, were plants of Palestina, and grafts of Grecia, and citizens of the Latins. All this I say for our profite, that we might taste & feele how louing and mercifull our God is, and what in part, that Cõmunion of Saintes is, which we so oft recite, and so constantly beleeue at this present, and shal I trust to the end, when beleefe shal cease, and God shall be all in al. For this we confesse and beleeue all, that whersoeuer we are, and into how manie countries of the VVorlde soeuer we are scattered, we are but one Church, we make but one bodie, we haue but one head, and but one Spirit. If God raise vp a Prophet in our Countrie, as he did at the first in Iudea, his minde is, that the wordes of this his owne Prophet, shall be profitable to the whole bodie, as well the foote which is the furthest part, as the heart that is the neerer, shal receiue nourishment and increase of strength by it. And for this end and purpose he deuideth diuers gifts vnto this bodie, that the nourishment which seemeth to be so farre off, may be brought neerer, yea, and so neere that eche member may liue thereby. So that the gift receiued, layeth a burden vpon him, that hath receiued it, and it is no more in his power, to do or not to do, but he must of necessitie do for the profit of Gods Church, according to the measure of that gift which God hath giuen him, remembring alwaies with him self, that our God is a warie & bredie giuer, & looketh for an account, because he tendreth his children. He made vs not for our selues, but for our brethren, & so long shall we be here, as he hath appointed our brethren to reape commodities by vs, if we

 will

will seeme to make a propertie of that which ought to be common, & keepe it to our selues as our owne, which is not ours, but our brethrens, the Lord is faithfull, who will not be slacke to punish our vnfaithfulnesse, and to render vs the recompence of our faithles dealing both towards him and them. This was one reason no doubt, & not the least, which moued the Fathers in old time, and our good fathers of this our blessed age, yet liuing amongest vs, to do as they did, and do still, by publishing those things which they haue receiued of God for vs, & not for them selues: and hereupon was this our godly brother and Father, whome we thinke worthie all reuerence in the Lord, not onely satisfied to put these his notes forth in the Latine tongue, but desired also some of our godly brethren to communicate them with his Countriemen in their owne language, which as it hath bene godly intended, so I am sure it will be performed, as the Lord will. Which thing was no small mouing to me, considering as great want, in mine owne Countriemen, and as great profit, which may I trust rise vnto them by it, if they can be as content to take paines to reade, as I haue taken the labour to write, onely for conscience sake, and in the feare of God, to make them partakers of that commoditie, which I my selfe and many mo of my learned brethren haue felt by this so singular a blessing of our mercifull Father & Lord God, through the tender care that this most Reuerende father, and louing brother Theodore Beza had of vs. This I thought my selfe of duetie bound vnto, being no otherwise so presently able to helpe them, not minding to preuent anie other mens doing, for I heard not of any that was or would go about it; but tendring onely the profit of the more simple and

vnlearned

vnlearned which are as desirous of instruction, as I would instruction were readie for them, and respecting that that I must be called to an account for, in the day of our Lord Iesus. This reason of my doing I say, I haue to giue and testifie to all the VVorld, if it be not so much as I might haue done, as happily some will say: I stay my selfe vpon the testimonie of a good conscience before God, being assured that herein I haue not done amisse, craving pardon at the Lords hands for all my wants, aswell of duetie, as of other things in what other respects and parts of my life soeuer. VVhat profit shall come of it, I leaue that to the Lord, for neither the planter nor the waterer is any thing, but God that giueth the increase, and yet I doubt not; but it shall do that good which the Lord hath appointed it for. The enemies will take occasion to stumble at it, and that it one profit, for Christ was made for the fall of many: other I trust shal receiue comfort by it, for the same is a sauour to him. As all men haue not faith, so all men shall not receiue it, and therein as no man can marueile, so I can not be grieued, for they that are such, are prepared to destruction. Onely my purpose was, and mine earnest prayer to God is, that if not all, yet many may receiue comfort of it to their immortalitie, as for the rest, if the Lord hath so appointed it, that I should be a sauour of death vnto death to them, and this my paines taken should be a furtherance to their hardning, as I go not about to seeke out his vnspeakeable counsels, so all laude and praise be to his Name for it. How be it, I determine of none, but vnto them that haue the signe of reprobation, this I say, and I call heauen and earth to witnesse against them this day, that if they go on forwarde

in this striuing against God, they shall vndoubtedly perish, & this my labour shalbe a witnesse against them in that day. For he that refuseth to heare the word preached, and will not reade it, if God haue giuen him that gift that he may reade it, pronounceth sentence against himselfe, that he is none of the children of God, that he is none of the sheepe of Christ, that he hath no part of inheritance in that Kingdome, which was prepared for vs before the beginning of the World. For doeth not Christ say, My sheepe heare my voyce, and doeth not Paul say, Faith is by hearing, and hearing by the word of God? we are not Christs then, if we will not heare, & we cannot haue faith, if the word do not sound vnto vs, and looke where faith is not, there is no Christianitie, there is no life, there is no saluation: and if no life, if no saluation, then no Christ, no God, for God is not the God of the dead, but of the liuing: and liue without faith we can not, and to haue faith without the word it is impossible, as the Apostle speaketh of the ordinarie way of our saluation: if it otherwayes fall out by way of reuelation, it is rather by way of miracle, and of a special grace, which may not cause vs to tempt the Lord in forsaking his appointed way. Dauid speaking of the blessednesse of the happie man, (and there is no happie man but the childe of God) setteth downe this (we knowe) as a chiefest point of his happinesse, that he studyeth vpon the Law of the Lord both day and night: And this is not left vnto vs as a point to be ordered at our discretion, as who would say, we may be happie with it, & we may be blessed without it: no not so, it is a thing verie requisite and necessary for them which haue the gift, as without which, they shall not be blessed; For how can we receiue

a gift

a gift of the Lord, and not giue an account for it? And what is he so voyde of the Spirit of God, that knoweth not, how he must repent him of his slackenesse in vsing any good blessing of God, and call for pardon and mercy, that his negligence may not be imputed to him? And is there any repentance without a sinne? Can I craue pardon at Gods hands for that wherin I haue not offended? Thy very calling for mercy (O man) whatsoeuer thou art, argueth and telleth thy conscience thou hast sinned therein, and if thou see it not so at thy latter end, if God giue thee space and grace to repent, consider it betime with thy selfe, make thy reckening now, that if thou wilt be blessed, thou must meditate and studie in the Scriptures of thy Lord thy God both day and night: If thou remember the recreation of thy body with some lawfull pleasures, forget not the refreshing of thy soule with this heauenly foode: Let not Gods goodnes towards thee in giuing thee some libertie, cause thee to become vnmindefull and vngrate to him, and deadly enemie to thy selfe. Our dueti fulnesse herein, and how much God requireth at our hands, is set forth herein, that in the Law written by Moses, all Fathers are commanded to teach it their childrē, to speake of it sitting at home, and going abroade, to write it vpon the postes of their houses, to make them frontlets of it, & hemmes of their garments: And shal we thinke that this Law perished with them because we are not Iewes, are we not therfore Gods people? No doubt it is written for our instruction, for all things that are written, saith the Apostle, are written for our learning: And what then shall we learne hereby, yea, what thing must we learne hereby? but as we haue heard and read in Dauid, that if we wil

be blessed, we must meditate in it both day and night, both for our selues, and for our children: for our brethren, for our families. Hereupon also the Apostle reneweth the commandement, and refresheth the charge to al Christians of what estate, order, calling, condition soeuer they be, saying: Let the word of God dwel in you plenteously in all wisdome. Hearke you loathsome hearts, and giue eare, you that will needes beare about with you this open marke of reprobation: thinke you that this is spoken to you? For if you be not within the compasse of this saying of the Apostle, you are not within the compasse of euerlasting life. Are you, or do you take your selues to be of the number of them, in whome the word of God must dwell plenteously? Howe shall it come to dwel in you? Howe shall it take possession of you? Can you tel what dwelling meaneth? It is to haue full possession, and a mansion house in you, to sit and rest there, to rule and gouerne there, as you do in your houses, and places of your owne abode. And how shall this be, but by that ordinary meanes which God hath appointed you, which is by reading and hearing? It commeth not by idlenes & worldy vanities, it commeth not by dycing and carding, dauncing, and dalliance, it commeth not by chambering and wantonnesse, this is not the way to haue the word of God to dwell in you. You must search the Scriptures. Do you thinke to haue eternall life? You must looke into them: search the Scriptures, saith Christ for they beare witnesse of me. But you passe not for him: If you did, you would neuer be so careless of your selues, and careful to serue the Deuill. I say you are careful to serue the Deuill, when you rise vp early, and go late to bedde, when you leaue no labour nor paynes, to seeke

after

after the pleasures of the flesh, and cannot abide to heare of the worde, you cannot abide I say, once to looke vpon it, it is death to you, to heare a preacher once in a twelue moneth. And yet you wilbe called Abrahams children: He that should say otherwise of you, should haue the defiance giuen him: But the trueth is, you are not his Children, vnlesse you followe his steppes: And what sayeth the Scripture of him? I know that he will commande his sonnes and his household after him, that they keepe the waye of the Lorde. VVhich of you hath a care to that? Or how can you haue a care to it, if you knowe them not? and howe can you know them without reading or Preaching? Cornelius was a true childe of Abraham, he feared God and all his household: So was Eunice, Timothies mother, and Lois his Grandemother, and see what her practise was being but a woman, shee nourished vp her Sonne in the wordes of faith, and of good doctrine. VVhich of you can bring vp his childe in doctrine, and knoweth none himselfe? Or how wilt thou haue thy childe follow that, which thou hatest thy selfe? It cannot be, such Grapes cannot be gathered of such thornes, nor such figges, of these thistles. They of Berea were right children of Abraham, and famous fellowes, so saith the Scripture, & why so? For they receiued the word with al readinesse, and searched the Scriptures daily, whether these things were so. VVhy then you are but bastardes, and no children: Shamefull is your name, and hatefull to all the VVorde: For where is your readines in receiuing the worde? where is your daily searching the Scriptures? Giue attendance to reading saith Paul to Timothie, & againe, continue in learning, for in doing this thou shalt both

Gen. 18. 19.

Act. 17. 11.

1. Tim. 4. 13. 16.

both saue thy selfe, and them that heare thee. And this is not a precept for Ministers onely, but generally for all men: For thou shalt saue thyselfe saith he: other I am sure wilbe partakers of saluation as well as they, it is not proper to them onely to be saued, no more it is to them also to reade the Scriptures: so then if it be a commandement to him, it is to vs all, because we shall be saued. VVilt thou be saued then? Then must thou reade and heare the Scriptures: Thou must haue it dwel plenteously in thee: by dwelling plenteously, the Apostle meaneth thou must be cunning and perfite in it, both for the knowledge of it to instruct thy selfe and other, and also for the framing of thy life after it. To you it is, to you, I say, which are not ministers, whom the Apostle speaketh vnto, to you that are troubled with worldlye affaires, you especially must reade the Scriptures, & reade them with great diligence: the more enemies a man hath the better he ought to be armed: None haue more enemies, then the worldlye men: VVhich of you goeth forth to battell, and putteth not on his Armour? The armed commonly ouercome, and are saued, and not the vnarmed. And who needeth the Physition more, then he that is most wounded? I will not enter into comparison, whether of you is in most danger, the Minister, I meane, or the other that is no Minister, I would rather wish you to consider it your selues, that so by entring into your selues, you might feele what neede of armour you haue, what neede of a Physition. But this I will say, because you feele it to your smart, where it pleaseth God to visite you VVhen any temptation falleth vpon you, as if it please the Lorde to strike you with sickenesse, with lamenesse, to take awaye your children,

your

your goodes, and those thinges which you loue best, in steade of comforting your selues, and humbly submitting your selues to the mightie hande of GOD, you fall to murmuring agayrst him, you fall to desperation, you remaine comfortelesse, you can not raise vp your owne hearts, nor the hearts of your brethren, which are proned with the like temptation. What a lamentable case is it to see one of you haters and despisers of the worde of God, to come to a sicke man to comforte him, yea, to your owne wiues, and children, to your friends and acquaintaunce? miserable is the comfort God wot, that you giue him, you stande like Blockes and Stocks, not knowing how to direct him, thus shewing forth your condemnation, being neerer to Hell, then he is to the Graue, and to euerlasting death, then he is to this bodilie death. You can pretende no excuse, but onely that you are not learned, and why are you not learned, (I speake to you that can reade) seeing you haue the Scriptures in your owne tongue? Your cõmon pretence in former times hath bene, because they were harde: Though that excuse be none, for some of you that can reade, haue trauailed in harder, I am sure: and for the least, this I say, that the harder it is, the more payne you ought to haue bestowed in it. For if you be resolued as you ought to be, that you are bound to know your Fathers will, the hardenes of it, may not cause you to forsake your duetie I will referre you but to your owne iudgementes: What shee ammyss you, that if in his fathers last Will and Testament, by the benefite whereof, he looketh to enioy his father; Lande, there were some one clause harde, would not you be diligent in searchyng it out, by readinge and reading

ding againe, by conferring with other more learned then himselfe; by hauing the iudgement of the best Lawyers? So that in our causes or earthly matters, hardnesse can not cause vs to slacke our duetyes, but rather cause vs to vse more diligence. So should it be, yea, so would it be in this VVill and Testament, whereby our hope is come to the inheritance of euerlasting life: if any one clause of it should be hard, that shoulde not cause an hardnesse of heart to cast off the care of the whole, and vtterly to surcease from looking vpon it. But this sheweth, as I saide, what we are. For if we were Children and not bastardes, we woulde haue as great a care to it for all the hardenesse, as we haue to an earthly will. VVell it hath pleased God in this our latter age, to remoue this cloke, the Scriptures are made easie vnto vs, as this newe Testament in greater volumes, by those notes of Beza, so plaine both for the meaning it selfe of euerie sentence, and for the plaine light of euerie word, and kinde of speache, that no man can pretend that former excuse. I dare auouche it, and who so readeth it, shall so finde it, that there is not one hard sentence, nor darke speach, nor doubtfull word, but is so opened, and hath such light giuen it, that children may go through with it, and the simplest that are may walke without ane guide, without wandering and going astraye. So that if thou wilt not still harden thine owne heart, and purchase wrath vnto thy selfe against the daye of wrath, thou must now come, and take better waie, and shewe forth better fruites then thou hast done. But bastrike, thou wilt pretende corruption, and say that the Scriptures are fulfilled with those corruptions, & mixed with those glosses. Thus in deede Antichrist

saith:

saieth: but thou hast to follow the counsell of the holy Ghost by the mouthe of the Apostles, Trie the Spirites, whether they be of God or no. Thou must examine them, & conferre them first with the Scriptures, before thou condemne them, for so did they of Berea, and so did the Samaritans as we reade in Iohn. For vnlesse thou heare Christ him selfe speake in his worde, & conferre those thinges that are layed before thee, with the Scripture, thou shalt be deceyued. Thou knowest euen in worldly affaires, for a man to condemne an other before he haue heard him, is a great point of rashenesse, and disallowed of all men: and he that wil giue his iudgement vpon a matter before he haue wel weighed it, carieth about him the name of a foole. But if according to the hardenesse of thine heart which cannot repent, thou wilt not come to better wayes, and meanest to remaine stil in like lothing of the Scriptures, and forslacking thy duetie therein, as thou hast done in former tymes: I pronounce the wrath and vengeance of God against thee, and tell thee from the Lordes mouth, thou shalt haue no part in the inheritance of the righteous. And as for you my poore brethren, which haue tasted & felt the louing mercyes of our good and gracious Lord and Father, and haue entred into a league with him, to take him to be your God, as he hath taken you to be his people, receyue you this benefite of the Lorde, as my trust is you will, with ioyfull hearten: be mindefull, to giue thankes to the Lorde, for this worthye brother of ours, and pray for his continuance amongest vs in his Church, that we may be further enriched by his meanes, and receiue greater comfortes of the Lorde by the handes of his seruant. I will not stande to commende

mend that his worke vnto you, both for the faithfulnes of the translation, and for the singular profit of the notes, the commoditie, which I knowe vndoubtedly, you shall reape thereby, will commend it sufficiently to your godlie hearts. The thankefulnesse that you can shewe hath to God for him and to him, for his paines, is the diligent and painefull reading of that which he hath diligently and painefully written. If otherwise it should fall out, which I hope will not, you should fall into the condemnation of the wicked, and turne the blessing of the Lord to your hurt and destruction. And as you shall thinke your selues bound to him, for thus opening the Scriptures of God vnto you, so be you mindefull to pray for them, by whose godlie meanes they come to your handes. This doore hath bene shut vp a great while, you knowe, be thankefull therefore to God, and pray for the long life and happie reygne of our most dreadfull soueraigne, Elizabeth, by Gods gracious and louing mercies, towards this his Church of England, our most learned and onely Prince, our true anointed of the Lord, and Mother of this Israel. As the Lord hath preserued her Maiestie mightily these yeres passed, from the traiterous treasons of traiterous and blood thirstie dissembling hypocrites hearts, so it may please him to continue his Fatherly protection towards her, and discouer all counterfeites, and plucke away al visardes from their faces, that her Maiestie may see indeede whome her enemies, and he through his mighti power confound and bring them to shame, that either with heart or hād, entend or meane anie thing against her. And let al such as feare the Lord, say with Dauid touching Gods enemies and her Maiesties, Powre out thy wrath, O Lord, vpon

Psal. 79. 6.

the

the people that haue not knowne thee, and vpon the Kingdomes that haue not called vpon thy Name. Be thankefull also and pray for the Honorable Counsell, by whose good meanes vnder her Maiestie, you enioy this benefit, & shall do greater, if with thankefull hearts you turne vnfainedly to the Lord, & pray for the increasing of his graces in them, whome he hath placed as vndershepheards ouer this his house of Israel. And for mine owne part, as I shall I trust remaine mindefull all the daies of my life with earnest & heartie praier first for her Maiestie, and her long and blessed raygne ouer vs, with all peace and quietnesse, to the destruction of all her enemies, both open & dissembling, which seeke their owne wealth more then her Maiesties health: and next for her most Honorable Counsell, that as good Fathers they may rule ouer vs as children, and not as seruants: so to your Honour, as I am most bound, I present this testimonie of mine heartie good will and meaning towardes you, being readie to performe all the duetifulnes to your Honour, which the Lord shall giue me, both in praier to him for your health, and increase of Zeale to the maintenance of his Kingdome, which is the onely profect of your Honour, and the marke, you haue to shoote at. And as in duetie I haue bene, and am bound to your Worship, for the great courtesies I haue receiued of you not a fewe yeres, and for the feare of God which I see in you, which the Lord increase to the honour of his Name, and to be a light to the brethren, so I ioyne you herein, in one poore and simple remembrance of my good will, being not able by seuerall giftes, to shew how much I thinke my selfe in debt to you. The thing it self I know is great, but my labour but small, for

my

my chiefeſt reſpect was to further & help the more ſimple ſort. God graunt it may be profitable to them, and that his children may reape that cõmodity by it, which my prayer is they ſhall: Then ſhall I thinke my ſelfe bleſſed of the Lorde, & thanke him heartily for his fatherly goodneſſe towardes me, with earneſt prayer to him for your Honour and worſhip, that his peace may remaine vpon you for euer, & vpon all the Iſrael *of God.*



THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS CHRIST ACCORding to S. Matthewe.

CHAP. 1.

1. *That Iesus is that Messias, the Saviour promised to the Fathers* 18. *The nativitie of Christ.*

1 THE * booke of the generation of Iesus Christ the sonne of Dauid, the sonne of Abraham. *Luke.3.23.*

2 * Abraham begate Isaac. * And Isaac begate Iacob. And * Iacob begate Iudas and his brethren. *Gene.21.2. Gene.25.24. Gen.29.35.*

3 * And Iudas begate Phares, and Zara of Thamar. And * Phares begate Esrom. And Esrom begate Aram. *Gen.38.27. 1.Chro.2. & ruth.4.18.*

4 And Aram begate Aminadab. And Aminadab begate Naasson. And Naasson begate Salmon.

5 And Salmon begate Booz of Rachab. And * Booz begate Obed of Ruth. And Obed begate Iesse. *Ruth.4.21.*

6 And * Iesse begate Dauid the King. And * Dauid the King begate Solomon of her that was *the wyfe* of Vrias. *1.Sam.16. 1.& 17.12. 2.Sam.12.24.*

7 And * Solomon begate Roboam. And Roboam begate Abia. And Abia begate Asa.

8 And Asa begate Iosaphat. And Iosaphat begate Ioram. And Ioram begate Hozias. *1.King.11.43*

9 And Hozias begate Ioatham. And Ioatham begate Achaz. And Achaz begate Ezekias. *1.chro.3.10. 11.*

10 And * Ezekias begate Manasses. And Manasses begate Amon. And Amon begate Iosias. *2.King.20.21.& 21.18*

11 And * Iosias begate Iakim. And Iakim begate Iechonias and his brethren about the tyme they were caryed away to Babylon. *1.chro.3.13.14.15.*

12 And after they were caryed awaye into Babylon, * Iechonias begat Salathiel. * And Salathiel begate Zorobabel. *2.King.23.34. and 24.1.6.*

13 And Zorobabel begate Abiud. And Abiud begate Eliacim. And Eliacim begate Azor. *1 Chro.3.16 1 Chro.3.17*

14 And Azor begate Sadoc. And Sadoc begate Achim. And Achim begate Eliud. *ezra.3.2. 5.2.*

15 And Eliud begate Eleazar. And Eleazar begate Matthan. And Matthan begate Iacob.
16 And Iacob begate Ioseph the husbande of Marie, of whome was borne IESVS, that is called Christ.
17 So all the generations from Abraham to Dauid, are fourteene generations. And from Dauid vntil they were caryed away into Babylon, fourteene generations: and after they were caried away into Babylon vntill Christ, fourteene generations.
18 ¶ Nowe the birth of IESVS Christ was thus, When as his mother Marie was * betrothed to Ioseph, before they came together, she was founde with childe of the holy Ghost. Luke 1.27.
19 Then Ioseph her husband being a iust man, and not willing to * make her a publike example, was minded to put her away secretly. Deut.24.1.
20 But whiles he thought these things, beholde, the Angel of the Lord appeared vnto him in a dreame, saying, Ioseph the sonne of Dauid, feare not to take Marie thy wyfe: for that which is conceyued in her, is of the holy Ghost.
21 And she shall bring forth a sonne, and thou shalt * call his name IESVS: for he shall * saue his people from their sinnes. Luke 1.31. Act.4.12.
22 And all this was done that it might be fulfilled, which is spoken of the Lorde by the Prophet, saying,
23 * Beholde, a virgine shalbe with childe, and shal beare a sonne, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which is by interpretation, God with vs. Esa.7.14.
24 ¶ Then Ioseph, being rayſed from sleepe, dyd as the Angel of the Lorde had inioyned him, and tooke his wyfe.
25 But he knewe her not, till she had brought foorth her first borne sonne, and he called his name IESVS.

CHAP. II.

The Wise men, who are the first fruits of the Gentiles, worship Christ. 14 Ioseph flieth into Egypt with Iesus and his mother. 16 Herod slayeth the children.

1 WHen * IESVS then was borne at Beth-leem in Iudea, in the dayes of Herod the King, behold, there Luke 2.6.

came

came Wisemen from the East to Hierusalem,
2 Saying, Where is that King of the Iewes that is borne? for we haue seene his starre in the East, and are come to worship him.
3 When King Herod heard *this*, he was troubled, and all Hierusalem with him.
4 And gathering together all the chief Priests & Scribes of the people, he asked of them, where Christ shoulde be borne.
5 And they said vnto him, At Beth-leem in Iudea: for so it is written by the Prophet,
6 * And thou Beth-leem in the lande of Iuda, art not the least among the Princes of Iuda: For out of thee shall come the gouernour that shall feede that my people Israel. *Mich.5.2. iohn 7.42.*
7 Then Herod priuily called the Wisemen, *and* diligently inquired of them the tyme of the starre that appeared.
8 And sent them to Beth-leem, saying, Goe, and searche diligently for the babe: and when ye haue found him, bring me worde agayne, that I may come also, and worship him.
9 ¶ So when they had heard the King, they departed: & lo, the starre which they had seene in the East, went before them, tyll it came and stoode ouer *the place* where the babe was.
10 And when they sawe the starre, they reioyced with an exceeding great ioye,
11 And went into the house, and founde the babe with Marie his Mother, and fell downe, and worshipped him, and opened their treasures, and presented vnto him gifts, *euen* golde, and frankincense, and myrrhe.
12 And after they were warned of God in a dreame, that they shoulde not goe agayne to Herod, they returned into their countrey another way.
13 ¶ After their departure, beholde the Angel of the Lord appeareth to Ioseph in a dreame, saying, Arise, and take the babe and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be there tyll I bring thee word: for Herod will seeke the babe, to destroye him.

14 So he arose and tooke the babe and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt,
15 And was there vnto the death of Herod, that that might be fulfilled, which is spoken of the Lorde by the
Hose.11.1. * Prophet, saying, Out of Egypt haue I called my Sone.
16 ¶ Then Herod, seeing that he was mocked of the Wisemen, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, & slewe all the male children that were in Beth-leem, and in all the coastes thereof, from two yere old and vnder, according to the tyme which he had diligently searched out of the Wisemen.
17 Then was that fulfilled which is spoken by the Prophet Ieremias, saying,
Iere.31.15 18 * In Rhama was a voyce heard, mourning, and weeping, and great howling: Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they were not.
19 And when Herod was dead, beholde, an Angel of the Lord appeareth in a dreame to Ioseph in Egypt,
20 Saying, Arise, and take the babe and his mother, and goe into the lande of Israel: for they are dead which sought the babes life.
21 Then he arose vp and tooke the babe and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.
22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reigne in Iudea in steade of his father Herod, he was afrayed to go thither: yet after he was warned of God in a dreame, he turned aside into the partes of Galile,
23 And went and dwelt in a citie called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophetes, *which was*, That he shoulde be called a Nazarite.

CHAP. III.

1 Iohn preacheth. 4 His apparel and meate. 5 He baptizeth. 8 The fruites of repentance. 10 The axe at the roote of the tree. 12 The fanne and the chaffe. 13 Christ is baptized.

Mark.1.4. Luke.3.3. 1 AND * in those dayes, Iohn the Baptist came & preached in the wildernes of Iudea.
2 And said, Repent: for the kingdome of heauen is at hand.
3 For this is he of whom it is spoken by the Prophet Esaias,

Isaias, saying, * The voyce of him that cryeth in the wil- *Esa. 40.3.*
dernes, Prepare ye the way of the Lord: make his paths *mark. 1. 3.*
straight. *luke 3. 4.*

4 * And this Iohn had his garment of camels heare, and *iohn 1. 23.*
a girdle of a skin about his loynes: his meat was also lo- *Mark. 1. 6.*
custes and wilde hony.

5 * Then went out to him Hierusalem and all Iudea, and *Mark. 1. 5.*
all the region round about Iordan. *luke 3. 7.*

6 And they were baptized of him in Iordan, confessing
their sinnes.

7 Now when he sawe many of the Pharises, and of the
Sadducees come to his baptisme, he said vnto them, * O *Chap. 12. 34*
generation of vipers, who hath forewarned you to flye
from the anger to come?

8 Bring forth therfore fruite worthy amendment of life.

9 And thinke not to saye with your selues, * We haue *Iohn 8. 39*
Abraham to *our* Father: for I saye vnto you, that God *act. 13. 26*
is able euen of these stones to rayse vp children vnto
Abraham.

10 And now also is the axe put to the roote of the trees:
* therefore euery tree which bringeth not forth good *Chap. 7. 19*
fruite, is hewen downe, and cast into the fyre.

11 * In deede I baptize you with water to amendement *Mark. 1. 8.*
of lyfe, but he that commeth after me, is mightier then *luke 3. 16.*
I, whose shoes I am not worthy to beare: he wil bap- *iob. 1. 26.*
tize you with the holy Ghost, and with fyre. *act. 1. 5. &*

12 Which hath his fan in his hande, and will make cleane *2. 4. & 8. 17*
his floore, and gather his wheate into his garner, but wil *and 19. 4.*
burne vp the chaffe with vnquencheable fier.

13 ¶ * Thē came Iesus from Galile to Iordan vnto Iohn, *Marke. 1. 9.*
to be baptized of him. *luke. 3. 21.*

14 But Iohn earnestly put him backe, saying, I haue nede
to be baptized of thee, and commest thou to me?

15 Then Iesus answering, sayde to him, Let be nowe: for
thus it becommeth vs to fulfill all righteousnes. So he
suffred him.

16 And Iesus when he was baptized, came straight out of
the water. And lo, the heauens were opened vnto him,
and *Iohn* sawe the Spirit of God descending like a doue,
and lighting vpon him.

17 And lo, a voyce *came* from heauen, saying, * This is my *Coloss. 1. 13.*
beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased. *2. pet. 1. 17.*

CHAP. IIII.

1 Christ is tempted. 4 He vanquisheth the Deuil with Scripture. 11 The Angels minister vnto him. 12 He preacheth repentance, and that him selfe is come. 18 The calling of Peter, Andrew, 21 Iames and Iohn. 23 He preacheth the Gospell, and healeth the diseased.

Mar.1.12. Luke 4.1. 1 THen* was Iesus led aside of the Spirit into the wildernes, to be tempted of the deuill.

2 And when he had fasted fourtie dayes, & fourtie nights, he was afterward hungrie.

3 Then came to him the tempter, & said, If thou be the Sonne of God, commaunde that these stones be made bread.

Deut.8.3. 4 But he answering, said, It is written, * Man shall not liue by bread onely, but by euery word that proceedeth out of the mouthe of God.

5 Then the deuill tooke him vp into the holy Citie, and set him on a pinacle of the temple,

6 And said vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe: for it is written,* that he will giue his Angels charge ouer thee, & with their handes they shall lift thee vp, least at any tyme thou shouldest dash thy foote against a stone.

Psal.91.11

7 Iesus sayde vnto him, It is written agayne, *Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

Deut.6.16.

8 Againe the deuill tooke him vp into an exceeding hie mountaine, and shewed him all the kingdomes of the world, and the glorie of them.

9 And said to him, All these will I giue thee, if thou wilt fall downe, and worship me.

10 Then said Iesus vnto him, Auoide Satan: for it is written, * Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him onely shalt thou serue.

Deut 6.13. and 10.20.

Mar.1.13. Luke 4.13. 11 * Then the deuill left him: and beholde, the Angels came, and ministred vnto him.

Mar.1.14. Luke 4.14 12 ¶ * And when Iesus had heard that Iohn was committed to prison, he returned into Galile.

Iohn.4.43. 13 And leauing Nazareth, went and dwelt in Capernaum, which is nere the sea in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim.

14 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying,

15 *The

15 * The lande of Zabulon, and the lande of Nephthalim *by* the way of the ſea, beyond Iordan, Galile of the Gentiles: *Eſa.9.1.*

16 The people which ſate in darkenes, ſawe great light: and to them which ſate in the region, and ſhadowe of death, light is riſen vp.

17 * From that time Ieſus began to preache, and to ſay, Amend your liues: for the kingdome of heauen is at hande. *Mar.1.15.*

18 ¶And Ieſus walking by the ſea of Galile, ſaw two brethrē, Simon, which was called Peter, & Andrew his brother, caſting a net into the ſea (for they were fiſhers.)

19 * And he ſaid vnto them, Folowe me, and I will make you fiſhers of men. *Mar.1.16. 1.cor.1.27.*

20 And they ſtraight way leauing the nets, folowed him.

21 And when he was gone forth from thence, he ſawe other two brethren, Iames *the ſonne* of Zebedeus, and Iohn his brother in a ſhip with Zebedeus their father, mending their nets, and he called them.

22 And they without tarying, leauing the ſhip, and their father, folowed him.

23 So Ieſus went about all Galile, teaching in their Synagogues, and preaching the Goſpell of the kingdome, and healing euery ſickenes and euery diſeaſe among the people.

24 And his fame ſpred abroad through all Syria: and they brought vnto him all ſicke people, that were taken with diuers diſeaſes and tormentes, and them that were poſſeſſed with deuils, and thoſe which were lunatike, and thoſe that had the palſie: and he healed them.

25 And there folowed him great multitudes out of Galile, and Decapolis, and Hieruſalem, and Iudea, and from beyond Iordan.

CHAP. V.

1 *Who are bleſſed.* 13 *The Apoſtles are the ſalt and light of the world.* 14 *The citie ſet on an hil.* 15 *The candle.* 16 *Good workes.* 19 *The fulfilling of Chriſtes commaundementes.* 21 *What killing is.* 23 *Reconciliation is ſet before ſacrifice.* 27 *Adultrie.* 29 *The plucking out of the eye.* 30 *Cutting of of the hand.* 31 *The bil of diuorcement.* 33 *Not to ſweare.* 43 *To loue our enemies.* 48 *Perfitnes.*

1 AND when he ſawe the multitude, he went vp into a mountaine: and when he was ſet, his diſciples came to him.

2 And he opened his mouth and taught them, ſaying,

Luke.6.20. 3 * Bleſſed *are* the poore in ſpirit, for theirs is the kingdome of heauen.

Eſa.61.2.3. 4 * Bleſſed *are* they that mourne: for they ſhalbe comforted.

Luke 6.21. *Pſal.37.11.* 5 * Bleſſed *are* the meeke: for they ſhall inherite the earth.

Eſa.65.13. 6 * Bleſſed *are* they which hunger and thirſt for righteouſnes: for they ſhalbe filled.

7 Bleſſed *are* the mercyfull: for they ſhall obteyne mercy.

Pſa.24.4. 8 Bleſſed *are* the * pure in heart: for they ſhal ſee God.

9 Bleſſed *are* the peace makers: for they ſhalbe called the children of God.

1 Cor.14.33 *1.Pet.3.14.* 10 Bleſſed *are* they * which ſuffer perſecution for righteouſnes ſake: for theirs is the kingdome of heauen.

Act.5.41. *1.pet.4.14.* 11 * Bleſſed ſhall ye be when men reuile you, and perſecute *you*, and ſay all maner of euill againſt you for my ſake, falſely.

12 Reioyce and be glad, for great is your reward in heauen: for ſo perſecuted they the Prophetes which were before you.

Mark.9.50 *Luke.14.34.* 13 * Ye are the ſalte of the earth: but if the ſalte haue loſt his ſauour, wherewith ſhall it be ſalted? It is thēce forth good for nothing, but to be caſt out, and to be troden vnder foote of men.

14 Ye are the light of the worlde. A citie that is ſet on an hill, can not be hid.

Marke 4.21 *Luke 8.16.* *and 11.33.* 15 * Neyther do men light a candle, and put it vnder a buſhell, but on a candleſticke, and it giueth light vnto all that are in the houſe.

1.Pet.2.12. 16 * Let your light ſo ſhine before men, that they may ſee your good workes, and glorifie your Father which is in heauen.

17 Thinke not that I am come to deſtroye the Lawe, or the Prophets. I am not come to deſtroye them, but to fulfill them.

Luke 16.17 18 * For truely I ſay vnto you, Till heauen and earth periſh, one iote, or one title of the Law ſhall not ſcape, till

till all things be fulfilled.
19 * Whosoeuer therefore shall breake one of these least commaundements, and teache men so, he shalbe called the least in the kingdome of heauen: but whosoeuer shall obserue and teache *them*, the same shall be called great in the kingdome of heauen. *Iam.2.10.*
20 For I say vnto you, except your righteousnes *exceede the *righteousnes* of the Scribes and Pharises, ye shall not enter into the kingdome of heauen. *Luk.11.39.*
21 Ye haue heard that it was sayd vnto them of old time, * Thou shalt not kill: for whosoeuer killeth shalbe culpable of iudgement. *Exod.20.13 deut.5.17.*
22 But I say vnto you, whosoeuer is angrie with his brother vnaduisedly, shalbe culpable of iudgement. And whosoeuer sayeth vnto his brother, Raca, shall be worthie to be punished by the Council. And whosoeuer shall say, Foole, shalbe worthie to be punished with hell fyre.
23 If then thou bring thy gyfte to the altar, and there remembrest that thy brother hath ought agaynst thee,
24 Leaue there thine offring before the altar, and go thy way: first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.
25 * Agree with thine aduersarie quickely, whiles thou art in the way with him, least thine aduersarie deliuer thee to the iudge, and the iudge deliuer thee to the sergeant, and thou be cast into prison. *Luke 12.58*
26 Verely I say vnto thee, thou shalt not come out thence, till thou hast payed the vtmost farthing.
27 ¶ Ye haue heard that it was sayd to them of old time, * Thou shalt not commit adulterie.
28 But I say vnto you, that whosoeuer looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath cómitted adulterie with her already in his heart. *Exo. 20.14. rom.13.9.*
29 * Wherefore if thy right eye cause thee to offende, plucke it out, and cast it from thee: for better it is for thee, that one of thy members perishe, then that thy whole bodie should be cast into hell. *Chap. 18.8 9 mar.9.47*
30 Also if thy right hand make thee to offende, cut it of, and cast it from thee: for better it is for thee that one of thy members perish, then that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

31 It

Chap.19.7. 31 It hath bene ſaid alſo, * Whoſoeuer ſhall put away
deut. 24. 1. his wife, let him giue her a bill of diuorcement.
mar. 10.4. 32 But I ſay vnto you, whoſoeuer ſhall put away his wife
luk. 16.18. (except it be for fornication) cauſeth her to commit
1.cor.7.10. adultery: and whoſoeuer ſhall marie her that is diuorced, committeth adulterie.

33 Againe, ye haue heard that it was ſaid to them of old
Exod.20.7. time, * Thou ſhalt not forſweare thy ſelfe, but ſhalt
leuit.19.12. performe thine othes to the Lord.
deut. 5. 11. 34 But I ſay vnto you, Sweare not at all, neither by heauen, for it is the throne of God:

35 Nor yet by the earth: for it is his footeſtoole: neither by Hieruſalem: for it is the citie of the great King.

36 Neither ſhalt thou ſweare by thine head, becauſe thou canſt not make one heare white or blacke.

Iam.5.12. 37 * But let your communication be Yea, yea: Nay, nay. For whatſoeuer is more then theſe, commeth of euill.

Exo.21.24. 38 ¶ Ye haue heard that it hath bene ſaid, An * eye for
leuit.24.20 an eye, and a tooth for a tooth.
deut.19.21. 39 But I ſay vnto you, * Reſiſt not euill: but whoſoeuer
Luk.6.29. ſhall ſmite thee on thy right cheeke, turne to him the
rom.12.17. other alſo.
1.cor.6.7. 40 And if any man will ſue thee at the lawe, & take away thy coate, let him haue thy cloke alſo.

41 And whoſoeuer will compell thee *to goe* a mile, goe with him twaine.

Deut. 15.8. 42 * Giue to him that asketh, and from him that would borow of thee, turne not away.

Leu.19.18. 43 Ye haue heard that it hath bene ſaid, * Thou ſhalt loue thy neighbour, and hate thine enemie.

Luk.6.27. 44 But I ſay vnto you, * Loue your enemies: bleſſe them
Luk.23.34. that curſe you: do good to them that hate you, * and
act.7.60. pray for them which hurt you, and perſecute you,
1.cor.4.13. 45 * That ye may be the children of your Father that is
Luk.6.35. in heauen: for he maketh his ſunne to ariſe on the euill, and the good: and ſendeth raine on the iuſt, and vniuſt.

46 For if ye loue them, which loue you, what rewarde ſhall you haue? Do not the Publicanes euen the ſame?

47 And if ye be friendly to your brethren onely, what ſingular thing doe ye? do not euen the Publicanes likewiſe?

48 Ye

Ye shall therefore be perfit, as your Father which is in heauen, is perfite.

CHAP. VI.

1 Almes. 5 Prayer. 14 Forgiuing our brother. 16 Fasting. 19 Our treasure. 20 We must succour the poore. 24 God & riches. 25 Carefull seeking for meate & drinke, & apparell forbidden. 33 The kingdome of God & his righteousnes.

1 TAke heede that ye giue not your almes before men, to be seene of them, or els ye shall haue no rewarde of your Father which is in heauen.

2 *Therefore when thou giuest thine almes, thou shalt not make a trumpet to be blowen before thee, as the hypocrites do in the Synagogues and in the streetes, to be praysed of men. Verely I say vnto you, they haue their rewarde. Rom. 12.8.

3 But when thou doest thine almes, let not thy left hand knowe what thy right hand doeth,

4 That thine almes may be in secret, and thy Father that seeth in secret, he will reward thee openly.

5 And when thou prayest, be not as the hypocrites: for they loue to stand, and pray in the Synagogues, and in the corners of the streetes, because they would be seene of men. Verely I say vnto you, they haue their rewarde.

6 But when thou prayest, enter into thy chamber: and when thou hast shut thy dore, pray vnto thy Father which is in secret, and thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

7 Also when ye pray, vse no vaine repetitions as the Heathen: for they thinke to be heard for their much babling.

8 Be ye not like them therefore: For your Father knoweth whereof ye haue neede, before ye aske of him.

9 After this maner therefore pray ye, *Our Father which art in heauen, halowed be thy Name. Luk. 11.2.

10 Thy kingdome come. Thy will be done euen in earth, as it is in heauen.

11 Giue vs this day our dayly bread.

12 And forgiue vs our dettes, as we also forgiue our detters.

13 And leade vs not into tentation, but deliver vs *from euill: for thine is the kingdome, and the power, and Chap. 13. 19.

and the glorie for euer. Amen.

Mar.11.25 14 *For if ye do forgiue mē their treſpaces, your heauenly Father will alſo forgiue you.

15 But if ye doe not forgiue men their treſpaces, no more will your Father forgiue you your treſpaces.

16 Moreouer, when ye faſt, looke not ſowre as the hypocrites: for they diſfigure their faces, that they might ſeeme vnto men to faſt. Verely I ſay vnto you, that they haue their reward.

17 But when thou faſteſt, annoint thine head, and waſhe thy face,

18 That thou ſeeme not vnto men to faſt, but vnto thy Father which is in ſecret: and thy Father which ſeeth in ſecret, will reward thee openly.

19 ¶ Lay not vp treaſures for your ſelues vpon the earth, where the mothe and canker corrupt, & where theeues digge through and ſteale.

Luk.12.33. 1.tim.6.19 20 *But lay vp treaſures for your ſelues in heauen, where neyther the mothe nor canker corrupteth, and where theeues neyther digge through, nor ſteale.

21 For where your treaſure is, there will your hearte be alſo.

Luk.11.34. 22 ¶* The light of the body is the eye: if then thine eye be ſingle, thy whole body ſhalbe light.

23 But if thine eye be wicked, then all thy body ſhalbe darke. Wherefore if the light that is in thee, be darkenes, how great is that darknes?

Luk.16.13. 24 * No man can ſerue two maſters: for eyther he ſhall hate the one, and loue the other, or els he ſhall leane to the one, and deſpiſe the other. Ye can not ſerue God and riches.

25 * Therefore I ſaye vnto you, be not carefull for your lyfe, what ye ſhall eate, or what ye ſhall drinke: Luk.12.22. phil.4.6. 1.tim.6.8. 1.pet.5.7. nor yet for your bodie, what ye ſhall put on. Is not the life more worth then meate? and the bodie then rayment?

pſal.55.23. 26 Beholde the foules of the heauen: for they ſowe not, neyther reape, nor cary into the barnes: yet your heauenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better then they?

27 Which of you by taking care is able to adde one cubite vnto his ſtature?

28 And

28 And why care ye for rayment? Learne howe the Lilies of the fielde doe growe: they are not wearied, neyther spinne:
29 Yet I say vnto you, that euen Solomon in all his glorie was not arayed like one of these.
30 Wherefore if God so clothe the grasse of the fielde which is to daye, and to morowe is cast into the ouen, shall he not doe much more vnto you, O ye of litle faith?
31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eate? or what shall we drinke? or wherewith shall we be clothed?
32 (For after all these things seeke the Gentiles) for your heauenly Father knoweth, that ye haue neede of all these things.
33 But seeke ye first the kingdome of God, and his righteousnes, and all these thinges shalbe ministred vnto you.
34 Care not then for the morowe: for the morow shall care for it selfe: the daye hathe ynough with his owne griefe.

CHAP. VII.

1 We may not giue iudgement of our neighbour, 6 nor cast that which is holy to dogges. 13 The broade and straight way. 15 False prophets. 18 The tree and fruites. 24 The house buylt on a rocke, 26 and on the sand.

1 IVdge not, that ye be not iudged.
2 For with what * iudgement ye iudge, ye shalbe iudged, and with what * measure ye mete, it shalbe measured to you againe. *Mat.6.37.38 rom.2.1. 1.cor.4.5.*
3 And why seest thou the mote, that is in thy brothers eye, and perceiuest not the beame that is in thine owne eye? *Mark.4.24. Luke 6.38.*
4 * Or howe sayest thou to thy brother, Suffer me to cast out the mote out of thine eye, and behold a beame is in thine owne eye? *Luk.6.41.*
5 Hypocrite, first cast out the beame out of thine owne eye, & then shalt thou see clearely to cast out the mote out of thy brothers eye.
6 ¶ Giue ye not that which is holy, to dogges, neither cast ye your pearles before swine, lest they treade them vnder their feete, and turning againe, all to rent you.

7 ¶ * Aske,

Chap.21.22 mar.11.24 luk.11.9. ioh.14.13. & 16.23. iam.1.5.

7 ¶ * Aske, and it shalbe giuen you: seeke, and ye shall finde: knock, and it shalbe opened vnto you.
8 For whosoeuer asketh, receiueth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shalbe opened.
9 For what man is there among you, which if his sonne aske him bread, would giue him a stone?
10 Or if he aske fish, will he giue him a serpent?
11 If ye then, which are euill, can giue to your children good gifts, how much more shall your Father which is in heauen, giue good things to them that aske him?

Luk.6.31. iob.4.16.

12 * ¶ Therefore whatsoeuer ye would that men should do to you, euen so doe ye to them: for this is the Lawe and the Prophets.

Luk.13.24.

13 * Enter in at the streight gate: for it is the wide gate, and broad way that leadeth to destruction: and many there be which go in thereat,
14 Because the gate is streight, and the waye narowe that leadeth vnto life, and fewe there be that finde it.
15 ¶ Beware of false prophets, which come to you, in sheepes clothing, but inwardely they are rauening wolues.

Luk.6.44.

16 Ye shall know them by their fruites. * Doe men gather grapes of thornes? or figges of thystles?
17 So euery good tree bringeth forth good fruite, and a corrupt tree bringeth forth euill fruite.
18 A good tree can not bring forth euill fruite: neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruite.

Chap.3.10.

19 * Euery tree that bringeth not forth good fruite, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire.
20 Therefore by their fruites ye shall knowe them.
21 ¶ Not euery one that saith vnto me, Lord, Lord, shall

Rom.2.13.

enter into the kingdome of heauen, * but he that doth my Fathers will which is in heauen.

Iam.1.22.

22 * Many will say to me in that daye, Lord, Lord, haue we not by thy Name propheciedꝰ and by thy Name cast out deuils? and by thy Name done many great workes?

Luk.13.27. Psalm.6.8.

23 And then will I professe to them, * I neuer knew you: * depart from me, ye that worke iniquitie.

Luk.6.47. 48.

24 Whosoeuer then heareth of me these wordes, * and doeth the same, I will liken him to a wise man, which hath builded his house on a rocke:

25 And

25 And the raine fell, and the floods came, and the windes blew, and beat vpon that house, and it fell not: for it was grounded on a rocke.
26 But whosoeuer heareth these my words, and doeth them not, shalbe likened vnto a foolish man, which hath builded his house vpon the sand:
27 And the raine fell, and the floods came, and the windes blewe, and beat vpon that house, and it fell, and the fall thereof was great.
28 ¶ * And it came to passe, when Iesus had ended these wordes, the people were astonied at his doctrine. *Mar.* 1. 22. *luk.* 4. 32.
29 For he taught them as one hauing authoritie, and not as the Scribes.

CHAP. VIII.

1 *The Leper clensed.* 5 *The Centurions faith.* 11 *The calling of the Gentiles,* 12 *and casting out of the Iewes.* 14 *Peters mother in lawe healed.* 19 *A Scribe desirous to followe Christ.* 23 *The tempest on the sea.* 28 *Two possessed with deuils cured.* 32 *The deuils go into Swine.*

1 NOw when he was come downe from the mountaine, great multitudes followed him.
2 * And lo, there came a Leper and worshipped him, saying, Master, if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane. *Mar.* 1. 40. *luk.* 5. 12.
3 And Iesus putting forth his hand, touched him, saying, I will, be thou cleane: and immediatly his leprosie was clensed.
4 Then Iesus said vnto him, See thou tell no man, but go, *and* shewe thy selfe vnto the Priest, and offer the gift that * Moses commaunded, for a witnes to them. *Leuit.* 14. 3. 4.
5 ¶ * When Iesus was entred into Capernaum, there came vnto him a Centurion, beseching him, *Luk.* 7. 2.
6 And said, Master, my seruant lieth sicke at home of the palsie, and is grieuously payned.
7 And Iesus said vnto him, I will come and heale him.
8 But the Centurion answered, saying, Master, I am not worthy that thou shouldest come vnder my roofe: but speake the word only, and my seruant shalbe healed.
9 For I am a man also vnder the authoritie *of an other,* and haue souldiers vnder me: and I say to one, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he commeth: and to my seruant, Do this, and he doeth it.

10 When

10 When Iesus heard *that*, he marueiled and said to them that folowed *him*, Verely, I say vnto you, I haue not found so great faith, euen in Israel.

11 But I say vnto you, that many shall come from the East and Weast, and shall sit downe with Abraham, and Isaac, and Iacob, in the kingdome of heauen.

12 And the children of the kingdome shalbe cast out into vtter * darkenes: there shalbe weeping & gnashing of teeth. *Chap.22.13*

13 Then Iesus said vnto the Centurion, Go thy way, and as thou hast beleeued, so be it vnto thee. And his seruant was healed the same houre.

14 ¶ * And when Iesus came to Peters house, he sawe his wiues mother layed downe, and sicke of a feuer. *Mar.1.29. Luke 4.38.*

15 And he touched her hand, and the feuer left her: so she arose, and ministred vnto them.

16 * When the euen was come, they brought vnto him many that were possessed with deuils: and he cast out the spirits with *his* worde, and healed all that were sicke, *Mark.1.32. Luke.4.40.*

17 That it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by * Esaias the Prophet, saying, He tooke our infirmities, and bare *our* sicknesses. *Esai.53.4. 1.pet.2.24.*

18 ¶ * And when Iesus sawe great multitudes of people about him, he commaunded them to goe ouer *the water*. *Luk.9.57. 58.*

19 Then came there a certaine Scribe, & sayd vnto him, Master, I will folowe thee whithersoeuer thou goest.

20 But Iesus sayd vnto him, The foxes haue holes, & the birds of the heauen haue nestes, but the Sonne of man hath not whereon to rest his head.

21 ¶ And an other of his disciples sayde vnto him, Master, suffer me first to go, and burie my father.

22 But Iesus sayd vnto him, Folowe me, and let the dead burie their dead.

23 ¶ * And whē he was entred into the ship, his disciples folowed him. *Mar.4.37. Luke 8.23.*

24 And beholde, there arose a great tempest in the sea, so that the ship was couered with wawes: but hee was a sleepe.

25 Then his disciples came, and awoke him, saying, Master, saue vs: we perishe.

26 And

26 And he ſaid vnto them, Why are ye feareful, O ye of little faith? Then he aroſe, and rebuked the windes and the ſea: and ſo there was a great calme.

27 And the men marueiled, ſaying, What man is this, that both the windes and the ſea obey him!

28 ¶ * And when he was come to the other ſide into the countrey of the Gergeſenes, there met him two poſſeſſed with deuils, which came out of the graues verie fierce, ſo that no man might go by that way. *Mar.5.1.2. luke.8.26. 27.*

29 And beholde, they cried out, ſaying, Ieſus the ſonne of God, what haue we to do with thee? Art thou come hither to torment vs before the time?

30 Now there was a farre off from them, a great heard of ſwine feeding.

31 And the deuils beſought him, ſaying, If thou caſt vs out, ſuffer vs to go into the heard of ſwine.

32 And he ſaid vnto them, Go. So they went out and departed into the heard of ſwine: and beholde, the whole heard of ſwine ran headlong into the ſea, and died in the water.

33 Then the heardmen fled: and when they were come into the citie, they told al things, and what was become of them that were poſſeſſed with the deuils.

34 And beholde, al the citie came out to meete Ieſus: and when they ſawe him, they beſought him to depart out of their coaſtes.

CHAP. IX.

1 One ſicke of the palſie is healed. 5 Remiſſion of ſinnes. 9 Matthewe called. 10 Sinners. 17 New wine. 18 The ruler's daughter raiſed. 20 A woman healed of a bloudie iſſue. 28 Two blind men by faith receiue ſight. 32 A dumme man poſſeſſed is healed. 37 The harueſt and workemen.

1 THen he entred into a ſhip, and paſſed ouer, and came into his owne citie.

2 And *lo, they brought to him a man ſicke of the palſie, laid on a bed. And Ieſus ſeing their faith, ſaid to the ſick of the palſie, Sonne, be of good comfort: thy ſinnes are forgiuen thee. *Mar.2.3. luke.5.18.*

3 And beholde, certaine of the Scribes ſaid with themſelues, This man blaſphemeth.

4 But when Ieſus ſawe their thoughts, he ſaid, Wherefore thinke ye euil things in your hearts?

5 For whether is it easier to say, Thy sinnes are forgiuen thee, or to say, Arise, and walke?

6 And that ye may knowe that the Sonne of man hathe authoritie in earth to forgiue sinnes, (then said he vnto the sicke of the palsie,) Arise, take vp thy bed, and goe to thine house.

7 And he arose, and departed to his owne house.

8 So when the multitude sawe it, they marueiled, & glorified God, which had giuen such authoritie to men.

Mar. 2.14. *Luke.* 5.27. 9 ¶ * And as Iesus passed forth from thence, he sawe a man sitting at the custome, named Matthewe, and said to him, Followe me. And he arose, and followed him.

10 And it came to passe, as Iesus sate at meat *in his* house, beholde, many Publicanes and sinners, that came *thither*, sate downe at the table with Iesus and his disciples.

11 And when the Pharises sawe that, they said to his disciples, why eateth your master with Publicanes and sinners?

12 Now when Iesus hearde it, he saide vnto them, The whole neede not a Physition, but they that are sicke.

Hose. 6. 6. *chap.* 12. 7. 1. *Timot.* 1. 15. 13 But goe ye and learne what this is, * I wil haue mercye, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to cal the righteous, but the * sinners to repentance.

Mark. 2.18. *Luke.* 5.33. 14 ¶ * Then came the disciples of Iohn to him, saying, Why do we and the Pharises fast oft, and thy disciples fast not?

15 And Iesus said vnto them, Can the children of the mariage chamber mourne as longe as the bridegrome is with them? But the dayes wil come when the bridegrom shalbe taken from them, and then shal they fast.

16 Moreouer, no man pieceth an olde garment with a piece *of newe clothe*: for that that shoulde fill it vp, taketh awaye from the garment, and the breache is worse.

17 Neither do they put newe wine *into* olde vessels: for then the vessels would breake, and the wine would be spilt, and the vessels should perish: but they put newe wine into newe vessels, and so are both preserued.

Mark 5.22. *luk.* 8.41. 18 ¶ * While *he* thus *spake* vnto them, beholde there came a certaine ruler, and worshipped him, saying, My daughter is nowe deceased, but come and laye thine hand

hand on her, and she shal liue.
19 And Iesus arose and followed him with his disciples.
20 (And behold a woman which was diseased with an yssue of bloode twelue yeres, came behinde him, and touched the hemme of his garment.
21 For she said in her selfe, If I may touche but his garment onely, I shalbe whole.
22 Then Iesus turned him about, and seeing her, did saye, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole at that same moment.)
23 Now when Iesus came into the rulers house, and sawe the minstrels and the multitude making noyse,
24 He said vnto them, Get you hence: for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorne.
25 And when the multitude were put forth, he went in & tooke her by the hand, and the maid arose.
26 And this brute went throughout al that land.
27 And as Iesus departed thence, two blind men followed him, crying, and saying, O sonne of Dauid, haue mercy vpon vs.
28 And when he was come into the house, the blind came to him, and Iesus said vnto them, beleeue ye that I am able to do this? And they said vnto him, Yea, Lord.
29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it vnto you.
30 And their eies were opened, & Iesus gaue them great charge, saying, See that no man knowe it.
31 But when they were departed, they spread abroad his fame throughout al that land.
32 ¶ * And as they went out, beholde, they brought to him a domme man possessed with a deuil. *Luk.11.14.*
33 And when the deuil was cast out, the domme spake: then the multitude marueiled, saying, The like was neuer seene in Israel.
34 But the Pharises said, * He casteth out deuils, through the prince of deuils. *Chs.12.24. mark.3.22.*
35 ¶ And * Iesus went about al cities & townes, teaching in their Synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the kingdome, and healing euery sickenesse and euery disease among the people. *Iule.11.15. Mark. 6.6. Iuke.13.22.*
36 But * when he sawe the multitude, he had compassion *Mark.6.34.*

vpon them, because they were dispersed, and scattered abroad, as sheepe hauing no shepheard.

Luke.10.2. 37 Then said he to his disciples, * Surely the haruest is
Iohn.4.35. great, but the labourers *are* fewe:
36. 38 Wherfore pray the Lord of the haruest that he would send forth labourers into his haruest.

CHAP. X.

1 The gift of healing giuen to the Apostles. 5 They are sent to preach the Gospel. 13 Peace, 14 Shaking of the dust. 16 Affliction. 22 Continuance vnto the end. 23 Flying from persecution. 28 Feare. 29 Two sparowes. 30 Heares of our heads. 32 To acknowledge Christ. 34 Peace & the sword. 35 Variance. 37 Loue of parents. 38 The crosse. 39 To lose the life. 40 To receiue a preacher.

Mar.3.13. 1 AND * he called his twelue disciples vnto him, & gaue
14.15. them power against vncleane spirits, to cast them out,
Luke.9.1,2. and to heale euerie sickenes, and euerie disease.
2 Now the names of the twelue Apostles are these. The first is Simon, called Peter, and Andrewe his brother: Iames *the sonne* of Zebedeus, and Iohn his brother.
3 Philippe and Bartlemewe: Thomas, and Matthewe that Publicane: Iames *the sonne* of Alpheus, and Lebbeus whose surname was Thaddeus:
4 Simon the Cananite, and Iudas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.
5 These twelue did Iesus send forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into the cities of the Samaritans enter ye not:
Act.13.46 6 But go rather * to the lost sheepe of the house of Israel.
Luke.10.9. 7 * And as ye go, preache, saying, The kingdome of heauen is at hand.
11. 8 Heale the sicke: cleanse the lepers: raise vp the dead: cast out the deuils. Freely ye haue receiued, freely giue.
Mar.6.8.9. 9 * Possesse not golde, nor siluer, nor money in your
Luke.9.3.& girdels,
22.35. 10 Nor a scrippe for the iourney, neither two coates, nei-
1.Tim.5.18 ther shoes, nor a staffe: * for the workeman is worthie of his meate.
Luke.10.8. 11 And into * whatsoeuer citie or towne ye shal come, enquire who is worthie in it, & there abide til ye go thence.

12 And when ye come into an house, salute the same.
13 And if the house be worthie, let your peace come vpon it: but if it be not worthie, let your peace returne to you.
14 * And whosoeuer shal not receiue you, nor heare your wordes, when ye depart out of that house, or that citie, * shake of the dust of your feete. *Mar.* 6. 11. *Luke.* 9. 5. *Act.* 13. 51
15 Truely I say vnto you, it shal be easier for them of the land of Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of iudgement, then for that citie.
16 ¶ * Behold, I send you as sheepe in the middes of the wolues: be ye therfore wise as serpents, and innocent as doues. *Luke.* 10. 3.
17 But beware of men, for they wil deliuer you vp to the Councils, and wil scourge you in their Synagogues.
18 And ye shal be brought to the gouernours and Kings for my sake, in witnes to them, and to the Gentiles.
19 * But when they deliuer you vp, take no thought how or what ye shal speake: for it shalbe giuen you in that houre, what ye shal say. *Mar.* 13. 11 *Luke.* 12. 11.
20 For it is not ye that speake, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.
21 And the * brother shal betray the brother to death, & the father the sonne, and the children shal rise against *their* parents, and shal cause them to die. *Luk.* 21. 16.
22 And ye shalbe hated of al men for my Name: * but he that endureth to the end, he shalbe saued. *Mar.* 13. 13
23 And when they persecute you in this citie, flie into an other: for verely I say vnto you, ye shal not go ouer *all* the cities of Israel, til the Sonne of man be come.
24 * The disciple is not aboue his master, nor the seruant aboue his Lord. *Luke.* 6. 40. *iohn.* 13. 16.
25 It is ynough for the disciple to be as his master is, and the seruant as his Lord. * If they haue called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more them of his houshold? *& 15. 20. Chap.* 12. 24
26 Feare them not therefore: * for there is nothing couered, that shal not be discloſed, nor hid, that shal not be knowen. *Mar.* 4. 22. *Luke.* 8. 17. *& 12. 2.*
27 What I tel you in darkenes, that speake ye in light: and what ye heare in the eare, that preach ye on the houses.
28 And feare ye not them which kil the bodie, but are not able

able to kil the soule: but rather feare him, which is able to destroy both soule and body in hel.

29 Are not two sparowes sould for a farthing, and one of them shal not fal on the ground without your Father?

1.Sam. 14. 45. 2.Sam. 14. 11. Act.27.34. Mar.8.38. Luk.9.26.& 12.8. 2.Tim.2.12. Luk.12.51. Mich.7.6. Luk.14.26. Chap.16. 24. Mar.8.34. Luk.9.23.& 24.27. Joh.12.25. Luk.10.16. Joh.13.20. Mar.9.41.

30 * Yea, and al the heares of your head are nombred.

31 Feare ye not therefore, ye are of more value then many sparowes.

32 * Whosoeuer therefore shal confesse me before men, him wil I confesse also before my Father which is in heauen.

33 But whosoeuer shal denie me before men, him wil I also denie before my Father which is in heauen.

34 * Thinke not that I am come to send peace into the earth: I came not to send peace, but the sworde.

35 For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, & the daughter in law against her mother in lawe.

36 * And a mans enemies *shalbe* they of his owne housholde.

37 * He that loueth father or mother more then me, is not worthie of me. And he that loueth sonne, or daughter more then me, is not worthie of me.

38 * And he that taketh not his crosse, & followeth after me, is not worthie of me.

39 * He that wil finde his life, shall lose it, & he that loseth his life for my sake, shal finde it.

40 He that receiueth you, receiueth me: and he that receiueth me, receiueth him that hath sent me.

41 * He that receiueth a Prophet in the name of a Prophet, shal receiue a Prophets rewarde: and he that receiueth a righteous mā, in the name of a righteous man, shal receiue the rewarde of a righteous man.

42 * And whosoeuer shal giue vnto one of these litle ones to drinke a cup of cold water onely, in the name of a disciple, verely I say vnto you, he shal not lose his reward.

CHAP. XI.

2 Iohn sendeth his disciples to Christ. 7 Christes testimonie of Iohn. 13 The Lawe and the Prophets. 18 Christ & Iohn. 21 Chorazin, Bethsaida. 25 The Gospel reuealed to children. 28 They that are wearie and laden.

1 AND it came to passe that when Iesus had made an end of commanding his twelue disciples, he departed thence

thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

2 ¶ And when Iohn heard in the prison the workes of Christ, he sent two of his disciples, and said vnto him, *Luke.7.18.*

3 Art thou he that should come, or shal we looke for another?

4 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, Go, & shew Iohn, what things ye heare, and see.

5 The blinde receiue sight, & the halt do walke: the lepers are cleansed, and the deafe heare: the dead are raised vp,* and the poore receiue the Gospel. *Esa.61.1.*

6 And blessed is he that shal not be offended in me. *Luke.4.18.*

7 And as they departed, Iesus began to speake vnto the multitude, of Iohn, What went ye out into the wildernes to see? A reede shaken with the winde?

8 But what went ye out to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Beholde, they that weare soft clothing, are in Kings houses.

9 But what went ye out to see? A Prophet? Yea, I say vnto you, and more then a Prophet.

10 For this is he of whome it is written,* Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shal prepare thy way before thee. *Malac 3.1. Luk.7.28.*

11 Verely I say vnto you, among them which are begotten of women, arose there not a greater then Iohn Baptist: notwithstanding, he that is the least in the kingdom of heauen, is greater then he.

12 And from * the time of Iohn Baptist hitherto, the kingdome of heauen suffreth violence, and the violent take it by force. *Luk.16.16.*

13 For al the Prophetes and the Lawe prophesied vnto Iohn.

14 And if ye wil receiue it, this is that * Elias, which was to come. *Malac 4.5.*

15 ¶ He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

16 *But whereunto shal I liken this generation? It is like vnto litle children which sit in the markets, and cal vnto their fellowes, *Luke.7.31.*

17 And say, We haue piped vnto you, & ye haue not dauced, we haue mourned vnto you, and ye haue not lamented.

18 For Iohn came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a deuil.

19 The Sonne of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Beholde a glutton and a drinker of wine, a friend vnto Publicanes and sinners: but wisdome is iustified of her children.

Luke.10.13 20 ¶ Then began he to vpbraide the cities, wherein most of his great workes were done, because they repented not.

21 Wo *be* to thee, Chorazin: Wo *be* to thee, Bethsaida: for if the great works, which were done in you, had bene done in Tyrus and Sidon, they had repented long agone in sackecloth and ashes.

22 But I say to you, It shalbe easier for Tyrus and Sidon at the day of iudgement, then for you.

23 And thou, Capernaum, which art lifted vp vnto heauen, shalt be brought downe to hel: for if the great workes, which haue bene done in thee, had bene done among the of Sodom, they had remained to this day.

24 But I say vnto you, that it shalbe easier for them of the land of Sodom in the day of iudgement, then for thee.

Luke.10.21 25 *At that time Iesus answered, and said, I giue thee thankes, O Father, Lord of heauen and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and men of vnderstanding, and hast opened them vnto babes.

26 It is so, O Father, because thy good pleasure was such.

Ioh.3.35. 27 * All things are giuen vnto me of my Father: and * no
Iohn.6.46. man knoweth the Sonne, but the Father: neither knoweth any man the Father, but the Sonne, and he to whom the Sonne will reueile *him*.

28 Come vnto me, all ye that are wearie and laden, and I will ease you.

29 Take my yoke on you, & learne of me that I am meeke
Iere.6.16. and lowlie in heart: and ye shal finde * rest vnto your soules.

1.Iohn.5.3. 30 * For my yoke is easie, and my burden light.

CHAP. XII.

1 The disciples plucke the eares of corne, 6 Mercie, Sacrifice. 10 The withered hand is healed. 12 We must do good on the Sabbath. 22 The possessed is holpen. 25 A kingdome deuided. 31 Sinne, blasphemie. 33 The good or euil tree. 34 Vipers. 41 The Niniuites. 42 The Queene of Saba. 48 The true mother and brethren of Christ.

1 At

1 AT that time Iesus went on a Sabbath day through the corne, and his disciples were an hungred, and began to plucke the eares of corne and to eate. *Mar.2.23. luke.6.1.*

2 And when the Pharises sawe it, they said vnto him, Beholde, thy disciples do that * which is not lawful to do vpon the Sabbath. *Deut.23.25*

3 But he said vnto them, * Haue ye not read what Dauid did when he was an hungred, and they that were with him? *1.Sam.21. 6.*

4 How he entred into the house of God, and did eate the shew bread, which was not lawful for him to eat, neither for thē which were with him, but onely for the *Priests? *Exo.29.33. Ieui.8.31. & 24.9. Nom.2.89.*

5 Or haue ye not read in the Law, how that on the Sabbath daies the Priests in the Temple * breake the Sabbath, and are blameles?

6 But I say vnto you, that here is one greater then the Temple.

7 Wherefore if ye knew what this is, * I wil haue mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not haue condemned the innocents. *Hose.6.7. chap.9.13.*

8 For the Sonne of man is Lord, *euen* of the Sabbath.

9 * And he departed thence, and went into their Synagogue: *Mar.3.1. luke.6.6.*

10 And behold, there was a man which had *his* hand dried vp. And they asked him, saying, Is it lawful to heale vpon a Sabbath day? that they might accuse him.

11 And he said vnto them, What man shal there be among you, that hath a sheepe, and if it fall on a Sabbath day into a pit, doth not take it and lift it out?

12 How much more then is a man better then a sheepe? therefore, it is lawful to do wel on a Sabbath day.

13 Then said he to the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it forth, & it was made whole as the other.

14 Then the Pharises went out, and consulted against him, how they might destroy him.

15 But when Iesus knew it, he departed thence, and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them al,

16 And charged them in threatning wise, that they should not make him knowen,

17 That it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying,

18 * Beholde my seruant whome I haue chosen, my beloued *Esay.42.1.*

ued in whome my ſoule deliteth: I wil put my ſpirit on him, and he ſhal ſhew iudgement to the Gentiles.
19 He ſhal not ſtriue, nor crie, neither ſhal anie man heare his voice in the ſtreets.
20 A bruiſed reede ſhal he not breake, & ſmoking flaxe ſhal he not quench, til he bring forth iudgemēt vnto victorie.
21 And in his Name ſhal the Gentiles truſt.
Luk.11.14 .22 ¶ * Then was brought to him, one poſſeſſed with a deuil, *both* blinde, and domme, and he healed him, ſo that he *which was* blinde and domme, both ſpake and ſawe.
23 And al the people were amaſed, and ſaid, Is not this that ſonne of Dauid?
Chap.9.34 .24 But when the Phariſes heard it, they ſaid, * This man
mar.3.22. caſteth the deuils no otherwiſe out, but through Beelze-
luke.11.15. bub the prince of deuils.
25 But Ieſus knew their thoughts, and ſaid to them, Euery kingdome deuided againſt it ſelf, is brought to naught: and euerie citie or houſe, deuided againſt him ſelfe, ſhal not ſtand.
26 So if Satan caſt out Satā, he is deuided againſt him ſelf: how ſhal then his kingdome endure?
27 Alſo if I through Beelzebub caſt out deuils, by whome do your children caſt them out? Therefore they ſhal be your iudges.
28 But if I caſt out deuils by the Spirit of God, then is the kingdome of God come vnto you.
29 Els how can a man enter into a ſtrong mans houſe and ſpoyle his goods, except he firſt binde the ſtrong man, & then ſpoile his houſe?
30 He that is not with me, is againſt me: and he that gathereth not with me, ſcattereth.
Mar.3.28. 31 * Wherefore I ſay vnto you, Euerie ſinne and blaſphe-
29. mie ſhalbe forgiuen vnto men: but the blaſphemie a-
luke.12.10. gainſt the holie Ghoſt ſhal not be forgiuen vnto men.
1.Iob.5.16. 32 And whoſoeuer ſhal ſpeake a word againſt the Sonne of man, it ſhalbe forgiuen him: but whoſoeuer ſhal ſpeake againſt the holie Ghoſt, it ſhal not be forgiuen him, neither in this world nor in the world to come.
33 Either make the tree good, and his fruite good: or els make the tree euil, and his fruite euil: for the tree is knowne by the fruite.
34 O generations of vipers, how can you ſpeake good things,

things, when ye are euil? For of the * abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. *Luke.6.45.*

35 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth good things: and an euil man out of an euil treasure, bringeth forth euil things.

36 But I say vnto you, that of euerie idle word that men shal speake, they shal giue account therof at the day of iudgement.

37 For by thy words thou shalt be iustified, and by thy wordes thou shalt be condemned.

38 ¶ * Then answered certaine of the Scribes and of the Pharises, saying, Master, we would see a signe of thee. *Chap.16.1. Iuke.11.29.*

39 But he answered and said to them, An euil and adulterous generation seeketh a signe, but no signe shalbe giuen vnto it, saue that signe of the Prophet Ionas. *1.cor.1.22.*

40 * For as Ionas was three daies, and three nights in the whales belie: so shal the Sonne of man be, three daies and three nights in the heart of the earth. *Ionas.1,17.*

41 The men of Nineue shal rise in iudgement with this generation, and condemne it: for they * repented at the preaching of Ionas: and behold, a greater then Ionas is here. *Ionas.3.5.*

42 * The Queene of the South shal rise in iudgemẽt with this generation, & shal condemne it: for she came from the vtmost partes of the earth to heare the wisdome of Solomon: and beholde a greater then Solomon is here. *1.King.10. 1. 2.chro.9.1.*

43 ¶ * Now when the vncleane spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh throughout drie places, seeking rest, and findeth none. *Luk.11.24.*

44 Then he saith, I wil returne into mine house from whence I came: and when he is come, he findeth it emptie, swept and garnished.

45 ¶ Then he goeth, and taketh vnto him seuen other spirits worse then him self, and they enter in, & dwel there: * and the end of that man is worse then the beginning. Euen so shal it be with this wicked generation. *Hebr. 6.4. and 10.26. 2.pet.2.20.*

46 ¶ * While he yet spake to the multitude, beholde, his mother, & his brethren stode without, desiring to speake with him. *Mar.3.31. Iuke.8.20.*

47 Then one said vnto him, Beholde, thy mother and thy brethren stand without desiring to speake with thee.

48 But he answered, and said to him that tolde him, Who

is

is my mother? and who are my brethren?

49 And he ſtretched forth his hand toward his diſciples, and ſaid, Beholde my mother and my brethren.

50 For whoſoeuer ſhal do my Fathers wil which is in heauen, the ſame is my brother and ſiſter and mother.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *The parable of the Sower.* 11 & 34 *Why Chriſt ſpake in parables.* 18 *The expoſition of the parable.* 24 *The parable of the tares.* 31 *Of the muſtard ſeede.* 33 *Of the leauen.* 44 *Of the hidden treaſure.* 45 *Of the Pearle.* 47 *Of the drawe net caſt into the ſea.* 53 *Chriſt is not receiued of his countreymen the Nazarites.*

Mar.4.1. Luke.8.4.5. 1 THe * ſame day went Ieſus out of the houſe, and ſate by the ſea ſide.

2 And great multitudes reſorted vnto him, ſo that he wēt into a ſhip, and ſate downe: and the whole multitude ſtode on the ſhore.

3 Then he ſpake manie things to them in parables, ſaying, Beholde, a ſower went forth to ſowe.

4 And as he ſowed, ſome fel by the way ſide, & the foules came and deuoured them vp.

5 And ſome fel vpon ſtonie ground, where they had not much earth, and anon they ſprong vp, becauſe they had no depth of earth.

6 And when the ſunne was vp, they were parched, & for lacke of rooting, withered away.

7 And ſome fel among thornes, & the thornes ſprong vp, and choked them.

8 Some againe fel in good ground, and brought forth fruite, one *corne* an hundreth folde, ſome ſixtie folde, and another thirtie folde.

9 He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

10 ¶ Then the diſciples came, and ſaid to him, Why ſpeakeſt thou to them in parables?

11 And he anſwered and ſaid vnto them, Becauſe it is giuen vnto you, to know the ſecrets of the kingdome of heauen, but to them it is not giuen.

Chap.25.29 12 * For whoſoeuer hath, to him ſhalbe giuen, and he ſhal haue abundance: but whoſoeuer hath not, from him ſhal be taken away, euen that he hath.

13 Therfore ſpeake I to thē in parables, becauſe they ſeing, do not ſee: & hearing, they heare not, neither vnderſtād.

14 So in them is fulfilled the prophecie of Esaias, which
prophesie saieth, * By hearing, ye shal heare, and shal not *Esay.6.9.*
vnderstand, and seeing ye shal see, and shal not perceiue. *mar.4.12.*
15 For this peoples heart is waxed fatte, and their eares *luke.8.10.*
are dul of hearing, & with their eies they haue winked, *ioh.12.40.*
lest they should see with their eies, and heare with their *act.28.26.*
eares, and should vnderstand with their hearts, & should *rom.11.8.*
returne, that I might heale them.
16 But blessed *are* your eyes, for they see: and your eares,
for they heare.
17 * For verely I say vnto you, that manie Prophets, and *Luke.10.24*
righteous men haue desired to see those things which ye
see, and haue not sene *them*, and to heare those things
which ye heare, and haue not heard *them*.
18 ¶ * Heare ye therefore the parable of the sower. *Mar.4.15.*
19 Whensoeuer anie man heareth the word of that king- *luke.8.11.*
dome, and vnderstandeth it not, that euil one commeth,
and catcheth away that which was sowen in his heart:
and this is he which hath receiued the seede by the
way side.
20 And he that receiued seede in the stonie ground, is he
which heareth the word, and incontinently with ioye
receiueth it,
21 Yet hath he no roote in him selfe, and dureth but a sea-
son: for assone as tribulation or persecution commeth
because of the word, by and by he is offended.
22 And he that receiued the seede among thornes, is he
that heareth the word: but the care of this worlde, and
the deceitfulnes of riches choke the worde, and he is
made vnfruiteful.
23 But he that receiued the seede in the good ground, is
he that heareth the word, & vnderstandeth it, which also
beareth fruite, & bringeth forth, some an hundreth folde,
some sixtie folde, and some thirtie folde.
24 ¶ An other parable put he forth vnto them, saying, The
kingdome of heauen is like vnto a man which sowed
good seede in his field.
25 But while men slept, there came his enemie, and sowed
tares among the wheat, and went his way.
26 And when the blade was sprong vp, and brought forth
fruite, then appeared the tares also.
27 Then came the seruants of the housholder, and saide

vn-

vnto him, Maſter, ſowedſt not thou good ſeede in thy
field? from whence then hath it tares?
28 And he ſaid to them, Some ennious man hath done this.
Then the ſeruants ſaid vnto him, Wilt thou then that
we go & gather them vp?
29 But he ſaid, Nay, leſt while ye go about to gather the
tares, ye plucke vp alſo with them the wheate.
30 Let both growe together vntil the harueſt, and in time
of harueſt I wil ſay to the reapers, Gather ye firſt the
tares, and binde them in ſheaues to burne them: but
gather the wheate into my barne.
Mar.4.30. *Luke.13.19.* 31 ¶ * Another parable he put forth vnto them, ſaying,
The kingdome of heauē is like vnto a graine of muſtard
ſeede, which a man taketh and ſoweth in his field:
32 Which in deede is the leaſt of al ſeedes: but when it
is growen, it is the greateſt among herbes, & it is a tree,
ſo that the birdes of heauen come and builde in the
braunches thereof.
Luk.13.21. 33 ¶ * Another parable ſpake he to them, The kingdome
of heauen is like vnto leauen, which a woman taketh &
hideth in three peckes of meale, til al be leauened.
Mar.4.33. *34.* 34 ¶ * Al theſe things ſpake Ieſus vnto the multitude in
parables, and without parables ſpake he not to them,
35 That it might be fulfilled, which was ſpoken by the
Pſal.78.2. Prophet, ſaying, * I wil open my mouth in parables, and
wil vtter the things which haue bene kept ſecret from
the fundation of the world.
36 Then ſent Ieſus the multitude away, and went into the
houſe. And his diſciples came vnto him, ſaying, Declare
vnto vs the parable of the tares of that field.
37 Then anſwered he, and ſaid to them, He that ſoweth
the good ſeede, is the Sonne of man,
38 And the field is the worlde, & the good ſeede are the
children of the kingdome, and the tares are the children
of that wicked one.
Ioel.3.13. *reuel.14.15* 39 And the enemie that ſoweth them, is the deuil, * and
the harueſt is the end of the world, and the reapers be
the Angels.
40 As then the tares are gathered and burned in the fire,
ſo ſhal it be in the end of this world.
41 The ſoune of man ſhal ſend forth his Angels, and they
ſhal gather out of his kingdome al things that offend,

and

and them which doe iniquitie,
42 And shal cast them into a furnais of fire. There shalbe wailing and gnashing of teeth.
43 * Then shal the iust men shine as the sunne in the king dome of their Father. He that hath eares to heare, let him heare. *Dan.12.3.*
44 ¶ Againe, the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a treasure hid in the field, which when a man hath found, he hideth it, and for ioye thereof departeth and selleth al that he hath, and byeth that field.
45 ¶ Againe the kingdome of heauen is like to a marchant man, that seeketh good pearles,
46 Who hauing found a pearle of great price, went and sold al that he had, and bought it.
47 ¶ Againe the kingdome of heauen is like vnto a drawnet cast into the sea, that gathereth of al kinds *of things*.
48 Which, when it is ful, men drawe to land, and sit and gather the good into vessels, and cast the bad away.
49 So shal it be at the end of the world. The Angels shall go forth, and seuer the bad from among the iust.
50 And shal cast them into a furnais of fire: there shalbe wayling and gnashing of teeth.
51 ¶ Iesus said vnto them, Vnderstand ye al these things? They said vnto him, Yea, Lord.
52 Then said he vnto them, Therefore euery Scribe which is taught vnto the kingdome of heauen, is like vnto an housholder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things both newe and olde.
53 ¶ And it came to passe, that when Iesus had ended these parables, he departed thence,
54 * And came into his owne countrey, & taught them in their Synagogue, so that they were astonyed, and saide, Whence commeth this wisdome and great workes vnto this man? *Mar.6.1. luke.4.16.*
55 Is not this the carpenters sonne? Is not his mother called Marie, * and his brethren Iames and Ioses, and Simon and Iudas? *John.6.42.*
56 And are not his sisters al with vs? Whence then hath he al these things?
57 And they were offended with him. Then Iesus said to them, * A prophet is not without honour, saue in his own countrey, & in his owne house, *Mar.6.4. luke.4.24. iohn.4.44.*

58 And

58 And he did not manie great workes there, for their vnbeliefes ſake.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Herods iudgement of Chriſt. 3 Wherefore Iohn was bound, 10 and beheaded. 13 Ieſus departeth. 18 Of the fiue loaues, &c. 23 Chriſt prayeth. 24 The Apoſtles toſſed with the waues. 27 Faith. 30 Peter in ieopardie. 36 The hemme of Chriſts garment.

Mar.6.14. Luke.9.7.

1 AT * that time Herod the Tetrarche heard of the fame of Ieſus.

2 And ſaid vnto his ſeruants, This is that Iohn Baptiſt, he is riſen againe from the dead, and therfore great works are wrought by him.

Mar.6.17. Luke.3.19.

3 * For Herod had taken Iohn, and bound him, and put him in priſon for Herodias ſake, his brother Philips wife.

Leui.18.16 & 20.21.

4 For Iohn ſaid vnto him, It is not * lawful for thee to haue her.

Chap.21.26

5 And when he would haue put him to death, he feared the multitude, becauſe they counted him as a *Prophet.

6 But when Herods birth day was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced before them, and pleaſed Herod.

7 Wherefore he promiſed with an othe, that he woulde giue her whatſoeuer ſhe would aske.

8 And ſhe being before inſtructed of her mother, ſaid, Giue me here Iohn Baptiſts head in a platter.

9 And the King was ſorie: neuertheleſſe becauſe of the othe, and them that ſate with him at the table, he commaunded it to be giuen *her*,

10 And ſent, and beheaded Iohn in the priſon.

11 And his head was brought in a platter, and giuen to the maide, and ſhe brought it vnto her mother.

12 And his diſciples came, and tooke vp the bodie, and buried it, and went, and tolde Ieſus.

Mar.6.32. Luke.9.10.

13 *And when Ieſus heard it, he departed thence by ſhip into a deſert place apart. And when the multitude had heard it, they followed him on foote out of the cities.

14 And Ieſus went forth and ſawe a great multitude, and was moued with compaſſion toward them, and he healed their ſicke.

Mar.6.35. Luke 9.12. Iohn.6.5.

15 ¶And when euen was come, * his diſciples came to him, ſaying, This is a deſert place, and the time is already paſt: let the multitude depart, that they may go into the

the townes, and bye them vitayles.
16 But Iesus said to them, They haue no neede to go away: giue ye them to eat.
17 Then saide they vnto him, We haue here but fiue loaues, and two fishes.
18 And he said, Bring them hither to me.
19 And he commanded the multitude to sit downe on the grasse, and tooke the fiue loaues and the two fishes, and looked vp to heauen and blessed, and brake, & gaue the loaues to his disciples, & the disciples to the multitude.
20 And they did al eat, and were sufficed, and they tooke vp of the fragments that remained, twelue baskets ful.
21 And they that had eaten, were about fiue thousand mē, beside women and litle children.
22 ¶ And straight way Iesus compelled his disciples to enter into a ship, and to go ouer before him, while he sent the multitude away.
23 And assone as he had sent the multitude away, he went vp into a mountaine alone to pray: * and when the euening was come, he was there alone. *Mar. 6. 45. 46. 47.*
24 And the ship was now in the middes of the sea, and was tossed with waues: for it was a contrarie winde. *Iohn. 6. 16. 17. 18.*
25 And in the fourth watch of the night, Iesus went vnto them, walking on the sea.
26 And when his disciples sawe him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit, and cried out for feare.
27 But straight way Iesus spake vnto them, saying, Be of good comfort, It is I: be not afraid.
28 Then Peter answered him, and said, Master, if it be thou, byd me come vnto thee on the water.
29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come downe out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Iesus.
30 But when he sawe a mightie winde, he was afraid: and as he began to sinke, he cried, saying, Master, saue me.
31 So immediatly Iesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him, and said to him, O thou of litle faith, wherfore didest thou dout?
32 And assone as they were come into the ship, the winde ceased.
33 Then they that were in the ship, came and worshipped him, saying, Of a trueth thou art the Sonne of God.

Mar.6.54. 34 ¶ * And when they were come ouer, they came into the land of Gennezaret.

35 And when the men of that place knew him, they sent out into al that countrey round about, and brought vnto him al that were sicke,

36 And besought him, that they might touche the hemme of his garment onely: and as manie as touched it, were made whole.

CHAP. XV.

3 *The commandements and traditions of men.* 12 *Offence.* 13 *The plant which is rooted vp.* 14 *Blind leading the blind.* 18 *The heart.* 22 *The woman of Chanaan.* 26 *The childrens bread, whelps.* 28 *Faith.* 32. 4000 *men fed.* 36 *Thanksgiuing.*

1 THen came to Iesus the Scribes and Pharises, which were of Hierusalem, saying,

Mar.7.1. 2 * Why do thy disciples transgresse the tradition of the Elders? for they washe not their hands when they eat bread.

3 But he answered and said vnto them, Why do ye also transgresse the cõmandement of God by your traditiõ?

Exod.20.12 deut.5.16. ephe.6.2. 4 * For God hath commanded, saying, Honour thy father and mother: * and he that curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

Exo.21.17. leuit.20.9. 5 But ye say, Whosoeuer shal say to father or mother, By the gift that is *offred* by me, thou maiest haue profit,

prou.20.20 6 Though he honour not his father, or his mother, *shalbe free*: thus haue ye made the commandement of God of no authoritie by your tradition.

7 O hypocrites, Esaias prophecied wel of you, saying,

Esai.29.13. 8 * This people draweth nere vnto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with the lippes, but their heart is farre off from me.

9 But in vaine they worship me, teaching *for* doctrines, mens precepts.

10 Then he called the multitude vnto him, and saide to them, Heare and vnderstand.

Mar.7.18. 11 * That which goeth into the mouth, defileth not the man, but that which commeth out of the mouth, that defileth the man.

12 ¶ Then came his disciples, and said vnto him, Perceiuest thou not, that the Pharises are offended in hearing *this* saying?

13 But

13 But he answered and said, * Euerie plant which mine heauenly Father hath not planted, shalbe rooted vp. *Iohn.15.2.*

14 Let them alone, they be the * blinde leaders of the blinde: and if the blinde leade the blinde, both shall fall into the ditche. *Luke.6.39.*

15 ¶* Then answered Peter, and said to him, Declare vnto vs this parable. *Mar.7.17.*

16 Then said Iesus, Are ye yet without vnderstanding?

17 Perceiue ye not yet, that whatsoeuer entreth into the mouth, goeth into the bellie, and is cast out into the draught?

18 But those things which proceede out of the mouth, come from the heart, and they defile the man.

19 For out of the heart * come euil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornicatiõs, thefts, false testimonies, slãders. *Gene.6.5. and 8.21.*

20 These are the things, which defile the man: but to eat with vnwashen hands, defileth not the man. *mar.7.21.*

21 * And Iesus went thence, & departed into the coastes of Tyrus and Sidon. *Mar.7.24. 25.*

22 And beholde, a woman a Cananite came out of the same coastes, and cried, saying vnto him, Haue mercie on me, O Lord, the sonne of Dauid: my daughter is miserably vexed with a deuil.

23 But he answered her not a word. Then came to him his disciples, and besought him, saying, Send her away, for she crieth after vs.

24 But he answered, and said, I am not sent, but vnto the * lost sheepe of the house of Israel. *Chap. 10,6.*

25 Yet she came, and worshipped him, saying, Lord helpe me.

26 And he answered, and said, It is not good to take the childrens bread, and to cast it to whelpes.

27 But she said, Trueth, Lord: yet in deede the whelpes eat of the crommes, which fal from their masters table.

28 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it to thee, as thou desirest. And her daughter was made whole at that houre.

29 ¶ So Iesus * went away from thence, and came nere vnto the sea of Galile, and went vp into a mountaine and sate downe there. *Mar.7.31.*

30 And great multitudes came vnto him, * hauing with them, halt, blinde, domme, maimed & manie other, and *Esai.35.5.*

caſt them downe at Ieſus feete, and he healed them.

31 In ſo much that the multitude wondered, to ſee the domme ſpeake, the maymed whole, the halt to go, and the blinde to ſee: and they glorified the God of Iſrael.

Mar.8.1. 32 * Then Ieſus called his diſciples vnto him, and ſaid, I haue compaſsion on this multitude, becauſe they haue continued with me alreadie three daies, and haue nothing to eat: and I wil not let them depart faſting, leſt they faint in the way.

33 And his diſciples ſaid vnto him, Whence ſhoulde we get ſo much bread in the wildernes, as ſhould ſuffice ſo great a multitude?

34 And Ieſus ſaid vnto them, How manie loaues haue ye? And they ſaid, Seuen, and a fewe litle fiſhes.

35 Then he commanded the multitude to ſit downe on the ground,

36 And tooke the ſeuen loaues, and the fiſhes, and gaue thankes, and brake *them*, and gaue to his diſciples, & the diſciples to the multitude.

37 And they did al eat, and were ſufficed: and they tooke vp of the fragments that remained, ſeuen baskets ful.

38 And they that had eaten, were foure thouſand men, beſide women, and litle children.

39 Then *Ieſus* ſent away the multitude, and tooke ſhip, & came into the partes of Magdala.

CHAP. XVI.

4 *The ſigne of Ionas.* 6 *The leauen of the Phariſes,* 12 *for their doctrine.* 13 *The peoples opinion of Chriſt.* 17 *Faith commeth of God.* 18 *The Rocke.* 19 *The keyes.* 21 *Chriſt foreſheweth his death.* 24 *The forſaking of ones ſelfe, and the croſſe.* 25 *To loſe the life.*

Chap.12.38 mar.8.11. 1 THen * came the Phariſes and Saddnces, and did tempt *him*, deſiring him to ſhew them a ſigne from heauen.

2 But he anſwered, and ſaid vnto them, When it is euening ye ſay, Faire wether: for the ſkie is red.

Luke.12.54 3 * And in the morning *ye ſay*, To day *ſhalbe* a tempeſt: for the skie is red and lowring. O hypocrites, ye can diſcerne the face of the skie, and can ye not *diſcerne* the ſignes of the times?

Chap.12.39 4 * The wicked generation, and adulterous ſeeketh a ſigne, but there ſhal no ſigne be giuen it, but that ſigne

Jonas.1.17. of the Prophet * Ionas: ſo he left them, and departed.

5 ¶And

5 ¶And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had * forgotten to take bread *with them.* *Mar.8. 14.*

6 Then Iesus said vnto them, Take heede and beware of the leauen of the Pharises and Sadducees. *Luke.12.1.*

7 And they reasoned among them selues, saying, *It is* because we haue brought no bread.

8 But Iesus knowing it, said vnto them, O ye of litle faith, why reason you *thus* among your selues, because ye haue brought no bread?

9 Do ye not yet perceiue, neither remember the fiue loaues, when there were * fiue thousand *men*, and how manie baskets tooke ye vp? *Chap.14.17 Iohn.6 9.*

10 Neither the seuen loaues whē there were * foure thousand *men*, and how manie baskets tooke ye vp? *Chap.15.34*

11 Why perceiue ye not that I said not vnto you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leauen of the Pharises and Sadducees?

12 Then vnderstode they that he had not said that they should beware of the leauen of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharises and Sadducees.

13 ¶ * Now when Iesus came into the coastes of Cesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whome do men say that I, the Sonne of man am? *Mar.8. 27. Luke.9.18.*

14 And they said, Some *say* Iohn Baptist: and some, Elias: and others, Ieremias, or one of the Prophets.

15 He said vnto them, But whome say ye that I am?

16 Then Simon Peter answered, and said, * Thou art that Christ, the Sonne of the liuing God. *Iohn.6. 69.*

17 And Iesus answered, and said to him, Blessed art thou, Simon, the sonne of Ionas: for flesh and blood hath not reuealed it vnto thee, but my Father which is in heauen.

18 And I say also vnto thee, that thou art * Peter, & vpon this rocke I wil builde my Church: and the gates of hel shal not ouercome it. *Iohn.1. 42.*

19 And I * wil giue vnto thee the keyes of the kingdome of heauen, and whatsoeuer thou shalt binde vpon earth, shalbe bound in heauen: and whatsoeuer thou shalt loose on earth, shalbe loosed in heauen. *Iohn.20.21.*

20 Then he charged his disciples, that they should tel no man that he was Iesus that Christ.

21 ¶ From that time forth Iesus began to shewe vnto his

disciples, that he must go vnto Hierusalem, & suffer manie things of the Elders, & of the hie Priests, & Scribes, and be slaine, and be raised againe the third day.

22 Then Peter tooke him aside, and began to rebuke him, saying, Master, pitie thy selfe: this shall not be vnto thee.

23 Then he turned backe, and said vnto Peter, Get thee behinde me, Satan: thou art an offence vnto me, because thou vnderstandest not the things that are of God, but the things that are of men.

Chap.10.38 *mar.8.34.* *luke.9.23.* *& 14.27.* *Chap.10.39* 24 Iesus then said to his disciples, * If anie man wil followe me, let him forsake him self, and take vp his crosse, and followe me.

mar.8.35. *36.luke.9.* *24.25.26.* *& 17.33.* *Iohn.12.25* 25 For, * Whosoeuer wil saue his life, shal lose it: and whosoeuer shal lose his life for my sake, shal finde it.

26 * For what shal it profite a man though he shoulde wynne the whole world, if he lose his owne soule? or what shal a man giue for recompense of his soule?

Psal.62.12 *prou.2.6.* 27 For the Sonne of man shal come in the glorie of his Father with his Angels, and * then shal he giue to euery man according to his deedes.

Mar.9.1. *luke.9.27.* 28 * Verely I say vnto you, there be some of them that stand here, which shal not taste of death, til they haue seene the Sonne of man come in his kingdome.

CHAP. XVII.

2 The transfiguration of Christ. 5 Christ ought to be heard. 11 Elias. 13 Iohn Baptist. 17 The vnbeliefe of the Apostles. 20 The power of faith. 21 Prayer and fasting. 22 Christ foretelleth his Passion. 24 He payeth tribute.

Mar.9.2. *luke.9.28.* 1 AND * after six daies, Iesus tooke Peter, and Iames, and Iohn his brother, and brought them vp into an hie mountaine apart,

2 And was transfigured before them: and his face did shine as the Sunne, and his clothes were as white as the light.

3 And beholde, there appeared vnto them Moses, and Elias, talking with him.

4 Then answered Peter, & said to Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to be here: if thou wilt, let vs make here three tabernacles, one for thee, & one for Moses, & one for Elias.

5 While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloude shadowed them: and behold, there came a voice out of the cloud, saying,

saying, * This is that my beloued Sonne, in whome I am wel pleased: heare him. *Chap.3.17. 2.pet.1.17.*

6 And when the disciples heard that, they fel on their faces, and were sore afraied.

7 Then Iesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, & be not afraide.

8 And when they lifted vp their eies, they sawe no man, saue Iesus onely.

9 ¶And as they came downe from the mountaine, Iesus charged them, saying, Shewe the vision to no man, vntil the Sonne of man rise againe from the dead.

10 *And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the Scribes that * Elias must first come? *Mar.9.11. 12.*

11 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Certeinely Elias must first come, and restore al things. *Mal.4.5. chap.11.14*

12 But I say vnto you, that Elias is come alreadie, & they knew him not, but haue done vnto him whatsoeuer they would: likewise shal also the Sonne of man suffer of the.

13 Then the disciples perceiued that he spake vnto them of Iohn Baptist.

14 ¶ * And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certaine man, & fel downe at his feete, *Mar.9.14. Luke.9.38.*

15 And said, Maister, haue pitie on my sonne: for he is lunatike, and is sore vexed: for oft times he falleth into the fire, and oft times into the water.

16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not heale him.

17 Then Iesus answered, and said, O generation faithlesse, and crooked, how long now shal I be with you? how long now shal I suffer you? bring him hither to me.

18 And Iesus rebuked the deuil: and he went out of him: and the childe was healed at that houre.

19 Then came the disciples to Iesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?

20 And Iesus said vnto them, because of your vnbeliefe: for * verely I say vnto you, if ye haue faith *as much as is* a graine of mustard seede, ye shal say vnto this mountaine, Remoue hence to yonder place, and it shal remoue: and nothing shalbe vnpossible vnto you. *Luke.17.6. Chap.20.17*

21 How be it this kinde goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting. *mar.9.31. luk.9.44.*

22 ¶ And they * being in Galile, Iesus said vnto them, *and 7.24.*

The Sonne of man shalbe deliuered into the hãds of mẽ,
23 And they shal kil him, but the third day, shal he rise againe, and they were verie sorie.
24 ¶And when they were come to Capernaum, they that receiued polle money, came to Peter, and said, Doeth not your Master pay polle money?
25 He said, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Iesus preuented him, saying, What thinkest thou Simon? Of whome do the Kings of the earth take tribute, or polle money? of their children, or of strangers?
26 Peter said vnto him, Of strangers. Then said Iesus vnto him, Then are the children free.
27 Neuertheless, lest we should offend them: go to the sea, and cast in an angle, and take the first fishe that commeth vp, and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt finde a piece of twentie pence: that take, and giue it vnto them for me and thee.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 The greatest in the kingdome of God. 5 To receiue a litle childe. 6 To giue offence. 7 Offences. 9 The pulling out of the eye. 10 The Angels. 12 The lost sheepe. 15 The telling of one his fault. 17 Excommunication. 21 We must alwaies pardon the brother that repenteth. 23 The parable of the King that taketh an account of his seruants.

Mar.9.34. luke.9.46. 1 THe * same time the disciples came vnto Iesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdome of heauen?
2 And Iesus called a litle childe vnto him, and set him in the middes of them,
Chap.19.14. 1.cor.14.20. 3 And said, Verely I say vnto you, except ye be * conuerted, and become as litle children, ye shal not enter into the kingdome of heauen.
4 Whosoeuer therefore shal humble him self as this litle child, the same is the greatest in the kingdome of heauẽ.
5 And whosoeuer shal receiue one such litle child in my Name, receiueth me.
Mar.9.42. luke.17.2. 6 * But whosoeuer shal offend one of these litle ones which beleeue in me, it were better for him, that a milstone were hanged about his necke, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea.
7 Wo *be* vnto the world because of offences: for it must needes be that offences shal come, but wo *be* to that man, by whome the offence commeth.
8 * Wherefore,

8 * Wherefore, if thine hand or thy foote cause thee to offend, cut them of, and cast *them* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life, halt, or maimed, then hauing two hands, or two feete, to be cast into euerlasting fire. *Chap. 5.29. 30. mar. 9. 45.*

9 And if thine eye cause thee to offend, plucke it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eie, thē hauing two eies to be cast into hel fire.

10 See that ye despise not one of these litle ones: for I say vnto you, that in heauen their * angels alwayes behold the face of my Father which is in heauen. *Psal. 34.8.*

11 For * the Sonne of man is come to saue that which was lost. *Luk. 19.10.*

12 How thinke ye? * If a man haue an hundreth sheepe, & one of them be gone astray, doeth he not leaue ninety and nine, and goe into the mountaines, and seeke that which is gone astray? *Luk. 15.4.*

13 And if so be that he find it, Verely I say vnto you, he reioyceth more of that sheepe, then of the ninetie & nine which went not astray.

14 So is it not the wil of your Father which is in heauen, that one of these litle ones should perish.

15 ¶ * Moreouer, if thy brother trespace against thee, go and tel him his faute betweene thee and him alone: if he heare thee, thou hast wonne thy brother. *Leu. 19.17. luk. 17.3. iam. 5.19.*

16 But if he heare thee not, take yet with thee one or two, that by the * mouth of two or three witnesses, euery worde may be confirmed. *Deut. 19.15 iohn. 8.17.*

17 And if he refuse to heare them, tel it vnto the Church: and if he refuse to heare the Church also, let him be vnto thee as an heathen man, and a Publicane. *2. cor. 13.1. heb. 10. 28.*

18 Verely I say vnto you, * Whatsoeuer ye bind on earth, shalbe bound in heauen: and * whatsoeuer ye loose on earth, shalbe loosed in heauen. *1. Cor. 5.4. 2. thes. 3.14. Iohn. 20.23.*

19 Againe, verely I say vnto you, that if two of you shal agree in earth vpon any thing, whatsoeuer they shal desire, it shal be giuen thē of my Father which is in heauen.

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my Name, there am I in the middes of them.

21 Then came Peter to him, and said, Master, how oft shal my brother sinne against me, and I shal forgiue him? * vnto seuen times? *Luk. 17. 4.*

22 Iesus said vnto him, I say not to thee, vnto seuen

times,but vnto seuentie times seuen times?

23 Therefore is the kingdome of heauen likened vnto a certaine King,which would take an account of his seruants.

24 And when he had begon to recken,one was brought vnto him,which ought him ten thousand talents.

25 And because he had nothing to pay,his Lord commanded him to be sold,and his wife,and *his* children,and all that he had,and *the dette* to be payed.

26 The seruant therefore fel downe,and worshipped him, saying,Lord,refraine thine anger towarde me,and I will pay thee al.

27 Then that seruants Lord had compassion,& loosed him, and forgaue him the dette.

28 But when the seruant was departed, he founde one of his fellow seruants,which ought him an hundred pence, and he laied *handes* on him, and thratled him, saying, Pay me that thou owest.

29 Then his fellowe seruant fel downe at his feete, and besought him,saying, Refraine thine anger towards me, and I wil pay thee al.

30 Yet he would not, but went and cast him into prison, til he should pay the dette.

31 And when his *other* fellowe seruants saw what was done,they were very sory,and came, and declared vnto their Lord al that was done.

32 Then his Lord called him vnto him, and said to him, O euil seruant,I forgaue thee al that dette, because thou prayedst me.

33 Oughtest not thou also to haue had pitie on thy fellow seruant,euen as I had pitie on thee?

34 So his Lord was wroth, and deliuered him to the tormentours,til he should pay al that was due to him.

35 So likewise shal mine heauenly Father do vnto you, except ye forgiue from your hearts,ech one to his brother their trespasses.

CHAP. XIX.

2 The sicke are healed. 3 and 7 A bill of diuorcement. 12 Eunuches. 13 Children brought to Christ. 17 God onely good.The commaundements must be kept. 21 A perfect man. 23 A riche man. 26 Saluation commeth of God. 27 To leaue al and follow Christ.

1 And

1 AND * it came to passe, that when Iesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galile, and came into the coastes of Iudea beyond Iordan. *Mark.10.1.*

2 And great multitudes followed him, and he healed them there.

3 ¶ Then came vnto him the Pharises tempting him, and saying to him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife vpon euery occasion?

4 And he answered & said vnto them, Haue ye not read, * that he which made *them* at the beginning, made them male and female, *Gene.1.27.*

5 And said, * For this cause, shal a man leaue father and mother, and cleaue vnto his wife, and they which were two shalbe one flesh? *Gene.2.24. 1.cor.6.16. ephes.5.31.*

6 Wherefore they are no more twaine, but one flesh. Let not man therefore put asunder that, which God hath coupled together.

7 They said to him, Why did then * Moses command to giue a bil of diuorcement, and to put her away? *Deut.24.1.*

8 He said vnto them, Moses, because of the hardenes of your heart, suffred you to put away your wiues: but from the beginning it was not so.

9 I say therefore vnto you, * that whosoeuer shal put away his wife, except *it be* for whoredome, and marrie another, committeth adulterie: and whosoeuer marrieth her which is diuorced, doeth commit adulterie. *Chap.5.32. mar.10.11. luke.16.18. 1.cor.7.11.*

10 *Then* said his disciples to him, If the matter be so betweene man & wife, it is not good to marie.

11 But he said vnto them, Al men cannot receiue this thing, saue they to whome it is giuen.

12 For there are some eunuches, which were so borne of *their* mothers bellie: & there be some eunuches, which be gelded by men: and there be some eunuches, which haue gelded them selues for the kingdome of heauen. He that is able to receiue *this*, let him receiue it.

13 ¶ * Then were brought to him little children, that he should put *his* hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them. *Marke.10. 13.luk.18. 15.cha.18.*

14 But Iesus said, Suffer the litle children, & forbid them not to come to me: for of such is the kingdom of heauē. *3.*

15 And when he had put his hands on them, he departed thence.

16 ¶ * And

Mar.10.17. luk. 18.18. 16 ¶ * And beholde, one came and ſaid vnto him, Good Maſter, what good thing ſhal I do, that I may haue eternal life?

17 And he ſaid vnto him, Why calleſt thou me good? there is none good but one, euen God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keepe the commandements.

Exo.20.13. deut. 5. 16. rom.13.9. 18 He ſaid to him, Which? And Ieſus ſaid, * Theſe, Thou ſhalt not kil: Thou ſhalt not commit adulterie: Thou ſhalt not ſteale: Thou ſhalt not beare falſe witnes.

19 Honour thy father and mother: and thou ſhalt loue thy neighbour as thy ſelfe.

20 The yong man ſaid vnto him, I haue obſerued al theſe things from my youth: what lacke I yet?

21 Ieſus ſaid vnto him, If thou wilt be perfite, go, ſel that thou haſt, & giue it to the poore, and thou ſhalt haue treaſure in heauen, & come and followe me.

22 And when the yong man heard that ſaying, he went away ſorowful: for he had great poſſeſsions.

23 Then Ieſus ſaid vnto his diſciples, Verely I ſay vnto you, that a rich man ſhal hardely enter into the kingdome of heauen.

24 And againe I ſay vnto you, It is eaſier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

25 And when his diſciples heard it, they were exceedingly amaſed, ſaying, Who then can be ſaued?

26 And Ieſus beheld them, and ſaid vnto them, With men this is vnpoſsible, but with God al things are poſsible.

Mar.10.28. luke.18.28. 27 ¶ * Then anſwered Peter, and ſaid to him, Behold, we haue forſaken al, & folowed thee: what therefore ſhal we haue?

28 And Ieſus ſaid vnto them, Verely I ſay to you, that when the Sonne of man ſhal ſit in the throne of his Maieſtie, ye which followed me in the regeneration, * *Luk.22.29.* ſhal ſit alſo vpon twelue thrones, and iudge the twelue tribes of Iſrael.

29 And whoſoeuer ſhal forſake houſes, or brethren, or ſiſters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my Names ſake, he ſhal receiue an hundreth folde more, and ſhal inherite euerlaſting life. *Cha.20.16.*

mar.10.31. luk. 13.30. 30 * But many that are firſt, ſhalbe laſt, and the laſt *ſhalbe* firſt.

CHAP.

CHAP. XX.

1 *Labourers hired into the vineyarde.* 15 *The euil eye.* 17 *He foretelleth his passion.* 20 *Zebedeus sonnes.* 22 *The cuppe.* 28 *Christ is our minister.* 30 *Two blinde men.*

1 FOr the kingdom of heauen is like vnto a certain housholder, which went out at the dawning of the day to hire labourers into his vineyarde.

2 And he agreed with the Labourers for a peny a day, & sent them into his vineyarde.

3 And he went out about the third houre, and saw other standing idle in the market place,

4 And said vnto thē, Go ye also into *my* vineyard, & whatsoeuer is right, I wil giue you: & they went their way.

5 Againe he went out about the sixt and ninth houre, & did likewise.

6 And he went about the eleuenth houre, & found other standing idle, and said vnto them, Why stand ye here al the day idle?

7 They said vnto him, Because no man hath hired vs. He said to them, Go ye also into *my* vineyarde, and whatsoeuer is right, that shal ye receiue.

8 ¶And when euen was come, the master of the vineyard said vnto his steward, Cal the labourers, and giue them their hire, beginning at the last, til *thou come* to the first.

9 And they *which were hired* about the eleuenth houre, came and receiued euery man a peny.

10 Nowe when the first came, they supposed that they should receiue more, but they likewise receiued euery man a peny.

11 And when they had receiued it, they murmured against the master of the house,

12 Saying, These last haue wrought but one houre, & thou hast made them equal vnto vs, which haue borne the burden and heat of the day.

13 And he answered one of them, saying, Friend, I do thee no wrong: diddest thou not agree with me for a peny?

14 Take that which is thine owne, and go thy way: I will giue vnto this last, as much as to thee.

15 Is it not lawful for me to do as I wil with mine owne? Is thine eye euil because I am good?

16 * So the last shalbe first, and the first last: for many are called, but fewe chosen. *Cha.19.30. & 22.14. mar.10.31.*

17 * And *luk.13.30.*

Marke. 10. 32. *Luke.* 18. 31. 17 *And Ieſus went vp to Hieruſalem, & toke the twelue diſciples apart in the way, and ſaid vnto them,

18 Behold, we go vp to Hieruſalem, and the Sonne of man ſhalbe deliuered vnto the chiefe Prieſts, and vnto the Scribes, and they ſhal condemne him to death,

Ioh. 18. 32. 19 And *ſhal deliuer him to the Gentiles, to mocke, & to ſcourge, and to crucifie *him*, but the third day he ſhal riſe againe.

Marke. 10. 35. 20 * Then came to him the mother of Zebedeus children with her ſonnes, worſhipping *him*, and deſiring a certaine thing of him.

21 And he ſaid vnto her, What wouldeſt thou? She ſaid to him, Grant that theſe my two ſõnes may ſit, the one at thy right hãd, & the other at thy left hãd in thy kingdõ.

22 And Ieſus anſwered & ſaid, Ye know not what ye aske. Are ye able to drinke of the cup that I ſhal drinke of, & to be baptized with the baptiſme, that I ſhalbe baptized with? They ſaid to him, We are able.

23 And he ſaid vnto them, Ye ſhal drinke in deede of my cup, & ſhalbe baptized with the baptiſme, that I am baptized with, but to ſit at my right hand, and at my left hand, is not mine to giue: but *it ſhalbe giuen* to them for whom it is prepared of my Father.

Marke. 10. 41 *Luke.* 22. 25. 24 * And when the *other* ten heard this, they diſdained at the two brethren.

25 Therfore Ieſus called them vnto him, & ſaid, Ye know that the lords of the Gentiles haue domination ouer thẽ, & they that are great, exerciſe authoritie ouer thẽ.

26 But it ſhal not be ſo among you: but whoſoeuer wil be great among you, let him be your ſeruant.

27 And whoſoeuer wilbe chiefe among you, let him be your ſeruant.

Philip. 2. 7. 28 * Euen as the Sonne of man came not to be ſerued, but to ſerue, & to giue his life for the ranſom of many.

Marke. 10. 46. *Luke.* 18. 35. 29 ¶ * And as they departed from Iericho, a great multitude followed him.

30 And behold, two blinde men ſitting by the way ſide, when they heard that Ieſus paſſed by, cryed, ſaying, O Lord, the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on vs.

31 And the multitude rebuked them, becauſe they ſhould holde their peace: but they cryed the more, ſaying, O Lord, the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on vs.

32 Then

32 Then Ieſus ſtood ſtil, and called them, and ſaid, What wil ye that I ſhould doe to you?
33 They ſaid to him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened.
34 And Ieſus moued with compaſsion, touched their eyes, and immediatly their eyes receiued ſight, and they followed him.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Chriſt rideth on an aſſe into Hieruſalem. 12 He caſteth out the ſellers. 13 The houſe of prayer. 19 The withered fig tree 25 Iohns baptiſme. 28 Who do the wil of God. 30 Publicanes. Harlots. 33 Gods vineyard. The Iewes. 38 The ſonne killed of the husbandmen. 42 The corner ſtone.

1 AND * when they drewe nere to Hieruſalem, & were come to Bethphage, vnto the mount of the Oliues, Then ſent Ieſus two diſciples, *Mar. 11.1. Luke. 19.29.*
2 Saying to them, Go into the towne that is ouer againſt you, and anon ye ſhal finde an aſſe bound, & a colte with her: looſe them, and bring them vnto me.
3 And if any man ſay ought vnto you, ſay ye, that the Lord hath neede of them, and ſtraight way he wil let them go.
4 All this was done that it might be fulfilled, which was ſpoken by the Prophet, ſaying,
5 ¶ * Tel ye the daughter of Sion, Beholde, Thy Kinge commeth vnto thee, meeke, and ſitting vpon an aſſe, & a colte, the ſoale of an aſſe vſed to the yoke. *Eſa. 62.11. Zach. 9.9. Iohn. 12.15.*
6 So the diſciples went, & did as Ieſus had commanded them,
7 And brought the aſſe & the colte, and put on them their clothes, and ſet him thereon.
8 And a great multitude ſpred their garments in the way: and other cut downe branches from the trees, & ſtrawed them in the way.
9 Moreouer, the people that went before, and they alſo that followed, cryed, ſaying, Hoſanna to the Sonne of Dauid, bleſſed *be* he that commeth in the Name of the Lorde, Hoſanna *thou which art* in the higheſt *heauens.*
10 * And when he was come into Hieruſalem, al the citie was moued, ſaying, Who is this? *Mar. 11.11. Luke. 19.45.*
11 And the people ſaid, This is Ieſus that Prophet of Nazareth in Galile. *Iohn. 2.13.*
12 ¶ And Ieſus went into the Temple of God, and caſt out

Deu.14.25. out al them *that sold & bought in the Temple,& ouerthrew the tables of the money changers,& the seates of them that solde doues,

Esai .56.7. 13 And said to them,It is written,* My house shalbe cal-
Ierem.7.11. led the house of prayer : but * ye haue made it a denne
mar.11.17. of theeues.

luk. 19.46. 14 Then the blinde,and the halt came to him in the Temple,and he healed them.

15 But when the chiefe Priests and Scribes sawe the marueiles that he did,& the children crying in the Temple, & saying,Hosanna to the Sonne of Dauid,they disdained,

16 And said vnto him,Hearest thou what these say? And Ie-
Psal. 8. 2. sus said vnto them,Yea:read ye neuer,* By the mouth of babes & sucklings thou hast made perfit the praise?

17 ¶ So he left them,and went out of the citie vnto Bethania,and lodged there.

Mar.11.12. 18 *And in the morning,as he returned into the citie,he was hungrie,

19 And seeing a figge tree in the way,he came to it, and found nothing thereon,but leaues only,& said to it,Neuer fruite growe on thee hence forwardes. And anon the figge tree withered.

20 And when his disciples sawe it,they marueiled,saying, How soone is the figge tree withered!

Cha. 17.20. 21 And Iesus answered and said vnto them, * Verely I say vnto you,if ye haue faith,& doute not,ye shal not only do that,*which I haue done* to the figge tree, but also if ye say vnto this mountaine,Take thy selfe away, and cast thy selfe into the sea,it shalbe done.

Chap.7.7. 22 * And whatsoeuer ye shal aske in prayer,if ye beleeue,
iohn. 15. 7. ye shal receiue it.

1.ioh. 5.14. 23 ¶ * And when he was come into the Temple,the chief
Marke. 11. Priests,and the Elders of the people came vnto him, as
27.28.luke. he was teaching,& said,By what authoritie doest thou
20.1.2. these things? and who gaue thee this authoritie?

24 Then Iesus answered & said vnto them, I also wil aske of you a certaine thing, which if ye tel me, I likewise wil tel you by what authoritie I do these things.

25 The Baptisme of Iohn,whence was it? from heauen, or of men? Then they reasoned among themselues, saying, If we shal say from heauen,he wil say vnto vs,Why did ye not then beleeue him?

26 And

26 And if we say, Of men, we feare the multitude, * for all holde Iohn as a Prophet. *Chap. 14.5. mar. 6.20.*

27 Then they answered Iesus, and said, We can not tel. And he said vnto them, Neither tell I you by what authoritie I do these things.

28 ¶ But what thinke ye? A certaine man had two sonnes, and came to the elder, and said, Sonne, go and worke to-day in my vineyarde.

29 But he answered, and said, I will not: yet afterward he repented himselfe, and went.

30 Then came he to the second, and said likewise. And he answered, and said, I will, syr: yet he went not.

31 Whether of them twaine did the will of the father? They said vnto him, The first. Iesus said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that the Publicanes, and the harlots goe before you into the kingdome of God.

32 For Iohn came vnto you in the way of righteousnes, and ye beleeued him not: but the Publicanes, and the harlots beleeued him, and ye, though ye sawe it, were not moued with repentance afterward, that ye might beleeue him.

33 ¶ Heare another parable, There was a certaine housholder, * which planted a vineyarde, and hedged it round about, and made a winepresse therein, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a straunge countrey. *Esa. 5.1. Iere. 2.21. mark. 12.1. luke 20.9.*

34 And when the time of the fruite drewe nere, he sent his seruants to the husbandmen to receiue the fruites thereof.

35 And the husbandmen tooke his seruants and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.

36 Againe he sent other seruants, mo then the first: and they did the like vnto them.

37 But last of all he sent vnto them his owne sonne, saying, They will reuerence my sonne.

38 But when the husbandmen saw the sonne, they said among them selues, * This is the heire: come, let vs kill him, and let vs take his inheritance. *Chap. 26. 3.4. & 27.1 Iob. 11.53.*

39 So they tooke him, and cast him out of the vineyarde, and slewe him.

40 When therefore the Lord of the vineyarde shall come, what will he doe to those husbandmen?

41 They ſaid vnto him, He will cruelly deſtroy thoſe wicked men, and will let out his vineyarde vnto other huſbandmen, which ſhall deliuer him the fruites in their ſeaſons.

42 Ieſus ſaid vnto them, Read ye neuer in the Scriptures? *The ſtone which the builders refuſed, the ſame is made the head of the corner? This was the Lords dooing, and it is marueilous in our eyes.

Pſal.118. 22. act.4. 11.rom.9. 33.

43 Therefore ſay I vnto you, the kingdome of God ſhalbe taken from you, and ſhalbe giuen to a nation, which ſhall bring forth the fruites thereof.

Eſa.8.14. 44 *And whoſoeuer ſhall fall on this ſtone, he ſhalbe broken: but on whomſoeuer it ſhall fall, it will daſhe him a pieces.

45 And when the chief Prieſts and Phariſes had heard his parables, they perceyued that he ſpake of them.

46 And they ſeeking to lay handes on him, feared the people, becauſe they tooke him as a Prophet.

CHAP. XXII.

2 The parable of the mariage. 9 The calling of the Gentiles. 11 The wedding garment, faith. 16 Of Ceſars tribute. 23 They queſtion with Chriſt touching the reſurrection. 32 God is of the liuing. 36 The greateſt commaundement. 37 To loue God. 39 To loue our neighbour. 41 Ieſus reaſoneth with the Phariſes touching the Meſſias.

Luk.14.16. reuel.19.9. 1 THen *Ieſus anſwered, and ſpake vnto them againe in parables, ſaying,

2 The kingdome of heauen is like vnto a certaine King which maried his ſonne,

3 And ſent forth his ſeruants, to cal them that were byd to the wedding, but they would not come.

4 Againe he ſent forth other ſeruants, ſaying, Tell them which are bidden, beholde, I haue prepared my dinner: mine oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are readie: come vnto the mariage.

5 But they made light of it, and went their wayes, one to his farme, and another about his merchandiſe.

6 And the remnant tooke his ſeruants, and intreated them ſharpely, and ſlewe them.

7 But when the King heard it, he was wroth, and ſent forth his warriers, and deſtroyed thoſe murtherers, and burnt vp their citie.

8 Then

8 Then ſaid he to his ſeruants, Truely the wedding is prepared: but they which were bidden, were not worthie.

9 Go ye therefore out into the high wayes, and as manie as ye finde, bid them to the mariage.

10 So thoſe ſeruants went out into the *hie* wayes, and gathered together all that euer they found, both good and bad: ſo the wedding was furniſhed with gheſtes.

11 Then the King came in, to ſee the gheſtes, and ſawe there a man which had not on a wedding garment.

12 And he ſaid vnto him, Friend, how cameſt thou in hither, and haſt not on a wedding garment? And he was ſpeacheles.

13 Then ſaid the King to the ſeruants, Binde him hand and foote: take him away, & caſt him into vtter darkenes: * there ſhall be weeping and gnaſhing of teeth. *Chap. 8. 12.*

14 * For manie are called, but fewe choſen. *& 13. 42.*

15 ¶ * Then went the Phariſes and tooke counſel how they might tangle him in talke. *& 25. 30. Chap. 20.*

16 And they ſent vnto him their diſciples with the Herodians, ſaying, Maſter, we knowe that thou art true, and teacheſt the way of God truely, neither careſt for anie man: for thou conſidereſt not the perſone of men. *16. Mar. 12. 13 luk. 20. 20.*

17 Tell vs therefore, how thinkeſt thou? Is it lawfull to giue tribute vnto Ceſar, or not?

18 But Ieſus perceiued their wickednes, and ſaid, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?

19 Shewe me the tribute money. And they brought him a penie.

20 And he ſaid vnto them, Whoſe is this image and ſuperſcription?

21 They ſaid vnto him, Ceſars. Then ſaid he vnto them, * Giue therefore to Ceſar, the things which are Ceſars, and giue vnto God, thoſe things which are Gods. *Mar. 12. 17 luk. 20. 25. rom. 13. 7.*

22 And when they heard it, they marueiled, and left him, and went their way.

23 ¶ * The ſame day the Sadducés came to him (which ſay that there is no reſurrection) and asked him, *Marke 12. 18. luke 20. 27. act. 23. 8.*

24 Saying, Maſter, * Moſes ſaid, If a man dye, hauing no children, his brother ſhall marie his wife by the right of alliance, and raiſe vp ſeede vnto his brother. *Deut. 25. 5.*

25 Now there were with vs ſeuen brethren, and the firſt

maried a wife, and deceased: and hauing none yssue, left his wife vnto his brother.

26 Likewise also the second, and the third, vnto the seuenth.

27 And last of all the woman died also.

28 Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife shall she be of the seuen? for all had her.

29 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Ye are deceiued, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God.

30 For in the resurrection they neither marie wiues, nor wiues are bestowed in mariage, but are as the Angels of God in heauen.

31 And concerning the resurrection of the dead, haue ye not read what is spoken vnto you of God, saying,

Exod.3.6. mar.12.27. 32 * I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the liuing.

33 And when the multitude heard it, they were astonied at his doctrine.

Mar.12.28 34 ¶ * But when the Pharises had heard, that he had put the Sadduces to silence, they assembled together.

35 And one of them, *which was* an expounder of the Law, asked him a question, tempting him, and saying,

36 Master, which is the great cõmaundement in the Law?

Deut.6.5. mar.12.30 luk.10.27. 37 Iesus said to him, * Thou shalt loue the Lord thy God with all thine heart, with all thy soule, and with all thy minde.

38 This is the first and the great commaundement.

Mar.12.31 rom.13.9. gal.5.14. iam.2.8. 39 And the seconde is like vnto this, * Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

40 On these two commaundements hangeth the whole Law, and the Prophets.

Mar.12.35 luke 20.41. 41 ¶ * While the Pharises were gathered together, Iesus asked them,

42 Saying, what thinke ye of Christ? whose sonne is he? They said vnto him, Dauids.

43 He said vnto them, how then doeth Dauid in spirit call him Lord, saying,

Psal.110.1 44 * The Lord said to my Lord, Sit at my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footestoole?

45 If then Dauid call him Lord, how is he his sonne?

46 And

46 And none could answere him a worde, neither durst any from that day forth aske him any mo questions.

CHAP. XXIII.

2 How the Scribes teaching the people the Law of Moses behaue themselues. 5 Their phylacteries, & fringes. 7 Greetings. 8 We are brethren. 9 The Father. 10 The seruant. 13 To shut the kingdome of heauen. 14 To deuour widowes houses. 15 A Proselyte. 16 To sweare by the Temple. 23 To tithe mynt. 25 To cleanse the outside of the cuppe. 27 Painted sepulchres. 33 Serpentes, vipers. 37 The Henne.

1 THen spake Iesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,

2 Saying, The * Scribes & the Pharises sit in Moses seat. *Nehe.8.4.*

3 All therefore whatsoeuer they bid you obserue, that obserue and do: but after their workes do not: for they say, and do not.

4 * For they binde heauy burdens, and grieuous to be borne, and laye them on mens shoulders, but they themselues will not moue them with *one* of their fingers. *Luk.11.46. actes.15.10.*

5 All their workes they do for to be seene of men: for they make their phylacteries broad, and make long the * fringes of their garments, *Numb. 15. 38. deut.22.*

6 * And loue the chief place at feastes, and to haue the chief seates in the assemblies, *12. marke 12.38.*

7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi. *Luk.11.43. & 20.46.*

8 * But be not ye called, Rabbi: for one is your doctor, *to wit*, Christ, and all ye are brethren. *Iam.3.1.*

9 And * call no man your father vpon the earth: for there is but one, your Father which is in heauen. *Malac.1.6.*

10 Be not called doctors: for one is your doctor, *euen* Christ.

11 But he that is greatest among you, let him be your seruant.

12 * For whosoeuer will exalt himself, shalbe brought low: and whosoeuer will humble himself, shalbe exalted. *Luk.14.11. and 18.14.*

13 ¶ Wo therefore *be* vnto you Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites, because ye shut vp the kingdome of heauen before men: for ye your selues go not in, neither suffer ye them that would enter, to come in. *Mark.12. 40. luk.20. 47.*

14 * Wo *be* vnto you Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites:

for ye deuoure widowes houſes, euen vnder a colour of long prayers: wherefore ye ſhall receiue the greater damnation.

15 Wo *be* vnto you, Scribes and Phariſes, hypocrites: for ye compaſſe ſea and land to make one of your profeſſion: and when he is made, ye make him two fold more the childe of hell, then you your ſelues.

16 Wo *be* vnto you blinde guides, which ſay, Whoſoeuer ſweareth by the Temple, it is nothing: but whoſoeuer ſweareth by the gold of the Temple, he offendeth.

17 Ye fooles and blinde, whether is greater, the golde, or the Temple that ſanctifieth the golde?

18 And whoſoeuer ſweareth by the altar, it is nothing: but whoſoeuer ſweareth by the offring *that is* vpon it, offendeth.

19 Ye fooles and blinde, whether is greater, the offring, or the altar which ſanctifieth the offring?

20 Whoſoeuer therefore ſweareth by the altar, ſweareth by it, and by all things thereon.

1. *King* 8. 13. 2. *chro.* 6. 2. 21 * And whoſoeuer ſweareth by the Temple, ſweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.

Cap. 5. 34. 22 * And he that ſweareth by heauen, ſweareth by the throne of God, and by him that ſitteth thereon.

Luk. 11. 42. 23 ¶ * Wo *be* to you, Scribes and Phariſes, hypocrites: for ye tithe mynt, and annyſe, and commyn, and leaue the weightier matters of the Law, as iudgement, and mercie, and fidelitie. Theſe ought ye to haue done, and not to haue left the other.

24 Ye blinde guides, which ſtraine out a gnat, and ſwallowe a camell.

Luk. 11. 39. 25 ¶ Wo *be* to you, * Scribes and Phariſes, hypocrites: for ye make cleane the vtter ſide of the cup, and of the platter: but within they are full of briberie and exceſſe.

26 Thou blinde Phariſe, cleanſe firſt the inſide of the cup and platter, that the outſide of them may be cleane alſo.

27 Wo *be* to you, Scribes and Phariſes, hypocrites: for ye are like vnto whited tombes, which appeare beautiful outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all filthines.

28 So are ye alſo: for outward ye appeare righteous vnto men, but within ye are full of hypocriſie and iniquitie.

29 ¶ Wo

29 ¶ Woe *be* vnto you, Scribes and Phariſes, hypocrites: for ye buildе the tombes of the Prophets, and garniſh the ſepulchres of the righteous,

30 And ſay, if we had bene in the dayes of our fathers, we would not haue bene partners with them in the bloud of the Prophets.

31 So then ye be witneſſes vnto your ſelues, that ye are the children of them that murthered the Prophets.

32 Fulfill ye alſo the meaſure of your fathers.

33 O ſerpents, the generation of vipers, how ſhould ye eſcape the damnation of hell!

34 Wherefore behold, I ſend vnto you Prophets, and wiſe men, and Scribes, and of them ye ſhall kil and crucifie: and of them ſhall ye ſcourge in your Synagogues, and perſecute from citie to citie,

35 That vpon you may come all the righteous bloud that was ſhed vpon the earth, * from the bloud of Abel the righteous, vnto the bloud of Zacharias the ſonne of Barachias, * whom ye ſlewe betweene the Temple and the altar. *Gen.4.8.* *2.Chron. 24.22.*

36 Verely I ſay vnto you, all theſe things ſhal come vpon this generation.

37 * Hieruſalem, Hieruſalem, which killeſt the Prophets, and ſtoneſt them which are ſent to thee, how often would I haue gathered thy children together, as the henne gathereth her chickens vnder her wings, and ye would not! *Luk.13.34.*

38 Beholde, your habitation ſhalbe left vnto you deſolate,

39 For I ſaye vnto you, ye ſhall not ſee me henceforth til that ye ſaye, Bleſſed *is* he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

CHAP. XXIIII.

1 The deſtruction of the Temple. 4 The ſignes of Chriſtes comming. 12 Iniquitie. 23 Falſe Chriſtes. 29 The ſignes of the ende of the worlde. 31 The Angelles. 32 The figge tree. 37 The dayes of Noe. 42 We muſt watch. 45 The ſeruant.

1 AND * Ieſus went out, and departed from the Temple, and his diſciples came to him, to ſhewe him the building of the Temple. *Mar. 13.1. Luk.21.5.6.*

2 And Ieſus ſaid vnto them, See ye not all theſe things?

Luk.19.44 Verely I say vnto you, * there shall not be here left a stone vpon a stone, that shall not be cast downe.

3 And as he sate vpon the mount of Oliues, his disciples came vnto him aparte, saying, Tel vs when these things shalbe, and what signe *shalbe* of thy comming, and of the ende of the world.

Ephe.5.6. Coloss.2.18. 4 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, * Take heede that no man deceiue you.

5 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ, and shall deceiue many.

6 And ye shall heare of warres, and rumors of warres: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to passe, but the end is not yet.

7 For nacion shal rise against nacion, and realme against realme, and there shalbe famine, and pestilence, and earthquakes in diuers places.

8 All these are but the beginning of sorowes.

Chap.10.17 Luke 21.12. Joh. 15.20. Rom 16.2. 9 * Then shall they deliuer you vp to be afflicted, and shall kill you, and ye shalbe hated of all nations for my Names sake.

10 And then shall many be offended, and shal betray one another, and shall hate one another.

11 And many false prophets shall arise, and shall deceiue many.

12 And because iniquitie shalbe increased, the loue of many shalbe colde.

1 Thess.3. 13 * But he that endureth to the ende, he shalbe saued.

3. 2. tim. 5. 14 And this Gospel of the kingdome shalbe preached through the whole world for a witnes vnto all nations, and then shall the end come.

Mar.13.14 Luk. 21.20. Dan.9.27. 15 ¶ When ye * therefore shall see the abomination of desolation spoken of by * Daniel the Prophet, set in the holy place, (let him that readeth consider it.)

16 Then let them which be in Iudea, flee into the mountaines.

17 Let him which is on the house top, not come downe to fetch any thing out of his house.

18 And he that is in the field, let not him returne back to fetch his clothes.

19 And woe *shalbe* to them that are with childe, & to them that giue sucke in those dayes.

20 But pray that your flight be not in the winter, neither

on

on the * Sabbath *day*. *Act.1.12.*

21 For then shalbe great tribulation, such as was not frō the beginning of the world to this time, nor shalbe.

22 And except those dayes should be shortened, there should no flesh be saued: but for the elects sake those dayes shalbe shortened.

23 * Then if any shall say vnto you, Loe, here is Christ, or there, beleeue it not. *Mar.13.21 luke.17.23.*

24 For there shall arise false Christes, and false prophets, and shall shewe great signes and wonders, so that if it were possible, they should deceyue the very elect.

25 Behold, I haue tolde you before.

26 Wherefore if they shall say vnto you, Beholde, he is in the desert, go not forth: Beholde, he is in the secret places, beleeue it not.

27 For as the lightning commeth out of the East, and is seene into the West, so shall also the comming of the Sonne of man be.

28 * For whersoeuer a dead carkeis is, thither will the Egles be gathered together. *Luke 17.37*

29 * And immediatly after the tribulations of those daies, shall the sunne be darkened, and the moone shall not giue her light, and the starres shall fall from heauen, & the powers of heauen shalbe shaken. *Mar.13.24 luke 21.25. esa. 13.10. ezech.32.7. ioel.2.31.*

30 And then shall appeare the signe of the Sonne of man in heauen: and then shall all the kinreds of the earth mourne, * and they shall see the Sonne of man come in the cloudes of heauen with power and great glorie. *and 3.15. Reuel.1.7.*

31 * And he shall sende his Angels with a great sounde of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect, from the foure windes, *and* from the one ende of the heauens vnto the other. *dan.7.13. 1Cor.15.52 1.thes.4.16*

32 Now learne the parable of the figge tree: when her bough is yet tender, & it putteth forth leaues, ye knowe that sommer *is* neere.

33 So likewyse ye, when yee see all these thinges, knowe that *the kingdome of God* is neere, *euen* at the doores.

34 Verely I say vnto you, this generation shall not passe, till all these things be done.

35 * Heauen and earth shall passe away: but my wordes shall not passe away. *Mar.13.31*

36 But of that day and houre knoweth no man, no not

the Angels of heauen, but my Father onely.

37 But as the daies of Noe *were*, so likewise shal the comming of the Sonne of man be.

Luk. 17. 26. Gen. 7. 1. pet. 3. 20. 38 * For as in the dayes *before* the flood, they did eate and drinke, marrie, and giue in marriage, vnto the day that Noe entred into the Arke,

39 And knewe nothing, tyll the floode came, and tooke them all away, so shall also the comming of the Sonne of man be.

Luk. 17. 36 40 * Then two shalbe in the fields, the one shalbe receyued, and the other shalbe refused.

41 Two women shalbe grinding at the mil: the one shalbe receiued, and the other shalbe refused.

Mar. 13. 35 42 * Watch therfore: for ye know not what houre your master will come.

Luk 12. 39. 1. thes. 5. 2 reue. 16. 15 43 Of * this be sure, that if the good man of the house knewe at what watch the thiefe would come, he would surely watche, and not suffer his house to bee digged thorowe.

44 Therefore be ye also ready: for in the houre that ye thinke not, will the Sonne of man come.

Luk. 12. 42. 45 * Who then is a faithfull seruant and wise, whome his master hath made ruler ouer his housholde, to giue the meate in season?

46 Blessed is that seruant, whom his master when he commeth, shall finde so dooing.

47 Verely I say vnto you, he shall make him ruler ouer all his goodes.

48 But if that euill seruant shall say in his heart, My master doth deferre his comming,

49 And begin to smite his fellowes, and to eate, and to drinke with the drunken:

50 That seruants master will come in a day, when he looketh not for him, and in an houre that he is not ware of,

Chap. 13. 42 and 25. 30. 51 And will cut him of, and giue him his portion with hypocrytes: * there shalbe weeping, and gnashing of teeth.

CHAP. XXV.

1 *The virgins looking for the Bridegrome.* 13 *Wee must watch.* 14 *The talentes deliuered vnto the seruantes.* 24 *The euill seruant.* 30 *After what sorte the last iudgement shalbe.* 41 *The cursed.*

1 Then

1 THen the kingdome of heauen ſhalbe likened vnto ten virgins, which tooke their lampes, and went foorth to meete the bridegrome.
2 And fiue of them were wiſe, and fiue fooliſh.
3 The fooliſh tooke their lampes, but tooke none oyle with them.
4 But the wiſe tooke oyle in their veſſels with their lꝑes.
5 Nowe while the bridegrome taried long, all ſlumbred and ſlept.
6 And at midnight there was a crie made, Beholde, the bridegrome commeth: go out to meete him.
7 Then al thoſe virgins aroſe, & trimmed their lampes.
8 And the fooliſhe ſaid to the wiſe, Giue vs of your oyle, for our lampes are out.
9 But the wiſe anſwered, ſaying, *Not ſo*, leaſt there will not be ynough for vs and you: but go ye rather to them that ſell, and bye for your ſelues.
10 And whyle they went to bye, the bridegrome came: & they that were ready, went in with him to the wedding, and the gate was ſhut.
11 Afterwardes came alſo the other virgins, ſaying, Lord, Lord, open to vs.
12 But he anſwered, and ſaid, Verely I ſaye vnto you, I knowe you not.
13 * Watch therfore: for ye knowe neyther the day, nor the houre, when the Sonne of man will come. *Chap.24.42 mar.13.35*
14 * For *the kingdome of heauen is* as a man that going into a ſtrange countrey, called his ſeruants, and deliuered to them his goodes. *Luke 19.12 13.*
15 And vnto one he gaue fiue talents, and to another two, and to another one, to euery man after his owne habilitie, and ſtraight way went from home.
16 Then he that had receiued the fiue talentes, went and occupied with them, and gayned other fiue talentes.
17 Likewiſe alſo, he that *receiued* two, he alſo gained other two.
18 But he that receiued that one, went and digged it in the earth, and hid his maſters money.
19 But after a long ſeaſon, the maſter of thoſe ſeruauntes came, and reckoned with them.
20 Then came he that had receiued fiue talentes, and brought other fiue talẽts, ſaying, Maſter, thou deliueredſt

vnto

vnto me fiue talents: beholde, I haue gained with the other fiue talents.

21 Then his maſter ſayde vnto him, It is well done good ſeruant & faithful, Thou haſt bene faithful in litle, I wil make thee ruler ouer much: enter into thy maſters ioy.

22 Alſo he that had receiued two talentes, came, & ſayde, Maſter, thou deliueredſt vnto me two talentes: behold, I haue gained two other talents more.

23 His maſter ſayd vnto him, It is wel done good ſeruant, and faithfull, Thou haſt bene faithful in litle, I wil make thee ruler ouer much: enter into thy maſters ioye.

24 Then he which had receiued the one talent, came, and ſayd, Maſter, I knewe that thou waſt an hard man, which reapeſt where thou ſowedſt not, and gathereſt where thou ſtrawedſt not:

25 I was therefore afraide, and went, and hid thy talent in the earth: beholde, thou haſt thine owne.

26 And his maſter anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, Thou euill ſeruant, & ſlouthfull, thou knoweſt that I reape where I ſowed not, and gather where I ſtrawed not.

27 Thou oughteſt therefore to haue put my money to the exchangers, and then at my comming ſhould I haue receiued mine owne with vantage.

28 Take therefore the talent from him, and giue it vnto him which hath ten talents.

Chap.13.12 mar.4.25. Iake 8.18. and 19.26. 29 *For vnto euery man that hath, it ſhalbe giuen, and he ſhall haue abundance, and from him that hath not, euen that he hath, ſhalbe taken away.

Chap.8.12. and 22.13. 30 Caſt therefore that vnprofitable ſeruant into vtter * darkenes: there ſhalbe weeping, & gnaſhing of teeth.

31 ¶ And when the Sonne of man commeth in his glorie, and all the holy Angels with him, then ſhall he ſit vpon the throne of his glorie,

32 And before him ſhalbe gathered all *nations*, & he ſhall ſeparate them one from another, as a ſhepheard ſeparateth the ſheepe from the goates.

33 And he ſhall ſet the ſheepe on his right hande, and the goates on the left.

34 Then ſhall the King ſay to them on his right hande, Come ye bleſſed of my Father: take the inheritance of the kingdome prepared for you from the *foundation* of the worlde.

35 *For

35 * For I was an hungred, and ye gaue me meate: I thirsted, and ye gaue me drinke: I was a straunger, and ye tooke me in vnto you. *Esa.58.7. Ezech.18.7.*

36 I was naked, and ye clothed me: I was * sicke, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came vnto me. *Eccle.7.39.*

37 Then shall the righteous answere him, saying, Lorde, when sawe we thee an hungred, & fed thee? or a thirst, and gaue thee drinke?

38 And when sawe we thee a straunger, and tooke thee in vnto vs? or naked, and clothed thee?

39 Or when sawe we thee sicke, or in prison, and came vnto thee?

40 And the King shal answere, & say vnto thē, Verely I say vnto you, in as much as ye haue done it vnto one of the least of these my brethren, ye haue done it to me.

41 Then shall he saye vnto them on the left hand, * Depart from me ye cursed, into euerlasting fire which is prepared for the deuill and his angels. *Psal.6.8. chap.7.23. luke.13.27.*

42 For I was an hungred, and ye gaue me no meate: I thirsted, and ye gaue me no drinke:

43 I was a stranger, and ye tooke me not In vnto you: I was naked, and ye clothed me not: sicke, and in prison, and ye visited me not.

44 Then shall they also answere him, saying, Lorde, when sawe we thee an hungred, or a thirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, & did not minister vnto thee?

45 Then shall he answere them, and say, Verely I say vnto you, in as much as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me.

46 * And these shall go into euerlasting paine, and the righteous into life eternall. *Dani.12.2. iohn 5.29.*

CHAP. XXVI.

3 The consultation of the Priests against Christ. 6 His feete are anointed. 15 Iudas selleth him. 26 The institution of the supper. 34 and 69 Peters denial. 38 Christ is heauie. 47 He is betrayed with a kisse. 56 He is led to Caiaphas. 64 He cōfesseth him self to be Christ. 67 They spet at him.

1 AND * it came to passe, when Iesus had finished all these sayings, he sayd vnto his disciples, *Mar.14.1. luke 22.1.*

2 Ye knowe that after two dayes is the Passeouer, & the Sonne of man shalbe deliuered to be crucified.

3 * Then assembled together the chiefe Priests, and the Scribes, *Iohn 11.47*

Scribes, and the Elders of the people into the hall of the high Prieſt, called Caiaphas:

4 And conſulted together that they might take Ieſus by ſubtiltie, and kill him.

5 But they ſaid, Not on the feaſt *day*, leaſt any vprore be among the people.

Mar. 14.3. *Iohn* 11.2. 6 ¶ * And when Ieſus was in Bethania, in the houſe of Simon the leper,

7 There came vnto him a woman, which had a boxe of very coſtly ointment, and powred it on his head, as he ſate at the table.

8 And when his diſciples ſawe it, they had indignation, ſaying, What needed this waſte?

9 For this ointment might haue bene ſolde for much, and bene giuen to the poore.

10 And Ieſus knowing it, ſaid vnto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for ſhe hath wrought a good worke vpon me.

Deut. 15.11 11 * For ye haue the poore alwayes with you, but mee ſhall ye not haue alwayes.

12 For in that ſhe powred this ointment on my bodie, ſhe dyd it to burie me.

13 Verely I ſay vnto you, whereſoeuer this goſpell ſhalbe preached throughout all the worlde, there ſhall alſo this that ſhe hath done, be ſpoken of for a memoriall of her.

Mar. 14.10 14 ¶ * Then one of the twelue, called Iudas Iſcariot, wēt vnto the chiefe Prieſts,

15 And ſayd, What will ye giue me, and I wil deliuer him vnto you? and they appointed vnto him thirtie *pieces* of ſiluer.

16 And frō that time, he ſoght opportunitie to betray him.

Mar. 14.12 *Luke* 22.7. 17 ¶ * Nowe on the firſt *day* of the feaſt of vnleauened bread, the diſciples came to Ieſus, ſaying vnto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eate the Paſſeouer?

18 And he ſayd, Goe ye into the cirie to ſuch a man, and ſay to him, The Maiſter ſaith, My time is at hande. I will keepe the Paſſeouer at thyne houſe with my diſciples.

19 And the diſciples did as Ieſus had giuen them charge, and made ready the Paſſeouer.

Luke 22.14 20 * So when the euen was come, he ſate downe with the

the twelue.

21 And as they did eate, he sayd, * Verely I say vnto you, that one of you shall betray me. *Mar.14.18 iob.13.21.*

22 And they were exceeding sorowfull, and began euery one of them to say vnto him, Is it I, Master?

23 And he answered and said, * He that dippeth his hande with me in the dishe, he shall betray me. *Psal.41.10*

24 Surely the Sonne of man goeth his way, as it is writtē of him: but wo *be* to that man, by whom the Sonne of man is betrayed: it had bene good for that man, if he had neuer bene borne.

25 Then Iudas which betrayed him, answered and sayde, Is it I, Master? He sayde vnto him, Thou hast saide it.

26 ¶ * And as they did eate, Iesus tooke the breade, and when he had blessed, he brake it, and gaue it to the disciples, and said, Take, eate: this is my bodie. *1. Cor. 11. 24.*

27 Also he tooke the cup, and when he had giuē thankes, he gaue it them, saying, Drinke ye all of it.

28 For this is my bloude of the Newe testament, that is shed for many, for the remission of sinnes.

29 I say vnto you, that I wil not drinke hence forth of this fruite of the vine vntill that day, when I shall drinke it newe with you in my Fathers kingdome.

30 And when they had sung a psalme, they went out into the mount of Oliues. *Mar.14. 27*

31 ¶ * Then sayd Iesus vnto them, All ye shall be offended by me this night: for it is written, I * wil smite the shepheard, & the sheepe of the flocke shalbe scattered. *iohn.16.32. and 18.8. Zacha.13.7*

32 But * after I am risen agayne, I will goe before you into Galile. *Mark.14. 28.& 16.7*

33 But Peter answered, & sayde vnto him, Though that al mē should be offēded by thee, yet wil I neuer be offēded.

34 * Iesus said vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, that this night, before the cock crow, thou shalt denie me thrise. *Iohn.13.38 mar.14.30*

35 Peter said vnto him, though I should dye with thee, I wil in no case denie thee. Likewise also said al the disciples.

36 ¶ * Then went Iesus with them into a place which is called Gethsemane, and sayd vnto his disciples, Sit ye here, while I go, and pray yonder. *Luk.22. 39.*

37 And he tooke vnto him Peter, & the two sones of Zebedeus, & began to waxe sorowful, & grieuously troubled.

38 Thē said Iesus vnto them, My soule is very heauie, *euen*

vnto

vnto the death: tarie ye here, and watch with me.

39 So he went a litle further, and fell on his face, & prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup passe from me: nenertheles, not as I will, but as thou wilt.

40 After, he came vnto the disciples, and founde them a sleepe, and said to Peter, What? could ye not watche with me one houre?

41 Watch, and pray, that ye enter not into tentation: the spirit in deede is readie, but the flesshe is weake.

42 Agayne he went away the seconde tyme, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup can not passe away from me, but that I must drinke it, thy will be done.

43 And he came, & founde them a sleepe againe, for their eyes were heauie.

44 So he left them and went away agayne, and prayed the third tyme, saying the same wordes.

45 Then came he to his disciples, and sayde vnto them, Sleepe henceforth, and take your rest: behold, the houre is at hande, and the Sonne of man is giuen into the hands of sinners.

46 Rise, let vs go: beholde, he is at hande that betrayeth me.

Mar.14.43 luk.22.47. ioh.18.3.

47 * And while he yet spake, lo, Iudas, one of the twelue, came, and with him a great multitude with swordes and staues, from the high Priestes and Elders of the people.

48 Nowe he that betrayed him, had giuen them a token, saying, Whomesoeuer I shall kisse, that is he, lay holde on him.

49 And forthwith he came to Iesus, and sayde, God saue thee, Master, and kissed him.

50 Then Iesus said vnto him, Friende, wherefore art thou come? Then came they, and layde handes on IESVS, and tooke him.

51 And behold, one of them which were with Iesus, stretched out *his* hand, and drewe his sworde, and strooke a seruant of the high Priest, and smote of his eare.

Gen.9.6. reue.13.10

52 Then sayd Iesus vnto him, Put vp thy sworde into his place: * for all that take the sworde, shall perishe with the sworde.

53 Eyther thinkest thou, that I can not now praye to my Father, and he will giue me moe then twelue legions of Angels?

54 Howe

54 How then should the * Scriptures be fulfilled, *which say*, that it must be so? *Isa. 53. 10.*

55 The same houre saide Iesus to the multitude, Ye be come out as *it were* agaynst a thiefe, with swordes and staues to take me: I sate dayly teaching in the Temple among you, and ye tooke me not.

56 But all this was done, that the Scriptures of the Prophets might be fulfilled. *Then al the disciples forsooke him, and fled. *Verse. 31.*

57 ¶ *And they toke Iesus, & led him to Caiaphas the hie Priest, where the Scribes & the Elders were assembled. *Mar. 14. 53. luke. 22. 54.*

58 And Peter folowed him a farre of vnto the hie Priests hal, and went in, & sate with the seruants to see the end. *iohn. 18. 14.*

59 Now * the chief Priests and the Elders, and all the whole councill sought false witnes agaynst Iesus, to put him to death. *Marke. 14. 55.*

60 But they founde none, and though many false witnesses came, yet founde they none: but at the last came two false witnesses,

61 And sayd, This man sayd, * I can destroye the Temple of God, and buylde it in three dayes. *Iohn. 2. 19.*

62 Then the chiefe Priest arose, and sayde to him, Answerest thou nothing? What is the matter that these men witnes against thee?

63 But Iesus helde his peace. Then the chiefe Priest answered, and said to him, I charge thee sweare vnto vs by the liuing God, to tell vs, If thou be that Christ, the Sonne of God, *or no.*

64 * Iesus sayd to him, Thou hast sayd it: neuertheles I say vnto you, hereafter shall ye see the Sonne of man, sitting at the right hand of the power *of God*, and come in the cloudes of the heauen. *Chap. 16. 27. rom. 14. 10. 1. thes. 4. 14.*

65 Then the hie Priest rent his clothes, saying, He hathe blasphemed, what haue we any more nede of witnesses? beholde: nowe ye haue heard his blasphemie.

66 What thinke ye? They answered, and saied, He is guiltie of death.

67 * Then spet they in his face, and bussetted him, and other smote him with roddes, *Isa. 50. 6.*

68 Saying, Prophecie to vs, O Christ, Who is he that smote thee? *Mar. 14. 66.*

69 ¶ * Peter sate without in the hal: and a maid came to him, *luke. 22. 55. iohn. 18. 25.*

him, saying, Thou also wast with Iesus of Galile?
70 But he denied before them all, saying, I wot not what thou sayest.
71 And when he went out into the porche, another maide sawe him, and sayd vnto them that were there, This man was also with Iesus of Nazareth.
72 And agayne he denied with an othe, saying, I knowe not the man.
73 So after a while, came vnto him they that stoode by, and said vnto Peter, Surely thou art also one of them: for euen thy speache bewrayeth thee.
74 Then began he to curse *himself*, and to sweare, saying, I know not the man. And immediatly the cocke crewe.
75 Then Peter remembred the wordes of Iesus, which had sayd vnto him, Before the cocke crowe, thou shalt denie me thrise. So he went out, and wept bitterly.

CHAP. XXVII.

2 He is deliuered bounde to Pilate. 5 Iudas hangeth himselfe. 19 Pilates wife. 20 Barabbas is asked. 24 Pilate washeth his hands. 29 Christ is crowned with thorne. 34 He is crucified, 49 Reuiled. 50 He giueth vp the Ghost. 57 He is buried. 62 The souldiers watch him.

Mark.15.1. Luke.22.66. Iohn.18.28.
1 WHen * the morning was come, all the chief Priests and the Elders of the people tooke counsel against Iesus, to put him to death,
2 And led him away bounde, and deliuered him vnto Pontius Pilate the gouernour.
3 ¶ Then when Iudas which betrayed him, sawe that he was condemned, he repented him selfe, and brought againe the thirtie *pieces* of siluer to the chiefe Priestes and Elders,
4 Saying, I haue sinned betraying the innocent bloud. But they sayd, What is that to vs? see thou to it.
5 And when he had caste downe the siluer *pieces* in the Temple, he departed, and went, * and hanged him selfe. *Act.1.18.*
6 And the chiefe Priestes tooke the siluer *pieces*, & sayd, It is not lawfull for vs to put them into the treasure, because it is the price of bloud.

7 And

7 And they tooke counſell, and bought with them a potters field, for the buriall of ſtraungers.
8 Wherefore that fielde is called, * the field of bloud, vntill this day. *Act. 1. 19.*
9 (Then was fulfilled that which was ſpoken by Ieremias the Prophet, ſaying, † And they tooke thirtie ſiluer *pieces*, the price of him that was valued, whom *they* of the children of Iſrael valued. *Zachar. 11. 12.*
10 And they gaue them for the potters field, as the Lord appoynted me.)
11 ¶ * And Ieſus ſtoode before the gouernour, and the gouernour asked him, ſaying, Art thou that King of the Iewes? Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Thou ſayeſt it. *Mar. 15. 2. Luke. 23. 3. Ioh. 18. 33.*
12 And when he was accuſed of the chiefe Prieſtes, and Elders, he anſwered nothing.
13 Then ſayde Pilate vnto him, Heareſt thou not howe many things they lay againſt thee?
14 But he anſwered him not to one worde, in ſo much that the gouernour maruelled greatly.
15 Nowe at the feaſt, the gouernour was wont to deliuer vnto the people a priſoner, whom they would.
16 And they had then a notable priſoner, called Barabbas.
17 When they were then gathered together, Pilate ſaid vnto them, Whether will ye that I let looſe vnto you Barabbas, or Ieſus which is called Chriſt?
18 (For he knewe well, that for enuie they had deliuered him.
19 Alſo when he was ſet downe vpon the iudgement ſeat, his wife ſent to him, ſaying, Haue thou nothing to doe with that iuſte man: for I haue ſuffered many thinges this day in a dreame by reaſon of him.)
20 † But the chief Prieſtes and the Elders had perſuaded the people that they ſhould aske Barabbas, and ſhould deſtroye Ieſus. *Mar. 15. 11. Luke. 23. 18. Ioh. 18. 40. Act. 3. 14.*
21 Then the gouernour anſwered, and ſayde vnto them, Whether of the twaine will ye that I let looſe vnto you? And they ſayd, Barabbas.
22 Pilate ſaid vnto them, What ſhall I doe then with Ieſus, which is called Chriſt? They all ſayde to him, Let him be crucified.
23 Then ſayde the gouernour, But what euill hathe hee done?

done? Then they cryed the more, saying, Let him be crucified.

24 When Pilate sawe that he auayled nothing, but that more tumulte was made, he tooke water & washed his hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blond of this iust man: looke ye to it.

25 Then answered all the people, and said, His blond *be* on vs, and on our children.

26 Thus let he Barabbas loose vnto them, and scourged Iesus, and deliuered him to be crucified.

Mar. 15.16 *iohn.* 19.2. 27 ¶ * Then the souldiers of the gouernour tooke Iesus into the common hall, and gathered about him the whole bande,

28 And they stripped him, and put about him a skarlet robe,

29 And platted a crowne of thornes, and put it vpon his head, and a reede in his right hand, and bowed theyr knees before him, & mocked him, saying, God saue thee King of the Iewes.

30 And spitted vpon him, and tooke a reede, and smote him on the head.

31 Thus when they had mocked him, they tooke the robe from him, and put his owne rayment on him, & led him away to crucifie him.

Mar. 15. 21 *luke* 23.26. 32 * And as they came out, they founde a man of Cyrene, named Simon: him they compelled to beare his crosse.

Mar. 15. 22 *iohn* 19.17. 33 * And when they came vnto the place called Golgotha, (that is to say, the place of *dead mens* skulles.)

34 They gaue him vineger to drinke, mingled with gall: and when he had tasted thereof, he would not drinke.

35 ¶ And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, and dyd cast lottes, that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by the Prophet, * They deuided my garmentes among them, and vpon my vesture dyd cast lottes.

Psal. 22.18. *mar.* 15.24.

36 And they sate, and watched him there.

37 ¶ They set vp also ouer his head his cause written, THIS IS IESVS THE KING OF THE IEWES.

38 ¶ And there were two theeues crucified with him, one on the right hand, and another on the left.

39 And

39 And they that passed by, reuiled him, wagging their heads,

40 And saying, * Thou that destroyest the Temple, & buildest it in three dayes, saue thy selfe: if thou be the Sõne of God, come downe from the crosse. *Iohn. 2. 19.*

41 Likewise also the hie Priestes mocking him, with the Scribes, and Elders, and Pharises, sayd,

42 He saued others, *but* he can not saue him selfe: if he be the King of Israel, let him now come downe from the crosse, and we will beleeue in him.

43 * He trusteth in God, let him deliuer him nowe, if he will haue him: for he said, I am the Sonne of God. *Psal. 22. 9.*

44 The selfe same thing also the theeues which were crucified with him, cast in his teeth.

45 Now from the sixt houre was there darkenes ouer all the land, vnto the ninth houre.

46 And about the ninth houre Iesus cryed with a loude voyce, saying, * Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is, My God, My God, why hast thou forsaken me? *Psal. 22. 1.*

47 And some of them that stoode there, when they heard it, sayd, This man calleth Elias.

48 And straight way one of them ran, & tooke * a spõdge, and filled it with vineger, and put it on a reede, & gaue him to drinke. *Psal. 69. 22*

49 Other sayd, Let be: let vs see, if Elias will come and saue him.

50 Then Iesus cryed againe with a loude voyce, and yelded vp the Ghost.

51 And beholde, * The vaile of the Temple was rente in twaine, from the top to the bottome, and the earth dyd quake, and the stones were clouen. *2. Chro. 3. 14.*

52 And the graues did open them selues, and many bodies of the Saintes, which slept, arose,

53 And came out of the graues after his resurrection, and went into the holy Citie, and appeared vnto many.

54 When the Centurion, and they that were with him watching Iesus, sawe the earthquake, & the thinges that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truely this was the Sonne of God.

55 ¶ And many women were there, beholding him a far of, which had folowed Iesus from Galile, ministring vnto him.

56 Among whom was Marie Magdalene, and Marie the mother of Iames, and Ioſes, and the mother of Zebedeus ſonnes.

Mar. 15.42 *Luke* 23. 50. *Iohn* 19:38.

57 ¶ * And when the euen was come, there came a riche man of Arimathea, named Ioſeph, who had alſo himſelf bene Ieſus diſciple.

58 He went to Pilate, and asked the body of Ieſus. Then Pilate commaunded the body to be deliuered.

59 So Ioſeph tooke the body, and wrapped it in a cleane linnen cloth.

60 And put it in his newe tombe, which he had hewē out in a rocke, and rolled a great ſtone to the doore of the ſepulchre, and departed.

61 And there was Marie Magdalene, and the other Marie ſitting ouer againſt the ſepulchre.

62 ¶ Now the next day that followed the Preparation *of the Sabbath*, the hie Prieſtes and Phariſes aſſembled to Pilate,

63 And ſayd, Syr, we remember that that deceiuer ſayde, while he was yet aliue, Within three dayes I will riſe.

64 Commaunde therefore, that the ſepulchre be made ſure vntill the third day, leaſt his diſciples come by night, and ſteale him away, and ſay vnto the people, He is riſen from the dead: ſo ſhall the laſt errour be worſe then the firſt.

65 Then Pilate ſaid vnto them, Ye haue a watche: goe, and make it ſure as ye knowe.

66 And they went, and made the ſepulchre ſure with the watche, and ſealed the ſtone.

CHAP. XXVIII.

1 The women go to the ſepulchre. 2 The Angel. 9 The women ſee Chriſt. 18 He ſendeth his Apoſtles to preache.

Mark. 16. 5. *Iohn.* 20. 11.

1 NOw * in the ende of the Sabbath, when the firſt day of the weeke began to dawne, Marie Magdalene, and the other Marie came to ſee the ſepulchre,

2 And behold, there was a great earthquake: for the Angel of the Lorde deſcended from heauen, and came and rolled backe the ſtone from the doore, and ſate vpon it.

3 And his countenance was like lightning, and his rayment white as ſnowe.

4 And for feare of him, the keepers were aſtonied, and became as dead men.

5 But

5 But the Angel answered, and saide to the women, Feare ye not: for I knowe that ye seeke Iesus which was crucified:

6 He is not here, for he is risen, as he sayde: come, see the place where the Lord was laid,

7 And go quickely, and tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead: and beholde, he goeth before you into Galile: there ye shal see him: lo, I haue tolde you.

8 So they departed quickely frō the sepulchre, with feare & great ioy, and did runne to bring his disciples word.

9 And as they went to tell his disciples, beholde, Iesus also met them, saying, God saue you. And they came, & tooke him by the feete, and worshipped him.

10 Then said Iesus vnto them, Be not afraid. Go, and tell my brethren, that they go into Galile, and there shall they see me.

11 ¶ Now whē they were gone, behold, some of the watch came into the citie, and shewed vnto the hie Priestes al the things that were done.

12 And they gathered them together with the Elders, & tooke coūsel, and gaue large money vnto the souldiers,

13 Saying, Say, His disciples came by night, & stole him away while we slept.

14 And if this matter come before the Gouernour to be heard, we will perswade him, and so vse the matter that you shall not neede to care.

15 So they tooke the money, & did as they were taught: & this saying is noysed among the Iewes vnto this day.

16 ¶ Then the eleuen disciples went into Galile, into a mountaine, where Iesus had appointed them.

17 And when they sawe him, they worshipped him: but some doubted.

18 And Iesus came, and spake vnto them, saying, *Al power is giuen vnto me in heauen, and in earth. *Chap.11.27. Iohn.17.2. Hebre.1.2. Mar.16.15.

19 *Go therefore, and teache all nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and the Sonne, and the holy Ghost.

20 Teaching them to obserue all thinges, whatsoeuer I haue commanded you: and lo, *I am with you alwaye, vntill the ende of the world, AMEN. *Iohn 14.18.

THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS CHRIST ACCORding to Marke.

CHAP. I.

4 *Iohn baptizeth.* 6 *His apparell and meate.* 9 *Iesus is baptized.* 12 *He is tempted.* 14 *He preacheth the Gospell.* 21. *and* 39 *He teacheth in the Synagogues.* 23 *He healeth one that had a deuil.* 29 *Peters mother in lawe.* 32 *Many diseased persones.* 40 *The Leper.*

1 THE beginning of the Gospell of Iesus Christ, the Sonne of God:

Malac. 3.1. 2 As it is written in the Prophets, *Beholde, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

Isai. 40.3. Luk. 3.4. Ioh. 1.15. 3 * The voyce of him that crieth in the wildernes is, Prepare the way of the Lorde: make his paths straight.

Mat. 3.1. 4 * Iohn did baptize in the wildernes, and preache the baptisme of amendement of life, for remission of sinnes.

5 And all the countrey of Iudea, and they of Hierusalem went out vnto him, and were all baptized of him in the riuer Iordan, confessing their sinnes.

Mat. 3.4. 6 * Now Iohn was clothed with Camels heare, & with a girdle of a skinne about his loynes: and he did eate

Leuit. 11.22 * Locustes and wilde hony.

Mat. 3.11. Luk. 3.16. Ioh. 1.26. Acts. 1.5. & 2.4. & 11. 15. & 19.4. 7 * And preached, saying, A stronger then I, commeth after me, whose shoes latchet I am not worthie to stoup downe, and vnloose.

8 Truely I haue baptized you with water: but he will baptize you with the holy Ghost.

Mat. 3.13. Luk. 3.21. Ioh. 1.33. 9 ¶ * And It came to passe in those dayes, that IESVS came from Nazareth a citie of Galile, & was baptized of Iohn in Iordan.

10 And assoone as he was come out of the water, *Iohn* sawe the heauens clouen in twayne, and the holy Ghost descending vpon him like a doue.

11 Then there was a voyce from heauen, *saying*, Thou art my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased.

12 * And

12 * And immediatly the Spirit driueth him into the wil- *Matth.4.1.*
dernes. *luk.4.1.*
13 And he was there in the wildernes fortie dayes, and *hebr.2.18.*
was tempted of Satan: he was also with the wilde
beastes, And the Angels ministred vnto him.
14 ¶* Now after that Iohn was committed *to prison*, *Matt.4.12.*
Iesus came into Galile, preaching the Gospel of the *luk.4.14.*
kingdome of God, *iohn 4.43.*
15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdome of
God is at hand: repent and beleeue the Gospell.
16 ¶* And as he walked by the sea of Galile, he sawe Si- *Matt.4.18.*
mon, and Andrewe his brother, casting a nette into the *luk.5.2.*
sea, (for they were fishers.)
17 Then Iesus said vnto them, Followe me, and I will
make you to be fishers of men.
18 And streight way they forsooke their nets, and fol-
lowed him.
19 And when he had gone a litle further thence, he sawe
Iames *the sonne* of Zebedeus, and Iohn his brother, as
they were in the ship, mending their nettes.
20 And anon he called them: and they left their father
Zebedeus in the ship with his hyred seruants, and went
their way after him.
21 ¶ So * they entred into Capernaum, and straight *Matt.4.13.*
way on the Sabbath day he entred into the Synagogue, *luk.4.31.*
and taught.
22 And they were astonied at his doctrine, *for he taught *Mat.7.28.*
them as one that had authoritie, and not as the Scribes. *luk.4.32.*
23 ¶ And there was in their Synagogue a man, in whom
was an vncleane spirit, and he cried out,
24 Saying, Ah, what haue we to do with thee, O Iesus of
Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy vs? I knowe thee
what thou art, *euen* that holie one of God.
25 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Holde thy peace, and
come out of him.
26 And the vncleane spirit tare him, and cried with a
loude voyce, and came out of him.
27 And they were all amased, so that they demaunded
one of another, saying, What thing is this? what newe
doctrine is this? for he commaundeth euen the foule
spirits with authoritie, and they obey him.
28 And immediatly his fame spred abroade throughout

all the region bordering on Galile.

Mat.8.14. luk.4.38. 29 ¶ * And assoone as they were come out of the Synagogue, they entred into the house of Simon & Andrewe, with Iames and Iohn.

30 And Simons wiues mother lay sicke of a feuer, and anon they tolde him of her.

31 And he came and tooke her by the hand, and lifted her vp, and the feuer forsooke her by and by, and she ministred vnto them.

32 And when euen was come, at what time the sunne setteth, they brought to him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with deuils.

33 And the whole citie was gathered together at the doore.

34 And he healed many that were sicke of diuers diseases: and he cast out many deuils, and suffred not the deuils to say that they knewe him.

35 And in the morning verie early before day, *Iesus* arose and went out into a solitarie place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon, and they that were with him, followed carefully after him.

37 And when they had founde him, they said vnto him, All men seeke for thee.

38 Then he saide vnto them, Let vs go into the next townes, that I may preach there also: for I came out for that purpose.

39 And he preached in their Synagogues, throughout all Galile, and cast the deuils out.

Matth. 8.2. luk.5.12. 40 ¶ * And there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and kneeled downe vnto him, and said to him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane.

41 And Iesus had compassion, and put forth his hand, and touched him, and said to him, I will: be thou cleane.

42 And assoone as he had spoken, immediatly the leprosie departed from him, and he was made cleane.

43 And after he had giuen him a streight commaundement, he sent him away forthwith,

44 And said vnto him, See thou say nothing to any man, *Leuit.14.4.* but get thee hence, and shew thy selfe to the * Priest, and offer for thy clensing those things, which Moses commaunded, for a testimoniall vnto them.

Luk.5.15. 45 But when he was departed, * he began to tell many

things, and to publish the matter: so that Iesus could no more openly enter into the citie, but was without in desert places: & they came to him frō euery quarter.

CHAP. II.

3. and 4 One sicke of the palsie, hauing his sinnes forgiuen him, is healed. 14 Matthewe is called. 19 Fastings and afflictions are foretolde. 23 The disciples plucke the eares of corne. 26 The shewebread.

1 AFter * *a fewe* dayes, he entred into Capernaum a- *Mat.9.1.*
gaine, and it was noysed that he was in the house. *luk.5.18.*

2 And anon, many gathered together, in so much that the places about the doore could not receiue any more: and he preached the worde vnto them.

3 And there came vnto him, that brought one sicke of the palsie, borne of foure men.

4 And because they could not come nere vnto him for the multitude, they vncouered the roofe of the house where he was: and when they had broken it open, they let downe the bed, wherein the sicke of the palsie laye.

5 Now when Iesus saw their faith, he said to the sicke of the palsie, Sonne, thy sinnes are forgiuen thee.

6 And there were certaine of the Scribes, sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts,

7 Why doeth this man speake suche blasphemies? * who *Iob 14.4.*
can forgiue sinnes, but God only? *isa. 43.25.*

8 And immediatly when Iesus perceiued in his spirit, that thus they reasoned with them selues, he said vnto them, Why reason ye these things in your hearts?

9 Whether is it easier to saye to the sicke of the palsie, Thy sinnes are forgiuen thee? or to say, Arise, and take vp thy bed, and walke?

10 But that ye may knowe, that the Sonne of man hath authoritie in earth to forgiue sinnes, (he said vnto the sicke of the palsie,)

11 I say vnto thee, Arise and take vp thy bed, and get thee hence into thine owne house.

12 And by & by he arose, & tooke vp his bed, and went forth before thē all, in so much that they were all amased, & glorified God, saying, We neuer saw such a thing.

13 ¶ Then he went forth againe toward the sea, and all the people resorted vnto him, and he taught them. *Matth.9.9.*

14 * And as Iesus passed by, he sawe Leui *the sonne* of Al- *luk.5.27.*
pheus

phens sit at the receite of custome, and said vnto him, Followe me. And he arose, and followed him.

15 ¶ And it came to passe, as Iesus sate at table in his house, many Publicanes and sinners sate at table also with Iesus, and his disciples: for there were many that followed him.

16 And when the Scribes and Pharises saw him eat with the Publicanes and sinners, they said vnto his disciples, Howe is it, that he eateth and drinketh with Publicanes and sinners?

17 Now when Iesus heard it, he said vnto them, The whole haue no neede of the physition, but the sicke. * I came not to call the righteous, but the sinners to repentance.

1.Tim.1. 13.

18 * And the disciples of Iohn, and the Pharises did fast, and came and said vnto him, Why do the disciples of Iohn, and of the Pharises fast, and thy disciples fast not?

Mat. 9.14. Luk. 5.33.

19 And Iesus said vnto them, Can the children of the mariage chamber fast, whiles the bridegrome is with them? as long as they haue the bridegrome with them, they can not fast.

20 But the dayes will come, when the bridegrome shalbe taken from them, and then shall they fast in those dayes.

21 Also no man soweth a piece of newe cloth in an olde garment: for els the newe piece that filled it vp, taketh away *somewhat* from the olde, and the breache is worse.

22 Likewise, no man putteth newe wine into old vessels: for els the new wine breaketh the vessels, and the wine runneth out, and the vessels are lost: but new wine must be put into new vessels.

23 ¶ * And it came to passe as he went through the corne on the Sabbath day, that his disciples, as they went on their way, began to plucke the eares of corne.

Matt. 12.1. Luke 6.1.

24 And the Pharises said vnto him, Beholde, why do they on the Sabbath day, that which is not lawfull?

25 And he said to them, Haue ye neuer read what * Dauid did, when he had nede, and was an hungred, both he, and they that were with him?

1. Sa. 21.6.

26 How he went into the house of God, in the dayes of Abiathar the hie Priest, and did eat the shewe bread, which were not lawfull to eat, but for the * Priests,

Exo. 29.33. Leuit. 8.31. and 24.9.

and

and gaue also to them which were with him?

27 And he said to them, The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath.

28 Wherefore the Sonne of man is Lord, euen of the Sabbath.

CHAP. III.

1 *The withered hand is healed.* 6 *The Pharises consult with the Herodians.* 10 *Many are healed by touching Christ.* 11 *At his sight the deuils fall downe before him.* 14 *The twelue Apostles.* 24 *The kingdome deuided against it self.* 29 *Blasphemie against the holy Ghost.* 33 *Christes parentes.*

1 AND* he entred againe into the Synagogue, and there was a man which had a withered hand. *Mat. 12.9. Luke 6.6.*

2 And they watched him, whether he woulde heale him on the Sabbath day, that they might accuse him.

3 Then he said vnto the man which had the withered hand, Arise: *stand forth* in the mids.

4 And he said to them, Is it lawfull to doe a good deede on the Sabbath day, or to do euill? to saue the life, or to kill? But they held their peace.

5 Then he looked round about on them angerly, mourning also for the hardenes of their heartes, & said to the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored, as whole as the other.

6 ¶ And the Pharises departed, and straightway gathered a councill with the Herodians against him, that they might destroy him.

7 But Iesus auoyded with his disciples to the sea: and a great multitude followed him from Galile, and from Iudea,

8 And from Hierusalem, and from Idumea, and beyond Iordan: & they that dwelled about Tyrus & Sidon, when they had heard what great things he did, came vnto him in great number.

9 And he commaunded his disciples, that a litle ship should waite for him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him.

10 For he had healed many, in so much that they preassed vpon him, to touch him as many as had plagues.

11 And when the vncleane spirits sawe him, they fell downe before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Sonne of God.

12 And

12 And he ſharpely rebuked thē, to the end they ſhould not vtter him.

Chap.6.7. mat.10.1. luk.9.1.

13 ¶ * Then he went vp into a mountaine, and called vnto him whom he would, and they came vnto him.

14 And he appointed twelue that they ſhould be with him, and that he might ſend them to preache,

15 And that they might haue power to heale ſickeneſſes, and to caſt out deuils.

16 And the firſt *was* Simon, and he named Simon, Peter.

17 Then Iames *the ſonne* of Zebedeus, and Iohn, Iames brother (and ſurnamed them Boanerges, which is, the ſonnes of thunder,)

18 And Andrewe, and Philippe, and Bartlemewe, and Matthewe, and Thomas, and Iames, *the ſonne* of Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Cananite,

19 And Iudas Iſcariot, who alſo betrayed him, and they came home.

20 And the multitude aſſembled againe, ſo that they could not ſo much as eat bread.

21 And when his kinſfolkes heard of it, they went out to lay holde on him: for they ſaid that he was beſide himſelfe.

Mat. 9.34. and 12.24. luke 11.15.

22 ¶ * And the Scribes which came downe from Hieruſalem, ſaid, He hath Beelzebub, and through the prince of the deuils he caſteth out deuils.

23 But he called them vnto him, and ſaid vnto them in parables, Howe can Satan driue out Satan?

24 For if a kingdome be deuided againſt it ſelf, that kingdome can not ſtand.

25 Or if a houſe be deuided againſt it ſelfe, that houſe can not continue.

26 So if Satan make inſurrection againſt him ſelfe, and be deuided, he can not endure, but is at an ende.

27 No man can enter into a ſtrong mans houſe, and take away his goods, except he firſt binde that ſtrong man, and then ſpoyle his houſe.

Matth.12. 31. luk.12. 10. 1. iohn 5.16.

28 ¶ * Verely I ſay vnto you, all ſinnes ſhalbe forgiuen vnto the children of men, and blaſphemies, wherewith they blaſpheme:

29 But he that blaſphemeth againſt the holy Ghoſt, ſhall neuer haue forgiuenes, but is culpable of eternall damnation,

30 Becauſe

30 Because they said, He had an vncleane spirit.

31 ¶* Then came his brethren and mother, and stode without, and sent vnto him, and called him. *Mat.* 12.46 *luke* 8.19.

32 And the people sate about him, and they said vnto him, Behold, thy mother, and thy brethren seeke for thee without.

33 But he answered them, saying, Who is my mother and my brethren?

34 And he looked round about on them, which sate in compasse about him, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren.

35 For whosoeuer doeth the wil of God, he is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

CHAP. IIII.

4 The parable of the sower, 14 and the meaning thereof. 18 Thornes. 21 The candle. 26 Of him that sowed, and then slept. 31 The graine of mustard seede. 38 Christ sleepeth in the ship.

1 AND* he began againe to teache by the sea side, and there gathered vnto him a great multitude, so that he entred into a ship, and sate in the sea, and all the people was by the sea side on the land. *Matt.* 13.1. *luke* 8.4.

2 And he taught them many things in parables, and said vnto them in his doctrine.

3 Hearken: Behold, there went out a sower to sowe.

4 And it came to passe as he sowed, that some fell by the way side, and the foules of the heauen came, and deuoured it vp.

5 And some fel on stonie ground, where it had not much earth, & by and by sprang vp, because it had not depth of earth.

6 But assone as the Sunne was vp, it was burnt vp, and because it had not roote, it withered away.

7 And some fell among the thornes, and the thornes grewe vp, and choked it, so that it gaue no fruite.

8 Some againe fell in good ground, and did yelde fruite that sprong vp, and grewe, and it brought forth, some thirtie folde, some sixtie folde, & some an hundreth fold.

9 Then he said vnto them, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

10 And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelue, asked him of the parable.

11 And

11 And he ſaid vnto them, To you it is ginen to knowe the myſterie of the kingdome of God: but vnto them that are without, all things be done in parables,

Iſa.6.9. 12 * That they ſeing, may ſee, and not diſcerne: and they
mat.13.14. hearing, may heare, and not vnderſtand, leſt at any time
luke 8.10. they ſhould turne, & their ſinnes ſhould be forgiuē thē.
ioh. 12.40. 13 Againe he ſaid vnto them, Perceiue ye not this para-
actſ.28.26. ble? how then ſhould ye vnderſtand all *other* parables?
rom.11.8. 14 The ſower ſoweth the worde.

15 And theſe are they that *receiue the ſeede* by the wayes ſide, in whom the worde is ſowen: but when they haue heard it, Satan commeth immediatly, and taketh away the word that was ſowen in their hearts.

16 And likewiſe they that receiue the ſeede in ſtonie grounde, are they, which when they haue heard the worde, ſtraight wayes receiue it with gladnes.

17 Yet haue they no roote in them ſelues, and endure but a time: *for* when trouble and perſecution ariſeth for the worde, immediatly they be offended.

18 Alſo they that receiue the ſeede among the thornes, are ſuch as heare the worde:

1.Tim.6.17 19 But the cares of this world, and the *deceitfulnes of riches, and the luſts of other things enter in, and choke the worde, and it is vnfruitefull.

20 But they that haue receiued ſeede in good grounde, are they that heare the worde, and receiue it, and bring forth fruite: one *corne* thirtie, another ſixtie, and ſome an hundreth.

Mat. 5.15. 21 ¶ Alſo he ſaid vnto them, * Commeth the candle in,
luk.8.16. to be put vnder a buſhell, or vnder the bed, and not to
& 11.33. be put on a candleſticke?

Mat.10.26, 22 * For there is nothing hid, that ſhall not be opened:
luk.8.17. neither is there a ſecret, but that it ſhal come to light.
& 12.2, 23 If any man haue eares to heare, let him heare.

24 And he ſaid vnto them, Take heede what ye heare.
Mat.7.2. * With what meaſure ye mete, it ſhalbe meaſured vn-
luk.6.38. to you: and vnto you that heare, ſhall more be ginen.

Mat.13.12. 25 * For vnto him that hath, ſhall it be ginen, and from
and 25.29. him that hath not, ſhalbe take away, euen that he hath.
luk.8.18. 26 ¶ Alſo he ſaid, So is the kingdome of God, as if a
and 19.26. man ſhould caſt ſeede in the ground,

27 And ſhould ſleepe, and riſe vp night and day, and the ſeede

seede should spring & growe vp, he not knowing how.
28 For the earth bringeth forth fruite of it selfe, first the blade, then the eares, after that ful corne in the eares.
29 And assone as the fruite sheweth it selfe, anon he putteth in the sickle, because the harueſt is come.
30 ¶ * He said moreouer, Whereunto shal we liken the kingdome of God? or with what compariſon shal we compare it? *Mat.13.31. Luke.13.18.*
31 *It is* like a graine of mustard seede, which when it is sowen in the earth, is the leaſt of al seedes that be in the earth:
32 But after that it is sowen, it groweth vp, and is greateſt of al herbes, and beareth great branches, so that the foules of heauen may build vnder the shadow of it.
33 And *with manie such parables he preached the word vnto them, as they were able to heare it. *Mat.13.34.*
34 And without parables spake he nothing vnto them: but he expounded al things to his diſciples apart.
35 ¶ * Now the same day when euen was come, he saide vnto them, Let vs passe ouer vnto the other side. *Mat.8.23. Luke.8.22.*
36 And they left the multitude, and tooke him as he was in the ship, and there were also with him other litle shippes.
37 And there aroſe a great storme of winde, & the waues dashed into the ship, so that it was now ful.
38 And he was in the sterne a sleepe on a pillowe: and they awoke him, and said to him, Maſter, careſt thou not that we periſh?
39 And he roſe vp, and rebuked the winde, and said vnto the sea, Peace, and be stil. So the winde ceaſed, and it was a great calme.
40 Then he said vnto them, Why are ye so feareful? how is it that ye haue no faith?
41 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, Who is this, that both the winde and sea obey him?

CHAP. V.

2 One possessed is healed. 7 The deuil acknowledgeth Christ. 9 A legion of deuils 13 entreth into swine. 22 Iairs daughter. 25 A woman is healed of a bloodie issue. 26 Physicions. 34 Faith. 39 Sleepe.

1 AND * they came ouer to the other side of the sea into the countrey of the Gadarens. *Mat.8.28. Luke.8.26.*

2 And when he was come out of the ſhip, there met him incontinently out of the graues, a man which had an vncleane ſpirit:

3 Who had his abyding among the graues, and no man could bynde him, no not with chaines,

4 Becauſe that when he was often bound with fetters & chaines, he plucked the chaines aſunder, and brake the fetters in pieces, neither could anie man tame him.

5 And alwayes both night and daye he cryed in the mountaines, and in the graues, and ſtrooke him ſelfe with ſtones.

6 And when he ſawe Ieſus a farre of, he ranne, and worſhipped him,

7 And cryed with a loude voice, and ſaide, What haue I to do with thee, Ieſus the Sonne of the moſt high God? I wil that thou ſweare to me by God, that thou torment me not.

8 (For he ſaid vnto him, Come out of the man, thou vncleane ſpirit.)

9 And he asked him, What is thy name? and he anſwered, ſaying, My name is Legion: for we are manie.

10 And he prayed him inſtantly, that he would not ſend them away out of the countrey.

11 Now there was there in the mountaines a great heard of ſwine, feeding.

12 And al the deuils beſought him, ſaying, Send vs into the ſwine, that we may enter into them.

13 And incontinently Ieſus gaue them leaue. Then the vncleane ſpirits went out, and entred into the ſwine, & the heard ranne headlong from the high banke into the ſea, (and there were about two thouſand ſwine) & they were choked vp in the ſea.

14 And the ſwineheards fled, and tolde it in the citie, and in the countrey, and they came out to ſee what it was that was done.

15 And they came to Ieſus, and ſawe him that had bene poſſeſſed with the deuil, and had the legion, ſit both clothed, and in his right minde: and they were afraide.

16 And they that ſawe it, tolde them what was done to him that was poſſeſſed with the deuil, and concerning the ſwine.

17 Then they began to pray him, that he woulde depart from

from their coastes.

28 And when he was come into the ship, he that had bene possessed with the deuil, prayed him that he might be with him.

29 Howbeit, Iesus would not suffer him, but said vnto him, Go thy way home to thy friends, and shewe them what great things the Lord hath done vnto thee, and how he hath had compassion on thee.

30 So he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis, what great things Iesus had done vnto him: and al men did marueil.

31 ¶And when Iesus was come ouer againe by ship vnto the other side, a great multitude gathered together to him, and he was neere vnto the sea.

32 * And beholde, there came one of the rulers of the Synagogue, whose name was Iairus: and when he sawe him, he fel downe at his feete, *Mat.9.18. Luke.8.41.*

33 And besought him instantly, saying, My litle daughter lieth at point of death: *I pray thee* that thou wouldest come and lay thine hands on her, that she may be healed, and liue.

34 Then he went with him, and a great multitude followed him, and thronged him.

35 (And there was a certaine woman, which was diseased with an issue of blood twelue yeres,

36 And had suffered manie things of manie physicions, and had spent al that she had, and it auailed her nothing, but she became much worse.

37 When she had heard of Iesus, she came in the preasse behinde, and touched his garment.

38 For she said, If I may but touch his clothes, I shall be whole.

39 And straight waye the course of her blood was dried vp, & she felt in her bodie, that she was healed of that plague.

40 And immediatly when Iesus did know in him selfe the vertue that wēt out of him, he turned him round about in the preasse, & said, Who hath touched my clothes?

41 And his disciples said vnto him, Thou seest the multitude thronge thee, & sayest thou, Who did touch me?

42 And he looked round about, to see her that had done that.

33 And the woman feared and trembled: for she knewe what was done in her, and she came and fel downe before him, and tolde him the whole trueth.

34 And he said to her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole: go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.)

35 While he yet spake, there came from the *same* ruler of the Synagogues house *certaine* which said, Thy daughter is dead: why diseasest thou the Master any further?

36 Assone as Iesus heard that word spoken, he said vnto the ruler of the Synagogue, Be not afrayde: onely beleeue.

37 And he suffred no man to followe him saue Peter and Iames, and Iohn the brother of Iames.

38 So he came vnto the house of the ruler of the Synagogue, and sawe the tumult, and them that wept and wayled greatly.

39 And he went in, & said vnto them, Why make ye this trouble, & weepe? the childe is not dead, but sleepeth.

40 And they laught him to scorne: but he put them al out, and tooke the father, and the mother of the childe, and them that were with him, and entred in where the child laye,

41 And tooke the childe by the hand, and said vnto her, Talitha cumi, which is by interpretation, Maiden, I say vnto thee, arise.

42 And straight way the maiden arose, and walked: for she was of the age of twelue yeres, and they were astonied out of measure.

43 And he charged them straitly that no man shoulde know of it, and commanded to giue her meat.

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ preaching in his countrey, his owne contemne him. 6 The vnbeliefe of the Nazarites. 7 The Apostles are sent. 13 They cast out deuils: they anoint the sicke with oyle. 14 Herods opinion of Christ. 18 The cause of Iohns imprisonment. 22 Dauncing. 27 Iohn beheaded, 29 buried. 30 The Apostles returne from preaching. 34 Christ teacheth in the desert. 37 He feedeth the people with fiue loaues. 48 The Apostles are troubled on the sea. 56 The sicke that touch Christs garment, are healed.

Mat.13.54. Luke.4.16. 1 AND * he departed thence, and came into his owne countrey, and his disciples followed him.

2 And

2 And when the Sabbath was come, he began to teach in the Synagogue, & many that heard him, were astonied, and said, From whence hath this man these things? and what wisdome is this that is giuen vnto him, that euen such great workes are done by his hands!

3 Is not this that carpenter Maries sonne, the brother of Iames and Ioses, & of Iuda and Simon? and are not his sisters here with vs? And they were offended in him.

4 Then Iesus said vnto them, A * Prophet is not without honour, but in his owne countrey, and among his owne kindred, and in his owne house. *Mat.13.57. luke.4.24. iohn.4.44.*

5 And he coulde there do no great workes, saue that he laide his handes vpon a fewe sicke folke, and healed *them.*

6 And he marueiled at their vnbeliefe, * and went about by the townes on euerie side, teaching. *Mat.4.23. luke.13.22.*

7 ¶ * And he called vnto him the twelue, and began to send them forth two and two, and gaue them power ouer vncleane spirits, *Chap.3.14. mat.10.1. luke.9.1.*

8 And commanded them, that they should take nothing for *their* iourney, saue a staffe onely: neither scrip, neither bread, neither money in their girdels:

9 But that they should be shod with * sandals, and that they should not put on two coates. *Actes.12.8*

10 And he said vnto them, Whersoeuer ye shal enter into an house, there abide til ye depart thence.

11 * And whosoeuer shal not receiue you, nor heare you, when ye depart thence, * shake of the dust that is vnder your feete, for a witnes vnto them. Verely I say vnto you, It shalbe easier for Sodom, or Gomorrha at the day of iudgement, then for that citie. *Mat.10.14 luke.9.5. Act.13.51 and 18.6.*

12 ¶ And they went out, and preached, that *men* shoulde amend their lines.

13 And they cast out manie deuils: and they * anointed manie that were sicke, with oyle, and healed *them.* *Iam.5.14.*

14 ¶ * Then King Herod heard *of him* (for his name was made manifest) and saide, Iohn Baptist is risen againe from the dead, & therefore great workes are wrought by him. *Mat.14.1. luke.9.7.*

15 Other said, It is Elias, and some said, it is a Prophet, or as one of those Prophets.

16 * So when Herod heard it, he said, It is Iohn whome I beheaded *Luke.3.19.*

beheaded: he is risen from the dead.

17 For Herod him self had sent forth, and had taken Iohn, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake, which was his brother Philippes wife, because he had married her.

Leui. 18. 16 and 20. 21. 18 For Iohn said vnto Herod, * It is not lawful for thee to haue thy brothers wife.

19 Therefore Herodias layed waite against him, and would haue killed him, but she could not:

20 For Herod feared Iohn, knowing that he was a iust man, and an holie, and reuerenced him, and when he heard him, he did manie things, and heard him gladly.

21 But the time being conuenient, when Herod on his birth day made a banket to his princes and captaines, & chiefe estates of Galile:

22 And the daughter of the same Herodias came in, and daunced, and pleased Herod, and them that sate at table together, the King said vnto the maid, Aske of me what thou wilt, and I wil giue it thee.

23 And he sware vnto her, Whatsoeuer thou shalt aske of me, I wil giue it thee, *euen* vnto the half of my kingdom.

Mat. 14. 8. 24 * So she went forth, and said to her mother, What shal I aske? And she said, Iohn Baptists head.

25 Then she came in straight way with haste vnto the King, & asked, saying, I would that thou shouldest giue me euen now in a charger the head of Iohn Baptist.

26 Then the King was verie sorie: *yet* for his othes sake, and for their sakes which sate at table with him, he would not refuse her.

27 And immediatly the King sent the hangman, and gaue charge that his head should be brought in. So he went and beheaded him in the prison,

28 And brought his head in a charger, and gaue it to the maide, and the maide gaue it to her mother.

29 And when his disciples heard it, they came & tooke vp his bodie, and put it in a tombe.

Luke. 9. 10. 30 ¶ * And the Apostles gathered them selues together to Iesus, and tolde him al things, both what they had done, and what they had taught.

31 And he said vnto them, Come ye apart into the wildernes, and rest a while: for there were manie comers and goers: that they had not leasure to eate.

Mat. 14. 13 Luke. 9. 10. 32 * So they went by ship out of the way into a desert place.

33 But

33 But the people ſawe them when they departed, and manie knew him, and ranne a foote thither out of al cities, and came thither before them, and aſſembled vnto him.

34 * Then Ieſus went out, and ſawe a great multitude, & had compaſsion on them, becauſe they were like ſhepe which had no ſhepheard: * and he began to teach thē manie things. *Mat.* 9. 36. *and* 14. 14. *Luke* 9. 11.

35 * And when the day was now farre ſpent, his diſciples came vnto him, ſaying, This is a deſert place, and now the day is farre paſſed. *Mat.* 14. 15

36 Let them depart that they may go into the countrey and townes about, and buye them bread: for they haue nothing to eate.

37 But he anſwered, and ſaid vnto them, Giue ye them to eate. And they ſaid vnto him, Shal we go, and buie two hundreth pennie worth of bread, and giue them to eat?

38 * Then he ſaid vnto them, How manie loaues haue ye? go and looke. And when they knewe it, they ſaid, Fiue, and two fiſhes. *Mat.* 14. 17. *Luke* 9. 13. *John* 6. 9.

39 So he commanded them to make them al ſit downe by companies vpon the greene graſſe.

40 Then they ſate downe by rowes, by hundreds, and by fifties.

41 And he tooke the fiue loaues, and the two fiſhes, and looked vp to heauen, and gaue thankes, and brake the loaues, and gaue them to his diſciples to ſet before thē, and the two fiſhes he deuided among them al.

42 So they did al eate, and were ſatiſfied.

43 And they tooke vp twelue baskets ful of the fragments, and of the fiſhes.

44 And they that had eaten, were about fiue thouſand men.

45 ¶ And ſtraight way he cauſed his diſciples to go into the ſhip, and to go before vnto the other ſide vnto Bethſaida, while he ſent away the people.

46 Thē aſſone as he had ſent them away, he departed into a mountaine to pray.

47 * And when euen was come, the ſhippe was in the middes of the ſea, and he alone on the land. *Mat.* 14. 23. *John* 6. 15.

48 And he ſawe them troubled in rowing, (for the winde was contrarie vnto them) and about the fourth watch

of the night, he came vnto them, walking vpon the sea, and would haue passed by them.

49 And when they sawe him walking vpon the sea, they supposed it had bene a spirit, and cried out.

50 For they al sawe him, and were sore afraide: but anon he talked with them, and said vnto them, Be ye of good comfort: it is I, be not afraide.

51 Then he went vp vnto them into the ship, and the winde ceased, and they were much more amased in thē selues, and marueiled.

52 For they had not considered *the matter* of the loaues, because their hearts were hardened.

Mat. 14. 34 53 ¶ * And they came ouer, and went into the land of Gennesaret, and arriued.

54 So when they were come out of the ship, straight way they knew him.

55 And ranne about throughout al that region round about, *and* began to carie hither and thither in couches al that were sicke, where they heard that he was.

56 And whithersoeuer he entred into townes, or cities, or villages, they laide their sicke in the stretes, and praied him that they might touche at the least the edge of his garment. And as manie as touched him, were made whole.

CHAP. VII.

2 The Apostles are found faute with, for eating with vnwasshen hands. 4 The Pharises traditions about washings. Hypocrites. 8 Mens traditions more set by then Gods. 10 Parents must be honored. 14 The things that do in deede defile a man. 25 The woman of Chanane. 32 The deafe domme man is healed.

Mat. 15. 2. 1 THen * gathered vnto him the Pharises, and certaine of the Scribes which came from Hierusalem.

2 And when they sawe some of his disciples eate meate with common hands, (that is to say vnwashen) they complained.

3 (For the Pharises, and al the Iewes, except they wash their hāds oft, eat not, holding the traditiō of the Elders.

4 And *when they come* frō the market, except they washe, they eate not: and manie other things there be, which they haue taken vpon them to obserue, *as* the washing of cuppes, and pottes, and of brasen vessels, and of beddes.)

5 Then

5 Then asked him the Phariſes and Scribes, Why walke not thy diſciples according to the tradition of the Elders, but eate meate with vnwaſhen hands?

6 Then he anſwered and ſaid vnto them, Surely * Eſaye hath propheſied wel of you, hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth me with lippes, but their heart is farre away from me. *Iſa.29.13.*

7 But they worſhip me in vaine, teaching *for* doctrines the commandements of men.

8 For ye lay the commaundement of God apart, and obſerue the tradition of men, *as* the waſhing of pottes & of cuppes, & many other ſuch like things ye do.

9 And he ſaid vnto them, Wel, ye reiect the commandement of God that ye may obſerue your owne tradition.

10 For Moſes ſaid, * Honour thy father and thy mother: & * Whoſoeuer ſhal ſpeake euil of father or mother, let him dye the death. *Exo.20.12. deut. 5.16. ephes.6.2.*

11 But ye ſay, If a man ſay to father or mother, Corban, *that is*, By the gift that is *offred* by me, thou mayeſt haue profite, *he ſhalbe free*. *Exo.21.17. leui. 20.9. prou.20.20.*

12 So ye ſuffer him no more to do anie thing for his father, or his mother,

13 Making the worde of God of none authoritie, by your tradition which ye haue ordeined: and ye do manye ſuch like things.

14 * Then he called the whole multitude vnto him, and ſaid vnto them, Hearken you al vnto me, & vnderſtand. *Mat.15.10.*

15 There is nothing without a man, that can defile him, when it entreth into him: but the things which proceed out of him, are they which defile the man.

16 If any haue eares to heare, let him heare.

17 And when he came into an houſe, *away* from the people, his diſciples asked him concerning the parable.

18 And he ſaid vnto them, What? are ye without vnderſtanding alſo? Do ye not know that whatſoeuer thing frō without entreth into a man, can not defile him,

19 Becauſe it entreth not into his heart, but into the bellie, and goeth out into the draught which is the purging of al meates?

20 Then he ſaid, That which commeth out of man, that defileth man.

21 * For from within, *euen* out of the heart of men, proceede *Gen.6.5. & 8.21.*

ceede euil thoughtes, adulteries, fornications, murthers,
22 Theftes, couetouſnes, wickednes, deceit, vncleannes, a wicked eye, backebiting, pride, fooliſhnes.
23 Al theſe euil thinges come from within, and defile a man.
Mat. 15.21. 24 ¶ * And from thence he roſe, and went into the borders of Tyrus and Sidon, and entred into an houſe, & would that no man ſhould haue knowen: but he could not be hid.
25 For a certaine woman, whoſe litle daughter had an vncleane ſpirit, heard of him, and came, and fel at his feete,
26 (And the woman was a Greeke, a Syropheniſsian by nation) and ſhe beſought him that he would caſt out the deuil out of her daughter.
27 But Ieſus ſaid vnto her, Let the children firſt be fed: for it is not good to take the childrens bread, and to caſt it vnto whelpes.
28 Then ſhe anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, Trueth, Lorde: yet indeede the whelpes eate vnder the table of the childrens crommes.
29 Then he ſaid vnto her, For this ſaying go thy way: the deuil is gone out of thy daughter.
30 And when ſhe was come home to her houſe, ſhe founde the deuil departed, and her daughter lying on the bed.
31 ¶ And he departed againe from the coaſtes of Tyrus & Sidon, and came vnto the ſea of Galile, through the middes of the coaſtes of Decapolis.
32 And they brought vnto him one that was deafe, & ſtambred in his ſpeache, and prayed him to put his hand vpon him.
33 Then he tooke him aſide from the multitude, and put his fingers in his eares, and did ſpit, and touched his tongue.
34 And looking vp to heauen, he ſighed, and ſaid vnto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.
35 And ſtraight way his eares were opened, and the ſtring of his tongue was looſed, and he ſpake plaine.
36 And he commanded them, that they ſhould tel no man: but how much ſoeuer he forbad them, the more a great deale they publiſhed it.

37 And

37 And were beyond measure astonied, saying, * He hath done all things wel: he maketh both the deafe to heare, and the domme to speake. *Gene.1.31. eccl.39.21.*

CHAP. VIII.

1 The miracle of the seuen loaues. 11 The Iewes seeke signes. 15 To beware of the leauen of the Pharises. 22 A blind man healed. 27 The peoples sundrie opinions of Christ. 29 The Apostles acknowledge Christ. 31 He foretelleth his death. 33 Peter, Satan. 35 To saue and lose the life. 33 To be ashamed of Christ.

1 IN * those dayes, when there was a very great multitude, and had nothing to eate, Iesus called his disciples to him, and said vnto them, *Mat.15.32.*

2 I haue compassion on the multitude, because they haue nowe continewed with me three dayes, and haue nothing to eate.

3 And if I send them away fasting to their owne houses, they would faint by the way: for some of them came from farre.

4 Then his disciples answered him, whence can a man satisfie these with bread here in the wildernes?

5 And he asked them, How many loaues haue ye? And they said, Seuen.

6 Then he commanded the multitude to sit downe on the groundes: and he tooke the seuen loaues, and gaue thankes, brake *them*, and gaue to his disciples to set before *them*, and they did set *them* before the people.

7 They had also a fewe smal fishes: and when he had giuen thankes, he commanded them also to be set before *them*.

8 So they did eate, and were sufficed, and they tooke vp of the broken meate that was left, seuen baskets full.

9 (And they that had eaten, were about foure thousand) so he sent them away.

10 ¶ * And anon he entred into a ship with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha. *Mat.15.39.*

11 * And the Pharises came forth, and began to dispute with him, seeking of him a signe from heauen, & tempting him. *Mat. 16.1.*

12 Then he sighed deepely in his spirit, and said, Why doeth this generation seeke a signe? Verely I say vnto you, a signe shal not be giuen vnto this generation.

13 ¶ So

13 ¶ So he left them, and went into the ship againe, & departed to the other side.

Matt.16.5. 14 ¶* And they had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ship with them, but one loafe.

15 And he charged them, saying, Take heede, and beware of the leauen of the Pharises, & of the leauen of Herod.

16 And they reasoned among themselues, saying, *It is*, because we haue no bread.

17 And when Iesus knew it, he said vnto them, Why reason you *thus*, because ye haue no bread? perceiue ye not yet, neither vnderstand? haue ye your hearts yet hardened?

18 Haue ye eyes, & see not? & haue ye eares, & heare not? & doe ye not remember?

Iohn. 6.12. 19 * When I brake the fiue loaues among fiue thousand, how many baskets ful of broken meate tooke ye vp? They said vnto him, Twelue.

20 And when *I brake* seuen among foure thousand, how many baskets of the leauings of broken meate tooke ye vp? And they said, Seuen.

21 Then he said vnto them, How is *it* that ye vnderstand not?

22 And he came to Bethsaida, & they brought a blind man vnto him, and desired him to touch him.

23 Then he tooke the blinde by the hand, & led him out of the towne, and spit in his eyes, and put his hands vpon him, and asked him, if he sawe ought.

24 And he looked vp, and said, I see men: for I see them walking like trees.

25 After that, he put his hands again vpō his eyes, & made him looke againe. And he was restored to his sight, & sawe euery man a farre off clearely.

26 And he sent him home to his house, saying, Neither go into the towne, nor tel it to any in the towne.

Mat.16.13. *Luk.9.18.* 27 ¶* And Iesus went out, and his disciples into the townes of Cesarea Philippi, And by the way he asked his disciples, saying vnto thē, whom do mē say that I am?

28 And they answered, *Some say*, Iohn Baptist: and some, Elias: and some, one of the Prophets.

29 And he said vnto them, But whom say ye that I am? Then Peter answered, and said vnto him, Thou art that Christ.

30 And he sharpely charged them, that concerning him they

they should tel no man.

31 Then he began to teach thē that the Sōne of man must suffer many things, & should be reproued of the Elders, & of the hie Priests, and of the Scribes, and be slaine, & within three dayes rise againe.

32 And he spake that thing boldely. Then Peter tooke him aside, & began to rebuke him.

33 Then he turned backe, & looked on his disciples, and rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behinde me, Satan: for thou vnderstandest not the things that are of God, but the things that are of men.

34 ¶ And he called the people vnto him with his disciples, and said vnto them, * Whosoeuer wil followe me, let him forsake himselfe, and take vp his crosse, & followe me. *Mat.10.38. and 16.24. luk.9.23.*

35 For whosoeuer wil * saue his life, shal lose it: but whosoeuer shal lose his life for my sake and the Gospels, he shal saue it. *& 14.27. Mat.10.39. & 16.25.*

36 For what shall it profite a man, though he shoulde winne the whole world, if he lose his soule? *luk.9.24. & 17.33.*

37 Or what exchange shal a man gine for his soule?

38 * For whosoeuer shalbe ashamed of me, and of my wordes among this adulterous and sinfull generation, of him shal the Sonne of man be ashamed also, when he cōmeth in the glory of his Father with the holy Angels. *Mat.10.33. luk.9.26. & 12.9.*

CHAP. IX.

2 Christes transfiguration. 7 Christ must be heard. 11 Of Elias and Iohn Baptist. 14 The possessed is healed. 23 Faith can do al things. 31 Christ foretelleth his death. 33 Who is greatest among the Apostles. 36 Christ taketh a child in his armes. 42 Tooffend. 50 Salt. Peace.

1 AND * he said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that there be some of them that stand here, which shall not tast of death til they haue seene the kingdome of God come with power. *Mat.16.28. luk.9.27.*

2 * And sixe dayes after, Iesus taketh vnto him Peter, & Iames, and Iohn, & carieth them vp into an hie mountaine out of the way alone, and his shape was changed before them. *Mat.17.1. luk.19.28*

3 And his raiment did shine, and was verie white, as snowe, so white as no fuller can make vpon the earth.

4 And there appeared vnto them Elias with Moses, and they

they were talking with Ieſus.

5 Then Peter anſwered, and ſaid to Ieſus, Maſter, it is good for vs to be here: let vs make alſo three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moſes, & one for Elias.

6 Yet he knewe not what he ſaid: for they were afraid.

7 And there was a cloude that ſhadowed them, and a voyce came out of the cloud, ſaying, * This is my beloued Sonne: heare him.

Mat.3.17. & 17.5. chap.1.11.

8 And ſodeinly they looked rounde about, and ſawe no more any man ſaue Ieſus onely with them.

9 * And as they came downe from the mountaine, he charged them, that they ſhould tel no man what they had ſeene, ſaue when the Sonne of man were riſen from the dead againe.

Mat. 17.9.

10 So they kept that matter to them ſelues, and demanded one of an other, what the riſing from the dead againe ſhould meane.

11 Alſo they asked him, ſaying, Why ſay the Scribes, that * Elias muſt firſt come?

Mal.4.5.

12 And he anſwered, and ſaid vnto them, Elias verely ſhal firſt come, and reſtore al things: & * as it is written of the Sonne of man, he muſt ſuffer many things, & be ſet at nought.

Iſa.53.4.

13 But I ſay vnto you, that Elias is come, (& they haue done vnto him whatſoeuer they would) as it is writtē of him.

14 ¶ * And when he came to *his* diſciples, he ſaw a great multitude about thē, & the Scribes diſputing with thē.

Mat.17.14. luk.9.38.

15 And ſtraight way al the people, when they beheld him, were amaſed, & ranne to him, and ſaluted him.

16 Then he asked the Scribes, What diſpute you among your ſelues?

17 And one of the company anſwered, and ſaid, Maſter, I haue brought my ſonne vnto thee, which hath a domme ſpirit:

18 And whereſoeuer he taketh him, he teareth him, and he ſometh, and gnaſheth his teeth, and pineth away: & I ſpake to thy diſciples that they ſhould caſt him out, & they could not.

19 Then he anſwered him, and ſaid, O faithles generation, how long now ſhal I be with you? how long now ſhal I ſuffer you? Bring him vnto me.

20 So they brought him vnto him; & aſſone as the ſpi-

rit,

rit saw him, he tare him, & he fel downe on the ground, wallowing and fomíng.

21 Then he asked his father, How long time is it since he hath bene thus? And he said, Of a childe.

22 And oft times he casteth him into the fire, & into the water to destroy him: but if thou canst doe any thing, helpe vs, and haue compassion vpon vs.

23 And Iesus said vnto him, If thou canst beleeue it, all things are possible to him that beleeueth.

24 And straight way the father of the childe, cryíng with teares, said, Lord, I beleeue: helpe my vnbeleefe.

25 When Iesus sawe that the people came runníng together, he rebuked the vncleane spirit, saying vnto him, Thou domme and deafe spirit, I charge thee, come out of him, & enter no more into him.

26 Then *the spirit* cryed, & rent him sore, and came out, and he was as one dead, in so much that many said, He is dead.

27 But Iesus tooke his hand and lift him vp, & he arose.

28 And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him secretly, Why could not we cast him out?

29 And he said vnto them, This kinde can by no other meanes come forth, but by prayer, and fasting.

30 ¶ * And they departed thence, and went together through Galile, and he would not that any should haue knowen it. *Mat.* 17.22. *luke.* 9.22.

31 For he taught his disciples, and said vnto them, The Sonne of man shalbe deliuered into the hands of men, and they shal kil him, but after that he is killed, he shal rise againe the third day.

32 But they vnderstoode not that saying, and were afraid to aske him.

33 * After, he came to Capernaum: and when he was in the house, he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among you by the way? *Mat.* 18.1. *luk.* 9.46.

34 And they held their peace: for by the way they reasoned among themselues, who *should be* the chiefest.

35 And he sate downe, and called the twelue, and said to them, If any man desire to be first, the same shalbe last of al, and seruant vnto all.

36 And he tooke a litle childe, & set him in the midde of them, and tooke him in his armes, & said vnto them.

37 Whosoeuer

37 Whosoeuer shal receiue one of such litle children in my Name, receiueth me: and whosoeuer receiueth me, receiueth not me, but him that sent me.

38 ¶ * Then Iohn answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out deuils by thy Name, which followeth not vs, & we forbad him, because he followeth vs not.

Luke.9.49.

39 * But Iesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man that can do a miracle by my Name, that can lightly speake euil of me.

1.Corin.12. 3.

40 For whosoeuer is not against vs, is on our part.

41 *And whosoeuer shal giue you a cup of water to drink for my Names sake, because ye belong to Christ, verely I say vnto you, he shal not lose his reward.

Mat.10.42.

42 * And whosoeuer shal offend one of these litle ones, that beleeue in me, it were better for him rather, that a milstone were hanged about his necke, & that he were cast into the sea.

Matt.18.6. luk.17.1.

43 * Wherefore if thine hand cause thee to offend, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life, maimed, then hauing two hands, to goe into hel, into the fire that neuer shalbe quenched,

Mat.5. 29. and 18.8.

44 * Where their worme dieth not, and the fire neuer goeth out.

Isa.66.24.

45 Likewise, if thy foote cause thee to offend, cut it off: it is better for thee to goe halt into life, then hauing two feete to be cast into hel, into the fire that neuer shalbe quenched,

46 Where their worme dyeth not, and the fier neuer goeth out.

47 And if thine eye cause thee to offend, plucke it out: it is better for thee to goe into the kingdome of God with one eye, then hauing two eyes, to be cast into hel fire,

48 Where their worme dieth not, and the fire neuer goeth out.

49 For euery man shalbe salted with fire: and * euery sacrifice shalbe salted with salt.

Leuit.2.13.

Mat.5. 13. luke.14.34.

50 *Salt is good: but if the salt be vnsauery, wherwith shal it be seasoned? haue salt in your selues, and haue peace one with another.

CHAP. X.

9 The wife, only for fornication, is to be put away. 13 Litle children are brought to Christ. 17 A rich man asketh Iesus

sion, how he may possesse eternal life. 28 *The Apostles forsooke all things for Christs sake.* 33 *Christ foreshewth his death.* 35 *Zebedeus his sonnes request.* 46 *Blinde Bartimeus healed.*

1 AND * he arose from thence, and went into the coasts of Iudea by the farre side of Iordan, and the people resorted vnto him againe, and as he was wont, he taught them againe. *Mat.19.1*

2 Then the Pharises came and asked him, if it were lawful for a man to put away *his* wife, and tempted him.

3 And he answered, and said vnto them, What did * Moses command you? *Deut.24.1.*

4 And they said, Moses suffred to write a bil of diuorcement, and to put her away.

5 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto them, For the hardnes of your heart he wrote this precept vnto you.

6 But at the beginning of the creation * God made them male and female: *Gen.1.27. mat.19.4.*

7 * For this cause shal man leaue his father and mother, and cleaue vnto his wife. *Gen.2.24. 1.cor.6.16.*

8 And they twaine shalbe one flesh: so that they are no more twaine, but one flesh. *ephe.5.31.*

9 *Therefore, what God hath coupled together, let not man separate. *1.cor.7.10.*

10 And in the house his disciples asked him againe of that matter.

11 And he said vnto them, * Whosoeuer shal put away his wife and marrie an other, committeth adulterie against her. *Mat.5.32 and 19.9. luke.16.18*

12 And if a woman put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adulterie.

13 ¶ * Then they brought litle children to him, that he should touch them, and his disciples rebuked those that brought them. *Mat.19.13 luke.18.15.*

14 But when Iesus saw it, he was displeased, and said to them, Suffer the litle children to come vnto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of God.

15 Verely I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shal not receiue the kingdome of God as a litle childe, he shal not enter therein.

16 And he tooke them vp in his armes, and put *his* hands vpon them, and blessed them.

17 ¶ And when he was gone out on the way, there came

*Mat.*19.16. *Luke.*18.18. one * running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shal I do, that I may possesse eternal life?

18 Iesus said to him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, euen God.

*Exod.*20.13 19 Thou knowest the commandements, * Thou shalt not commit adulterie. Thou shalt not kil. Thou shalt not steale. Thou shalt not beare false witnes. Thou shalt hurt no *man*. Honour thy father and mother.

20 Then he answered, and said to him, Master, al these things I haue obserued from my youth.

21 And Iesus looked vpon him, and loued him, and said vnto him, One thing is lacking vnto thee, Go *and* sel al that thou hast, and giue to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come, folowe me, and take vp the crosse.

22 But he was sad at that saying, & went away sorowful: for he had great possessions.

23 And Iesus looked round about, and said vnto his disciples, How hardly do they that haue riches, enter into the kingdome of God!

24 And his disciples were afraide at his wordes. But Iesus answered againe, and said vnto them: Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches, to enter into the kingdome of God!

25 It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, then for a riche man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 And they were much more astonied, saying with themselues, Who then can be saued?

27 But Iesus looked vpon them, & said, With men *it is* impossible, but not with God: for with God al things are possible.

*Mat.*19.27. *Luke.*18.28. 28 ¶ * Then Peter began to say vnto him, Lo, we haue forsaken al, and haue followed thee.

29 Iesus answered, and said, Verely I say vnto you, there is no mā that hath forsaken house or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my sake and the Gospels,

30 But he shal receiue an hundred folde, now at this present, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands with persecutions, and in the world to come, eternal life.

31 * But

31 *But manie *that are* first, shalbe last, & the last, first. *Mat.*19.30.
32 ¶* And they were in the way going vp to Hierusalem, *luke.*13.30.
and Iesus went before them and they were troubled, & *Mat.*20.17.
as they folowed, they were afraide, and Iesus tooke the *luke.*18.31.
twelue againe, and began to tel them what thinges
should come vnto him,
33 *Saying*, Behold, we go vp to Hierusalem, and the Sonne
of man shalbe deliuered vnto the hie Priests, and to the
Scribes, and they shal condemne him to death, & shall
deliuer him to the Gentiles.
34 And they shal mocke him, & scourge him, & spet vpon
him, and kil him: but the third day he shal rise againe.
35 ¶* Then Iames and Iohn the sonnes of Zebedeus *Mat.*20.20.
came vnto him, saying, Master, we would that thou
shouldest do for vs that that we desire.
36 And he said vnto them, What would ye I should doe
for you?
37 And they said to him, Graunt vnto vs, that we may sit,
one at thy right hand, and the other at thy left hand in
thy glorie.
38 But Iesus said vnto them, ye know not what ye aske:
Can ye drinke of the cup that I shal drinke of, & be bap-
tized with the baptisme that I shal be baptized with?
39 And they said vnto him, We can. But Iesus said vnto
them, Ye shall drinke in deed of the cuppe that I shall
drinke of, & be baptized with the baptisme wherewith
I shalbe baptized:
40 But to sit at my right hand, & at my left, is not mine to
giue, but *it shalbe giuen* to thē for whom it is prepared.
41 And when the ten heard that, they began to disdaine
at Iames and Iohn.
42 But Iesus called them vnto him, and said to them, *Ye *Luke.*22.25
know that they which are princes among the Gentiles,
haue domination ouer them, and they that be great a-
mong them, exercise authoritie ouer them.
43 But it shal not be so among you: but whosoeuer wil
be great among you, shalbe your seruant.
44 And whosoeuer wil be chiefe of you, shalbe the ser-
uant of al.
45 For euen the Sonne of man came not to be serued, but
to serue, and to giue his life for the raunsome of manie. *Mat.*20.28.
46 ¶* Then they came to Iericho: and as he went out *luke.*18.35.

of Iericho with his diſciples, and a great multitude, Bartimeus the ſonne of Timeus, a blinde man, ſate by the waies ſide, begging.

47 And when he heard that it was Ieſus of Nazareth, he began to crie, and to ſay, Ieſus the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on me.

48 And manie rebuked him, becauſe he ſhould holde his peace: but he cried much more, O Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie on me.

49 Then Ieſus ſtoode ſtil, and commanded him to be called: and they called the blinde, ſaying vnto him, Be of good comfort: ariſe, he calleth thee.

50 So he threwe away his cloke, and roſe, and came to Ieſus.

51 And Ieſus anſwered, & ſaid vnto him, What wilt thou that I do vnto thee? And the blind ſaid vnto him, Lord, that I may receiue ſight.

52 Then Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Go thy way: thy faith hath ſaued thee. And by and by he receiued *his* ſight, and folowed Ieſus in the way.

CHAP. XI.

1 Chriſt entreth into Hieruſalem riding on an aſſe. 13 The fruitleſſe figtree is curſed. 15 Sellers and Byers are caſt out of the Temple. 23 The force of faith. 24 Faith in prayer. 25 The brothers offences muſt be pardoned. 27 The Prieſts aske by what authoritie he wrought thoſe things that he did. 30 Whence Iohns Baptiſme was.

Mat. 21. 1. Luke. 18. 29. 1 AND *when they came nere to Hieruſalem, to Bethphage and Bethania vnto the mount of Olines, he ſent forth two of his diſciples,

2 And ſaid vnto them, Go your wayes into that towne that is ouer againſt you, and aſſone as ye ſhal enter into it, ye ſhal finde a colte tied, whereon neuer man ſate: looſe him, and bring him.

3 And if anie man ſay vnto you, Why do ye this? Say that the Lord hath neede of him, and ſtraight way he wil ſend him hither.

4 And they went their way, and found a colte tied by the doore without, in a place where two wayes met, and they looſed him.

5 Then certaine of them that ſtoode there, ſaid vnto them, What do ye looſing the colte?

6 And

6 And they ſaid vnto them, as Ieſus had commanded them: So they let them go.

7 ¶* And they brought the colte to Ieſus, & caſt their garments on him, and he ſate vpon him. *Iohn.12.14*

8 And manie ſpred their garmẽts in the way: other cut downe branches of the trees, & ſtrawed thẽ in the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cryed, ſaying, Hoſanna: bleſſed *be* he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

10 Bleſſed *be* the kingdome that commeth in the Name of the Lord of our father Dauid: Hoſanna, *O thou which art* in the hieſt *heauens.*

11 * So Ieſus entred into Hieruſalem, and into the Temple: and when he had looked about on al things, and now it was euening, he went forth vnto Bethania with the twelue. *Mat.21.10. Luke.19.45.*

12 * And on the morow when they were come out from Bethania, he was hungrie. *Mat.21.19*

13 And ſeeing a figge tree afarre of, that had leaues, he went *to ſee* if he might finde anie thing thereon: but when he came vnto it, he found nothing but leaues: for the time of figges was not yet.

14 Then Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid to it, Neuer man eate fruite of thee hereafter while the worlde ſtandeth: and his diſciples heard it.

15 ¶ And they came to Hieruſalem, & Ieſus went into the Tẽple, & began to caſt out them that ſolde & bought in the Temple, and ouerthrewe the tables of the money changers, and the ſeates of them that ſolde doues.

16 Neither would he ſuffer that anie man ſhould carie a veſſel through the Temple.

17 And he taught, ſaying vnto them, Is it not written, * Mine houſe ſhalbe called the Houſe of praier vnto al nations? * but you haue made it a denne of theeues. *Iſai.56.7. Iere.7.11.*

18 And the Scribes and hie Prieſts heard it, and ſought how to deſtroy him: for they feared him, becauſe the whole multitude was aſtonied at his doctrine.

19 But when euen was come, *Ieſus* went out of the citie.

20 ¶ * And *in* the morning as they iourneyed together, they ſawe the figge tree dried vp from the rootes. *Mat.21.19.*

21 Then Peter remembred, & ſaid vnto him, Maſter, beholde, the figge tree which thou curſedſt, is withered.

22 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Haue the faith of God.

23 For verely I say vnto you, that whosoeuer shal say vnto this mountaine, Be thou taken away, and cast into the sea, and shal not wauer in his heart, but shal beleeue that those things which he saieth, shal come to passe, whatsoeuer he saith, shalbe *done* to him.

Mat.7.7. luke.11.9. 24 * Therfore I say vnto you, whatsoeuer ye desire when ye pray, beleeue that ye shal haue it, and it shalbe *done* vnto you.

Mat.6.14. 25 * But when ye shal stand, and pray, forgiue, if ye haue any thing against any man, that your Father also which is in heauen, may forgiue you your trespaces.

26 For if you wil not forgiue, your Father which is in heauen, wil not pardon you your trespaces.

Mat.21.23 luke.20.1. 27 ¶ * Then they came againe to Hierusalem: and as he walked in the Temple, there came to him the hie Priests, and the Scribes, and the Elders,

28 And said vnto him, By what authoritie doest thou these things? and who gaue thee this authoritie, that thou shouldest do these things?

29 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto them, I wil also aske of you a certaine thing, and answere ye me, and I wil tel you by what authoritie I do these things.

30 The baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men? answere me.

31 And they thought with themselues, saying, If we shal say from heauen, he wil say, Why then did ye not beleeue him?

32 But if we say of men, we feare the people: for al men counted Iohn, that he was a Prophet in deede.

33 Then they answered, and said vnto Iesus, We can not tel. And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Neither wil I tel you by what authoritie I do these things.

CHAP. XII.

1 Of the vineyarde. 10 Christ the stone refused of the Iewes. 13 Of tribute to be giuen to Cesar. 18 The Sadduces denying the resurrection. 28 The first commandement. 31 To loue God and the neighbour is better then sacrifices. 36 Christ Dauids sonne. 38 To beware of the Scribes and Pharises. 42 The poore widowe.

1 And

1 AND he began to speake vnto them in parables, * A certaine man planted a vineyarde, and compassed it with an hedge, and digged a pit for the winepresse, and built a towre in it, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a strange countrey. *Isai. 5.1. iere.2.2. mat.21.33. luke.20.9.*

2 And at the time, he sent to the husbandmen a seruant, that he might receiue of the husbandmen of the fruite of the vineyarde.

3 But they tooke him, and beate him, and sent him away emptie.

4 And againe he sent vnto them another seruant, and at him they cast stones, and brake his head, and sent him away shamefully handled.

5 And againe he sent another, and him they slewe, and many other, beating some, and killing some.

6 Yet he had one sonne, his deare beloued: him also he sent the last vnto them, saying: They wil reuerence my sonne.

7 But the husbandmen said among them selues, This is the heire: come, let vs kil him, and the inheritance shalbe ours.

8 So they tooke him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard.

9 What shal then the Lord of the vineyarde do? He wil come and destroy these husbandmen, & giue the vineyard to others.

10 Haue ye not read so much as this Scripture? * The stone which the builders did refuse, is made the head of the corner. *Psal.118. 22.isa.28. 16.mat.21. 42.act.4. 11.rom.9. 33.1.pet. 2.8.*

11 This was done of the Lord, and it is marueilous in our eyes.

12 Then they went about to take him, but they feared the people: for they perceiued that he spake that parable against them: therfore they left him, and went their way.

13 ¶ * And they sent vnto him certaine of the Pharises, & of the Herodians that they might take him in *his* talke. *Mat.22.15 luke.20.20*

14 And when they came, they said vnto him, Master, we knowe that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou considerest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God truely, Is it lawful to giue tribute to Cesar, or not?

15 Should we giue it, or shoulde we not giue it? But he knew their hypocrisie, and said vnto them, Why tempt ye me? Bring me a penie, that I may see it.

16 So they brought it, and he said vnto them, Whose is this image and superscription? and they said vnto him, Cesars.

Rom. 13. 7. 17 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto them, * Giue to Cesar the things that are Cesars, and to God, those that are Gods: and they marueiled at him.

Mat. 22. 23. *Luke.* 20. 27. 18 ¶ * Then came the Sadduces vnto him, (which saye, there is no resurrection) and they asked him, saying,

Deut. 25. 5. *mat.* 22. 24. 19 Master, * Moses wrote vnto vs, If anie mans brother die, and leaue *his* wife, and leaue no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise vp seede vnto his brother.

20 There were seuen brethren, and the first tooke a wife, and when he dyed, left no yssue.

21 Then the second tooke her, and he dyed, neither did he yet leaue yssue, and the third likewise:

22 So those seuen had her, and left no yssue: last of al the wife died also.

23 In the resurrection then, when they shal rise againe, whose wife shal she be of thē? for seuen had her to wife.

24 Then Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Are ye not therfore deceiued, because ye know not the Scriptures, neither the power of God?

25 For when they shal rise againe from the dead, neither men marrie, nor wiues are married, but are as the Angels which are in heauen.

26 And as touching the dead, that they shal rise againe, haue ye not read in the booke of Moses, how in the

Exod. 3. 6. *mat.* 22. 32. bush God spake vnto him, saying, * I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob?

27 God is not the God of the dead, but the God of the liuing. Ye are therefore greatly deceiued.

Mat. 22. 35. 28 ¶ * Then came one of the Scribes that had heard them disputing together, *and* perceiuing that he had answered them wel, he asked him, Which is the first commandement of al?

29 Iesus answered him, The first of al the commandements is, * Heare, Israel, the Lord our God is the onely Lord.

Deut. 6. 4.

30 Thou

30 Thou ſhalt therefore loue the Lord thy God with al thine heart, & with al thy ſoule, & with al thy minde, & with all thy ſtrength: this is the firſt commandement.

31 And the ſecond is like, that is, * Thou ſhalt loue thy neighbour as thy ſelfe. There is none other commandement greater then theſe. *Leu.19.18. Mat.22.39. rom. 13.9. gal.5.14. iam.2.8.*

32 Then that Scribe ſaid vnto him, Wel Maſter, thou haſt ſaid the trueth, That there is one God, and that there is none but he.

33 And to loue him with al the heart, and with al the vnderſtanding, & with al the ſoule, and with al the ſtrength, and to loue *his* neighbour as him ſelfe, is more then al whole burnt offrings and ſacrifices.

34 Then when Ieſus ſawe that he anſwered diſcretely, he ſaid vnto him, Thou art not farre from the kingdome of God. And no man after that durſt aske him any queſtion.

35 ¶ * And Ieſus anſwered and ſaid teaching in the Temple, How ſay the Scribes that Chriſt is the ſonne of Dauid? *Matth. 22. 41. luke.20. 41.*

36 For Dauid himſelf ſaid by the holy Ghoſt, * The Lord ſaid to my Lord, Sit at my right hand, til I make thine enemies thy ſooteſtoole. *Pſa.110.1.*

37 Then Dauid him ſelfe calleth him Lord: by what meanes is he then his ſonne? and much people heard him gladly.

38 * Moreouer he ſaid vnto them in his doctrine, Beware of the Scribes which loue to go in long robes, and *loue* ſalutations *in* the markets, *Mat. 23.6. luk. 11.43. & 20. 43.*

39 And the chiefe ſeates in the Synagogues, and the firſt roumes at feaſtes.

40 Which * deuoure widowes houſes, euen vnder a colour of long prayers. Theſe ſhal receiue the greater damnation. *Mat.23.14. luk.20.47.*

41 * And as Ieſus ſate ouer againſt the treaſury he beheld how the people caſt money into the treaſury, and many riche men caſt in much. *Lu.21.1.*

42 And there came a certaine poore widow, and ſhe threw in two mites, which make a quadrin.

43 Then he called vnto him his diſciples, and ſaid vnto them, Verely I ſay vnto you, that this poore widowe hath caſt more in, then all they which haue caſt into the

the treasurie.

44 For they al did cast in of their superfluitie: but she of her pouerty did cast in al that she had, *euen* al her liuing.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *Of the destruction of Hierusalem.* 9 *Persecutions for the Gospel.* 10 *The Gospell must be preached to al nations.* 26 *Of Christes comming to iudgement.* 33 *We must watch and pray.*

1 AND * as he went out of the Temple, one of his disciples said vnto him, Master, see what maner stones, & what maner buildings *are here*. *Mat. 24.1. Luk.21.5.*

2 * Then Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shal not be left one stone vpon a stone, that shal not be throwen downe. *Lu.19.43.*

3 And as he sate on the mount of Olives, ouer against the Temple, Peter, & Iames, and Iohn, and Andrewe asked him secretly,

4 Tel vs, when shal these things be? and what *shalbe* the signe when al these things shalbe fulfilled?

5 And Iesus answered them, and began to say, * Take heede lest any man deceiue you. *Ephe. 5.6. 2.thess.2.3.*

6 For many shal come in my Name, saying, I am *Christ*, and shal deceiue many.

7 Furthermore when ye shal heare of warres, & rumours of warres, be ye not troubled: for *such things* must needes be: but the end *shal* not *be* yet.

8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome, and there shalbe earthquakes in diuers quarters, and there shalbe famine and troubles: these *are* the beginnings of sorowes.

9 But take ye heede to your selues: for they shal deliuer you vp to the councils, and to the Synagogues: ye shal be beaten, and brought before rulers and Kings for my sake, for a testimonial vnto them.

10 And the Gospel must first be published among all nations.

11 * But when they leade you, & deliuer you vp, be not careful before hand, neither studie what ye shal say, but what is giuen you at the same time, that speake: for it is not ye that speake, but the holy Ghost. *Mat.10.19. luk.12.11. & 21.14.*

12 Yea, and the brother shal deliuer the brother to death, and the father the sonne, & the children shal rise against their

their parents, and shal cause them to dye.
13 And ye shalbe hated of al men for my Names sake: but whosoeuer shal endure vnto the end, he shalbe saued.
14 * Moreouer, when ye shal see the abomination of desolation (spoken of by * Daniel the Prophet) set where it ought not, (let him that readeth, consider it) then let them *that be* in Iudea, flee into the mountaines, *Mat.24.15. Luke.21.20. Dan.9.27.*
15 And let him that is vpon the house, not come down into the house, neither enter therein, to fetch any thing out of his house.
16 And let him that is in the field, not turne backe againe to take his garment.
17 Then woe *shalbe* to them that are with childe, and to them that giue sucke in those dayes.
18 Pray therefore that your flight be not in the winter.
19 For those dayes shalbe such tribulation, as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created vnto this time, neither shalbe.
20 And except that the Lord had shortened those dayes, no flesh should be saued: but for the elects sake, which he hath chosen, he hath shortened those dayes.
21 Then * if any man say vnto you, Lo, here is Christ, or, lo, *he is* there, beleeue it not. *Mat.24.23. Luke.17.23. and 21.8.*
22 For false Christes shal rise, and false prophets, & shal shew signes and wonders, to deceiue if it were possible the very elect.
23 But take ye heede: behold, I haue shewed you al things before.
24 ¶ Moreouer in those daies, after that tribulation, * the sonne shal waxe darke, and the moone shal not giue her light, *Isai.13.10. ezek.32.7. Ioel.2.10. and.3.15.*
25 And the starres of heauen shal fal: and the powers which are in heauen, shal shake.
26 And then shal they see the Sonne of man comming in the cloudes, with great power and glory.
27 * And he shal then send his Angels, & shal gather together his elect from the foure windes, *and* from the vtmost part of the earth, to the vtmost part of heauen. *Mat.24.31.*
28 Now learne a parable of the figge tree. When her bough is yet tender, and it bringeth forth leaues, ye knowe that sommer *is* nere.
29 So in like maner, when ye see these things come to passe,

passe, knowe that *the kingdome of God* is nere, *euen* at the doores.

30 Verely I say vnto you, that this generation shal not passe, til al these things be done.

31 Heauen and earth shal passe away, but my wordes shal not passe, away.

32 But of that day and houre knoweth no man, no, not the Angels which are in heauen, neither the Sonne himselfe, but the Father.

Mat.24.13. 33 * Take heede: watch, and pray: for ye knowe not when the time is.

34 *For the Sonne of man is* as a man going into a strange countrey, and leaueth his house, and giueth authoritie to his seruants, and to euery man his worke, and commandeth the porter to watche.

35 Watch ye therefore, (for ye know not when the maister of the house wil come, at euen, or at midnight, at the cocke crowing, or in the dawning,)

36 Lest if he come sodenly, he should finde you sleeping.

37 And those things that I say vnto you, I say vnto all men, Watche.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 The Priests conspiracie against Christ. 3 The woman powring oyle on Christs head. 12 The preparing of the Passeouer. 22 The institution of the supper. 41 Christ deliuered into the hands of men. 43 Iudas betrayeth him with a kisse. 53 Christ is before Caiaphas. 66 Peters denial.

1 AND * two dayes after followed *the feast of* the Passeouer, and of vnleauened bread: and the hie Priests, & Scribes sought howe they might take him by craste, and put him to death.

Mat. 26.2. Luke.22.1.

2 But they said, Not in the feast *day*, lest there be any tumult among the people.

Mat. 26.6. Iohn.12.2. 3 * And whe he was in Bethania in the house of Simon the leper, as he sate at table, there came a woman hauing a boxe of ointment of spikenard, very costly, & she brake the boxe, and powred it on his head.

4 Therefore some disdained among themselues, & said, To what end is this waste of ointment?

5 For it might haue bene solde for more then three hundreth pence, & bene giuen vnto the poore, and they murmured

murmured against her.

6 But Iesus said, Let her alone: why trouble ye her? she hath wrought a good worke on me.

7 For ye haue the poore with you alwayes, and when ye wil ye may doe them good, but me ye shal not haue alwayes.

8 She hath done that she coulde: she came afore hand to anoint my body to the burying.

9 Verely I say vnto you, whereſoeuer this Goſpel shalbe preached throughout the whole worlde, this also that she hath done, shalbe spoken of in remembrance of her.

10 ¶ * Then Iudas Iscariot, one of the twelue, went away vnto the hie Prieſtes, to betray him vnto them. *Mat.26.14. luk.22.4.*

11 And when they heard it, they were glad, and promiſed that they would giue him money: therfore he sought how he might conueniently betray him.

12 ¶ * Now the firſt day of vnleauened bread, when they sacrificed the Paſſeouer, his diſciples said vnto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare, that thou mayeſt eate the Paſſeouer? *Mat.26.17. luk.22.8.*

13 Then he sent forth two of his diſciples, & said vnto them, Go ye into the citie, and there shal a man meete you bearing a pitcher of water: follow him.

14 And whitherſoeuer he goeth in, say ye to the good man of the houſe, The Maſter saith, Where is the lodging where I shal eate the Paſſeouer with my diſciples?

15 And he wil shew you an vpper chamber *which is* large, trimmed and prepared: there make it ready for vs.

16 So his diſciples went forth, and came to the citie, and founde as he had said vnto them, and made ready the Paſſeouer.

17 ¶ And at euen he came with the twelue.

18 * And as they sate at table and did eat, Iesus said, Verely I say vnto you, that one of you shal betray me, which eateth with me. *Pſa.41.10. mat.26.20. 23. luk.22.*

19 Then they began to be ſorowful and to say to him one by one, Is it I? And another, Is it I? *14. iohn.13. 18,21.*

20 And he answered and said vnto them, *It is* one of the twelue that dippeth with me in the platter.

21 Truely the Sonne of man goeth his way, as it is written of him: * but wo *be* to that man, by whō the Sonne of man is betrayed: it had bene good for that man, if he had *Acts.1.16.*

had neuer bene borne.

Mat.26.26. 1.Corin. 11. 24.

22 * And as they did eate, Iesus tooke the bread, and when he had giuen thankes, he brake it, and gaue it to them, and said, Take, eate, this is my body.

23 Also he tooke the cup, and when he had giuen thankes, gaue it to them: and they al dranke of it.

24 And he said vnto them, This is my blood of that newe Testament, which is shed for many.

25 Verely I say vnto you, I wil drinke no more of the fruite of the vine vntil that day, that I drinke it new in the kingdome of God.

26 And when they had sung a Psalme, they went out to the mount of Oliues.

Ioh.16. 32. Zac.13.7.

27 ¶ * Then Iesus said vnto them, Al ye shalbe offended by me this night: for it is written, * I wil smite the shepheard, and the sheepe shalbe scattered.

Chap. 16.7.

28 But after that I am risen, I wil go into * Galile before you.

29 And Peter said vnto him, Although all men shoulde be offended at thee, yet would not I.

30 Then Iesus said vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, this day, *euen* in this night, before the cocke crow twise, thou shalt denie me thrise.

31 But he said more earnestly, If I should dye with thee, I wil not denie thee: likewise also said they al.

Mat.16.36. Luk.22.39.

32 ¶ * After, they came into a place named Gethsemane: thē he said to his disciples, Sit ye here, til I haue praied.

33 And he tooke with him Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, & he began to be troubled, and in great heauines,

34 And said vnto them, My soule is very heauie, *euen* vnto the death: tary here and watch.

35 So he went forward a litle, and fel downe on the ground, and prayed, that if it were possible, that houre might passe from him.

36 And he said, Abba, Father, al things are possible vnto thee: take away this cup from me: neuertheless not that I wil, but that thou wilt, *be done.*

37 Then he came, and found them sleeping, and said to Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? couldest not thou watch one houre?

38 ¶ Watch ye, and pray, that ye enter not into tentation: the spirit in deede is ready, but the flesh is weake.

39 And

39 And againe he went away, and prayed, and spake the same wordes.
40 And he returned, and found them a sleepe againe: for their eyes were heauie: neither knew they what they should answere him.
41 And he came the third time, and said vnto them, Slepe henceforth, and take your rest: it is ynough: the houre is come: behold, the Sonne of man is deliuered into the hands of sinners.
42 Rise vp: let vs goe: lo, he that betrayeth me, is at hand.
43 * And immediatly while he yet spake, came Iudas that was one of the twelue, and with him a great multitude with swords and staues from the hie Priests, & Scribes, and Elders. *Mat.*26.47. *luk.*22. 47. *ioh.*18.3.
44 And he that betrayed him, had giuen them a token, saying, Whomsoeuer I shal kisse, he it is: take him, and leade him away safely.
45 And assone as he was come, he went straight way to him, and said, Hayle Master, and kissed him.
46 Then they layed their hands on him, & tooke him.
47 And one of them that stood by, drewe out a sworde, and smote a seruant of the hie Priest, and cut of his eare.
48 And Iesus answered and said vnto them, Ye be come out as against a thiefe with swords and staues, to take me.
49 I was dayly with you teaching in the Temple, and ye tooke me not: but *this is done* that the Scriptures should be fulfilled.
50 Then they al forsooke him, and fled.
51 And there followed him a certaine yong man, clothed in linnen vpon his bare *body*, and the yong men caught him.
52 But he left his linnen clothe, and fled from them naked.
53 * So they led Iesus away to the hie Priest, and to him came together al the hie Priestes, and the Elders, and the Scribes. *Mat.*26.57. *luk.* 22.04. *john.*18.24.
54 And Peter followed him a farre of, euen into the hall of the hie Priest, and sate with the seruants, and warmed *himselfe* at the fire.

55 And

Mat.26.50. 55 And the * hie Priests, and al the Counsil sought for witnes against Iesus, to put him to death, but found none.
56 For many bare false witnes against him, but their witnes agreed not together.
57 Then there arose certaine, and bare false witnes against him, saying,
58 We heard him say, * I wil destroy this Temple made with hands, & within three dayes I wil buylde another, made without hands.
Ioh. 2.19.
59 But their witnes yet agreed not together.
60 Then the hie Priest stood vp amongs them, and asked Iesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing? what is the matter that these beare witnes against thee?
61 But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Againe the hie Priest asked him, & said vnto him, Art thou that Christ the Sonne of the Blessed?
Mat.24.39. 62 And Iesus said, I am *he*, * and ye shal see the Sonne of man sit at the right hand of the power *of God*, and come in the cloudes of heauen.
63 Then the hie Priest rent his clothes, and said, What haue we any more neede of witnesses?
64 Ye haue heard the blasphemie: what thinke ye? And they al condemned him to be worthy of death.
65 And some began to spit at him, & to couer his face, & to beate him with fistes, and to say vnto him, Prophecie. And the sergeants smote him with *their* roddes
Mat.26.69. 66 * And as Peter was beneath in the hall, there came
Luk. 22.55. one of the maides of the hie Priest.
Iohn.18.25. 67 And when she saw Peter warming *himself*, she looked on him, & said, Thou wast also with Iesus of Nazareth.
68 But he denied it, saying, I knowe *him* not, neither wot I what thou sayest. Then he went out into the porch, & the cocke crewe.
Mat.26.71. 69 * Then a maide sawe him againe, and began to say to
Luk. 22.58. them that stoode by, This is *one* of them.
70 But he denied it againe: and anon after, they that stoode by, said againe to Peter, Surely thou art *one* of them: for thou art of Galile, and thy speache is like.
71 And he began to curse, and sweare, *saying*, I knowe not this man of whome ye speake.
Mat.26.75. 72 * Then the second time the cocke crewe, and Peter
Ioh .13.38. remembred the word that Iesus had saide vnto him, Be-

fore

fore the cocke crowe twise, thou shalt denie me thrise, and weying that with him selfe, he wept.

CHAP. XV.

1 *Of the things that Christ suffered vnder Pilate.* 11 *Barabbas is preferred before Christ.* 15 *Pilate deliuereth Christ to be crucified.* 17 *He is crowned with thorne.* 19 *They spet on him, and mocke him.* 21 *Simon of Cyrene carieth Christes crosse.* 27 *Christ is crucified betweene two theeues.* 29 *He is railed at.* 37 *He giueth vp the ghost.* 43 *Ioseph burieth him.*

1 AND * anon in the dawning, the hie Priests' helde a Councill with the Elders, and the Scribes, and the whole Councill, and bounde Iesus, and led him away, & deliuered him to Pilate. *Mat.27.1. luk.22.66. ioh.18.19.*

2 Thē Pilate asked him, Art thou the King of the Iewes? And he answered, and said vnto him, Thou sayest it.

3 And the hie Priests accused him of many things.

4 * Wherefore Pilate asked him againe, saying, Answerest thou nothing? beholde howe manie things they witnes against thee. *Matth.27.12. luk.23.3. ioh.18.*

5 But Iesus answered no more at all, so that Pilate marueiled. 35.

6 Now at the feast, Pilate did deliuer a prisoner vnto them, whomsoeuer they would desire.

7 Then there was one named Barabbas, which was bounde with his fellowes, that had made insurrection, who in the insurrection had committed murther.

8 And the people cried aloude, and began to desire *that he would do* as he had euer done vnto them.

9 Then Pilate answered them, and said, Wil ye that I let loose vnto you the King of the Iewes?

10 For he knewe that the hie Priests had deliuered him of enuie.

11 But the hie Priests had moued the people *to desire* that he woulde rather deliuer Barabbas vnto them.

12 And Pilate answered, and said againe vnto them, What will ye then that I doe *with him*, whom ye call the King of the Iewes?

13 And they cried againe, Crucifie him.

14 Then Pilate said vnto them, But what euil hath he done? And they cried the more feruently, Crucifie him.

15 So Pilate willing to content the people, looſed them Barabbas, and deliuered Ieſus, when he had ſcourged him, that he might be crucified.

16 Then the ſouldiers led him away into the hall, which is the common hall, and called together the whole band,

17 And clad him with purple, and platted a crowne of thornes, and put it about *his head*,

18 And began to ſalute him, *ſaying*, Haile, King of the Iewes.

19 And they ſmote him on the head with a reede, and ſpit vpon him, and bowed the knees, *and* did him reuerence.

20 And when they had mocked him, they tooke the purple of him, and put his owne clothes on him, and led him out to crucifie him.

Mat.27.32. Luke 23.26. 21 * And they compelled one that paſſed by, *called* Simon of Cyrene (which came out of the countrey, and was father of Alexander and Rufus) to beare his croſſe.

Mat.27.33. Luke 23.33. John 19.17. 22 * And they brought him to a place named Golgotha, which is by interpretation, the place of *dead mens* skulles.

23 And they gaue him to drinke wine mingled with myrrhe: but he receiued it not.

Luk.23.34. 24 * And whē they had crucified him, they parted his garments, caſting lots for thē, what euery man ſhould haue.

25 And it was the third houre, when they crucified him.

26 And the title of his cauſe was written aboue, THAT KING OF THE IEWES.

27 They crucified alſo with him two theeues, the one on the right hand, and the other on his left.

Iſa. 53.12. 28 Thus the Scripture was fulfilled, which ſaith, * And he was counted among the wicked.

29 And they that went by, railed on him, wagging their heads, and ſaying, * Hey, thou that deſtroyeſt the Temple, and buildeſt it in three dayes,

Ioh.2.19.

30 Saue thy ſelfe, and come downe from the croſſe.

31 Likewiſe alſo euen the hie Prieſts mocking, ſaid among themſelues with the Scribes, He ſaued other men, himſelfe he cannot ſaue.

32 Let Chriſt the King of Iſrael nowe come downe from the croſſe, that we may ſee, and beleeue. They alſo that were crucified with him, reuiled him.

33 ¶ Now

33 ¶ Now when the sixt houre was come, darkenes arose ouer all the land vntill the ninth houre.

34 And at the ninth houre Iesus cried with a loud voyce, saying, * Eloi, Eloi, lamma-sabachthani? which is by interpretation, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? *Psal.* 22.1. *mat.*27.46.

35 And some of them that stoode by, when they heard it, said, Beholde, he calleth Elias.

36 And one ranne, and filled a * spondge full of vineger, and put it on a reede, and gaue him to drinke, saying, Let him alone: Let vs see if Elias will come, and take him downe. *Psal.*69.22.

37 And Iesus cried with a loude voyce, and gaue vp the ghost.

38 And the vaile of the Temple was rent in twaine, from the top to the bottome.

39 Nowe when the Centurion, which stoode ouer against him, sawe that he thus crying gaue vp the ghost, he said, Truely this man was the Sonne of God.

40 ¶ There were also women, which beheld afarre of, among whome was Marie Magdalene, and Marie (the mother of Iames the lesse, and of Ioses) and Salome,

41 Which also when he was in Galile, * folowed him, and ministred vnto him, & many other women which came vp with him vnto Hierusalem. *Luke* 8.2.

42 * And now when night was come (because it was the daye of the preparation that is before the Sabbath) *Mat.*27.57

43 * Ioseph of Arimathea, an honorable counsellour, which also looked for the kingdome of God, came, and went in boldely vnto Pilate, and asked the bodie of Iesus. *Luk.*23.50. *ioh.*19.38.

44 And Pilate maruelled, if he were already dead, and called vnto him the Centurion, and asked of him whether he had bene any while dead.

45 And when he knewe *the truth* of the Centurion, he gaue the bodie to Ioseph:

46 Who bought a linnen cloth, and tooke him downe, and wrapped him in the linnen cloth, and layde him in a tombe that was hewen out of a rocke, and rolled a stone vnto the doore of the sepulchre:

47 And Marie Magdalene, and Marie Ioses *mother* beheld where he should be layed.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Of Christes resurrection. 9 He appeareth to Marie Magdalene and others. 15 He sendeth his Apostles to preache. 19 His ascension.

Luke 24.1. John.20.1. 1 AND * when the Sabbath day was past, Marie Magdalene, and Marie the *mother* of Iames, and Salome, bought sweete oyntments that they might come, and anoynt him.

2 Therefore earely in the morning, the first day of the weeke, they came vnto the sepulchre, when the Sunne was now risen.

3 And they said one to another, Who shall rolle vs away the stone from the doore of the sepulchre?

4 And when they looked, they sawe that the stone was rolled away (for it was a very great one.)

Mat.28.1. John.20.12. 5 * So they went into the sepulchre, and sawe a young man sitting at the right side, clothed in a long white robe: and they were sore troubled.

6 But he said vnto them, Be not so troubled: ye seeke Iesus of Nazareth, which hath bene crucified: he is risen, he is not here: behold the place where they put him.

7 But goe your way, and tell his disciples, and Peter, that he will goe before you into Galile: there shall ye see him, * as he said vnto you.

Chap.14.28 Mat.26.32. 8 And they went out quickely, and fled from the sepulchre: for they trembled, and were amased: neither said they any thing to any man: for they were afraide.

9 ¶ And when Iesus was risen againe, early the first day of the weeke, he appeared first to Marie Magdalene, Joh. 20.16. * out of whome he had cast seuen deuils.

Luke 8.2. 10 And she went and told them that had bene with him, which mourned and wept.

11 And when they heard that he was aliue, and had appeared to her, they beleeued it not.

Luk.24.13. 12 ¶ * After that, he appeared vnto two of them in an other forme, as they walked & went into the countrey.

13 And they went, and tolde it to the remnant, neither beleeued they them.

Luk.24.36. Ioh.20.19. 14 ¶ * Finally, he appeared vnto the eleuen as they sate together, and reproched them for their vnbeliefe and hardnes of heart, because they beleeued not them which

which had ſeene him, being riſen vp againe.
15 And he ſaid vnto them, * Go ye into all the worlde, and preache the Goſpel to euerie creature. *Mat.28.19.*
16 He that ſhall beleeue and be baptized, ſhalbe ſaued: * but he that will not beleeue, ſhalbe damned. *Ioh. 12.48.*
17 And theſe tokens ſhall follow them that beleeue, * In my Name they ſhall caſt out deuils, and * ſhall ſpeake with new tongues. *Act.16.18 Act.2.4. & 10.46.*
18 * And ſhall take away ſerpents, and if they ſhal drinke any deadly thing, it ſhall not hurt them: * they ſhall lay their hands on the ſicke, and they ſhall recouer. *Act. 28.5. Act. 28.8.*
19 * So after the Lord had ſpoken vnto them, he was receiued into heauen, and ſate at the right hand of God. *Luk.24.51.*
20 And they went forth, and preached euery where. And the * Lord wrought with them, & confirmed the word with ſignes that followed, Amen. *Hebr.2.4.*

THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS CHRIST ACCORding to Luke.

CHAP. I.

1 Lukes preface. 5 Zacharias and Eliſabet. 15 What an one Iohn ſhould be. 20 Zacharias ſtrooken dombe for his incredulitie. 26 The Angel ſalueth Marie, and foretelleth Chriſtes natiuitie. 39 Marie viſiteth Eliſabet. 46 Maries ſong. 68 The ſong of Zacharias, ſhewing that the promiſed Chriſt is come. 76 The office of Iohn.

1 FOR as much as many haue taken in hand to ſet forth the ſtorie of thoſe things, whereof we are fully perſwaded,
2 As they haue deliuered thē vnto vs, which from the beginning ſawe them their ſelues, and were miniſters of the worde,
3 It ſeemed good alſo to me (moſt noble Theophilus) aſſone as I had ſearched out perfectly all things from the beginning, to write vnto thee thereof frō point to point,
4 That thou mighteſt acknowledge the certaintie of

those things, whereof thou hast bene instructed.

5 IN the time of Herod King of Iudea, there was a cer-
1. Chron. 24. 1. taine Priest named Zacharias, of the *course of Abia: and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elisabet.

6 Both were iust before God, and walked in all the commaundements and ordinances of the Lord, without reproofe.

7 And they had no childe, because that Elisabet was barren: and both were well stricken in age.

8 And it came to passe, as he executed the Priests office before God, as his course came in order,

Exod. 30. 7. 9 *According to the custome of the Priestes office, his lot was to burne incense, when he went into the Temple of the Lord.

10 And the whole multitude of the people were without
Leu. 16. 17. in prayer, * while the incense was burning.

11 Then appeared vnto him an Angel of the Lord standing at the right side of the altar of incense.

12 And when Zacharias saw him, he was troubled, and feare fell vpon him.

13 But the Angel said vnto him, Feare not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard, and thy wife Elisabet shal beare thee a soane, and thou shalt call his name Iohn.

14 And thou shalt haue ioye and gladnes, and many shall reioyce at his birth.

15 For he shalbe great in the sight of the Lord, and shall neither drinke wine, nor strong drinke: and he shalbe filled with the holy Ghost, euen frō his mothers wombe.

Malac. 4. 5. 16 *And many of the children of Israel shall he turne to their Lord God.

Mat. 11. 14. 17 *For he shall goe before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turne the heartes of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisedome of the iust men, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.

18 Then Zacharias said vnto the Angell, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an olde man, and my wife is of a great age.

19 And the Angel answered, and said vnto him, I am Gabriel that stande in the presence of God, & am sent to speake vnto thee, & to shew thee these good tidings.

20 And beholde, thou shalt be domme, and not be able to speake,

speake, vntill the day that these things be done, because thou beleeuedst not my words, which shalbe fulfilled in their season.

21 Now the people waited for Zacharias, and marueiled that he taried so long in the Temple.

22 And when he came out, he could not speake vnto them: then they perceiued that he had seene a vision in the Temple: For he made signes vnto them, and remained domme.

23 And it came to passe, when the dayes of his office were fulfilled, that he departed to his owne house.

24 And after those dayes, his wife Elisabet conceiued, and hid her selfe fiue moneths, saying,

25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with me, in the dayes wherin he looked on *me*, to take from me my rebuke among men.

26 ¶ And in the sixt moneth, the Angel Gabriel was sent from God vnto a citie of Galile, named Nazareth,

27 * To a virgine affianced to a man whose name *was* Ioseph, of the house of Dauid, and the virgins name *was* Marie. *Mat.1.18.*

28 And the Angel went in vnto her, and said, Haile thou *that art* freely beloued: the Lord *is* with thee: blessed *art* thou among women.

29 And when she sawe *him*, she was troubled at his saying, & thought what maner of salutation that should be.

30 Then the Angel said vnto her, Feare not, Marie: for thou hast founde fauour with God.

31 * For lo, thou shalt conceiue in thy wombe, and beare a sonne, * and shalt call his name IESVS. *Isa.7.14. Chap.2.21.*

32 He shalbe great, and shalbe called the Sonne of the Most High, and the Lorde God shall giue vnto him the throne of his father Dauid. *matt.1.21.*

33 * And he shall reigne ouer the house of Iacob for euer, and of his kingdome shalbe none ende. *Dan.7.14. 27. mich.4. 7.*

34 Then said Marie vnto the Angell, Howe shall this be, seeing I knowe not man?

35 And the Angel answered, and said vnto her, The holy Ghost shal come vpon thee, and the power of the most High shal ouershadowe thee: therefore also that holy thing which shalbe borne of thee, shalbe called the Sonne of God.

36 And beholde, thy cousin Elisabet, she hath also conceiued a sonne in her old age: and this is her sixt moneth which was called barren.
37 For with God shall nothing be vnpossible.
38 Then Marie said, Beholde the seruant of the Lorde: be it vnto me according to thy worde. So the Angel departed from her.
39 ¶ And Marie arose in those dayes, and went into the hill *countrey* with haste to a citie of Iuda.
40 And entred into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabet.
41 And it came to passe, as Elisabet heard the salutation of Marie, the babe sprang in her bellie, and Elisabet was filled with the holy Ghost.
42 And she cried with a loude voyce, and said, Blessed art thou among women, because the fruite of thy wombe is blessed.
43 And whence *commeth* this to me, that the mother of my Lorde should come to me?
44 For lo, assone as the voyce of thy salutation sounded in mine eares, the babe sprang in my bellie for ioye.
45 And blessed *is* she that beleeued: for those things shalbe performed, which were tolde her from the Lord.
46 Then Marie said, My soule magnifieth the Lord,
47 And my spirit reioyceth in God my Sauiour.
48 For he hath looked on the poore degree of his seruant: for behold, from hence forth shall all ages call me blessed.
49 Because, he that is mightie, hath done for me great things, and holy is his Name.
50 And his mercie is from generation to generation on them that feare him.
51 * He hath shewed strength with his arme: * he hath scattered the proude in the imagination of their hearts.
52 * He hath put downe the mightie from *their* seates, and exalted them of lowe degree.
53 * He hath filled the hungrie with good things, and sent away the riche emptie.
54 * He hath vpholden Israel his seruant to be mindefull of *his* mercie,
55 (* As he hath spoken to our fathers, *to wit*, to Abraham and

Isa. 51.9. *Psal.* 33.10. *Isa.* 29.15. *2. Sam.* 2.6. *Psalm.* 34. 19. *Isa.* 30.18. & 41.8. & 54.5. *Iere.* 12.3.20. *Deu.* 17.19. & 21.17. *Psal.* 132.11

and his ſeede) for euer.

56 ¶ And Marie abode with her about three moneths: after, ſhe returned to her owne houſe.

57 ¶ Nowe Eliſabets time was fulfilled, that ſhe ſhould be deliuered, and ſhe brought forth a ſonne.

58 And her neighbours, and couſins heard tell howe the Lord had ſhewed his great mercie vpon her, and they * reioyced with her. *Verſ. 14.*

59 And it was ſo that on the eight day, they came to circumciſe the babe, and called him Zacharias after the name of his father.

60 But his mother anſwered, and ſaid, Not ſo, but he ſhal be called Iohn.

61 And they ſayd vnto her, There is none of thy kindred, that is named with this name.

62 Then they made ſignes to his father, howe he woulde haue him called.

63 So he asked for writing tables, and wrote, ſaying, His name is Iohn, and they maruciled all.

64 And his mouth was opened immediatly, & his tongue, ‖ and he ſpake and prayſed God. ‖ *I was reſtored to it former ſtate, is read in ſome copies.*

65 Then feare came on all them that dwelt neere vnto them, and al theſe wordes were noyſed abroad throughout all the hill *country* of Iudea.

66 And all they that heard them, laide *them* vp in theyr heartes, ſaying, What maner childe ſhall this be! and the hande of the Lorde was with him.

67 Then his father Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghoſt, and prophecied, ſaying,

68 Bleſſed *be* the Lord God of Iſrael, becauſe he hath viſited and * redeemed his people, *Chap. 2, 30. mat. 1, 21.*

69 * And hath raiſed vp the horne of ſaluation vnto vs, in the houſe of his ſeruant Dauid, *Pſal. 132. 18.*

70 * As he ſpake by the mouth of his holy Prophetes, which were ſince the worlde began, *ſaying*, *Iere. 23. 6. and 30. 10.*

71 *That he would ſende vs* deliuerance from our enemies, and from the handes of all that hate vs,

72 That he might ſhewe mercie towardes our fathers, & remember his holy couenant,

73 * *And* the othe which he ſware to our father Abraha, *Gene. 22. 16. Iere. 31. 33. hebr. 6. 13. 17.*

74 *VVhich was*, that he would graunt vnto vs, that we being deliuered out of the handes of our enemies, ſhould ſerue

serue him without feare,

1.Pet.1.5. 75 All the dayes of our life, in * holines and righteousnes before him.

76 And thou, babe, shalt be called the Prophete of the most High: for thou shalt goe before the face of the Lord, to prepare his wayes,

77 *And* to giue knowledge of saluation vnto his people, by the remission of their sinnes,

Zach.3.8. and 6.12. Mal.4.2. 78 Through the tender mercie of our God, whereby *the day spring from an hie hath visited vs,

79 To giue light to them that sit in darkenes, and in the shadowe of death, and to guide our feete into the way of peace.

80 And the childe grewe, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the wildernes, tyll the day came that he should shewe himselfe vnto Israel.

CHAP. II.

1 Augustus Cesar taxeth al the world. 7 Christ is borne. 13 The Angels song. 21 Christ is circumcised. 22 Marie purified. 28 Simeon taketh Christ in his armes. 29 His song. 36 Anna the Prophetisse. 40 The childe Christ. 46 Iesus disputeth with the doctours.

1 AND it came to passe in those dayes, that there came a decree from Augustus Cesar, that all the worlde shoulde be taxed.

2 (This first taxing was made when Cyrenius was gouernour of Syria.)

3 Therefore went al to be taxed, euery man to his owne citie.

4 And Ioseph also went vp from Galile out of a citie called Nazareth, into Iudea, vnto the citie of * Dauid, Rom.7.42. which is called Beth-leem (because he was of the house and linage of Dauid,)

5 To be taxed with Marie that was giuen him to wife, which was with childe.

6 ¶ And so it was, that whyle they were there, the daies were accomplished that she should be deliuered.

7 And she brought forth her first begotte sonne, & wrapped him in swadling clothes, and layde him in a cratch, because there was not roome for them in the ynne.

8 ¶ And there were in the same countrey shepheardes, abyding in the fielde, and keeping watche by night

ouer

ouer their flocke.

9 And lo, the Angel of the Lord came vpon them, & the glorie of the Lorde ſhone about them, and they were ſore afrayde.

10 Then the Angel ſayd vnto them, Be not afraid: for beholde, I bring you glad tidings of great ioye, that ſhall be to all the people:

11 *That is*, that vnto you is borne this day in the citie of Dauid, a Sauiour, which is Chriſt the Lord.

12 And this *ſhalbe* a ſigne to you, Ye ſhall finde the babe ſwadled, and layde in a cratch.

13 And ſtraight way there was with the Angel a multitude of heauenly ſouldiers, prayſing God, and ſaying,

14 Glorie *be* to God in the high *heauens*, and peace in earth, and towards men good will.

15 And it came to paſſe when the Angels were gone away from them into heauen, that the ſhepheardes ſayd one to another, Let vs goe then vnto Beth-leem, and ſee this thing that is come to paſſe which the Lorde hath ſhewed vnto vs.

16 So they came with haſte, and founde both Marie and Ioſeph, and the babe layde in the cratch.

17 And when they had ſeene it, they publiſhed abroade the thing, which was tolde them of that childe.

18 And all that heard it, wondred at the thinges which were tolde them of the ſhepheards.

19 But Marie kept all thoſe ſayings, and pondered *them* in her heart.

20 And the ſhepheardes returned glorifying and prayſing God, for al that they had heard and ſeene as it was ſpoken vnto them.

21 ¶ * And when the eight dayes were accompliſhed, that they ſhould circumciſe the childe, his name was then called * IESVS which was named of the Angel, before he was conceyued in the wombe. *Gen.17.12. leuit.12.3. iohn.7.22. Chap.1.31.*

22 * And when the dayes of her purification after the Lawe of Moſes were accompliſhed, they brought him to Hieruſalem, to preſent him to the Lord, *mat.1.21. Leuit.12.6.*

23 (As it is written in the Lawe of the Lorde, * Euery man childe that *firſt* openeth the wombe, ſhalbe called holy to the Lord,) *Exod.13.2. numb.8.16.*

24 And to giue an oblation, * as it is commaunded in the *Leuit.12.6.*

the Lawe of the Lorde, a paire of turtle doues, or two yong pigeons.

25 And beholde, there was a man in Hierusalem, whose name was Simeon: this man *was* iust, and feared God, and wayted for the consolation of Israel, and the holy Ghost was vpon him.

26 And it was declared to him from God by the holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seene that Anoynted of the Lord.

27 And he came by *the motion* of the Spirit into the Temple, and when the parents brought in the babe Iesus, to do for him after the custome of the Law,

28 Then he tooke him in his armes, and praysed God, and sayde,

29 Lord, now letteſt thou thy seruant departe in peace, according to thy word,

30 For mine eyes haue seene thy saluation,

31 Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people,

32 A light to be reuelyed to the Gentiles, and the glorie of thy people Israel.

33 And Ioseph and his mother marueiled at those things, which were spoken touching him.

34 And Simeon blessed them, and sayde vnto Marie his mother, Beholde, this *childe* is appoynted for the * fall and rising agayne of many in Israel, & for a signe which shalbe spoken agaynst,

Isa.8.14. rom.9.32. 1.pet.2.8.

35 (Yea and a sworde shall pearce through thy soule, that the thoughts of many hearts may be opened.

36 And there was a Prophetisse, one Anna the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser, which was of a great age, after she had lined with an husband seuen yeres from her virginitie:

37 And she *was* widowe about foure score and foure yeres, and went not out of the Temple, but serued God with fastings and prayers, night and day.

38 Shee then comming at the same instant vpon them, confessed likewise the Lord, and spake of him to al that looked for redemption in Hierusalem.

39 And when they had performed all things according to the Law of the Lord, they returned into Galile to their owne citie Nazareth.

40 And

40 And the childe grew, and waxed ſtrong in Spirit, and was filled with wiſdome, and the grace of God was with him.

41 ¶ Nowe his parentes went to Hieruſalem euery yeare,* at the feaſt of the Paſſeouer. *Deut. 16. E.

42 And when he was twelue yere olde, and they were come vp to Hieruſalem, after the cuſtome of the feaſt,

43 And had finiſhed the dayes *thereof*, as they returned, the childe Ieſus remained in Hieruſalem, and Ioſeph knewe not, nor his mother,

44 But they ſuppoſing that he had bene in the companie, went a dayes iourney, and ſought him among *their* kinsfolke, and acquaintance.

45 And when they founde him not, they turned backe to Hieruſalem, and ſought him.

46 And it came to paſſe three dayes after, that they foūd him in the Temple, ſitting in the middes of the doctours, both hearing them, and asking them queſtions:

47 And all that heard him, were aſtonied at his vnderſtanding, and anſweres.

48 So when they ſawe him, they were amaſed, and his mother ſaid vnto him, Sonne, why haſt thou thus dealt with vs? behold, thy father and I haue ſought thee with verie heaute hearts.

49 Then ſaid he vnto them, How is it that ye ſought me? knewe ye not that I muſt goe about my Fathers buſines?

50 But they vnderſtoode not the worde that he ſpake to them.

51 Then he went downe with them, and came to Nazareth, and was ſubiect to them: and his mother kept all theſe ſayings in her heart.

52 And Ieſus increaſed in wiſdome, and ſtature, and in fauour with God and men.

CHAP. III.

4 *Iohn exhorteth to repentance.* 15 *His teſtimonie of Chriſt.* 20 *Herod putteth him in priſon.* 21 *Chriſt is baptized.* 23 *his pedegree.*

1 NOwe in the ſifteneth yere of the reigne of Tiberius Ceſar, Pontius Pilate being gouernour of Iudea, and Herod being Tetrarch of Galile, and his brother Philip Tetrarch of Iturta, and of the countrey of Trachonitis, and

and Lysanias the Tetrarch of Abilene,

2 (* When Annas and Caiaphas were the hie Priestes) the worde of God came vnto Iohn, the sonne of Zacha-
Act.4.6. rias in the wildernes.

3 * And he came into all the coastes about Iordan, preaching the baptisme of repentance for the remission of
Matth.3.2. mark.1.4. sinnes.

4 As it is written in the booke of the sayings of Esaias the Prophet, which saith, * The voyce of him that cry-
Isai.40.3. iohn.1.23. eth in the wildernes is, Prepare ye the way of the Lorde make his paths straight.

5 Euery valley shalbe filled, and euery mountaine and hill shalbe brought lowe, and crooked thinges shalbe made straight, & the rough wayes *shalbe made* smoothe.

6 And all flesshe shall see the saluation of God.

7 Then sayde he to the people that were come out to be baptized of him, *O generations of vipers, who hath
Mat.3.7. forewarned you to flee from the wrath to come?

8 Bring forth therefore fruites worthy amendement of lyfe, and beginne not to say with your selues, We haue Abraham to *our* father: for I say vnto you, that God is able of these stones to raise vp children vnto Abraham.

9 Now also is the axe layd vnto the roote of the trees: therefore euery tree which bringeth not forth good fruite, shalbe hewen downe, and cast into the fire.

10 ¶ Then the people asked him, saying, What shall we doe then?

11 And he answered, and sayd vnto them, *He that hath
Iam.2.15. 1.iohn.3.17 two coates, let him parte with him that hath none: and he that hath meate, let him do likewise.

12 Then came there Publicanes also to be baptized, and sayde vnto him, Master, what shall we doe?

13 And he sayd vnto them, Require no more then that which is appointed vnto you.

14 The souldiers likewise demaunded of him, saying, And what shall we do? And he sayd vnto them, Do violence
Mat.3.11. mar.1.8. iohn.1.26. to no man, neither accuse any falsly, and be cõtent with your wages.

act.1.5. and 8.4. & 11.16. and 19.4. 15 As the people waited, and all men mused in their heartes of Iohn, if he were not that Christ.

16 Iohn answered, and sayd to them al, *In deed I bap-
tize you with water, but one stronger then I, commeth,

whose

whose shoes latchet I am not worthy to vnloose: he wil baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire.

17 Whose fanne *is* in his hande, and he will make cleane his floore, and will gather the wheat into his garner, but the chaffe wil he burne vp with fire that neuer shalbe quenched.

18 Thus then exhorting with many other things, he preached vnto the people.

19 * But when Herod the Tetrarch was rebuked of him, for Herodias his brother Philippes wife, and for all the euils which Herod had done, *Mat.14.3. mar.6.17.*

20 He added yet this aboue all, that he shut vp Iohn in prison.

21 * Nowe it came to passe, as all the people were baptized, and that Iesus was baptized & did pray, that the heauen was opened: *Mat.3.13. mar.1.9. iohn 1.32.*

22 And the holy Ghost came downe in a bodily shape like a doue, vpon him, and there was a voyce frō heauen, saying, Thou art my beloued Sonne: in thee I am well pleased.

23 ¶ And Iesus him selfe began to be about thirtie yere of age, being as men supposed the sonne of Ioseph, *which was the sonne* of Eli,

24 *The sonne* of Matthat, *the sonne* of Leui, *the sonne* of Melchi, *the sonne* of Ianna, *the sonne* of Ioseph,

25 *The sonne* of Mattathias, *the sonne* of Amos, *the sonne* of Naum, *the sonne* of Esli, *the sonne* of Nagge,

26 *The sonne* of Maath, *the sonne* of Mattathias, *the sonne* of Semei, *the sonne* of Ioseph, *the sonne* of Iuda,

27 *The sonne* of Ioanna, *the sonne* of Rhesa, *the sonne* of Zorobabel, *the sonne* of Salathiel, *the sonne* of Neri,

28 *The sonne* of Melchi, *the sonne* of Addi, *the sonne* of Cosam, *the sonne* of Elmodam, *the sonne* of Er,

29 ¶ *The sonne* of Iose, *the sonne* of Eliezer, *the sonne* of Iorim, *the sonne* of Matthat, *the sonne* of Leui,

30 *The sonne* of Simeon, *the sonne* of Iuda, *the sonne* of Ioseph, *the sonne* of Ionan, *the sonne* of Eliacim,

31 *The sonne* of Melea, *the sonne* of Mainan, *the sonne* of Mattatha, *the sonne* of Nathan, *the sonne* of Dauid,

32 *The sonne* of Iesse, *the sonne* of Obed, *the sonne* of Booz, *the sonne* of Salmon, *the sonne* of Naasson,

33 *The sonne* of Aminadab, *the sonne* of Aram, *the sonne* of Esrom,

Esrom, *the sonne* of Phares, *the sonne* of Iuda,
34 *The sonne* of Iacob, *the sonne* of Isaac, *the sonne* of Abraham, *the sonne* of Thara, *the sonne* of Nachor,
35 *The sonne* of Saruch, *the sonne* of Ragau, *the sonne* of Phalec, *the sonne* of Eber, *the sonne* of Sala,
36 *The sonne* of Cainan, *the sonne* of Arphaxad, *the sonne* of Sem, *the sonne* of Noe, *the sonne* of Lamech,
37 *The sonne* of Mathusala, *the sonne* of Enoch, *the sonne* of Iared, *the sonne* of Maleleel, *the sonne* of Cainan,
38 *The sonne* of Enos, *the sonne* of Seth, *the sonne* of Adam, *the sonne* of God.

CHAP. IIII.

1 *Of Christes temptation, and fasting.* 16 *He teacheth in Nazareth to the great admiration of all.* 24 *A Prophet that teacheth in his owne countrie is contemned.* 33 *One possessed of the deuill is cured.* 38 *Peters mother in lawe healed,* 40 *and diuers sicke persons are restored to health.* 41 *The deuils acknowledge Christ.*

1 AND Iesus full of the holy Ghost returned from Iordan, and was led by that Spirit into the wildernes,
2 * And was *there* fourtie dayes tempted of the deuill, & in those dayes he did eate nothing: but whē they were ended, he afterward was hungrie.
Mat.4.1. mark.1.12.
3 Then the deuill sayde vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, commande this stone that it be made bread.
4 But Iesus answered him, saying, It is written, * That man shall not liue by bread onely, but by euery worde of God.
Deut.8.3. mat.4.4.
5 Then the deuill tooke him vp into an high mountaine, and shewed him all the kingdomes of the world, *in the* twinkeling of an eye.
6 And the deuill sayd vnto him, All this power will I giue thee, and the glorie of those *kingdomes:* for that is deliuered to me: and to whomsoeuer I will, I giue it.
7 If thou therefore wilt worship me, they shalbe all thine.
8 But Iesus answered him, and sayd, Hence from me, Satan: for it is written, * Thou shalt worship the Lorde thy God, and him alone thou shalt serue.
Deut.6.13. and 10.20.
9 Then he brought him to Hierusalem, and set him on a pinacle of the Temple, and sayd vnto him, If thou be the Sonne of God, cast thy selfe downe from hence,

10 For

10 For it is written, *That he wil giue his Angels charge *Pſal.91.11.*
ouer thee to keepe thee:
11 And with *their* hands they ſhall lift thee vp, leaſt at a-
ny time thou ſhouldeſt daſh thy foote agaynſt a ſtone.
12 And Ieſus anſwered, and ſaide vnto him, It is ſayde,
*Thou ſhalt not tempt the Lord thy God. *Deut.6.16.*
13 And when the deuil had ended al the tentation, he
departed from him for a litle ſeaſon.
14 ¶ And Ieſus returned by the power of the ſpirit into
Galile: and there went a fame of him throughout all the
region rounde about.
15 For he taught in their Synagogues, & was honoured
of all men.
16 * And he came to Nazareth where he had bene *Mat.13.54*
brought vp, and (as his cuſtome was) went into the *mark.6.1.*
Synagogue on the Sabbath day, & ſtoode vp to reade. *ioh.4.43.*
17 And there was deliuered vnto him the booke of the
Prophet Eſaias: and when he had opened the booke,
he founde the place, where it was written,
18 *The Spirit of the Lord *is* vpon me, becauſe he hath *Iſa.61.1.*
anointed me, that I ſhould preache the Goſpell to the
poore: he hath ſent me, that I ſhould heale the bro-
ken hearted, that I ſhould preach deliuerance to the
captiues, and recouering of ſight to the blinde, that I
ſhould ſet at libertie them that are bruiſed:
19 And that I ſhould preache the acceptable yere of the
Lord.
20 And he cloſed the booke, and gaue it againe to the
miniſter, and ſate downe: and the eyes of all that were
in the Synagogue, were faſtened on him.
21 Then he began to ſay vnto them, This day is this Scrip-
ture fulfilled in your eares.
22 And all bare him witnes, and wondered at the gra-
cious wordes, which proceeded out of his mouth, and
ſaid. Is not this Ioſephs ſonne?
23 Then he ſaid vnto them, Ye wil ſurely ſay vnto me
this prouerbe, Phyſition, heale thy ſelfe: whatſoeuer we
haue heard done in Capernaum, do it here likewiſe in
thyne owne countrey.
24 And he ſaid, Verely I ſay vnto you, * No Prophet is *Ioh.n.4.44.*
accepted in his owne countrey.
25 But I tell you of a trueth, manie widowes were in Iſ-

1.Kin.17.9 Iam.5.17. rael in the dayes of *Elias, when heauen was shut three yeres and six moneths, when great famine was throughout all the land,

26 But vnto none of them was Elias sent, saue into Sarepta, *a citie of* Sidon, vnto a certaine widowe.

2.Kin.5.14 27 Also many lepers were in Israel, in the time of *Eliseus the Prophet: yet none of them was made cleane, sauing Naaman the Syrian.

28 Then all *that were* in the Synagogue, when they heard it, were filled with wrath,

29 And rose vp, and thrust him out of the citie, & led him vnto the edge of the hil, whereon their citie was buylt, to cast him downe headlong.

30 But he passed through the middes of them, and went his way.

Mat.4.13. mark.1.21. 31 ¶ * And came downe into Capernaum a citie of Galile, and there taught them on the Sabbath dayes.

Mat.7.29. mar.1.22. 32 * And they were astonied at his doctrine: for his worde was with authoritie.

Mar.1.23. 33 * And in the Synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of an vncleane deuill, which cryed with a loude voyce,

34 Saying, Oh, what haue we to doe with thee, thou Iesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy vs? I knowe who thou art, *euen* the Holy one of God.

35 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Holde thy peace, and come out of him. Then the deuill throwing him in the middes *of them*, came out of him, and hurt him nothing at all.

36 So feare came on them all, and they spake among themselues, saying, What thing is this? for with authoritie and power he commaundeth the foule spirits, and they come out.

37 And the fame of him spred abroad throughout all the places of the countrey round about.

Mat.8.14. mar.1.30. 38 ¶ * And he rose vp, and came out of the Synagogue, & entred into Simons house. And Simons wiues mother was taken with a great feuer, and they required him for her.

39 Then he stood ouer her, & rebuked the feuer, & it left her, & immediatly she arose, & ministred vnto them.

40 Now at the sunne setting, all they that had sicke *folke* of

of diuers diſeaſes, brought them vnto him, and he layde his handes on euery one of them, and healed them.

41 * And deuils alſo came out of manie, crying, and ſaying, Thou art that Chriſt that Sonne of God: but he rebuked them, & ſuffred them not to ſay that they knewe him to be that Chriſt. *Mar.1.35.*

42 And when it was day, he departed, and went forth into a deſert place, and the people ſought him, and came to him, & kept him that he ſhould not depart frō them.

43 But he ſayd vnto them, Surely, I muſt alſo preache the kingdom of God to other cities: for therfore am I ſent.

44 And he preached in the Synagogues of Galile.

CHAP. V.

1 Chriſt teacheth out of the ſhip. 6 Of the draught of fiſh. 12 The Leper. 16 Chriſt prayeth in the deſert. 18 One ſicke of the palſie. 27 Leui the Publicane. 34 The faſtings and afflictions of the Apoſtles after Chriſtes aſcenſion. 36. 37. 38. Faint hearted and weake diſciples are likened to olde bottels and worne garments.

1 THen * it came to paſſe, as the people preaſſed vpon him to heare the worde of God, that he ſtoode by the lake of Genneſaret, *Mat.4.18 mar.1.16*

2 And ſawe two ſhippes ſtand by the lake ſide, but the fiſhermen were gone out of them, and were waſhing their nettes.

3 And he entred into one of the ſhippes, which was Simons, and required him that he would thruſt of a litle from the lande: and he ſate downe, and taught the people out of the ſhip.

4 ¶Now when he had left ſpeaking, he ſaid vnto Simon, Lanche out into the deepe, and let downe your nettes to make a draught.

5 Then Simon anſwered, and ſayd vnto him, Maſter, we haue trauailed ſore all night, and haue taken nothing: neuertheles at thy word I will let downe the net.

6 And when they had ſo done, they incloſed a great multitude of fiſhes, ſo that their nette brake.

7 And they beckened to their parteners, which were in the other ſhip, that they ſhould come and helpe them, who came then, and filled both the ſhippes, that they did ſinke.

8 Nowe when Simon Peter ſawe it, he fell downe at Ie-

ſus knees, ſaying, Lord, go frō me: for I am a ſinful man.
9 For he was vtterly aſtonied, & al that were with him, for the draught of fiſhes which they tooke.
10 And ſo was alſo Iames and Iohn the ſonnes of Zebedeus, which were companions with Simon. Then Ieſus ſayd vnto Simon, Feare not: from henceforth thou ſhalt catch men.
11 And when they had brought the ſhips to lande, they forſooke all, and followed him.
12 ¶ * Nowe it came to paſſe, as he was in a certaine citie, beholde, *there was* a man full of leproſie, and when he ſawe Ieſus, he fell on his face, and beſought him, ſaying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canſt make me cleane.
Mat.8.2.
mar.1.40.
13 So he ſtretched forth his hande, and touched him, ſaying, I will, be thou cleane. And immediatly the leproſie departed from him.
14 And he commaunded him that he ſhould tell it no man: but Go, *ſaieth he*, and ſhewe thy ſelf to the Prieſt, and offer for thy cleanſing, as * Moſes hath commaunded, for a witnes vnto them.
Leuit.14.4.
15 But ſo much more went there a fame abroade of him, and great multitudes came together to heare, and to be healed of him of their infirmities.
16 But he kept him ſelfe apart in the wildernes, and prayed.
17 ¶ And it came to paſſe, on a certayne day, as he was teaching, that the Phariſes and doctours of the Law ſate by, which were come out of enery towne of Galile, and Iudea, and Hieruſalem, and the power of the Lorde was *in him* to heale them.
18 * Then beholde, men brought a man lying in a bed, which was taken with a palſie, and they ſought meanes to bring him in, and to lay him before him.
Mat.9.2.
mar.2.3.
19 And when they could not finde by what way they might bring him *in*, becauſe of the preaſſe, they went vp on the houſe, and let him down through the tyling, bed and all, in the middes before Ieſus.
20 And when he ſawe their fayth, he ſayd vnto him, Man, thy ſinnes are forgiuen thee.
21 Thē the Scribes and the Phariſes began to reaſon, ſaying, Who is this that ſpeaketh blaſphemies? who can forgiue ſinnes, but God onely?

22 But

22 But when Iesus perceyued their reasoning, he answered, and sayd vnto them, What reason ye in your hearts?
23 Whether is easier to say, Thy sinnes are forgiuē thee, or to say, Rise and walke?
24 But that ye may know that that Sonne of man hath authoritie to forgiue sinnes in earth, (he sayde vnto the sicke of the palsie) I say to thee, Arise: take vp thy bed, and go to thine house.
25 And immediatly he rose vp before them, and tooke vp *his bed* whereon he lay, and departed to his owne house, praysing God.
26 And they were all amased, and praysed God, and were filled with feare, saying, Doutles, we haue seene strange things to day.
27 ¶ *And after that, he went forth and sawe a Publicane named Leui, sitting at the receite of custome, and sayde vnto him, Folowe me. *Mat. 9. 9. mar. 2. 14.*
28 And he left all, rose vp, and folowed him.
29 Then Leui made him a great feast in his owne house, where there was a great companie of Publicanes, and of other that sate at table with them.
30 But they that were Scribes and Phārises amōg them, murmured against his disciples, saying, Why eate ye & drinke ye with Publicanes and sinners?
31 Then Iesus answered, and sayde vnto them, They that are whole, nede not the physition, but they that are sick.
32 * I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance. *1. Tim. 1. 15*
33 ¶ * Then they sayd vnto him, Why do the disciples of Iohn fast often, and pray, and the *disciples* of the Pharises also, but thine eare, and drinke? *Mat. 9. 14. mar. 2. 18.*
34 And he sayde vnto them, Can ye make the children of the wedding chamber to fast, as long as the bridegrome is with them?
35 But the dayes will come, euen when the bridegrome shalbe taken away from them: then shall they faste in those dayes.
36 Agayne he spake also vnto them a parable, No man putteth a piece of a new garment into an olde vesture: for then the new renteth it, and the piece *taken* out of the new, agreeth not with the olde.
37 Also no man powreth newe wine into olde vessels: for then

then the newe wine will breake the vessels, and it will runne out, and the vessels will perish:

38 But new wine must be powred into newe vessels: so both are preserued.

39 Also no man that drinketh old wine, straight way desireth new: for he sayth, The olde is more profitable.

CHAP VI.

1 *The disciples pul the eares of corne on the Sabbath.* 6 *Of him that had a withered hand.* 13 *The election of the Apostles.* 20 *The blessings and curses.* 27 *We must loue our enemies.* 46 *What fruite the word of God is to be heard.*

Mat.12.1. mark.2.23.

1 AND *it came to passe on a seconde solemne Sabbath, that he went through the corne fields, and his disciples plucked the eares of corne, and did eate, and rubbed them in *their* handes.

2 And certaine of the Pharises said vnto them, Why doe ye that which is not lawful to do on the Sabbath daies?

1 Sam.21.6

3 Then Iesus answered them, and sayd, * Haue ye not read this, that Dauid did when he him selfe was an hungred, and they which were with him,

4 How he went into the house of God, and tooke, and ate the shewe bread, and gaue also to them which were with him, which was not lawfull to eate, but for the * Priests onely?

Exod.29.33 Leuit.8.31. and 24.9.

5 And he said vnto them, The Sonne of man is Lord also of the Sabbath day.

Mat.12.9. mar.3.1.

6 ¶ * It came to passe also on another Sabbath, that he entred into the Synagogue, and taught, and there was a man, whose right hande was dried vp.

7 And the Scribes and Pharises watched him, whether he would heale on the Sabbath *day*, that they might find an accusation *against* him.

8 But he knewe their thoughtes, and sayd to the man which had the withered hande, Arise, and stande vp in the middes. And he arose, and stoode vp.

9 Then sayd Iesus vnto them, I will aske you a question, Whether is it lawful on the Sabbath dayes to do good, or to do euill? to saue life, or to destroye?

10 And he beheelde them all in compasse, and sayde vnto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he dyd so, & his hande was restored againe, as whole as the other.

11 Then they were filled full of madnes, and communed one

one with another, what they might do to Iesus.

12 ¶ And it came to passe in those dayes, that he went into a mountaine to pray, and spent the night in prayer to God.

13 And when it was daye, * he called his disciples, and of them he chose twelue, which also he called Apostles. *Chap. 9.1. mat. 10.1.*

14 (Simon whom he named also Peter, and Andrewe his brother, Iames and Iohn, Philippe, and Bartlemewe: *mar. 3.13. and 6.7.*

15 Matthewe, and Thomas: Iames *the sonne* of Alpheus, & Simon called Zelous,

16 Iudas Iames *brother*, & Iudas Iscariot, which also was the traytour.)

17 Then he came downe with them, and stood in a plaine place, with the company of his disciples, and a greate multitude of people out of all Iudea, and Hierusalem, and from the sea coast of Tyrus and Sidon, which came to heare him, and to be healed of their diseases:

18 And they that were vexed with foule spirits, and they were healed.

19 And the whole multitude sought to touche him: for there went vertue out of him, and healed them all.

20 ¶ * And he lifted vp his eyes vpon his disciples, and saide, Blessed *be* ye poore: for yours is the kingdome of God. *Mat. 5.3.*

21 * Blessed *are* ye that hunger now: for ye shalbe satisfied: * blessed *are* ye that weepe now: for ye shal laugh. *Isa. 65.13. Isai. 61.3.*

22 * Blessed are ye when men hate you, and when they separate you, and reuile *you*, & put out your name as euill, for the Sonne of mans sake. *Mat 5.11.*

23 Reioyce ye in that day, and be glad: for beholde, your rewarde is great in heauen: for after this maner their fathers did to the Prophetes.

24 * But wo *be* to you *that are* riche: for ye haue receiued your consolation. *Amos. 6.1.*

25 * Wo *be* to you that are full: for ye shal hunger. Wo be to you that now laugh: for ye shall wayle and weepe. *Isa. 65.13.*

26 Wo *be* to you when all men speake well of you: for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

27 ¶ * But I saye vnto you which heare, Loue your enemies: do well to them which hate you. *Mat. 5.44.*

28 Blesse them that curse you, and praye for them which hurt you:

Mat.5. 39. 2.Cor.6. 7. 29 * And vnto him that smiteth thee on the *one* cheeke, offer also the other: * and him that taketh away thy cloke, forbid not *to take thy* coate also.

30 Giue to euery man that asketh of thee: and of him that taketh away the *things that be* thine, aske them not agayne.

Mat.7.12. 31 * And as ye would that men should do to you, so do ye to them likewise.

Mat.5.46. 32 * For if ye loue them which loue you, what thanke shall ye haue? for euen the sinners loue those that loue them.

33 And if ye do good for them which do good for you, what thanke shall ye haue? for euen the sinners do the same.

Mat 5.42. deut. 15.8. 34 * And if ye lend *to them* of whom ye hope to receiue, what thanke shall ye haue? for euen the sinners lende to sinners, to receyue the like.

35 Wherefore loue ye your enemies, and doe good, and lend, looking for nothing againe, and your reward shall be great, and ye shalbe the children of * the most High: for he is kinde vnto the vnkinde, and to the euil.

Mat.5.45. 36 Be ye therfore merciful, as your Father also is merciful.

Mat.7.1. 37 ¶ * Iudge not, and ye shall not be iudged: condemne not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgiue, and ye shal be forgiuen.

Mat.7.2. mar.4.24. 38 Giue, & it shalbe giuen vnto you: * a good measure, pressed down, shaken together & running ouer shal men giue into your bosome: for with what measure ye mete, with the same shall men mete to you agayne.

Mat.15.14 39 And he spake a parable vnto them, * Can the blinde leade the blinde? shal they not both fal into the ditch?

Mat.10.24. iohn 13.16 and 15.20. 40 *The disciple is not aboue his master: but whosoeuer *will be* a perfect disciple, shalbe as his master.

41 ¶ * And why seest thou a mote in thy brothers eye, & considerest not the beame, that is in thine owne eye?

Mat.7.3. 42 Eyther how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou seest not the beame that is in thine owne eye? Hypocrite, cast out the beame out of thine owne eye first, & then shalt thou see perfectly to pull out the mote that is in thy brothers eye.

Mat.7.17. 43 ¶ * For it is not a good tree that bringeth forth euill fruite

fruite: neither an euill tree, that bringeth forth good fruite.

44 *For euery tree is knowen by his owne fruite: * for neither of thornes gather men figges, nor of bushes gather they grapes. *Mat.12.33. Mat.7.16.*

45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth good, & an euill man out of the euil treasure of his heart bringeth forth euill: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.

46 ¶ * But why call ye me Lorde, Lorde, and doe not the things that I speake? *Mat.7.21. rom.2.13. iam.1.22.*

47 Whosoeuer commeth to me, and heareth my wordes, & doeth the same, I will shewe you to whom he is like:

48 He is like a man which built an house, and digged deepe, and laid the foundation on a rock: & when the waters arose, the flood beat vpon that house, & coulde not shake it; for it was grounded vpon a rocke.

49 But he that heareth and doeth not, is like a man that built an house vpon the earth without foundation, against which the flood did beat, and it fell by and by: and the fall of that house was great.

CHAP. VII.

1 Of the Centurions seruant. 9 The Centurions faith. 11 The widows sonne raised from death at Nain. 19 Iohn sendeth his disciples to Christ: 33 His peculiar kinde of liuing. 37 The sinfull woman washeth Iesus feete.

1 WHen * he had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, he entred into Capernaum. *Mat.8.5.

2 And a certaine Centurions seruaunt was sicke and ready to dye, which was deare vnto him.

3 And when he heard of Iesus, he sent vnto him the Elders of the Iewes, beseching him that he woulde come, and heale his seruant.

4 So they came to Iesus, & besought him instãtly, saying, that he was worthy that he should doe this for him:

5 For he loueth, *said they*, our nation, and he hath built vs a Synagogue.

6 Then Iesus went with them: but when he was now not farre from the house, the Centurion sent friends to him, saying vnto him, Lord, trouble not thy selfe: for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter vnder my roofe:

7 Wherefore I thought not my self worthie to come vn-

to thee:but say the word, & my seruant shalbe whole.
8 For I likewise am a man set vnder authoritie, and haue vnder me souldiers, and I say vnto one, Go, and he goeth, and to another, Come, and he commeth, and to my seruant, Do this, and he doeth it.
9 When Iesus heard these things, he marueiled at him, and turned him, and said to the people that followed him, I say vnto you, I haue not found so great fayth, no not in Israel.
10 And when they that were sent, turned backe to the house, they found the seruant that was sicke, whole.
11 And it came to passe the day after, that he went into a citie called Nain, and many of his disciples went with him, and a great multitude.
12 Nowe when he came neere to the gate of the citie, beholde, there was a dead man caried out, who was the onely begotten sonne of his mother, which was a widow, and much people of the citie was with her.
13 And when the Lord sawe her, he had compassion on her, and said vnto her, Weepe not.
14 And he went and touched the coffin (& they that bare him, stood stil) & he said, Yong man, I say vnto thee, Arise.
15 And he that was dead, sate vp, and began to speake, and he deliuered him to his mother.
16 Then there came a feare on them all, and they glorified God, saying, A great Prophet is risen among vs, and God hath visited his people.
17 And this rumour of him went forth throughout all Iudea, and throughout all the region round about.
18 And the disciples of Iohn shewed him of all these things.
19 So Iohn called vnto him two certaine men of his disciples, and sent them to Iesus, saying, Art thou he that should come, or shall we wayt for an other?
20 And when the men were come vnto him, they saide, Iohn Baptist hath sent vs vnto thee, saying, Art thou he that should come, or shall we wait for another?
21 And at that time, he cured many of their sicknesses, & plagues, and of euill spirits, and vnto many blinde men he gaue sight freely.
22 And Iesus aunswered, and sayd vnto them, Goe your wayes and shew Iohn, what thinges ye haue seene and heard,

hearde: that the blinde see, the halt goe, the lepers are cleansed, the deafe heare, the dead are rayſed, *and* the poore receiue the Goſpell.

23 And bleſſed is he, that ſhall not be offended in me.

24 And when the meſſengers of Iohn were departed, he began to ſpeake vnto the people, of Iohn, What went ye out into the wildernes to ſee? A reede ſhaken with the winde?

25 But what went ye out to ſee? A man clothed in ſoft raiment? beholde, they which are gorgeouſly apparelled, and liue delicately, are in Kings courtes.

26 But what went ye forth to ſee? A Prophet? yea, I ſay to you, and greater then a Prophet.

27 This is he of whom it is written, * Behold, I ſend my meſſenger before thy face, which ſhall prepare thy way before thee. *Mat.3.2*

28 For I ſay vnto you, there is no greater Prophet then Iohn, among them that are begotten of women: neuertheleſſe, he that is the leaſt in the kingdome of God, is greater then he.

29 Then all the people that heard, and the Publicanes iuſtified God, being baptized with the baptiſme of Iohn.

30 But the Phariſes and the expounders of the Lawe deſpiſed the counſell of God againſt themſelues, and *were* not baptized of him.

31 *And the Lord ſaid, Whereunto ſhall I liken the men of this generation? and what *thing* are they like vnto? *Mat.11.16*

32 They are like vnto litte children ſitting in the market place, and crying one to another, and ſaying, We haue piped vnto you, and ye haue not daunced: we haue mourned to you, and ye haue not wept.

33 For Iohn Baptiſt came, neyther eating bread, nor drinking wine: and ye ſay, He hath the deuill.

34 The ſonne of man is come, and eateth and drinketh: and ye ſay, Behold, a man *which is* a glutton, and a drinker of wine, a friende of Publicanes and ſinners:

35 But wiſedome is iuſtified of all her children.

36 ¶ And one of the Phariſes deſired him that he would eat with him: and he went into the Phariſes houſe, & ſate downe at table.

37 And behold, a woman in the citie, which was a ſinner, when ſhe knewe that Ieſus ſate at table in the Phariſes houſe,

house, she brought a boxe of oyntment.

Mar. 15. 42 *Iohn.* 20. 11. 38 * And she stoode at his feete behinde him weeping, and began to wash his feete with teares, and did wipe them with the heares of her head, and kissed his feete, and anointed them with the oyntment.

39 Nowe when the Pharise which bade him, sawe it, he spake within him selfe, saying, If this man were a Prophet, he would surely haue knowen who, & what maner of woman this is which toucheth him: for she is a sinner.

40 And Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Simon, I haue somewhat to say vnto thee. And he said, Master, say on.

41 There was a certaine lender which had two detters: the one ought fiue hundreth pence, and the other fifties

42 When they had nothing to pay, he forgaue them both: Which of them therefore, tell *me*, will loue him most?

43 Simon answered, and said, I suppose that he, to whom he forgaue most. And he said vnto him. Thou hast truely iudged.

44 Then he turned to the woman, and said vnto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entred into thine house, and thou gauest me no water to my feet: but she hath washed my feete with teares, & wiped them with the heares of her head.

45 Thou gauest me no kisse: but she, since the time I came in, hath not ceassed to kisse my feete.

46 Mine head with oyle thou diddest not anoynt: but she hath anoynted my feete with oyntment.

47 Wherefore I say vnto thee, many sinnes are forgiuen her: for she loued much. To whom a litle is forgiuen, he doeth loue a litle.

48 And he said vnto her, Thy sinnes are forgiuen thee.

49 And they that sate at table with him, began to saye within thēselues, Who is this that euē forgiueth sinnes?

50 And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saued thee: go in peace.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Women that minister vnto Christ of their substance. 4 The parable of the sower. 16 The candle. 19 Christes mother & brethrē. 22 He rebuketh the windes. 26 Of Legiō. 37 The Gadarenes reiect Christ. 41 Iairus daughter healed. 43 The wemā deliuered frō the yssue of blood. 52 Weeping for the dead.

1 And

1 AND it came to passe afterward, that he him self went through euery citie and towne, preaching, and publishing the kingdome of God, and the twelue *were* with him,

2 And certaine women, which were healed of euill spirits, and infirmities, *as* * Marie which was called Magdalene, out of whom went seuen deuils, *Mar. 16.9.*

3 And Ioanna the wife of Chuza Herods steward, and Susanna, and many other which ministred vnto him of their substance.

4 * Now when much people were gathered together, and were come vnto him out of all cities, he spake by a parable. *Matt. 13.3. marke 4.1.*

5 A sower went out to sowe his seede, and as he sowed, some fell by the wayes side, and it was troden vnder feete, and the foules of heauen deuoured it vp.

6 And some fell on the stones, and when it was sprong vp, it withered away, because it lacked moystnes.

7 And some fell among thornes, and the thornes sprang vp with it, and choked it.

8 And some fell on good ground, and sprang vp, and bare fruite, an hundreth folde. And as he said these things, he cried, He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

9 Then his disciples asked him, demaunding what parable that was.

10 And he said, Vnto you it is giuen to know the secretes of the kingdome of God, but to other in parables, that when * they see, they should not see, and when they heare, they should not vnderstand. *Isai. 6.9. matt. 13. 14 marke 4.12 iohn 12.40. actes 28.26 rom. 11. 8.*

11 *The parable is this, The seede is the word of God.

12 And they that are beside the way, are they that heare: afterwarde commeth the deuill, and taketh away the worde out of their hearts, least they should beleeue, & be saued. *Mat. 13.18 marke 4.15*

13 But they that are on the stones, *are they* which when they haue heard, receiue the word with ioye: but they haue no rootes: which for a while beleeue, but in the time of tentation go away.

14 And that which fell among thornes, are they which haue heard, and after their departure are choked with cares and with riches, and voluptuous liuing, and bring forth no fruite.

15 But

15 But that *which fell* in good grounde, are they which with an honeſt and good heart heare the worde, and keepe it, and bring forth fruite with patience.

Cha.11.33 16 ¶ * No man when he hath lighted a candle, covereth
mat.5.15. it vnder a veſſell, neither putteth it vnder the bed, but
mar.4.21. ſetteth it on a candleſticke, that they that enter in, may ſee the light.

Chap.12.2. 17 * For nothing is ſecret, that ſhall not be euident: nei-
mat.10.26 ther any thing hid, that ſhall not be knowen, and come
mark.4.22. to light.

Chapt.19. 18 Take heede therefore how ye heare: for * whoſoeuer
26.mat.13. hath, to him ſhalbe giuen: & whoſoeuer hath not, from
12.& 25. him ſhalbe take eue that which it ſemeth that he hath.

29.mar.4. 19 ¶* Then came to him his mother and his brethren, &
25. could not come neere to him for the preaſſe.

Mat.12.46 20 And it was tolde him *by certaine*, which ſaid, Thy mo-
mark.3.32 ther and thy brethren ſtande without, and woulde ſee thee.

21 But he anſwered, and ſaid vnto them, My mother, and my brethren are theſe which heare the worde of God, and doe it.

Mat. 8.23. 22 ¶*And it came to paſſe on a certaine day, that he went
mark.4.36. into a ſhip with his diſciples, and he ſaid vnto them, Let vs go ouer vnto the other ſide of the lake. And they launched forth.

23 And as they ſayled, he fell a ſleepe, and there came downe a ſtorme of winde on the lake, & they were filled with water, and were in ieopardie.

24 Then they went to him, and awoke him, ſaying, Maſter, Maſter, we periſh. And he aroſe, and rebuked the winde, and the waues of water: and they ceaſſed, and it was calme.

25 Then he ſaid vnto them, Where is your fayth? & they feared, and wondered among them ſelues, ſaying, Who is this that commaundeth both the windes and water, and they obey him!

Mat.8.28. 26 ¶ * So they ſayled vnto the region of the Gadarenes,
mark.5.1. which is ouer againſt Galile.

27 And as he went out to land, there met him a certaine man out of the citie, which had deuils long time, and he ware no garment, neyther abode in houſe, but in the graues.

28 And

28 And when he sawe Iesus, he cryed out and fell downe before him, and with a loude voyce said, What haue I to doe with thee, Iesus the Sonne of God the most High? I beseech thee torment me not:

29 For he commaunded the foule spirit to come out of the man: (for oft times he had caught him: therefore he was bound with chaines, & kept in setters: but he brake the bands, & was caried of the deuil into wildernesses.)

30 Then Iesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? & he said, Legion, because many deuils were entred into him.

31 And they besought him, that he would not commaund them to go out into the deepe.

32 And there was thereby, an heard of many swine, feeding on an hill, and the *deuils* besought him, that he woulde suffer them to enter into them. So he suffred them.

33 Then went the deuils out of the man, & entred into the swine: and the heard was caried with violence from a steepe downe place into the lake, and was choked.

34 When the heardmen sawe what was done, they fled: and when they were departed, they tolde it in the citie and in the countrey.

35 Then they came out to see what was done, and came to Iesus, and found the man, out of whō the deuils were departed, sitting at the feet of Iesus, clothed, and in his right minde: and they were afraid.

36 They also which saw it, tolde them by what meanes he that was possessed with the deuil, was healed.

37 Then the whole multitude of the countrey about the Gadarenes, besought him, that he woulde depart from them: for they were taken with a great feare: and he went into the ship, and returned.

38 Then the man, out of whom the deuils were departed, besought him that he might be with him: but Iesus sent him away, saying,

39 Returne into thine owne house, and shewe what great things God hath done to thee. So he went his way, and preached throughout all the citie, what great thinges Iesus had done vnto him.

40 ¶ And it came to passe, whē Iesus was come againe, that the people receiued him: for they all wayted for him.

41 ¶ * And beholde, there came a man named Iairus, and he was the ruler of the Synagogue, who fell downe *Mat. 9. 18. mar. 5. 22.*

downe at Iesus feete, and besought him that he would come into his house.

42 For he had but a daughter onely, about twelue yeres of age, and she lay a dying, (and as he went, the people thronged him.

43 And a woman hauing an yssue of bloud, twelue yeres long, which had spent all her substance vpon physicions, and could not be healed of any:

44 When she came behinde *him*, she touched the hemme of his garment, and immediatly her yssue of blonde stanched.

45 Then Iesus saide, Who is it that hath touched me? When euery man denied, Peter said and they that were with him, Master, the multitude thrust thee, and treade on thee, and sayest thou, Who hath touched me?

46 And Iesus said, Some one hath touched me: for I perceiue that vertue is gone out of me.

47 When the woman saw that she was not hid, she came trembling, and fell downe before him, and tolde him before al the people, for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediatly.

48 And he said vnto her, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath saued thee: go in peace.)

49 While he yet spake, there came one from the rulers of the Synagogues house, which said to him, Thy daughter is dead: disease not the Master.

50 When Iesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Feare not: beleeue onely, and she shalbe saued.

51 And when he went into the house, he suffred no man to go in with him, saue Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and the father and mother of the maide.

52 And all wept, and sorowed for her: but he said, Weepe not: for she is not dead, but sleepeth.

53 And they laught him to scorne, knowing that she was dead.

54 So he thrust them all out, and tooke her by the hand, and cried, saying, Maide, arise.

55 And her spirit came againe, and she rose straight way: and he commaunded to giue her meat.

56 Then her parents were astonied: but he commaunded them that they should tell no man what was done.

CHAP.

1 *The Apostles are sent to preach.* 7 *and* 19 *The common peoples opinion of Christ.* 12 *Of the fiue loaues and two fishes.* 20 *The Apostles confession.* 24 *To lose the life.* 35 *We must heare Christ.* 37 *The possessed of a spirit.* 46 *Strife among the Apostles for the Primacie.* 49 *One casting out deuils in Christs Name.* 52 *The Samaritans wil not receiue Christ.* 55 *Reuenge forbidden.* 57. 59. 61 *Of three that would followe Christ, but on diuers conditions.*

1 THen * called he his twelue disciples together, and gaue them power and authoritie ouer al deuils, and to heale diseases. *Mat.* 10. 1. *mar.* 3. 13. *and* 6. 7.

2 * And he sent them forth to preach the kingdome of God, and to cure the sicke. *Mat.* 10. 7.

3 And he said to them, * Take nothing to your iourney, neither staues, nor scrip, neither bread, nor siluer, neither haue two coates a piece. *Mat.* 10. 9. *mar.* 6. 8.

4 And whatsoeuer house ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart.

5 And how manie soeuer wil not receiue you, when ye go out of that citie, * shake of the verie dust from your feete for a testimonie against them. *Chap.* 10. 11 *mat.* 10. 14.

6 And they went out, and went through euerie towne preaching the Gospel, and healing euerie where. *mar.* 6. 11. *actes.* 13. 51

7 ¶ * Now Herod the tetrarche heard of all that was done by him: and he doubted, because that it was said of some, that Iohn was risen againe from the dead: *Mat.* 14. 1. *mar.* 6. 14.

8 And of some, that Elias had appeared: and of some, that one of the olde Prophets was risen againe.

9 Then Herod said, Iohn haue I beheaded: who then is this of whome I heare such things? and he desired to see him.

10 ¶ * And when the Apostles returned, they tolde him what great things they had done. * Then he tooke them to him, and went aside into a solitarie place, *neere* to the citie called Bethsaida. *Mar.* 6. 30. *Mat.* 14. 13 *mar.* 6. 32.

11 But when the people knew it, they followed him: and he receiued them, and spake vnto them of the kingdome of God, and healed them that had neede to be healed.

12 * And when the day began to weare away, the twelue came, & said vnto him, Send the people away, that they may go into the townes and villages round about, and *Mat.* 14. 15 *mar.* 6. 35. *iohn.* 6. 5.

lodge, & get meate: for we are here in a desert place.
13 But he said vnto them, Giue ye them to eate. And they said, We haue no mo but fiue loaues and two fishes, except we should go and bye meat for al this people.
14 For they were about fiue thousand men. Then he said to his disciples, Cause them to sit downe by fifties in a companie.
15 And they did so, and caused al to sit downe.
16 Then he tooke the fiue loaues, and the two fishes, and looked vp to heauen, and blessed them, and brake, and gaue to the disciples, to set before the people.
17 So they did al eate, and were satisfied: and there was taken vp of that remained to them, twelue baskets ful of broken meate.

Mat. 26.13 *marke* 8.27 18 ¶* And it came to passe as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him: and he asked them, saying, Whom say the people that I am?
19 They answered, and said, Iohn Baptist: and other say, Elias: and some say, that one of the olde Prophets is risen againe.
20 And he said vnto them, But whome say ye that I am? Peter answered, and said, That Christ of God.
Mat. 17.22. *marke* 8.31 21 And he warned and cõmanded them, that they should tel that to no man,
Chapter 14. 27. *mat.* 10. 38. & 16. 24. *marke* 8. 34. *Chapter* 17. 33. *mat.* 10. 39. *and* 16. 25. *iohn* 12. 25. 22 Saying, *The Sonne of man must suffer many things, & be reproued of the Elders, and of the hie Priests and Scribes, and be slaine, and the third day rise againe.
23 ¶* And he said to them al, If anie man wil come after me, let him denie him selfe, and take vp his crosse daily, and folowe me.
24 *For whosoeuer wil saue his life, shal lose it: and whosoeuer shal lose his life for my sake, the same shall saue it.
25 *For what auantageth it a man, if he winne the whole world, and destroy him selfe, or lose him selfe?
Mat. 16.26 *marke* 8.36 *Chap.* 12.9. *matt.* 10.33 *mark.* 8.38. 2. *tim.* 2.12 26 *For whosoeuer shalbe ashamed of me, and of my words, of him shal the Sonne of man be ashamed, when he shal come in his glorie, and in the glorie of the Father, and of the holie Angels.
Mat. 16.28 *marke* 9. 1. 27 *And I tel you of a suretie, there be some standing here, which shal not taste of death, til they haue seene the kingdome of God.

28 *And

28 * And it came to passe about an eight daies after those wordes, that he tooke Peter and Iohn, and Iames, and went vp into a mountaine to pray. *Matt. 17.2. marke 9.2.*

29 And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was changed, and his garment was white and glistred.

30 And beholde, two men talked with him, which were Moses and Elias.

31 Which appeared in glorie, and tolde of his departing, which he should accomplish at Hierusalem.

32 But Peter and they that were with him, were heauie with sleepe, and when they awoke, they sawe his glorie, and the two men standing with him.

33 And it came to passe, as they departed from him, Peter said vnto Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to be here: let vs therefore make three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias, and wist not what he said.

34 While he thus spake, there came a cloude and ouershadowed them, and they feared when they were entring into the cloude.

35 * And there came a voyce out of the cloude, saying, This is that my beloued Sonne, heare him. *2.Pet. 1.17*

36 And when the voyce was past, Iesus was found alone: and they kept it close, and tolde no man in those daies any of those things which they had seene.

37 ¶ And it came to passe on the next day, as they came downe from the mountaine, much people met him.

38 * And beholde, a man of the companie cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee, beholde my sonne: for he is al that I haue. *Mat. 17.14 marke 9.17*

39 And lo, a spirit taketh him, and sodenly he crieth, & he teareth him, that he someth, and hardly departeth from him, when he hath brused him.

40 Now I haue besought thy disciples to cast him out, but they could not.

41 Then Iesus answered, and said, O generation faithles, and crooked, how long now shal I be with you, and suffer you? bring thy sonne hither.

42 And whiles he was yet comming, the deuil rent him, and tare him: and Iesus rebuked the vncleane spirit, & healed the childe, and deliuered him to his father.

43 ¶ And they were al amased at the mightie power of

God: and while they al wondred at al things, which Ie-
sus did, he said vnto his disciples,

Mat.17.22 mar. 9.31. 44 Marke these words diligently: * for it shal come to passe, that the Sonne of man shalbe deliuered into the hands of men.

45 But they vnderstoode not that word: for it was hid from them, *so* that they could not perceiue it: and they feared to aske him of that word.

Mat. 18.1. mar.9.35. 46 ¶ * Then there arose a disputation among them, which of them should be the greatest.

47 When Iesus sawe the thoughts of their hearts, he tooke a litle childe, and set him by him,

48 And said vnto them, Whosoeuer receiueth this litle childe in my Name, receiueth me: and whosoeuer shal receiue me, receiueth him that sent me: for he that is least among you al, he shalbe great.

Mar.9.38. 49 ¶ * And Iohn answered and said, Master, we sawe one casting out deuils in thy Name, and we forbad him, because he followeth *thee* not with vs.

50 Then Iesus said vnto him, Forbid ye *him* not: for he that is not against vs, is with vs.

51 ¶ And it came to passe, when the daies were accomplished, that he should be receiued vp, he setled him selfe fully to go to Hierusalem,

52 And sent messengers before him: and they went and entred into a towne of the Samaritans, to prepare him *lodging*.

53 But they would not receiue him, because his behauiour was, as though he would go to Hierusalem.

54 And when his disciples, Iames and Iohn sawe it, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we command, that fire come
2.Kin.1.10 12.13. downe from heauen, and consume them, euen as * Elias did?

55 But Iesus turned about, and rebuked them, and saide, Ye know not of what spirit ye are.

56 For the Sonne of man is not come to destroye mens liues, but to saue them. Then they went to another towne.

57 ¶ And it came to passe that as they went in the way,
Mat.8.19. * a certaine man said vnto him, I wil follow thee, Lord, whithersoeuer thou goest.

58 And Iesus said vnto him, The foxes haue holes, & the birdes

birdes of the heauen neſtes, but the Sonne of man hath not whereon to lay his head.

59 But he ſaid vnto another, Followe me. And the ſame ſaid, Lord, ſuffer me firſt to go and burie my father.

60 And Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Let the dead burie their dead: but go thou, and preach the kingdome of God.

61 Then another ſaid, I wil followe thee, Lord: but let me firſt go bid them fare wel, which are at mine houſe.

62 And Ieſus ſaid vnto him, No man that putteth his hand to the plough, and looketh backe, is apte to the kingdome of God.

CHAP. X.

1 *The ſeuentie diſciples.* 10 *The vnthankeful cities charged with impietie.* 17 *The diſciples returning home, are warned to be humble.* 30 *Who is our neighbour.* 38 *Of Martha and her ſiſter Marie.*

1 AFter * theſe things, the Lord appointed other ſeuentie alſo, and ſent them, two and two before him into euerie citie and place, whither he him ſelfe ſhoulde come. *Mat. 10. 1.*

2 And he ſaid vnto them, * The harueſt *is* great, but the labourers *are* fewe: pray therefore the Lord of the harueſt to ſend forth labourers into his harueſt. *Mat. 9. 37.*

3 * Go your waies: beholde, I ſend you forth as lambes among wolues. *Mat. 10. 16*

4 Beare no bagge, neither ſcrip, nor ſhoes, and * ſalute no man by the way. *2. King. 4. 29.*

5 * And into whatſoeuer houſe ye enter, firſt ſay, Peace *be* to this houſe. *Mat. 10. 12 mark. 6. 10*

6 And if the ſonne of peace be there, your peace ſhall reſt vpon him: if not, it ſhal turne to you againe.

7 And in that houſe tarie ſtil, eating and drinking ſuch things as by them *ſhalbe ſet before you:* * for the labourer is worthie of his wages. Go not from houſe to houſe. *Deuter. 24. 14. mat. 10. 10. 1. tim. 5 18.*

8 *But into whatſoeuer city ye ſhal enter, if they receiue you, eate ſuch things as are ſet before you,

9 And heale the ſicke that are there, and ſay vnto them, The kingdome of God *is come* nere vnto you. *Mat. 10. 11*

10 But into whatſoeuer citie ye ſhal enter, if they wil not receiue you, go your waies out into the ſtreetes of the ſame, and ſay, *Chap. 9. 5. actes. 13. 51 and. 18. 6.*

11 Euen the verie * duſt, which cleaueth on vs of your

eitie, we wipe of against you: notwithstãding know this, that the kingdome of God was come nere vnto you.

12 For I say to you, that it shalbe easier in that day for them of Sodom, then for that citie.

Mat.11.21 13 * Wo *be* to thee, Chorazin: wo *be* to thee, Beth-saida: for if the miracles had bene done in Tyrus and Sidon, which haue bene done in you, they had a great while agone repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes.

14 Therefore it shalbe easier for Tyrus, and Sidon, at the iudgement, then for you.

15 And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted to heauen, shalt be thrust downe to hel.

Mat.10.40. Iohn.13.20. 16 ¶ * He that heareth you, heareth me: and he that despiseth you, despiseth me. and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me.

17 ¶ And the seuentie turned againe with ioye, saying, Lord, euen the deuils are subdued to vs through thy Name.

18 And he said vnto them, I sawe Satan, like lightening, fal downe from heauen.

19 Beholde, I giue vnto you power to treade on Serpẽts, and Scorpions, and ouer al the power of the enemie, & nothing shal hurt you.

20 Neuerheles, in this reioyce not, that the spirits are subdued vnto you: but rather reioyce, because your names are written in heauen.

21 ¶ That same houre reioyced Iesus in the spirit, and said, I confesse vnto thee, Father, Lord of heauen and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and vnderstanding, and hast reuealed them to babes: euen so, Father, because it so pleased thee. ‖

‖ Then he turned to his disciples, and said, *Is read in some copies.*

22 Al thinges are giuen me of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Sonne is but the Father: neither who the Father is, saue the Sonne, and he to whome the Sonne wil reueile him.

23 ¶ And he turned to his disciples, and said secretly: * Blessed *are* the eies, which see that ye see.

Mat.13.16 24 For I tel you that manie Prophets and Kings haue desired to see those thinges, which ye see, and haue not seene *them*: and to heare those things which ye heare, and haue not heard *them*.

Mat.22.35. Mar.12.28. 25 ¶ * Then beholde, a certaine Lawyer stoode vp, and tempted

tempted him, saying, Master, what shal I do, to inherite eternal life?

26 And he said vnto him, What is written in the Lawe? how readest thou?

27 And he answered, and said, * Thou shalt loue thy Lord God with al thine heart, and with al thy soule, and with al thy strength, and with al thy thought, * and thy neighbour as thy selfe. *Deut.6.5.* *Leui.19.18*

28 Then he said vnto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt liue.

29 But he willing to iustifie him selfe, said vnto Iesus, Who is then my neighbour?

30 And Iesus answered, and said, A certaine man went downe from Hierusalem to Iericho, and fel among theeues, and they robbed him of his raiment, & wounded him, and departed, leauing him halfe dead.

31 Now so it fel out, that there came downe a certaine Priest that same way, and when he sawe him, he passed by on the other side.

32 And likewise also a Leuite, when he was come nere to the place, went and looked *on him*, and passed by on the other side.

33 Then a certaine Samaritane, as he iourneyed, came nere vnto him, and when he sawe him, he had compassion on him,

34 And went to him, and bound vp his wounds, & powred in oyle and wine, and put him on his owne beast, and brought him to an Inne, and made prouision for him.

35 And on the morowe when he departed, he tooke out two pence, and gaue them to the hoste, and said vnto him, Take care of him, and whatsoeuer thou spendest more, when I come againe, I wil recompense thee.

36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour vnto him that fel among the theeues?

37 And he said, He that shewed mercie on him. Then said Iesus vnto him: Go, and do thou likewise.

38 ¶ Now it came to passe as they went, that he entred into a certaine towne, and a certaine woman named Martha, receiued him into her house.

39 And she had a sister called Marie, which also sate at Iesus feete, and heard his preaching.

40 But Martha was combred about much seruing, and

came to him, and said, Master, doest thou not care that my sister hath left me to serue alone? bid her therefore that she helpe me.

41 And Iesus answered, & said vnto her, Martha, Martha, thou carest, and art troubled about manie things:

42 But one thing is needful, Marie hath chosen the good part, which shal not be taken away from her.

CHAP. XI.

1 He teacheth his Apostles to pray. 14 The domme deuil driuen out. 27 A woman of the companie lifteth vp her voice. 29 The Iewes require signes. 37 He being feasted of the Pharise reproueth the outward shewe of holines.

1 AND so it was, that as he was praying in a certaine place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said vnto him, Lord, teach vs to pray, as Iohn also taught his disciples.

Mat.6.9. 2 * And he said vnto them, When ye pray, say, Our Father, which art in heauen, halowed be thy Name: Thy kingdome come: Let thy wil be done, euen in earth, as it is in heauen.

3 Our daily bread giue vs for the day:

4 And forgiue vs our sinnes: for euen we forgiue euery man that is indetted to vs: And leade vs not into temptation: but deliuer vs from euil.

5 ¶ Moreouer he said vnto them, Which of you shal haue a friend, and shal go to him at midnight, and say vnto him, Friend, lend me three loaues?

6 For a friend of mine is come out of the way to me, & I haue nothing to set before him:

7 And he within shoulde answere, and say, Trouble me not: the doore is now shut, & my children are with me in bed: I can not rise and giue them to thee.

8 I say vnto you, though he would not arise and giue him, because he is his friend, yet doutles because of his importunitie, he would rise, and giue him as manie as he needed.

Mat.7.7. and 21.22. mar.11.24 iohn.14.13 & 16.23. iam. 1. 5. Mat.7.8. 9 * And I say vnto you, Aske, and it shalbe giuen you: seeke, and ye shal finde: knocke, and it shalbe opened vnto you.

10 * For euerie one that asketh, receiueth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shalbe opened.

11 * If

11 *If a ſonne ſhal aske bread of any of you that is a father, wil he giue him a ſtone? or if *he aske* a fiſhe, wil he for a fiſh giue him a ſerpent? *Mat.7.9.*

12 Or if he aske an egge, wil he giue him a ſcorpion?

13 If ye then which are euil, can giue good giftes vnto your children, how much more ſhal your heauenly Father giue the holy Ghoſt to them, that deſire him?

14 ¶ * Then he caſt out a deuil which was domme: and when the deuil was gone out, the domme ſpake, and the people wondered. *Mat.9.32. & 12.22.*

15 But ſome of them ſaid, * He caſteth out deuils through Beelzebub the chief of deuils. *Mat. 9.34. & 12.24. mar. 3.22.*

16 And others tempted him, ſecking of him a ſigne from heauen.

17 But he knew their thoughts, & ſaid vnto them, * Euery kingdome deuided againſt it ſelfe, ſhalbe deſolate, and an houſe *deuided* againſt an houſe, falleth. *Mat.12.25. mar.3.24.*

18 So if Satan alſo be deuided againſt him ſelfe, howe ſhal his kingdome ſtand, becauſe ye ſay that I caſt out deuils through Beelzebub?

19 If I through Beelzebub caſt out deuils, by whome doe your children caſt them out? Therefore ſhall they be your iudges.

20 But if I by the finger of God caſt out deuils, doutles the kingdome of God is come vnto you.

21 When a ſtrong man armed, keepeth his palace, the things that he poſſeſſeth, are in peace.

22 But when a ſtronger then he, commeth vpon him, and ouercommeth him: he taketh from him al his armour wherein he truſted, and deuideth his ſpoyles.

23 He that is not with me, is againſt me: and he that gathereth not with me, ſcattereth.

24 * When the vncleane ſpirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through drie places, ſeeking reſt: and when he findeth none, he ſaith, I wil returne vnto mine houſe whence I came out. *Mat.12.43.*

25 And when he commeth, he findeth it ſwept and garniſhed.

26 Then goeth he, and taketh to him ſeuen other ſpirits worſe then him ſelfe: and they enter in, & dwel there, * ſo the laſt ſtate of that man is worſe then the firſt. *Heb.6.4.*

27 ¶ And it came to paſſe as he ſaid theſe things, a *2.pet.2.20.*

certaine

certaine woman of the company lifted vp her voyce, & said vnto him, Blesse d *is* the wombe that bare thee, and the pappes which thou hast sucked.

28 But he said, Yea, rather blessed *are* they that heare the word of God, and keepe it.

Matth. 12. 38. 39. 29 ¶ * And when the people were gathered thicke together, he began to say, This is a wicked generation: they seeke a signe, and there shal no signe be giuen them, but the signe of *Ionas the Prophet.

Ion. 1. 12. 30 For as Ionas was a signe to the Niniuites: so shal also the Sonne of man be to this generation.

1. Kin. 10. 1. *2. Chro.* 8. 1. 31 * The Queene of the South shal rise in iudgement with the men of this generation, and shal condemne them: for she came from the vtmost partes of the earth to heare the wisdome of Solomon, and behold, a greater then Solomon *is* here.

Ionas 3. 5. 32 The men of Niniue shal rise in iudgement with this generation, and shal condemne it: for they * repented at the preaching of Ionas: and behold, a greater then Ionas *is* here.

Chap. 8. 16. *mat.* 5. 15. *mar.* 4. 21. 33 ¶ * No man when he hath lighted a candle, putteth it in a priuie place, neither vnder a bushel: but on a candlesticke, that they which come in, may see the light.

Mat. 6. 22. 34 * The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, then is thy whole body light: but if thine eye be euil, then thy body is darke.

35 Take heede therefore, that the light which is in thee be not darkenes.

36 If therefore thy whole body *shalbe* light, hauing no part darke, then shal al be light, euen as when a candle doeth light thee with the brightnes.

37 ¶ And as he spake, a certaine Pharise besought him to dine with him: and he went in, and sate downe at table.

38 And when the Pharise sawe it, he marueiled that he had not first washed before dinner.

Mat. 23. 25. 39 * And the Lord said to him, Indeede ye Pharises make cleane the outside of the cup, and of the platter: but the inward part is ful of rauening and wickednes.

40 Ye fooles, did not he that made that which is without, make that which is within also?

41 Therefore, giue almes of those things which you haue, and

and behold, al things shalbe cleane to you.

42 But wo *be* to you, Pharises: for ye tythe the mynt, and the rewe, & al maner herbes, and passe ouer iudgement and the lone of God: these ought ye to haue done, and not to haue left the other vndone.

43 * Wo *be* to you, Pharises, for ye lone the vppermost seates in the Synagogues, and greetings in the markets. *Luk.20.46. mat.23.6. mar.12.38.*

44 Wo *be* to you, Scribes and Pharises, hypocrites.* for ye are as graues which appeare not, & the men that walke ouer them, perceiue not. 39. *Mat.23.27.*

45 ¶ Then answered one of the Lawyers, and said vnto him, Master, thus saying thou puttest vs to rebuke also.

46 And he said, Wo *be* to you also, ye Lawyers: * for ye lade men with burdens grieuous to be borne, & ye your selues touch not the burdens with one of your fingers. *Mat.23.4. act.15.10.*

47 Wo *be* to you: * for ye buylde the sepulchres of the Prophets, and your fathers killed them. *Mat.23.29.*

48 Truely ye beare witnes, and allowe the deedes of your fathers: for they killed them, and ye buylde their sepulchres.

49 Therefore said the wisdome of God, I wil send them Prophets and Apostles, and of them they shal slay, and persecute away.

50 That the blood of all the Prophets, shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation,

51 From the blood of * Abel vnto the blood of * Zacharias, which was slaine betwene the altar and the Temple: verely I say vnto you, it shalbe required of this generation. *Gen.4.8. 2.Chro.24. 21.*

52 Wo *be* to you, Lawyers: for ye haue taken away the keye of knowledge: ye entred not in your selues, and them that came in, ye forbade.

53 And as he said these things vnto them, the Scribes and Pharises began to vrge him sore, and to prouoke him to speake of many things,

54 Laying wayt for him, and seeking to catch some thing of his mouth, whereby they might accuse him.

CHAP. XII.

1 *The leauen of the Pharises.* 5 *Who is to be feared.* 8 *To confesse Christ.* 17 *The Parable of the rithe man whose land*

land, was very fertil. 22 *Not to care for earthly things, but to seeke the kingdom of God.* 39 *The thiefe in the night.* 51 *Debate for the Gospels sake.*

Mat.16.5. mar.8.14. 1 IN* the meane time, there gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, so that they trode one another: and he beganne to say vnto his disciples first, Take heed to your selues of the leauen of the Pharises, which is hypocrisie.

Mat.10.26. mar.4.22. 2 * For there is nothing couered, that shall not be reuelled: neither hid, that shal not be knowen.

3 Wherefore whatsoeuer ye haue spoken in darkenes, it shalbe heard in the light: and that which ye haue spoken in the eare, in secret places, shalbe preached on the houses.

Mat.10.28. 4 * And I say vnto you, my friends, be not afraid of them that kil the bodye, and after that are not able to do any more.

5 But I wil forewarne you, whom ye shal feare: feare him which after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hel: yea, I say vnto you, him feare.

6 Are not fiue sparowes bought for two farthings, and yet not one of them is forgotten before God?

1.Sam.14.45. acts.27.34. 7 * Yea, and al the heares of your head are nombred: feare not therefore: ye are more of value then many sparowes.

Chap.9.26. mat.10.32. mar.8.38. 8 * Also I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shal confesse me before men, him shal the Sonne of man confesse also before the Angels of God.

2.tim.2.12. 9 But he that shal denie me before men, shalbe denied before the Angels of God.

Mat.12.31. mark.3.28. 1.ioh.5.15. 10 * And whosoeuer shal speake a word against the Sonne of man, it shalbe forgiuen him: but vnto him, that shal blaspheme the holy Ghost, it shal not be forgiuen.

Mat.10.19. mar.13.11. 11 * And when they shal bring you vnto the Synagogues, and vnto the rulers and Princes, take no thought how, or what things ye shal answere, or what ye shal speake.

12 For the holy Ghost shal teache you in the same houre, what ye ought to say.

13 And one of the company said vnto him, Master, bid my brother deuide the inheritance with me.

14 And he said vnto him, Man, who made me a iudge, or a deuider ouer you?

15 Wherefore

15 Wherefore he ſaid vnto them, Take heed, and beware of couetouſnes: for though a man haue aboundance, *yet* his life ſtandeth not in his riches.

16 And he put forth a parable vnto them, ſaying, The ground of a certaine rich man brought forth fruites plenteouſly.

17 Therefore he thought with him ſelfe, ſaying, What ſhal I do, becauſe I haue not *roume*, where I may lay vp my fruites?

18 And he ſaid, This wil I do, I wil pul downe my barnes, & build greater, and therein wil I gather al my fruites, and my goods.

19 And I wil ſay to my ſoule, Soule, thou haſt much goods laid vp for many yeres: liue at eaſe, eate, drinke, and take thy paſtime.

20 But God ſaid vnto him, O foole, this night wil they fetche away thy ſoule from thee: then whoſe ſhal thoſe things be which thou haſt prouided?

21 So *is* he that gathereth riches to him ſelfe, and is not rich in God.

22 And he ſpake vnto his diſciples, Therefore I ſay vnto you, * Take no thought for your life, what ye ſhal eate: neither for your body, what ye ſhal put on. *Mat.6. 25. 1.per.5.7.*

23 The life is more then meate: and the body *more* then the raiment. *pſal. 55.23.*

24 Conſider the rauens: for they neither ſowe nor reape: which neither haue ſtorehouſe nor barne, & yet God feedeth them: how much more are ye better the foules?

25 And which of you with taking thought, can adde to his ſtature one cubite?

26 If ye then be not able to do the leaſt thing, why take ye thought for the remnant?

27 Conſider the lilies how they grow: they labour not, neither ſpin they: yet I ſay vnto you, that Solomon him ſelfe in all his royaltie was not clothed like one of theſe.

28 If then God ſo clothe the graſſe which is to day in the field, and to morowe is caſt into the ouen, how muche more *wil he clothe* you, O ye of litle faith?

29 Therefore aske not what ye ſhal eate, or what ye ſhal drinke, neither hang you in ſuſpence.

30 For all ſuch things the people of the world ſeeke for: and

and your Father knoweth that ye haue neede of these things.

31 But rather seeke ye after the kingdome of God, and all these things shall be cast vpon you.

32 Feare not, litle flocke: for it is your Fathers pleasure to giue you the kingdome.

Mat. 6.20. 33 ¶ * Sel that ye haue, and giue almes: make you bagges which waxe not olde, a treasure that can neuer faile in heauen, where no theefe commeth, neither moth corrupteth.

34 For where your treasure is, there wil your hearts be also.

1. Pet. 1.13. 35 ¶ * Let your loynes be gird about, and your lightes burning.

36 And ye your selues like vnto men that wayte for their master, when he wil returne from the wedding, that when he commeth and knocketh, they may open vnto him immediatly.

37 Blessed *are* those seruants, whom the Lord when he commeth shal finde waking: Verely I say vnto you, he wil girde him self about and make them to sit at table, and wil come forth, and serue them.

38 And if he come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and shal finde them so, blessed are those seruants.

Mat. 24.43. Reue. 16.15. & 3.3. 39 * Now vnderstand this, that if the good man of the house had knowen at what houre the theefe would haue come, he would haue watched, and would not haue suffered his house to be digged through.

40 Be ye also prepared therefore: for the Sonne of man wil come at an houre when ye think not.

41 Then Peter said vnto him, Master, tellest thou this parable vnto vs, or euen to all?

42 And the Lord said, Who is a faithful steward, & wise, whom the master shal make ruler ouer his houshelde to giue them their portion of meate in season?

43 Blessed is that seruant, whom his master when he commeth shal finde so doing.

44 Of a trueth I say vnto you, that he wil make him ruler ouer all that he hath.

45 But if that seruant say in his heart, My master doeth deferre his comming, and shal beginne to smite the seruants,

uants, and maidens, and to eate, and drinke, and to be drunken:

46 The maſter of that ſeruant wil come in a day when he thinketh not, and at an houre when he is not ware of, and wil cut him of, and giue him his portion with the vnbeleeuers.

47 ¶ And that ſeruant that knewe his maſters wil, and prepared not him ſelfe, neither did according to his wil, ſhalbe beaten with many *ſtripes*.

48 But he that knewe it not, and yet did commit things worthy of ſtripes, ſhalbe beaten with fewe *ſtripes*: for vnto whomeſoeuer much is giuen, of him ſhalbe much required, and to whom men much commit, the more of him wil they aske.

49 ¶ I am come to put fire on the earth, and what is my deſire, if it be already kindled?

50 Notwithſtanding I muſt be baptized with a baptiſme, and how am I grieued, til it be ended?

51 * Thinke ye that I am come to giue peace on earth? I tel you, nay, but rather debate. *Mat.10.34.*

52 For from hence forth there ſhalbe fiue in one houſe deuided, three againſt two, and two againſt three.

53 The father ſhalbe deuided againſt the ſonne: and the ſonne againſt the father: the mother againſt the daughter, and the daughter againſt the mother: the mother in lawe againſt her daughter in lawe, and the daughter in law againſt her mother in lawe.

54 ¶ * Then ſaid he to the people, When ye ſee a cloud riſe out of the Weſt, ſtraight way ye ſay, A ſhower commeth: and ſo it is. *Mat.16.2.*

55 And when ye ſee the South winde blow, ye ſay, that it wilbe heate: and it commeth to paſſe.

56 Hypocrites, ye can diſcerne the face of the earth, and of the ſkie: but why diſcerne ye not this time?

57 Yea, & why iudge ye not of your ſelues what is right?

58 ¶ * While thou goeſt with thine aduerſarie to the ruler, as thou art in the way, giue diligence in the way, that thou maieſt be deliuered from him, leaſt he drawe thee to the iudge, and the iudge deliuer thee to the iayler, and the iayler caſt thee into priſon. *Mat. 5.25.*

59 I tel thee, thou ſhalt not depart thence, til thou haſt payed the vtmoſt mite.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *Of the Galileans,* 4 *and those that were slaine vnder the* 1
loam. 6 *The fig tree that bare no fruite.* 11 *The woman* 1
vexed with the spirit of infirmitie, that is, with a disease 1
brought on her by Satan, is healed. 19 *The parable of the* 1
graine of mustard seede. 21 *Of leauen.* 23 *How few* 1
shalbe saued. 31 *Herod that foxe.*

1 THere were certaine men present at the same season 1
that shewed him of the Galileans, whose blood Pi- 1
late had mingled with their sacrifices.

2 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Suppose ye 1
that these Galileans were greater sinners then al the- 1
ther Galileans, because they haue suffred such things?

3 I tel you, nay: but except ye amend your liues, ye shal 1
al likewise perish.

4 Or thinke you that those eightene, vpon whome the 1
tower in Siloam fel, and slew them, were sinners aboue 1
al men that dwel in Hierusalem?

5 I tel you, nay: but except ye amend your liues, ye shal 1
al likewise perish.

6 ¶ He spake also this parable, A certaine man had a 1
figge tree planted in his vineyard: and he came and 1
sought fruite thereon, and found none.

7 Then said he to the dresser of his vineyarde, Behold, 1
this three yeres haue I come and sought fruite of this 1
figge tree, and finde none: cut it downe: why keepeth 1
it also the ground barren?

8 And he answered, and said vnto him, Lord, let it alone 1
this yere also, til I digge round about it, & doung it.

9 And if it beare fruite, *wel:* if not, then after thou shalt 1
cut it downe.

10 ¶ And he taught in one of the Synagogues on the Sab- 1
bath day.

11 And behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of 1
infirmitie eighteene yeres, and was bowed together, & 1
could not lift vp *her selfe* in any wise.

12 When Iesus sawe her, he called her to him, and said 1
to her, Woman, thou art loosed from thy disease.

13 And he laied his hands on her, and immediatly she 1
was made straight againe, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the Synagogue answered with in- 1
dignation, because that Iesus had healed on the Sabbath 1
day

day, and said vnto the people, There are sixe daies in which men ought to worke: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the Sabbath day.

15 Then answered him the Lord, and said, Hypocrite, doeth not eche one of you on the Sabbath *day* loose his oxe or his asse from the stall, & leade him away to the water?

16 And ought not this daughter of Abraham, whome Satan had bound, lo, eightene yeres, be loosed from this bonde on the Sabbath day?

17 And when he said these things, al his aduersaries were ashamed: but al the people reioyced at al the excellēt things, that were done by him.

18 ¶ * Then said he, What is the kingdome of God like? or whereto shal I compare it? *Mat.13.31 mar.4.31.*

19 It is like a graine of mustard seede, which a man tooke and sowed in his garden, and it grewe, & waxed a great tree, and the foules of the heauen made nestes in the branches thereof.

20 ¶ * And againe he said, Whereunto shal I liken the kingdome of God? *Mat.13.33.*

21 It is like leauen, which a woman tooke, and hid in three peckes of flowre, til al was leauened.

22 ¶ * And he went through al cities and townes, teaching, and iourneying towards Hierusalem. *Mat.9.35. mar.6.6.*

23 Then said one vnto him, Lord, *are there* fewe that shall be saued? And he said vnto them,

24 * Striue to enter in at the straite gate: for manie, I say vnto you, wil seeke to enter in, and shal not be able. *Mat.7.13.*

25 When the good man of the house is risen vp, and hath shut to the doore, & ye begin to stand without, and to knocke at the doore, saying, Lord, Lord, open to vs, and he shal answere & say vnto you, I know you not whēce ye are.

26 Then shal ye begin to say, We haue eaten & drunke in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streetes.

27 * But he shal say, I tel you, I know you not whence ye are: depart from me, al ye workers of iniquitie. *Mat.7.23. and 25.41.*

28 There shalbe weping & gnashing of teeth when ye shal see Abraham & Isaac, & Iacob, & al the Prophets in the kingdome of God, and your selues thrust out at doores. *psal.6.8.*

29 Then shal come many from the East, and from the

West, and from the North, and from the South, & shal sit at table in the kingdome of God.

Mat.19.30 and 20.16. 30 * And beholde, there are last, which shalbe first, and there are first, which shalbe last.

Mar.10.31. 31 The same day there came certaine Pharises, and said vnto him, Depart, and go hence: for Herod will kil thee.

32 Then said he vnto them, Go ye and tel that foxe, Beholde, I cast out deuils, and wil heale stil to day, and to morowe, and the third day I shalbe perfected.

33 Neuertheles I must walke to day, and to morowe, and the day following: for it cannot be that a Prophet should perish out of Hierusalem.

Mat.23.37. 34 * O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which killest the Prophets, and stonest them that are sent to thee, how often would I haue gathered thy children together, as the henne *gathereth* her broode vnder *her* wings, and ye would not!

35 Beholde, your house is left vnto you desolate: and verely I tel you, ye shal not see me vntil *the time* come that ye shal say, Blessed *is* he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

CHAP. XIIII.

2 *The dropsie healed on the Sabbath.* 8 *The chiefe places at bankets.* 12 *The poore must be called to our feastes.* 16 *Of those that were bid to the great supper.* 23 *Some compelled to come in.* 28 *One about to builde a tower.*

1 AND it came to passe that when he was entred into the house of one of the chiefe Pharises on the Sabbath *day*, to eate bread, they watched him.

2 And beholde, there was a certaine man before him, which had the dropsie.

3 Then Iesus answering, spake vnto the Lawyers & Pharises, saying, Is it lawful to heale on the Sabbath *day*?

4 And they helde their peace. Then he tooke him, and healed him, and let him go,

5 And answered them, saying, Which of you *shal haue* an asse, or an oxe fallen into a pit, and wil not straight way pul him out on the Sabbath day?

6 And they coulde not answere him againe to those thinps.

7 ¶ He spake also a parable to the ghestes, when he marked

marked how they chose out the chiefe roomes, and said vnto them,

8 When thou shalt be bidden of any man to a wedding, set not thy selfe downe in the chiefest place, lest a more honorable man then thou, be bidden of him,

9 And he that bade both him and thee, come, and say to thee, Giue this man roome, and thou then begin with shame to take the lowest roome.

10 * But when thou art bidden, go and sit downe in the lowest roome, that when he that bade thee, commeth, he may say vnto thee, Friend, sit vp hier: then shalt thou haue worship in the presence of them that sit at table with thee. *Prou.25.5.*

11 * For whosoeuer exalteth him selfe, shalbe brought lowe, and he that humbleth him selfe, shalbe exalted. *Chap.18. 14.mat.23.*

12 ¶ Then saide he also to him that had bidden him, * When thou makest a dinner or a supper, cal not thy friendes, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor the riche neighbours, lest they also bid thee againe, and a recompence be made thee. *12. Prou.3. 27. tob.4.7.*

13 But when thou makest a feast, cal the poore, the maimed, the lame, *and* the blinde,

14 And thou shalt be blessed, because they can not recompence thee: for thou shalt be recompenced at the resurrection of the iust.

15 ¶ Now when one of them that sate at table, heard these things, he said vnto him, Blessed *is* he that eateth bread in the kingdome of God.

16 Then said he to him, * A certaine man made a great supper, and bade manie, *Mat.22.2. reuel.19.9.*

17 And sent his seruant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, Come: for al things are now readie.

18 But they al with one *mind* began to make excuse: The first said vnto him, I haue bought a farme, & I must nedes go out and see it; I pray thee haue me excused.

19 And an other said, I haue bought fiue yoke of oxen, & I go to proue them: I pray thee, haue me excused.

20 And another said, I haue married a wife, and therfore I can not come.

21 So that seruant returned, and shewed his master these things. Then was the good man of the house angrie, & said to his seruant, Go out quickely into the streetes

and lanes of the citie, and bring in hither the poore, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blinde.

22 And the ſeruant ſaid, Lord, it is done as thou haſt commanded, and yet there is roome.

23 Then the Maſter ſaid to the ſeruant, Go out into the hie wayes, and hedges, and compel them to come in, that mine houſe may be filled.

24 For I ſay vnto you, that none of thoſe men which were bidden, ſhal taſte of my ſupper.

25 Now there went great multitudes with him, and he turned and ſaid vnto them,

Mat.10.37. 26 * If anie man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and ſiſters: yea, and his owne life alſo, he can not be my diſciple.

Chap.9.29. mar.16.24. mar.8.34. 27 * And whoſoeuer beareth not his croſſe, and commeth after me, can not be my diſciple.

28 For which of you minding to builde a towre ſitteth not downe before, and counteth the coſt, whether he haue ſufficient to performe it,

29 Leſt that after he hath laide the foundation, and is not able to performe it, al that beholde it, begin to mocke him,

30 Saying, This man began to builde, and was not able to make an end?

31 Or what King going to make warre againſt another King, ſitteth not downe firſt, and taketh counſel, whether he be able with ten thouſand, to meete him that commeth againſt him with twentie thouſand?

32 Or els while he is yet a great waye of, he ſendeth an ambaſſage, and deſireth peace.

33 So likewiſe, whoſoeuer he be of you, that forſaketh not al that he hath, he can not be my diſciple.

Mat.5.13. mar.9.50. 34 * Salt is good: but if ſalt haue loſt his ſauour, wherewith ſhal it be ſalted?

35 It is neither meete for the land, nor yet for the dunghil, but men caſt it out. He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

CHAP. XV.

4 *The parable of the loſt ſheepe,* 8 *Of the groat,* 11 *And of the prodigal ſonne.*

1 Or, *drewe neere.* THen ‖ reſorted vnto him al the Publicanes and ſinners, to heare him.

2 There-

2 Therefore the Phariſes and Scribes murmured, ſaying, He receiueth ſinners, and eateth with them.
3 Then ſpake he this parable to them, ſaying,
4 * What man of you hauing an hundreth ſheepe, if he loſe one of them, doeth not leaue ninetie and nine in the wildernes, and go after that which is loſt, vntil he finde it? *Mat.18.12.*
5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his ſhoulders with ioye.
6 And when he commeth home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, ſaying vnto them, Reioyce with me: for I haue found my ſheepe which was loſt.
7 I ſay vnto you, that likewiſe ioye ſhalbe in heauen for one ſinner that conuerteth, *more* then for ninetie and nine iuſt men, which neede none amendement of life.
8 Either what woman hauing ten groates, if ſhe loſe one groate, doeth not light a candle, and ſweepe the houſe, and ſeeke diligently til ſhe finde it?
9 And when ſhe hath found it, ſhe calleth her friends, and neighbours, ſaying, Reioyce with me: for I haue founde the groate which I had loſt.
10 Likewiſe I ſay vnto you, there is ioye in the preſence of the Angels of God, for one ſinner that conuerteth.
11 ¶ He ſaid moreouer, A certaine man had two ſonnes.
12 And the yonger of them ſaid to his father, Father, giue me the portion of the goods that falleth to me. So he deuided vnto them *his* ſubſtance.
13 So not many daies after, when the yonger ſonne had gathered al together, he tooke his iourney into a farre countrey, and there he waſted his goods with riotous liuing.
14 Now when he had ſpent al, there aroſe a great dearth throughout that land, and he began to be in neceſsitie.
15 Then he went and claue to a citizen of that countrey, and he ſent him to his farme, to feede ſwine.
16 And he would faine haue filled his bellie with the huskes, that the ſwine ate: but no man gaue *them* him.
17 Then he came to him ſelf, & ſaid, How many hired ſeruãts at my fathers haue bread ynough, & I die for hũger?
18 I wil riſe and go to my father, & ſay vnto him, Father, I haue ſinned againſt heauen, and before thee,
19 And am no more worthy to be called thy ſonne; make

me as one of thy hired ſeruants.

20 So he aroſe and came to his father, and when he was yet a great way of, his father ſawe him, and had compaſſion, and ran and fel on his necke, and kiſſed him.

21 And the ſonne ſaid vnto him, Father, I haue ſinned againſt heauen, and before thee, and am no more worthy to be called thy ſonne.

22 Then the father ſaid to his ſeruants, Bring forth the beſt robe, and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, and ſhoes on his feete,

23 And bring the fat calfe, and kil him, and let vs eate, & be merie:

24 For this my ſonne was dead, & is aliue againe: and he was loſt, but he is found. And they began to be merie.

25 Now the elder brother was in the field, and when he came and drewe nere to the houſe, he heard melodie, and dauncing,

26 And called one of his ſeruants, and asked what thoſe things meant.

27 And he ſaid vnto him, Thy brother is come, and thy father hath killed the fatted calfe, becauſe he hath receiued him ſafe and ſound.

28 Then he was angrie, and would not go in: therefore came his father out and entreated him.

29 But he anſwered and ſaid to his father, Lo, theſe many yeres haue I done thee ſeruice, neither brake I at anie time thy commandement, and yet thou neuer gaueſt me a kid, that I might make merie with my friends.

30 But when this thy ſonne was come, which hath deuoured thy goods with harlots, thou haſt for his ſake killed the fat calfe.

31 And he ſaid vnto him, Sonne, thou art euer with me, and al that I haue, is thine. It was meete that we ſhould make merie, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is aliue againe: and he was loſt, but he is found.

CHAP. XVI.

1 The parable of the Steward accuſed to his maſter. 13 To ſerue two maſters. 16 The Lawe and the Prophets. 19 Of Dines and Lazarus.

1 AND he ſaid alſo vnto his diſciples, There was a certaine riche man, which had a ſteward, and he was accuſed vnto him, that he waſted his goods.

2 And

2 And he called him, and said vnto him, How *is it* that I heare this of thee? Giue an accounts of thy stewardship: for thou mayest be no longer steward.

3 Then the steward said within him selfe, What shall I do? for my master taketh away from me the stewardship. I can not digge, & to begge I am ashamed.

4 I know what I wil do, that when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receiue me into their houses.

5 Then called he vnto him euerie one of his masters detters, and said vnto the first, how much owest thou vnto my master?

6 And he said, An hundreth measures of oyle. And he said to him, Take thy writing, and sit downe quickely, and write fiftie.

7 Then said he to another, How much owest thou? And he said, An hundreth measures of wheate. Then he said to him, Take thy writing, and write foure score.

8 And the Lord commended the vniust steward, because he had done wisely. Wherefore the children of this world are in their generation wiser then the children of light.

9 And I say vnto you, Make you friends with the riches of iniquitie, that when ye shal want, they may receiue you into euerlasting habitations.

10 He that is faithful in the least, he is also faithful in much: and he that is vniust in the least, is vniust also in much.

11 If thē ye haue not bene faithful in the wicked riches, who wil trust you in the true *treasure*?

12 And if ye haue not bene faithful in another mās *goods*, who shal giue you that which is yours?

13 * No seruant can serue two masters: for either he shal hate the one, and loue the other: or els he shall leane to the one, and despise the other. Ye can not serue God and riches. *Mat. 6. 24*

14 Al these things heard the Pharises also which were couetous, and they scoffed at him.

15 Then he said vnto them, Ye are they, which iustifie your selues before men: but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men, is abomination in the sight of God.

16 * The Lawe and the Prophets *endured* vntil Iohn: *Mat. 11. 12*

and ſince that time the kingdome of God is preached, and euerie man preaſſeth into it.

Mat. 5. 18. 17 * Now it is more eaſie that heauen and earth ſhould paſſe away, then that one title of the Law ſhould fall.

Mat. 5. 32. *and* 19. 9. *1. cor.* 7. 11. 18 ¶ * Whoſoeuer putteth away his wife, & marieth another, cõmitteth adulterie: and whoſoeuer marrieth her that is put away frõ her husband, cõmitteth adulterie.

19 ¶ There was a certaine riche man, which was clothed in purple and fine linnen, and fared well and delicately euerie day.

20 Alſo there was a certaine begger named Lazarus, which was laied at his gate ful of ſores,

21 And deſired to be refreſhed with the crommes that fel from the riche mans table: yea, and the dogges came and licked his ſores.

22 And it was ſo that the begger died, and was caried by the Angels into Abrahams boſome. The riche man alſo died, and was buried.

23 And being in hel in torments, he lift vp his eyes, and ſawe Abraham a farre of, and Lazarus in his boſome.

24 Then he cryed, and ſaid, Father Abraham, haue mercy on me, and ſend Lazarus that he may dippe the tippe of his finger in water, and coole my tongue: for I am tormented in this flame.

25 But Abraham ſaid, Sonne, remember that thou in thy life time receiuedſt thy pleaſures, and likewiſe Lazarus paines: now therefore is he comforted, and thou art tormented.

26 Beſides al this, betweene you and vs there is a great gulfe ſet, ſo that they which would go from hence to you, can not: neither can they come from thence to vs.

27 Then he ſaid, I pray thee therefore father, that thou wouldeſt ſend him to my fathers houſe,

28 (For I haue fiue brethren) that he may teſtifie vnto them, leaſt they alſo come into this place of torment.

29 Abraham ſaid vnto him, They haue Moſes and the Prophets: let them heare them.

30 And he ſaid, Nay, father Abraham: but if one came vnto them from the dead, they wil amend their liues.

31 Then he ſaid vnto him, If they heare not Moſes and the Prophets, neither wil they be perſuaded, though one riſe from the dead againe.

1 *Offences.* 3 *We must forgiue him that trespasseth against vs.* 10 *We are vnprofitable seruants.* 11 *Of the ten lepers.* 20 *Of the comming of the kingdome of heauen.* 33 *False Christs.* 36 *After what maner Christs cõming shalbe.*

1 Then said he to the disciples, * It cannot be auoided, but that offences wil come, but wo *be* to him by whom they come. *Mat.18.7. mar.9.42.*

2 It is better for him that a great milstone were hanged about his necke, and that he were cast into the sea, then that he should offend one of these litle ones.

3 ¶ Take heede to your selues: if thy brother trespasse against thee, rebuke him: and if he repent, forgiue him.

4 * And though he sinne against thee seuen times in a day, and seuen times in a day turne againe to thee, saying, It repenteth me, thou shalt forgiue him. *Mar.18.21.*

5 ¶ And the Apostles said vnto the Lord, Increase our faith.

6 And the Lorde said, * If ye had faith *as much* as is a graine of mustard seede, & should say vnto this mulberie tree, plucke thy selfe vp by the rootes, and plant thy selfe in the sea, it should euen obey you. *Mat.17.20.*

7 ¶ Who is it also of you, that hauing a seruãt plowing or feeding cattel, would say vnto him by and by, when he were come from the field, Go, and sit downe at table?

8 And would not rather say to him, Dresse wherewith I may suppe, and gird thy selfe, and serue me, til I haue eaten and drunken, and afterward eate thou, & drinke thou?

9 Doeth he thanke that seruant, because he did that which was commanded vnto him? I trowe not.

10 So likewise ye, when ye haue done al those things, which are commanded you, say, We are vnprofitable seruants: we haue done that which was our duety to do.

11 ¶ And so it was when he went to Hierusalem, that he passed through the middes of Samaria, and Galile.

12 And as he entred into a certaine towne, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood a farre of.

13 And they lift vp their voyces and said, Iesus, Master, haue mercie on vs.

14 And when he sawe *them*, he said vnto them, * Go, shew your selues vnto the Priests. And it came to passe, that as they went, they were cleansed. *Leuit.14.2.*

15 Then

15 Then one of them, when he ſawe that he was healed turned backe, and with a loud voyce praiſed God,
16 And fel downe on his face at his feete, & gaue him thankes: and he was a Samaritan.
17 And Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid, Are there not ten cleanſed? but where *are* the nine?
18 There are none found that returned to giue God praiſe, ſaue this ſtranger.
19 And he ſaid vnto him, Ariſe, goe thy way, thy faith hath ſaued thee.
20 ¶ And when he was demaunded of the Phariſes, when the kingdome of God ſhould come, he anſwered them, and ſaid, The kingdome of God commeth not with obſeruation.
21 Neither ſhal men ſay, Lo here, or lo there: for behold, the kingdome of God is within you.
22 And he ſaid vnto the diſciples, The dayes wil come, when ye ſhal deſire to ſee one of the dayes of the Sonne of man, and ye ſhal not ſee it.
Mat.24.23. mar.13.21. 23 *Then they ſhal ſay to you, Behold here, or behold there: *but* go not thither, neither follow them.
24 For as the lightning that lightneth out of the one part vnder heauen, ſhineth vnto the other *part* vnder heauen, ſo ſhal the Sonne of man be in his day.
25 But firſt muſt he ſuffer many things, and be reproued of this generation.
Gene. 7.5. mat.24.33. 1.pet. 3.20. 26 *And as it was in the dayes of Noe, ſo ſhal it be in the dayes of the Sonne of man.
27 They ate, they dranke, they maried wiues, and gaue in mariage vnto the day that Noe went into the Arke: and the flood came, and deſtroyed them al.
Gen.19.24. 28 *Likewiſe alſo, as it was in the dayes of Lot, they ate they dranke, they bought, they ſolde, they planted, they built.
29 But in the day that Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire and brimſtone from heauen, and deſtroyed them al.
30 After theſe *enſamples* ſhal it be in the day when the Sonne of man is reueiled.
31 At that day he that is vpon the houſe, and his ſtuffe in the houſe, let him not come downe to take it out: and he that is in the fielde likewiſe, let him not turne backe to that he left behind.

32 *Re-

32 *Remember Lots wife. *Gen.19.26.*

33 *Whosoeuer wil seeke to saue his soule, shal lose it: and whosoeuer shal lose it, shal get it life. *Chap.9.24. mat.10.39.*

34 *I tel you, in that night there shalbe two in one bed: the one shalbe receiued, and the other shalbe left. *mat.8.35. iohn.12.25.*

35 Two women shalbe grinding together: the one shalbe taken, and the other shalbe left. *Mat.24.41.*

36 Two shalbe in the field: one shalbe receiued, and another shalbe left.

37 And they answered, and said to him, Where, Lord? And he said vnto them, *Whereſoeuer the body is, thither shal also the egles be gathered together. *Mat.24.28.*

CHAP. XVIII.

1 The Parable of the vnrighteous iudge and the widowe. 10 Of the Pharise and the Publicane. 15 Children are of the kingdome of heauen. 22 To sel al & giue to the poore. 28 The Apostles forsake al. 31 Christ foretelleth his death. 35 The blinde man receiueth sight.

1 AND *he spake also a parable vnto them, to this ende, that they ought alwayes to pray, and not to waxe fainte, *Rom.12.12. 1.thess.5.17.*

2 Saying, There was a iudge in a certaine citie, which feared not God, neither reuerenced man.

3 And there was a widowe in that citie, which came vnto him, saying, Do me iustice against mine aduersarie.

4 And he would not of a long time: but afterward he said with himselfe, Though I feare not God, nor reuerence man,

5 Yet because this widowe troubleth me, I wil do her right, lest at the last she come and make me wearie.

6 And the Lord said, Heare what the vnrighteous iudge saith.

7 Now shal not God auenge his elect, which crie daie & night vnto him, yea, though he suffer long for them?

8 I tel you he wil auenge them quickely: but when the Sonne of man commeth, shal he finde faith on the earth?

9 ¶He spake also this parable vnto certaine which trusted in themselues that they were iust, and despised other.

10 Two men went vp into the Temple to pray: the one a Pharise, and the other a Publicane.

11 The Pharise stood and prayed thus with himselfe, O God, I thanke thee, that I am not as other men, extortioners,

torsioners, vniust, adulterers, or euen as this Publicane.
12 I fast twise in the weeke: I giue tithe of al that euer I possesse.
13 But the Publicane standing a farre of, would not lift vp so much as his eyes to heauen, but smote his brest, saying, O God, be merciful to me a sinner.
Chr. 14.11. mat. 23.12. 14 I tel you, this man departed to his house iustified, rather then the other: * for euery man that exalteth himselfe, shalbe brought lowe, and he that humbleth himselfe, shalbe exalted.
Mat 19.13. mar. 10.13. 15 ¶ * They brought vnto him also babes that he should touch them. And when his disciples saw it, they rebuked them.
16 But Iesus called them vnto him, and said, Suffer the babes to come vnto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of God.
17 Verely I say vnto you, whosoeuer receiueth not the kingdome of God as a babe, he shal not enter therein.
Mat. 19.16. mar. 10.17 18 * Then a certaine ruler asked him, saying, Good master, what ought I to do, to inherite eternal life?
19 And Iesus said vnto him, Why callest thou me good? none is good, saue one, *euen* God.
Exo. 20.13. 20 Thou knowest the commandements, * Thou shalt not commit adulterie: Thou shalt not kil: Thou shalt not steale: Thou shalt not beare false witnes: Honour thy father and thy mother.
21 And he said, All these haue I kept from my youth.
22 Now when Iesus heard that, he said vnto him, Yet lackest thou one thing. Sel al that euer thou hast, and distribute vnto the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come follow me.
23 But when he heard those things, he was very heauy: for he was maruelous rich.
24 And when Iesus sawe him very sorowful, he said, With what difficultie shal they that haue riches, enter into the kingdome of God!
25 Surely it is easier for a camel to go through a needles eye, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.
26 Then said they that heard it, And who then can be saued?
27 And he said, The things which are vnpossible with men

men, are possible with God.

28 ¶* Then Peter said, Lo, we haue left al, & haue followed thee. *Mat.19.27. mar.10.28.*

29 And he said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, there is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children for the kingdome of Gods sake,

30 Which shal not receiue much more in this world, and in the world to come life euerlasting.

31 ¶* Then Iesus tooke vnto him the twelue, and said vnto them, Beholde, we go vp to Hierusalem, and all things shalbe fulfilled to the Sonne of man, that are written by the Prophets. *Mat.20.17. mar.10.32.*

32 For he shalbe deliuered vnto the Gentiles, and shalbe mocked, and shalbe spitefully entreated, and shalbe spitted on.

33 And when they haue scourged him, they wil put him to death: but the third day he shal rise againe.

34 But they vnderstood none of these things, and this saying was hid from them, neither perceiued they the things, which were spoken.

35 ¶* And it came to passe, that as he was come nere vnto Iericho, a certaine blind man sate by the way side, begging. *Mat.20.29. mar.10.46.*

36 And when he heard the people passe by, he asked what it meant.

37 And they said vnto him, that Iesus of Nazareth passed by.

38 Then he cryed, saying, Iesus the Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me.

39 And they which went before, rebuked him that he should hold his peace, but he cryed much more, O Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me.

40 And Iesus stoode stil, and commaunded him to be brought vnto him. And when he was come nere, he asked him,

41 Saying, What wilt thou that I do vnto thee? And he said, Lord, that I may receiue my sight.

42 And Iesus said vnto him, Receiue thy sight: thy faith hath saued thee.

43 Then immediatly he receiued his sight, and followed him, praysing God: and al the people, when they sawe *this*, gaue praise to God.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIX.

Zaccheus the Publicane. 13 Ten pieces of money deliuered to seruants to occupie withal. 29 Iesus entreth into Hierusalem. 41 He foretelleth the destruction of the citie with teares. 45 He casteth the sellers out of the Temple.

1 NOw when Iesus entred and passed through Iericho,

2 Beholde, there was a man named Zaccheus, which was the chiefe receiuer of the tribute, and he was rich.

3 And he sought to see Iesus, who he should be, & could not for the preasse, because he was of a lowe stature.

4 Wherefore he ran before, and climed vp into a wilde figge tree, that he might see him: for he shoulde come that way.

5 And when Iesus came to the place, he looked vp, and sawe him, and said vnto him, Zaccheus, come downe at once: for to day I must abide at thine house.

6 Then he came downe hastily, and receiued him ioyfully.

7 And when al they sawe it, they murmured, saying, that he was gone in to lodge with a sinful man.

8 And Zaccheus stood forth, and said vnto the Lord, Beholde, Lord, the halfe of my goods I giue to the poore: and if I haue taken from any man by forged cauillation, I restore him foure folde.

9 Then Iesus said to him, This day is saluation come vnto this house, forasmuch as he is also become the sonne of Abraham.

Mat.18.11. 10 *For the Sonne of man is come to seeke, and to saue that which was lost.

11 And whiles they heard these things, he continued & spake a parable, because he was nere to Hierusalem, and because also they thought that the kingdome of God should shortly appeare.

Mat.25.14. 12 He said therefore, *A certaine noble man went into a farre countrey, to receiue for himselfe a kingdome, & so to come againe.

13 And he called his ten seruants, and deliuered them ten pieces of money, and said vnto them, Occupie till I come.

14 Now his citizens hated him, and sent an ambassage after

after him, saying, We wil not haue this man to reigne ouer vs.

15 And it came to passe, when he was come againe, and had receiued his kingdome, that he commaunded the seruants to be called to him, to whome he gaue his money, that he might knowe what euery man had gained.

16 Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy piece hath encreased ten pieces.

17 And he said vnto him, Wel, good seruant: because thou hast bene faithfull in a very litle thinge, take thou authoritie ouer ten cities.

18 And the second came, saying, Lord, thy piece hath encreased fiue pieces.

19 And to the same he said, Be thou also *ruler* ouer fiue cities.

20 So the other came, and said, Lord, behold thy piece, which I haue laid vp in a napkin,

21 For I feared thee, because thou art a streight man: thou takest vp, that thou laiedst not downe, and reapest that thou diddest not sow.

22 Then he said vnto him, Of thine owne mouth wil I iudge thee, O euil seruant, Thou knewest that I am a streight man, taking vp that I layed not downe, and reaping that I did not sowe.

23 Wherefore then gauest not thou my money into the banke, that at my comming I might haue required it with vantage?

24 And he said to them that stoode by, Take from him that piece, and giue it him that hath ten pieces.

25 (And they said vnto him, Lord, he hath ten pieces.)

26 *For I say vnto you, that vnto al them that haue, it shalbe giuen: and from him that hath not, euen that he hath, shalbe taken from him. *Chap.8.18. mat.13.12. and 25.29. mar.4.25.*

27 Moreouer, those mine enemies, which would not that I should reigne ouer them, bring hither, and slay them before me.

28 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, he went forth before, ascending vp to Hierusalem.

29 *And it came to passe, when he was come neere to Bethphage, and Bethania, besides the mount which is called *the mount* of Olives, he sent two of his disciples, *Mat.21.1. mark.11.1.*

30 Saying, Go ye to the towne which is before *you*, wherein,

wherein, assone as ye are come, ye shal find a colte tyed whereon neuer man sate: loose him, & bring him hither.
31 And if any man aske you, why ye loose *him*, thus shal ye say vnto him, Because the Lord hath need of him.
32 So they that were sent, went their way, and found it as he had said vnto them.
33 And as they were loosing the colte, the owners therof said vnto them, Why loose ye the colte?
34 And they said, The Lord hath neede of him.
35 ¶ * So they brought him to Iesus, and they cast their *Mat.* 21.7. garments on the colte, and set Iesus thereon.
Iohn. 12.14. 36 And as he went, they spred their clothes in the way.
37 And whē he was now come nere to the going down of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to reioyce, and to praise God with a loud voyce for all the great workes that they had seene,
38 Saying, Blessed *be* the King that commeth in the Name of the Lord: peace in heauen, and glorie in the highest *places*.
39 Then some of the Pharises of the company e said vnto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples.
40 But he answered, and said vnto them, I tel you, that if these should hold their peace, the stones would crye.
Chap. 21.6. 41 ¶ * And when he was come nere, he beheld the Citie, *mat.* 24.1. and wept for it,
mar. 13.1. 42 Saying, O if thou haddest euen knowen at the least in this thy day those things, which *belong* vnto thy peace: but now are they hid from thine eyes.
43 For the dayes shal come vpon thee, that thine enemies shal cast a trench about thee, and compasse thee round, and keepe thee in on euery side,
44 And shal make thee euen with the ground, and thy children which are in thee, and they shal not leaue in thee a stone vpon a stone, because thou knewest not that season of thy visitation.
Mat. 21.13. 45 ¶ * He went also into the Temple, and began to cast out them that solde therein, & them that bought,
Mar. 11.17. 46 Saying vnto them, It is written, * Mine house is the *Isai.* 56.7. house of prayer, * but ye haue made it a dēne of thieues.
Iere. 7.11. 47 And he taught dayly in the Temple. And the high Priests and the Scribes, & the chief of the people sought to destroy him.

48 But

48 But they coulde not finde what they might doe to him: for all the people hanged vpon him when they heard him.

CHAP. XX.

4 From whence Iohns baptisme was. 9 The wickednes of the Priests is noted by the parable of the vineyard & the husbād men. 21 To giue tribute to Cesar. 27 He conuinceth the Sadduces denying the resurrection. 41 Howe Christ is the sonne of Dauid.

1 AND * it came to passe, that on one of those dayes, as he taught the people in the Temple, and preached the Gospell, the high Priests and the Scribes came vpon him with the Elders, *Mat.21.23 mar.11.27.*

2 And spake vnto him, saying, Tel vs, by what authoritie thou doest these thinges, or who is he that hath giuen thee this authoritie?

3 And he answered, and saide vnto them, I also will aske you one thing: tell me therefore:

4 The baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men?

5 And they reasoned within them selues, saying, If we shal saye, From heauen, he will saye, Why then beleeued ye him not?

6 But if we shall say, Of men, all the people will stone vs: for they be persuaded that Iohn was a Prophet.

7 Therefore they aunswered, that they coulde not tell whence it *was.*

8 Then Iesus said vnto them, Neither tell I you, by what authoritie I do these things.

9 ¶ * Then began he to speake to the people this parable, A certaine man planted a vineyarde, and let it forth to husbandmen: and went into a strange countrey, for a great time. *Mat.21.33 mar.12.1. isa.5.1. iere.2.21.*

10 And at the time conuenient he sent a seruant to the husbandmen, that they should giue him of the fruite of the vineyarde, but the husbandmen did beate him, and sent him away emptie.

11 Againe he sent yet another seruant: and they did beate him, and soule entreated him, and sent him away emptie.

12 Moreouer he sent the thirde, and him they wounded, and cast out.

13 Then said the Lord of the vineyard, What shal I do? I

will sende my beloued sonne: it may be that they will do reuerence, when they see him.

14 But when the husbandmen sawe him, they reasoned with them selues, saying, This is the heire: come, let vs kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.

15 So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him. What shall the Lord of the vineyard therefore doe vnto them?

16 He will come and destroy these husbandmen, and will giue out his vineyard to others. But when they heard it, they said, God forbid.

17 ¶ And he beheld them, and sayd, What meaneth then that is written, * The stone that the builders refused, that is made the head of the corner?

Psa.118.22 *Isa.28.16.* *Act.4.11.* *Rom.9.33.* *1.Pet.2.8.*

18 Whosoeuer shall fall vpon that stone, shalbe broken: and on whomsoeuer it shall fall, it will grinde him to powder.

19 Then the hie Priests, and the Scribes the same houre went about to lay handes on him: (but they feared the people) for they perceiued that he had spoken this parable against them.

20 * And they watched *him*, and sent forth spies, which shoulde faine them selues iust men, to take him in his talke, and to deliuer him vnto the power and authoritie of the gouernour.

Mat.22.16. *mar.12.13.*

21 And they asked him, saying, Master, we know that thou sayest, and teachest right, neither doest thou accept mans person, but teachest the way of God truely.

22 Is it lawfull for vs to giue Cesar tribute or no?

23 But he perceiued their craftines, and said vnto them, Why tempt ye me?

24 Shew me a penny. Whose image & superscription hath it? They answered, and said, Cesars.

25 Then he sayde vnto them, * Giue then vnto Cesar the thinges which are Cesars, and to God those which are Gods.

Rom.13.7.

26 And they coulde not reproue his saying before the people: but they marueiled at his answere, and helde their peace.

27 * Then came to him certaine of the Sadducees (which denie that there is any resurrection) and they asked him,

Mat.22.23. *mar.12.18*

28 Saying,

28 Saying, Master, *Moses wrote vnto vs, If any mans brother die hauing a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take *his* wife, and rayse vp seede vnto his brother. *Deut.25.5.*

29 Now there were seuen brethren, and the first tooke a wife, and he dyed without children.

30 And the second tooke the wife, & he dyed childelesse.

31 Then the thirde tooke her: and so likewise the seuen dyed, and left no children.

32 And last of all, the woman dyed also.

33 Therefore at the resurrection, whose wife of them shal she be? for seuen had her to wife.

34 Then Iesus answered, & said vnto them, The children of this world mary wiues, and are maried.

35 But they which shalbe counted worthie to enioy that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marie wiues, neither are maried.

36 For they can die no more, forasmuch as they are equall vnto the Angels, and are the Sonnes of God, since they are the children of the resurrection.

37 And that the dead shal rise againe, euen *Moses shewed it besides the bushe, when he sayde, The Lorde *is* the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob. *Exod.3.6.*

38 For he is not the God of the dead, but of them which liue: for all liue vnto him.

39 Then certaine of the Scribes answered, and said, Master, thou hast well said.

40 And after that, durst they not aske him any thing at all.

41 ¶ * Then said he vnto them, How say they that Christ is Dauids sonne? *Mat.22.44. mar.12.35.*

42 And Dauid him selfe saith in the booke of the Psalmes, *The Lord said vnto my Lord, sit at my right hand, *Psal.110.1*

43 Til I shal make thine enemies thy footstoole.

44 Seeing Dauid calleth him Lord, howe is he then his sonne?

45 ¶ Then in the audience of all the people he said vnto his disciples,

46 * Beware of the Scribes, which willingly go in long robes, & loue salutations in the markets, and the hiest seats in the assemblies, & the chiefe roomes at seastes: *Luk.11.43. mat.23.6. mar.12.38*

 47 Which

47 Which deuoure widowes houſes, and in ſhewe make long prayers: Theſe ſhall receiue greater damnation.

CHAP. XXI.

1 *The widowes liberalitie aboue her riches.* 5 *Of the time of the deſtruction of the Temple,* 19 *and Hieruſalem.* 25 *The ſignes going before the laſt iudgement.*

Mar.12.41 1 AND * as he beheld, he ſawe the riche men, which caſt their gifts into the treaſurie.

2 And he ſawe alſo a certaine poore widowe which caſt in thither two mites.

3 And he ſaid, Of a trueth I ſay vnto you, that this poore widowe hath caſt in more then they all.

4 For they all haue of their ſuperfluitie caſt into the offrings of God: but ſhe of her penurie hath caſt in all the liuing that ſhe had.

Cha.19.43. 5 * Nowe as ſome ſpake of the Temple, how it was garniſhed with goodly ſtones, and with conſecrate things,
mat.24.1. *mark.13.1.* he ſaid,

6 Are theſe the things that ye looke vpon? the dayes will come wherein a ſtone ſhall not be left vpon a ſtone, that ſhall not be throwen downe.

7 Then they asked him, ſaying, Maſter, but when ſhal theſe things be? & what ſigne *ſhal* there *be* when theſe things ſhall come to paſſe?

Ephe.5.6. 8 * And he ſaide, Take heede, that ye be not deceiued:
2.theſ.2.3. for many will come in my Name, ſaying, I am *Chriſt*, and the time draweth neere: folowe ye not them therefore.

9 And when ye heare of warres and ſeditions, be not affraide: for theſe thinges muſt firſt come, but the ende foloweth not by and by.

10 Then ſaid he vnto them, Nation ſhall riſe againſt nation, and kingdome againſt kingdome,

Mat.24.7. 11 * And great earthquakes ſhalbe in diuers places, and
mar.13.8. hunger, and peſtilence, and fearfull things, and great ſignes ſhal there be from heauen.

12 But before all theſe, they ſhall lay their hands on you, and perſecute *you*, deliuering you vp to the aſſemblies, and into priſons, and bring you before Kings and rulers
Chap.12.12 for my Names ſake.

mat.10.19. 13 And this ſhall turne to you, for a teſtimoniall.
mar.13.11 14 * Lay it vp therefore in your hearts, that ye caſt not before

before hand, what ye shall answere.
15 For I will giue you a mouth and wisedome, whereagainst all your aduersaries shall not be able to speake, nor resist.
16 Yea, ye shalbe betrayed also of your parents, and of your brethren, and kinsmen, and friends, and *some* of you shall they put to death.
17 And ye shalbe hated of all men for my Names sake.
18 * Yet there shall not one heare of your heades perish. *Mat.10.30*
19 By your patience possesse your soules.
20 ¶ * And when ye see Hierusalem besieged with soul- diers, then vnderstande that the desolation thereof is neere. *Dan.9.27. mat.24.15 mar.13.14*
21 Then let them which are in Iudea, flee to the mountaynes: and let them which are in the middes thereof, depart out: and let not them that are in the countrey, enter therein.
22 For these be the dayes of vengeance, to fulfill al things that are written.
23 But wo *be* to them that be with childe, & to them that giue sucke in those dayes: for there shalbe great distresse in this land, and wrath ouer this people.
24 And they shall fall on the edge of the sworde, & shalbe led captiue into all nations, and Hierusalem shalbe troden vnder foote of the Gentiles, vntill the time of the Gentiles be fulfilled.
25 * Then there shalbe signes in the sonne, and in the moone, and in the starres, and vpon the earth trouble among the nations with perplexitie: the sea and the waters shall roare. *Isa.13.10. ezek.32.7. mat.24.29. mar.13.24*
26 And mens heartes shall saile them for feare, and for loking after those things which shal come on the world: for the powers of heauen shalbe shaken.
27 And then shall they see the Sonne of man come in a cloud, with power and great glorie.
28 And when these thinges begin to come to passe, then looke vp, and lift vp your heades: * for your redemption draweth neere. *Rom. 8.23.*
29 And he spake to them in a parable, Beholde, the figge tree and all trees,
30 When they nowe shoote forth, ye seeing them, know of

your owne selues, that sommer is then neere.
31 So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to passe, know ye that the kingdome of God is neere.
32 Verely I say vnto you, This age shall not passe, till all *these* things be done.
33 Heauen and earth shall passe away, but my wordes shall not passe away.
Rom. 13. 13 34 *Take hede to your selues, lest at any time your hearts be oppressed with surfeting & drunkennes, & cares of this life, and least that day come on you at vnwares.
35 For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth.
36 Watch therefore, & pray continually, that ye may be coũted worthy to escape al these things that shal come to passe, & that ye may stand before the Sonne of man.
37 ¶ Nowe in the day time he taught in the Temple, and at night he went out, and abode in the mount that is called *the mount* of Oliues.
38 And all the people came in the morning to him, to heare him in the Temple.

CHAP. XXII.

3 Iudas selleth Christ. 7 The Apostles prepare the Passouer. 24 They striue who shalbe chiefest. 31 Satan desireth them. 35 Christ sheweth that they wanted nothing. 42 He prayeth in the mount. 44 He sweateth blood. 50 Malchus eare cut of and healed. 57. 58. 60. Peter denieth Christ thrise. 63 Christ is mocked and stricken. 69 He confesseth himselfe to be the Sonne of God.

Mat. 26. 1. mar. 14. 1. 1 NOwe * the feast of vnleauened bread drewe neere, which is called the Passeouer.
2 And the hie Priests and Scribes sought how they might kill him: for they feared the people.
Mat. 26. 14 mar. 14. 10 3 * Then entred Satan into Iudas, who was called Iscariot, and was of the nomber of the twelue.
4 And he went his way, & commuued with the hie Priests and capitaines, how he might betray him to them.
5 So they were glad, and agreed to giue him money.
6 And he consented, and sought opportunitie to betray him vnto them, when the people were away.
Mat. 26. 17. mar. 14. 12 7 ¶ * Then came the day of vnleauened bread when the Passeouer must be sacrificed.
8 And he sent Peter and Iohn, saying, Goe and prepare vs the

the Passeouer, that we may eate it.
9 And they saide to him, Where wilt thou, that we prepare *it*?
10 Then he said vnto them, Behold, whē ye be entred into the citie, there shall a man meete you, bearing a pitcher of water: follow him into the house that he entreth in,
11 And say vnto the good man of the house, The Master saith vnto thee, Where is the lodging where I shal eat my Passeouer with my disciples?
12 Then he shal shew you a great hie chamber trimmed: there make it readie.
13 So they went, and found as he had said vnto them, and made readie the Passeouer.
14 * And when the houre was come, he sate downe, and the twelue Apostles with him. *Mat* 26.20 *mar*.14.17
15 Then he saide vnto them, I haue earnestly desired to eate this Passeouer with you, before I suffer.
16 For I say vnto you, Hence forth I will not eate of it any more, vntill it be fulfilled in the kingdome of God.
17 And he tooke the cup, and gaue thanks, and said, Take this, and deuide it among you,
18 For I say vnto you, I will not drinke of the fruit of the vine, vntill the kingdome of God be come.
19 * And he took bread, & when he had giuen thanks, he brake it, & gaue to them, saying, This is my body, which is giuen for you: do this in the remembrance of me. *Mat*.26.26. *mar*.14.22. 1.*cor*. 11 24.
20 Likewise also after supper *he took* the cup, saying, This cup is that new Testamēt in my bloud, which is shed for you.
21 * Yet beholde, the hand of him that betrayeth me, is with me at the table. *Mat*.26.21. *mar*.14.18. *psal*.41.9.
22 And truely the Sonne of man goeth as it is appointed: but wo *be* to that man, by whom he is betrayed.
23 Then they began to enquire among themselues which of them it should be, that should do that.
24 ¶* And there arose also a strife among them, which of them should seeme to be the greatest. *Mat*.20.25. *mar*.10.42.
25 But he said vnto them, The Kings of the Gentiles reigne ouer them, and they that beare rule ouer them, are called bountifull.
26 But ye *shal* not *be so*: but let the greatest among you be as the least: and the chiefest as he that serueth.
27 For who is greater, he that sitteth at table, or he that

seruеth? Is not he that sitteth at table? And I am among you as he that serueth.

28 And ye are they which haue continued with me in my tentations.

29 Therefore I appoynt vnto you a kingdome, as my Father hath appointed to me,

Mat.19.28. 30 * That ye may eate, and drinke at my table in my kingdome, and sit on seats, and iudge the twelue tribes of Israel.

1.Pet. 5.8. 31 ¶ And the Lord saide, Simon, Simon, beholde, * Satan hath desired you, to winow you as wheat.

32 But I haue prayed for thee, that thy faith fayle not: therefore when thou art conuerted, strengthen thy brethren.

Mat.26.34 mar.14.30. 33 * And he said vnto him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee into prison, and to death.

iohn.13.38. 34 But he saide, I tell thee, Peter, the cocke shall not crowe this day, before thou hast thrise denyed that thou knewest me.

Mat. 10. 9. 35 ¶ And he saide vnto them, * When I sent you without bagge, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing? And they said, Nothing.

36 Then he saide to them, But now he that hath a bagge, let him take it, and likewise a scrip: and he that hath none, let him sell his coat, and buye a sworde.

37 For I say vnto you, That yet the same which is written, *Isai.53.12.* must be performed in me, * Euen with the wicked was he nombred: for doubtles those things which *are written* of me, haue an ende.

38 And they said, Lord, behold, here are two swordes. And he said vnto them, It is ynough.

Mat.26.36 mar.14.32 39 ¶ * And he came out, and went (as he was wonte) to the mount of Oliues: & his disciples also followed him.

iohn.18.1. 40 * And when he came to the place, he said to them, *Mat.26.41.* Pray, lest ye enter into tentation.

mar.14.38. 41 And he was drawen aside from them about a stones cast, and kneeled downe, and prayed,

42 Saying, Father, if thou wilt, take away this cup from me: neuertheles, not my will, but thine be done.

43 And there appeared an Angell vnto him from heauen, comforting him.

44 But being in an agonie, he prayed more earnestly: and his

his sweate was like droppes of bloud, trickling downe to the grounde.

45 And he rose vp from prayer, and came to *his* disciples, and founde them sleeping for heauines.

46 And he said vnto them, Why sleepe ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into tentation.

47 ¶* And while he yet spake, beholde a companie, and he that was called Iudas one of the twelue, went before them, and came neere vnto Iesus to kisse him. *Mat.26.47. mar.14.43. iohn 18. 3*

48 And Iesus saide vnto him, Iudas, betrayest thou the Sonne of man with a kisse?

49 Nowe when they which were about him, sawe what would followe, they saide vnto him, Lord, shal we smite with swordes?

50 And one of them smote a seruant of the hie Priest, and strooke of his right eare.

51 Then Iesus answered, and said, Suffer *them* thus farre: and he touched his eare, and healed him.

52 Then Iesus said vnto the hie Prests, and captaines of the Temple, and the Elders which were come to him, Be ye come out as vnto a theefe with swordes & staues?

53 When I was dayly with you in the Temple, ye stretched not forth the handes against me: but this is your very houre, and the power of darkenes.

54 ¶* Then tooke they him, and led him, and brought him to the hie Priests house. And Peter folowed a farre of. *Mat.26.58.*

55 * And when they had kindled a fire in the middes of the hall, and were set downe together, Peter also sate downe among them. *Mat.26.58. 69.mar.14. 66.iohn 18. 25.*

56 And a certaine maide behelde him as he sate by the fire, and hauing well looked on him, said, This man was also with him.

57 But he denied him, saying, Woman, I knowe him not.

58 And after a litle while, another man sawe him, & said, Thou art also of them. But Peter said, Man, I am not.

59 And about the space of an houre after, a certaine other affirmed, saying, Verely euen this man was with him: for he is also a Galilean.

60 And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediatly while he yet spake, the cocke crewe.

61 Then the Lord turned backe, and looked vpon Peter: and

and Peter remembred the worde of the Lorde, how
Mat.26.34. he had ſaid vnto him, * Before the cocke crowe, thou
Iohn.13.38. ſhalt denie me thriſe.
62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.
Mat.26.67 63 ¶ * And the men that helde Ieſus, mocked him, and
mar.14.65. ſtrooke him.
64 And when they had blind folded him, they ſmote him on the face, and asked him, ſaying, Prophecie who it is that ſmote thee.
65 And many other things blaſphemouſly ſpake they againſt him.
Mat.27.1. 66 * And aſſoone as it was day, the Elders of the people, &
mar.15.1. the hie Prieſtes and the Scribes came together, and led
Iohn.18.28. him into their councill,
67 Saying, Art thou that Chriſt? tell vs. And he ſayd vnto them, If I tell you, you will not beleeue it.
68 And if alſo I aske you, ye will not anſwer me, nor let me goe.
69 Hereafter ſhall the Sonne of man ſit at the right hand of the power of God.
70 Then ſayde they all, Art thou then the Sonne of God? And he ſayd to them, Ye ſay, that I am.
71 Then ſayd they, What neede we any further witneſſe? for we our ſelues haue heard it of his owne mouth.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 He is accuſed before Pilate. 7 He is ſent to Herod. 11. He is mocked. 24 Pilate yeldeth him vp to the Iewes requeſt. 27 The women bewayle him. 33 He is crucified. 39 One of the theeues reuileth him. 43 The other is ſaued by faith. 45 He dieth. 53 He is buried.

1 THen the whole multitude of them aroſe, and led him vnto Pilate.
2 And they began to accuſe him, ſaying, We haue founde
Mat.22.21 this man peruerting the nation, * and forbidding to pay
mar.12.17. tribute to Ceſar, ſaying, That he is Chriſt a King.
Mat.27.11. 3 * And Pilate asked him, ſaying, Art thou the King of the
mar.15.2. Iewes? And he anſwered him, and ſaid, Thou ſaieſt it.
Iohn.18.33. 4 Then ſaid Pilate to the hie Prieſts, and to the people, I finde no faulte in this man.
5 But they were the more fierce, ſaying, He moueth the people, teaching throughout all Iudea, beginning at Galile, euen to this place.

6 Nowe when Pilate heard of Galile, he asked whether the man were a Galilean.
7 And when he knewe that he was of Herods iurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, which was also at Hierusalem in those dayes.
8 And whē Herod sawe Iesus, he was exceedingly glad: for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him, and trusted to haue seene some signe done by him.
9 Then questioned he with him of many things: but he answered him nothing.
10 The hie Priests also and Scribes stoode forth, and accused him vehemently.
11 And Herod with his men of warre, despised him, and mocked him, and arrayed him in white, and sent him againe to Pilate.
12 And the same day Pilate & Herod were made friends together: for before they were enemies one to another.
13 ¶ Then Pilate called together the hie Priests and the rulers, and the people,
14 * And sayd vnto them, Ye haue brought this man vnto me, as one that peruerted the people: and beholde, I haue examined him before you, and haue founde no fault in this man, of those things wherof ye accuse him: *Mat.27.23. mar.15.14. iohn.18.34*
15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him: and lo, nothing worthie of death is done of him.
16 I will therefore chastise him, and let him loose.
17 (For of necessitie he must haue let one loose vnto thē at the feast.)
18 Thē al the multitude cried at once, saying, Away with him, and deliuer to vs Barabbas:
19 Which for a certaine insurrection made in the citie, & murther, was cast in prison.
20 Then Pilate spake agayne to them, willing to let Iesus loose.
21 But they cryed, saying, Crucifie, crucifie him.
22 And he sayd vnto them the third tyme, But what euill hath he done? I finde no cause of death in him: I will therefore chastise him, and let him loose.
23 But they were instant with loude voyces, & required that he might be crucified: & the voyces of thē & of the hie

hie Priests preuayled.

24 So Pilate gaue sentence, that it should be as they required.

25 And he let loose vnto them him that for insurrection and murther was cast into prison, whom they desired, & deliuered Iesus to do with him what they would.

26 ¶ * And as they led him away, they caught one Simon of Cyrene, comming out of the field, & on him they laid the crosse, to beare it after Iesus.

Mat. 27. 32. *mar.* 15. 21.

27 And there folowed him a great multitude of people, & of women, which women bewayled and lamented him.

28 But Iesus turned backe vnto them, and said, Daughters of Hierusalem, weepe not for me, but weepe for your selues, and for your children.

29 For beholde, the dayes will come, when men shall say, Blessed *are* the barren, and the wombs that neuer bare, and the pappes which neuer gaue sucke.

Isa. 2. 19. *hose.* 10. 8. *reue.* 6. 16.

30 Then shall they begin to say to the mountaines, * Fall on vs: and to the hilles, Couer vs.

31 * For if they do these things to a greene tree, what shalbe done to the drye?

1. Pet. 4. 17.

32 *And there were two others, which were euill doers, led with him to be slaine.

Mat. 27. 38. *mar.* 15. 27. *iohn* 19. 18.

33 And when they were come to the place, which is called Caluarie, there they crucified him, and the euill doers: one at the right hande, & the other at the left.

34 Then sayd Iesus, Father, forgiue them: for they knowe not what they doo. And they parted his rayement, and cast lottes.

35 And the people stoode, and beheld: and the rulers mocked him with them, saying, He saued others: let him saue himselfe, if he be that Christ, the Chosen of God.

36 The souldiers also mocked him, and came and offred him vineger,

37 And sayde, If thou be the King of the Iewes, saue thy selfe.

38 And a superscription was also written ouer him, in Greke letters, and in Latin, and in Hebrewe, THIS IS THAT KING OF THE IEWES.

39 ¶ And one of the euill doers, which were hanged, rayled on him, saying, If thou be that Christ, saue thy selfe and vs.

40 But

40 But the other answered, and rebuked him, saying, Fearest thou not God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

41 We are in deede righteously *here:* for we receiue things worthy of that we haue done: but this man hath done nothing amisse.

42 And he sayd vnto Iesus, Lorde, remember me, when thou commest into thy kingdome.

43 Then Iesus sayd vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, to day shalt thou be with me in Paradise.

44 ¶ And it was about the sixt houre: and there was a darkenes ouer all the lande, vntill the ninth houre.

45 And the Sunne was darkened, and the vaile of the Temple rent through the middes.

46 And Iesus cryed with a loude voyce, and saide, * Father, into thine handes I commende my spirit. And whē he thus had said, He gaue vp the ghost. *Psal.* 31. 6

47 ¶ Now when the Centurion sawe what was done, he glorified God, saying, Of a suretie this man was iuste.

48 And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the thinges, which were done, smote their brestes, and returned.

49 And all his acquaintance stoode a farre of, and the women that folowed him from Galile, beholding these things.

50 ¶ * And behold, there was a man named Ioseph, which was a counseller, a good man and a iust. *Mat.* 27. 57. *mar.* 15. 43. *iohn* 19. 38.

51 He did not consent to the counsel, and deede of them, *which was* of Arimathea, a citie of the Iewes: who also him selfe wayted for the kingdome of God.

52 He went vnto Pilate, and asked the bodie of Iesus,

53 And tooke it downe, and wrapped it in a linnē cloth, and laid it in a tombe hewen out of a rocke, wherein was neuer man yet layd.

54 And that day was the preparation, and the Sabbath drewe on.

55 And the women also that followed after, which came with him from Galile, behelde the sepulchre, and howe his bodie was layd.

56 And they returned and prepared odours, and oyntements, and rested the Sabbath *day* according to the cōmaundement.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIIII.

1 *The women come to the ſepulchre.* 9 *They report that which they heard of the Angels vnto the Apoſtles.* 13 *Chriſt doth accompanie two going to Emmaus.* 27 *He expoundeth the Scriptures vnto them.* 39 *He offereth himſelfe to his Apoſtles to be handled.* 45 *He promiſeth the holy Ghoſt.* 51 *He is caried vp into heauen.*

Mar.16.1. John 20.1. 1 NOwe the * firſt *day* of the weeke earely in the morning, they came vnto the ſepulchre, and brought the odours, which they had prepared, and certaine women with them.

2 And they foũd the ſtone rolled away frõ the ſepulchre.

3 And went in, but founde not the body of the Lord Ieſus.

4 And it came to paſſe, that as they were amaſed thereat, beholde, two men ſodenly ſtoode by them in ſhining veſtures.

5 And as they were afraide, & bowed downe their faces to the earth, they ſayd to them, Why ſeeke ye him that liueth, among the dead?

Chap.9.22. mat.17.23. mar.9.31. 6 He is not here, but is riſen: remember * how he ſpake vnto you, when he was yet in Galile,

7 Saying, that the Sonne of man muſt be deliuered into the handes of ſinfull men, and be crucified, and the third day riſe agayne.

8 And they remembred his wordes,

9 And returned from the ſepulchre, and tolde all theſe things vnto the eleuen, and to all the remnant.

10 Now it was Marie Magdalene and Ioanna, and Marie the *mother* of Iames, and other womẽ with them, which tolde theſe things vnto the Apoſtles.

11 But their wordes ſeemed vnto them, as a fained thing, neyther beleeued they them.

John 20.6. 12 * Then aroſe Peter, and ran vnto the ſepulchre, and looked in, & ſawe the linnẽ clothes layd by them ſelues, and departed wondering in him ſelfe at that which was come to paſſe.

Mar.16.12. 13 ¶ * And beholde, two of them went that ſame day to a towne which was from Hieruſalem about threeſcore furlongs, called Emmaus.

14 And they talked together of all theſe thinges that were done.

15 And

15 And it came to passe, as they communed together, and reasoned, that Iesus him selfe drewe nere, and went with them.

16 But their eyes were holden, that they could not know him.

17 And he said vnto them, What maner of communications are these that ye haue one to another as ye walk, and are sad?

18 And the one (named Cleopas) answered, and sayd vnto him, Art thou onely a straunger in Hierusalem, & hast not knowen the things which are come to passe therin in these dayes?

19 And he said vnto them, What things? And they sayde vnto him, Of Iesus of Nazareth, which was a Prophete, mightie in deede and in worde before God, and all the people,

20 And how the hie Priests, and our rulers deliuered him to be condemned to death, and haue crucified him.

21 But we trusted that it had bene he that should haue deliuered Israel, and as touching al these things, to day is the third day, that they were done.

22 Yea, and certaine women among vs made vs astonied, which came early vnto the sepulchre.

23 And when they founde not his bodie, they came, saying, that they had also seene a vision of Angels, which said that he was aliue.

24 Therefore certaine of them which were with vs, went to the sepulchre, and found it euen so as the women had said, but him they sawe not.

25 Then he sayd vnto them, O fooles and slow of heart to beleeue all that the Prophets haue spoken!

26 Ought not Christ to haue suffred these things, and to enter into his glorie?

27 And he began at Moses, and at all the Prophets, and interpreted vnto them in all the Scriptures the thinges which were written of him.

28 And they drew nere vnto the towne, which they went to, but he made as though he would haue gone further.

29 But they constrayned him, saying, Abide with vs: for it is towards night, and the day is farre spent. So he went in to tary with them.

30 And it came to passe, as he sate at table with them, he tooke

tooke the bread, and blessed, and brake it, and gaue to them.

31 Then their eyes were opened, and they knewe him, and he was no more seene of them.

32 And they sayde betweene themselues, Did not our hearts burne within vs, while he talked with vs by the way, and when he opened to vs the Scriptures?

33 And they rose vp the same houre, & returned to Hierusalem, and found the Eleuen gathered together, & them that were with them,

34 Which said, The Lord is risen in deede, and hath appeared to Simon.

35 Then they tolde what things were done in the way, & howe he was knowen of them in breaking of bread.

Mar. 16. 14 Ioh. 20. 19. 36 ¶ * And as they spake these thinges, Iesus him selfe stoode in the middes of them, & sayde vnto them, Peace be to you.

37 But they were abashed and afraide, supposing that they had seene a spirit.

38 Then he sayd vnto them, why are ye troubled? and wherefore do doutes arise in your heartes?

39 Beholde mine hands and my feete: for it is I my selfe: handle me, and see: for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me haue.

40 And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them his hands and feete.

41 And while they yet beleeued not for ioye, and wondered, he sayd vnto them, Haue ye here any meate?

42 And they gaue him a piece of a broyled fishe, and of an honie combe.

43 And he tooke it, and did eate before them.

44 And he said vnto them, These are the wordes, which I spake vnto you while I was yet with you, that all must be fulfilled which are written of me in the Lawe of Moses, and in the Prophets, and in the Psalmes.

45 Then opened he their vnderstanding, that they might vnderstand the Scriptures,

46 And sayd vnto them, Thus is it written, and thus behoued Christ to suffer, and to rise agayne from the dead the third day,

47 And that repentance, and remission of sinnes shoulde be preached in his Name among all nations, beginning at

at Hierusalem.
48 Nowe ye are witnesses of these thinges.
49 And beholde, I doe sende the * promes of my Father vpon you: but tary ye in the citie of Hierusalem, vntill ye be endued with power from an hie. *Iohn.15.26 act.1.4.*
50 Afterward he led them out into Bethania, and lift vp his handes, and blessed them.
51 And it came to passe, that as he blessed them, *he departed from them, and was caried vp into heauen. *Mar.16.19 act.1.9.*
52 And they worshipped him, and returned to Hierusalem with great ioye,
53 And were continually in the Temple, prayfing, & landing God, Amen.

THE HOLY GOSPEL OF IESVS CHRIST ACCORding to Iohn.

CHAP. I.

1 *That worde begotten of God before all worlds,* 2 *and which was euer with the Father,* 14 *is made man.* 6,7 *For what end Iohn was sent from God:* 16 *His preaching of Christs office.* 19,20 *The record that he bare giuen out vnto the Priests.* 40 *The calling of Andrew,* 42 *of Peter,* 43 *Philippe,* 45 *and Nathanael.*

1 IN the beginning was that Worde, and that Worde was with God, and that Worde was God.
2 This same was in the beginning with God.
3 * Al thinges were made by it, & without it was made nothing that was made. *Col.1.16.*
4 In it was life, and that life was that light of men.
5 And that light shineth in the darkenes, and the darkenes comprehended it not.
6 ¶ There was a mā sent frō God, whose name *was* Iohn. *Mat.3.1.*
7 *This* same came for a witnes, to beare witnes of that light, that all men through him might beleeue. *mar.1.4. luke.3.2.*
8 He was not that light, but *was sent* to beare witnes of that light.

9 This was that true light, which lighteth euery man that commeth into the worlde.

10 He was in the worlde, and the worlde was * made by him: and the world knewe him not.

Heb.11.3.

11 He came vnto his owne, & his owne receiued him not.

12 But as many as receyued him, to them he gaue prerogatiue to be the sonnes of God, *euen* to them that beleeue in his Name.

13 Which are borne not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

Mat.1.16.
Mat.17.2.
2.pet.1.17.

14 * And that Worde was made flesh, and dwelt among vs, (and we * sawe the glorie therof, as the glorie of the onely begotten *Sonne* of the Father) full of grace and trueth.

15 ¶ Iohn bare witnes of him, and cried, saying, This was he of whom I said, He that commeth after me, was before me: for he was better then I.

Col.1.19.
and 2.9.

16 * And of his fulnes haue all we receiued, and grace for grace.

17 For the Lawe was giuen by Moses: but grace, and trueth came by Iesus Christ.

1 Tim.6.16
1 John 4.12

18 * No man hath seene God at any tyme: that only begotten Sonne, which is in the bosome of the Father, he hath declared him.

19 ¶ Then this is the record of Iohn, when the Iewes sent Priestes and Leuites from Hierusalem, to aske him, Who art thou?

20 And he confessed and denied not, and sayd playnely, I

Act.13.25

* am not that Christ.

21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he said, I am not. Art thou that Prophet? And he answered, No.

22 Then said they vnto him, Why art thou, that we may giue an answere to them that sent vs? what saiest thou of thy selfe?

Isa.40.3.
mat.3.3.
luke 3.4.

23 He said, I * am the voyce of him that cryeth in the wildernes, Make straight the waye of the Lord, as sayde the Prophet Esaias.

24 Now they which were sent, were of the Phatises.

25 And they asked him, and said vnto him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, neither Elias nor that Prophet?

26 Iohn answered them, saying, I baptize with water: but there is one among you, whom ye know not.
27 * He it is that cometh after me, which was before me, whose shoe latchet I am not worthie to vnloose.
28 These things were done in Bethabara beyond Iordan, where Iohn did baptize.
29 ¶ The next day Iohn seeth Iesus comming vnto him, and saith, Beholde that Lambe of God, which taketh away the sinne of the world.
30 This is he of whom I said, After me commeth a man, which was before me: for he was better then I,
31 And I knewe him not: but because he should be declared to Israel, therefore am I come, baptizing with water.
32 So Iohn bare recorde, saying, I beheld * that Spirit come downe from heauen, like a doue, and it abode vpon him,
33 And I knewe him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, ke sayd vnto me, Vpon whom thou shalt see that Spirit come downe, and tary still on him, that is he which baptizeth with the holy Ghost.
34 And I sawe, and bare recorde that this is that Sonne of God.
35 ¶ The next day, Iohn stoode agayne, and two of his disciples:
36 And he beheld Iesus walking by, and said, behold that Lambe of God.
37 And the two disciples heard him speake, and followed Iesus.
38 Then Iesus turned about, and sawe them followe, and said vnto them, What seeke ye? And they sayde vnto him, Rabbi, (which is to saye by interpretation, Master,) where dwellest thou?
39 He said vnto them, Come, and see. They came & sawe where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was about the tenth houre.
40 Andrewe, Simon Peters brother, was one of the two which had heard it of Iohn, and that folowed him.
41 The same founde his brother Simon first, and said vnto him, we haue founde that Messias, which is by interpretation, that Christ.
42 And he brought him to Iesus. And Iesus beheld him,

Mat. 3.11. *mar.* 1.7. *luke* 3.16. *all.* 1.5. *and* 11.16. *and* 19.4.

Mat. 3.16. *mar.* 1.10. *luke* 3.22.

and ſaid, Thou art Simon the ſonne of Iona: thou ſhalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, a ſtone.

43 ¶ The day following, Ieſus would go into Galile, and found Philippe, and ſaid vnto him, Followe me.

44 Now Philippe was of Bethſaida, the citie of Andrewe and Peter.

45 Philippe found Nathanael, and ſayde vnto him, We haue found him, of whom *Moſes did write in the Law, and the * Prophets, Ieſus that ſonne of Ioſeph, that was of Nazareth.

Gene.49.10 deut.18.18. Iſa.4.2.& 40.10.& 45.8. Iere.23.5. & 33.14. ezec.34.23. and 37.24. dan.9.24.

46 Then Nathanael ſaide vnto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philippe ſayde to him, Come, and ſee.

47 Ieſus ſawe Nathanael comming to him, and ſayde of him, Beholde, in dede an Iſraelite, in who is no guyle.

48 Nathanael ſaid vnto him, Whence knoweſt thou me? Ieſus anſwered, and ſayd vnto him, Before that Philippe called thee, when thou waſt vnder the figge tree, I ſawe thee.

49 Nathanael anſwered, and ſayde vnto him, Rabbi, thou art that Sonne of God: thou art that King of Iſrael.

50 Ieſus anſwered, and ſayd vnto him, Becauſe I ſayd vnto thee, I ſawe thee vnder the figge tree, beleeueſt thou? thou ſhalt ſee greater things then theſe.

51 And he ſayd vnto him, Verely, verely I ſay vnto you, hereafter ſhall ye ſee heauen open, and the Angels of God * aſcending, & deſcending vpon that Sonne of man.

Gene.28.12

CHAP. II.

1 Chriſt turneth water into wine, 11 which was the beginning of his miracles. 12 He goeth downe to Capernaum, 13 from thence he goeth vp to Hieruſalem, 15 and caſteth the marchandiſe out of the Temple. 19 He foretelleth that the Temple, that is, his bodie, ſhalbe deſtroyed of the Iewes. 23 Many beleeue in him, ſeeing the miracles which he did.

1 AND the third day, was there a mariage in Cana a towne of Galile, and the mother of Ieſus was there.

2 And Ieſus was called alſo, and his diſciples vnto the marriage.

3 Now when the wine fayled, the mother of Ieſus ſayde vnto him, They haue no wine.

4 Ieſus ſaid vnto her, Woman, what haue I to doe with thee? mine houre is not yet come.

5 His

5 His mother ſayd vnto the ſeruantes, Whatſoeuer he ſaith vnto you, do it.
6 And there were ſet there, ſixe waterpots of ſtone, after the maner of the purifying of the Iewes, conteyning two or three firkins a piece.
7 And Ieſus ſaide vnto them, Fill the waterpots with water. Then they filled them vp to the brimme.
8 Then he ſaide vnto them, Drawe out now and beare vnto the gouernour of the feaſt. So they bare it.
9 Nowe when the gouernour of the feaſt had taſted the water that was made wine, (for he knew not whence it was: but the ſeruants, which drew the water, knew) the gouernour of the feaſt called the bridegrome,
10 And ſayd vnto him, All men at the beginning ſet forth good wine, and when men haue well drunke, then that which is worſe: *but* thou haſt kept backe the good wine vntyll now.
11 This beginning of miracles did Ieſus in Cana *a towne* of Galile, and ſhewed forth his glorie: and his diſciples beleeued on him.
12 After that he went downe into Capernaum, he and his mother, and his brethrē, and his diſciples: but they continued not many dayes there.
13 For the Iewes Paſſeouer was at hande. Therefore Ieſus went vp to Hieruſalem.
14 And he founde in the Temple thoſe that ſolde oxen, and ſheepe, & doues, & changers of money, ſitting *there*.
15 Then he made a ſcourge of ſmall cordes, and draue them all out of the Temple with the ſheepe and oxen, and powred out the changers money, and ouerthrewe the tables,
16 And ſayd vnto them that ſold doues, Take theſe things hence: make not my Fathers houſe, an houſe of marchandiſe.
17 And his diſciples remembred, that it was writtē, *The zeale of thine houſe hath eaten me vp. *Pſal. 69. 9.*
18 Thē anſwered the Iewes, & ſaid vnto him, What ſigne ſheweſt thou vnto vs, that thou doeſt theſe things?
19 Ieſus anſwered and ſayd vnto them, *Deſtroy this Tēple, and in three dayes I will raiſe it vp againe. *Mat. 26. 61. and 27. 40. mar. 14. 58. and 15. 29.*
20 Then ſaid the Iewes, Fortie & ſix yeres was this Temple a buylding, and wilt thou reare it vp in three daies?

21 But he ſpake of the temple of his body.
22 Aſſoone therefore as he was riſen from the dead, his diſciples remembred that he thus ſaid vnto them: and they beleeued the Scripture, and the worde which Ieſus had ſaid.
23 Now when he was at Hieruſalem at the Paſſeouer in the feaſt, many beleeued in his Name, when they ſawe his miracles which he did.
24 But Ieſus did not commit him ſelf vnto them, becauſe he knewe them all,
25 And had no neede that any ſhould teſtifie of man: for he knewe what was in man.

CHAP. III.

1 Chriſt teacheth Nicodemus the verie principles of Chriſtian regeneration. 14 The ſerpent in the wildernes. 23 Iohn baptizeth, 27 and teacheth him, that he is not Chriſt.

1 THere was nowe a man of the Phariſes, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Ieiwes.
2 This man came to Ieſus by night, and ſaide vnto him, Rabbi, we knowe that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man could do theſe miracles that thou doeſt, except God were with him.
3 Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, Verely, verely I ſay vnto thee, except a mã be borne againe, he can not ſee the kingdome of God.
4 Nicodemus ſaid vnto him, Howe can a man be borne which is olde? can he enter into his mothers wombe againe, and be borne?
5 Ieſus anſwered, Verely, verely I ſay vnto thee, except that a man be borne of water and of the Spirit, he can not enter into the kingdome of God.
6 That which is borne of the fleſh, is fleſh: and that that is borne of the Spirit, is ſpirit.
7 Marueile not that I ſayd to thee, Ye muſt be borne againe.
8 The winde bloweth where it liſteth, and thou heareſt the ſounde thereof, but canſt not tell whence it commeth, and whither it goeth: ſo is euery man that is borne of the Spirit.
9 Nicodemus anſwered, and ſaide vnto him, Howe can theſe things be?
10 Ieſus anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, Art thou a teacher of Iſ-

of Israel, and knowest not these things?
11 Verely, verely I say vnto thee, we speake that we know, and testifie that we haue seene: but ye receiue not our witnes.
12 If when I tell you earthly things, ye beleeue not, howe should ye beleeue, if I shal tel you of heauenly things?
13 For no man ascendeth vp to heauen, but he that hath descended from heauen, that Sonne of man which is in heauen.
14 * And as Moses list vp the serpent in the wildernes, so must that Sonne of man be list vp, *Num.21.9. chap.12.32*
15 That whosoeuer beleeueth in him, should not perish, but haue eternal life.
16 * For God so loued the worlde, that he hath giuen his only begotten Sonne, that whosoeuer beleeueth in him, should not perish, but haue euerlasting life. *1.Iohn 4.9.*
17 * For God sent not his Sonne into the worlde, that he should condemne the worlde, but that the world thorough him might be saued. *Chap.9.39. and 12.47.*
18 He that beleeueth in him, is not condemned: but he that beleeueth not, is condemned already, because he hath not beleeued in the Name of that onely begotten Sonne of God.
19 * And this is the condemnation, that that light came into the world, and men loued darkenes rather thē that light, because their deedes were euill. *Chap.1.9.*
20 For euery man that euill doeth, hateth the light, neyther cōmeth to light, lest his dedes should be reproued.
21 But he that doeth trueth, commeth to the light, that his deedes might be made manifest, that they are wrought according to God.
22 ¶ After these things, came Iesus and his disciples into the land of Iudea, & there taried with thē, & *baptized. *Chap.4.1.*
23 And Iohn also baptized in Enon besides Salim, because there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized.
24 For Iohn was not yet cast into prison.
25 Then there arose a question betweene Iohns disciples and the Iewes, about purifying.
26 And they came vnto Iohn, and saide vnto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyonde Iordan, to whome * thou barest witnes, beholde, he baptizeth, and all *Chap.1.34.* men

men come to him.
27 Iohn answered, and saide, A man can receiue nothing
except it be giuen him from heauen.
28 Ye your selues are my witnesses, that * I saide, I am
Chap.1.20. not that Christ, but that I am sent before him.
29 He that hath the bride, is the bridegrome: but the
friend of the bridegrome which standeth and heareth
him, reioyceth greatly, because of the bridegromes
voyce. This my ioy therfore is fulfilled.
30 He must increase, but I *must* decrease.
31 He that is come from on hie, is aboue all: he that is of
the earth, is of the earth, and speaketh of the earth: he
that is come from heauen, is aboue all.
32 And what he hath seene and heard, that he testifieth:
but no man receyueth his testimonie.
33 He that hath receiued his testimonie, hath sealed that
Rom.3.4. * God is true.
34 For he whom God hath sent, speaketh the wordes of
God: for God giueth *him* not the Spirit by measure.
Mat.11.27. 35 The Father loueth the Sonne, and hath * giuen all
things into his hand.
Mat.2.4. 36 * He that beleueth in the Sonne, hath euerlasting life:
2.Iohn.5.10 and he that obeyeth not the Sonne, shal not see life, but
the wrath of God abydeth on him.

CHAP. IIII.

6 Iesus being wearie asketh drinke of the woman of Samaria.
21 He teacheth the true worship. 26 He confesseth that he
is the Messias. 32 His meate. 39 The Samaritanes beleeue
in him. 46 He healeth the Rulers sonne.

1 NOwe when the Lord knewe, howe the Pharises had
Chap.3.22 heard, that Iesus made * and baptized mo disciples
then Iohn,
2 (Though Iesus himself baptized not: but his disciples)
3 He left Iudea, and departed againe into Galile.
4 And he must needes go through Samaria.
5 Then came he to a citie of Samaria called Sychar, nere
Gene.33.19 vnto the possession that * Iacob gaue to his sonne Io-
& 48.22. seph.
Iosh.24.32. 6 And there was Iacobs well. Iesus then wearied in
the iourney, sate thus on the well: it was about the
sixt houre.

7 There

7 There came a woman of Samaria to drawe water. Ie-
sus said vnto her, Giue me drinke.
8 For his disciples were gone away into the citie, to
bye meate.
9 Then saide the woman of Samaria vnto him, Howe is it,
that thou being a Iewe, askest drinke of me, which am
a woman of Samaria? For the Iewes meddle not with the
Samaritanes.
10 Iesus answered and said vnto her, If thou knewest that
gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Giue me
drinke, thou wouldest haue asked of him, and he would
haue giuen thee, water of life.
11 The woman said vnto him, Syr, thou hast nothing to
drawe with, and the well is deepe: from whence then
hast thou that water of life?
12 Art thou greater then our father Iacob, which gaue
vs the well, and he himselfe dranke thereof, and his
sonnes, and his cattel?
13 Iesus answered, and saide vnto her, Whosoeuer drin-
keth of this water, shall thirst againe:
14 But whosoeuer drinketh of the water that I shall giue
him, shall neuer be more a thirst: but the water that I
shall giue him, shal be in him a well of water, springing
vp into euerlasting life.
15 The woman said vnto him, Syr, giue me of that water,
that I may not thirst, neither come hither to drawe.
16 Iesus said vnto her, Goe, call thine husband, and come
hither.
17 The woman answered, and saide, I haue no husband.
Iesus saide vnto her, Thou hast well sayde, I haue no
husband.
18 For thou hast had fiue husbandes, and he whome thou
nowe hast, is not thine husbande: that saidest thou
truely.
19 The woman saide vnto him, Syr, I see that thou art a
Prophet.
20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountaine, and ye say,
that in * Hierusalem is the place where men ought to *Deut.12.6.
worship.
21 Iesus said vnto her, Woman, beleue me, the houre com-
meth, when ye shall neither in this mountaine, nor at
Hierusalem worship the Father.

2. King. 17. 29. 22 Ye worship that which ye * knowe not: we worship that which we know: for saluation is of the Iewes.

23 But the houre commeth, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worshippe the Father in spirit, and in trueth: for the Father requireth euen such to worship him.

2. Cor. 3. 27 24 *God is a spirit, and they that worship him, must worship him in spirit and trueth.

25 The woman said vnto him, I knowe well that Messias shall come which is called Christ: when he is come, he will tell vs all things.

26 Iesus said vnto her, I am he, that speake vnto thee.

27 ¶ And vpon that, came his disciples, and marueiled that he talked with a woman: yet no man said vnto him, What askest thou? or why talkest thou with her?

28 The woman then left her waterpot, and went her way into the citie, and said to the men,

29 Come, see a man which hath tolde me all things that euer I did: is not he that Christ?

30 Then they went out of the citie, and came vnto him.

31 ¶ In the meane while, the disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eate.

32 But he said vnto them, I haue meate to eate that ye know not of.

33 Then said the disciples betweene them selues, Hath any man brought him meat?

34 Iesus said vnto them, My meate is that I may doe the will of him that sent me, and finish his worke.

35 Saye not ye, There are yet foure moneths, and then commeth harueft? Behold, I say vnto you, Lift vp your eyes, and looke on the regions: * for they are white alreadie vnto harueft.

Mat. 9. 37. Luk. 10. 2.

36 And he that reapeth, receiueth reward, and gathereth fruite vnto life eternall, that both he that soweth and he that reapeth, might reioyce together.

37 For herein is the saying true, that one soweth, and another reapeth.

38 I sent you to reape that, wherein ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entred into their labours.

39 Now many of the Samaritans of that citie beleeued

in him, for the saying of the woman which testified, He hath tolde me all things that euer I did.

40 Then when the Samaritans were come vnto him, they besought him, that he would tarie with them: and he abode there two dayes.

41 And many mo beleeued because of his owne worde.

42 And they said vnto the woman, Now we beleeue, not because of thy saying: for we haue heard him our selues, and know that this is in deede that Christ the Sauiour of the worlde.

43 ¶ So two dayes after he departed thence, and went into Galile.

44 For Iesus him selfe had * testified, that a Prophet hath none honour in his owne countrey. *Mat.13.57. mark.6.4.*

45 Then when he was come into Galile, the Galileans receiued him, which had seene all the thinges that he did at Hierusalem at the feast: for they went also vnto the feast. *luke 4. 24.*

46 And Iesus came againe into * Cana, *a towne* of Galile, where he had made of water, wine. And there was a certaine ruler, whose sonne was sicke at Capernaum. *Cha.2.1,11.*

47 When he heard that Iesus was come out of Iudea into Galile, he went vnto him, and besought him that he would goe downe, and heale his sonne: for he was euen readie to die.

48 Then saide Iesus vnto him, Except ye see signes and wonders, ye will not beleeue.

49 The ruler saide vnto him, Syr, goe downe before my sonne dye.

50 Iesus said vnto him, Go thy way, thy sonne liueth: and the man beleeued the worde that Iesus had spoken vnto him, and went his way.

51 And as he was nowe going downe, his seruants met him, saying, Thy sonne liueth.

52 Then enquired he of them the houre when he beganne to amende. And they sayde vnto him, Yesterdaye the seuenth houre the feuer left him.

53 Then the father knewe, that it was the same houre in the which Iesus had said vnto him, Thy sonne liueth. And he beleeued, and all his household.

54 This second miracle did Iesus againe, after he was come out of Iudea into Galile.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

1 One lying at the poole, 5 is healed of Christ on the Sabbath: 10 The Iewes that rashly finde fault with that deede, 17 he conuinceth with the authoritie of his Father. 19. 20 He proueth his diuine power by many reasons, 41 and with Moses testimonie.

1 AFter* that, there was a feaste of the Iewes, and Iesus went vp to Hierusalem.

Leuit.23.3. deut.16.1.

2 And there is at Hierusalem by the place of the sheepe a poole called in Ebrew Bethesda, hauing fiue porches.

3 In the which lay a great multitude of sicke folke, of blinde, halte, and withered, wayting for the moouing of the water.

4 For an Angel went downe at a certaine season into the poole, and troubled the water: whosoeuer then first after the stirring of the water, stepped in, was made whole of whatsoeuer disease he had.

5 And a certaine man was there, which had bene diseased eight and thirtie yeres.

6 When Iesus sawe him lie, and knewe that he now long time had bene diseased, he said vnto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The sicke man answered him, Sir, I haue no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the poole: but while I am comming, another steppeth downe before me.

8 Iesus said vnto him, Rise: take vp thy bed, and walke.

9 And immediately the man was made whole, and tooke vp his bed, and walked: and the same day was the Sabbath.

10 The Iewes therefore saide to him that was made whole, It is the Sabbath day: * it is not lawfull for thee to carie thy bed.

Exo.23.12.

11 He answered them, He that made me whole, he saide vnto me, Take vp thy bed, and walke.

12 Then asked they him, What man is that which saide vnto thee, Take vp thy bed, and walke?

13 And he that was healed, knewe not who it was: for Iesus had conueyed him selfe away from the multitude that was in that place.

14 And after that, Iesus founde him in the Temple, and said vnto him, Beholde, thou art made whole: sinne no more,

more, least a worse thing come vnto thee.
15 ¶ The man departed, and tolde the Iewes that it was Iesus, which had made him whole.
16 And therefore the Iewes did persecute Iesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these thinges on the Sabbath day.
17 But Iesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I worke.
18 *Therefore the Iewes sought the more to kill him: not onely because he had broken the Sabbath: but said also that God was his Father, and made himselfe equall with God. *Chap.7.19.
19 Then answered Iesus, and said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, The Sonne can do nothing of himselfe, saue that he seeth the Father do: for whatsoeuer thinges he doeth, the same things doeth the Sonne in like maner.
20 For the Father loueth the Sonne, and sheweth him all thinges, whatsoeuer he him selfe doeth, and he will shewe him greater workes then these, that ye shoulde marueile.
21 For likewise as the Father rayseth vp the dead, and quickeneth them, so the Sonne quickeneth whome he will.
22 For the Father iudgeth no man, but hath committed all iudgement vnto the Sonne,
23 Because that all men shoulde honour the Sonne, as they honour the Father: he that honoureth not the Sonne, the same honoureth not the Father, which hath sent him.
24 Verely, verely I say vnto you, he that heareth my word, and beleeueth him that sent me, hath euerlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation, but hath passed from death vnto life.
25 Verely, verely I say vnto you, the houre shal come, & nowe is, when the dead shall heare the voyce of the Sonne of God: and they that heare it, shall liue.
26 For as the Father hath life in himself, so likewise hath he giuen to the Sonne to haue life in him selfe.
27 And hath giuē him power also to execute iudgement, in that he is the Sonne of man.
28 Marueile not at this: for the houre shall come in the which

which all that are in the graues, shall heare his voyce
Mat. 25.41 29 And they shall come forth,* that haue done good, vn
to the resurrection of life: but they that haue done e
uill, vnto the resurrection of condemnation.
30 I can do nothing of mine own self: as I heare, I iudge
& my iudgement is iust, because I seeke not mine own
will, but the will of the Father who hath sent me.
Chap. 8.14. 31 If I* should beare witnes of my selfe, my witnes were
not true.
Matt. 3.17. 32 * There is an other that beareth witnes of me, and I
know that the witnes, which he beareth of me, is true.
Chap. 1.27. 33 * Ye sent vnto Iohn, and he bare witnes vnto the
trueth.
34 But I receiue not the recorde of man: neuerthele
these things I say, that ye might be saued.
35 He was a burning, and a shining candle: and ye would
for a season haue reioyced in his light.
36 But I haue greater witnes then the witnes of Iohn
for the workes which the Father hath giuen me to fi
nish, the same workes that I do, beare witnes of me, that
the Father sent me.
Mat. 3.17. and 17. 5. Deut. 4.12. 37 And the * Father himselfe, which hath sent me, bea
reth witnes of me. Ye haue not heard his voyce at any
time,* neither haue ye seene his shape.
38 And his word haue ye not abiding in you: for whom
he hath sent, him ye beleeue not.
Act. 17.11 39 * Searche the Scriptures: for in them ye thinke to
haue eternall life, & they are they which testifie of me.
40 But ye will not come to me, that ye might haue life.
41 I receiue not praise of men.
42 But I knowe you, that ye haue not the loue of God
in you.
43 I am come in my Fathers Name, and ye receiue me
not: if an other shall come in his owne name, him will
ye receiue.
Chap. 12.43 44 How can ye beleeue, which receiue * honour one of
an other, and seeke not the honour that commeth of
God alone?
Gen. 3.15. and 22. 18. and 49. 10. Deut. 18.15. 45 Do not think that I wil accuse you to my Father: there
is one that accuseth you, euen Moses, in whom ye trust.
46 For had ye beleeued Moses, ye would haue beleeued
me: * for he wrote of me.

47 But

47 But if ye beleeue not his writings, how shall ye be-
leeue my wordes?

CHAP. VI.

5 Fiue thousand are fed with fiue loaues and two fishes. 15 Christ goeth apart from the people. 17 As his disciples were rowing, 19 he commeth to them walking on the water. 26 He reasoneth of the true, 27 and euerlasting 35 bread of life. 41. 52 The Iewes murmure, 60 and many of the disciples 66 depart from him. 69 The Apostles confesse him to be the Sonne of God.

1 AFter these thinges, Iesus went his way ouer the sea
of Galile, which is Tiberias.

2 And a great multitude folowed him, because they sawe
his miracles, which he did on them that were diseased.

3 Then Iesus went vp into a mountaine, and there he
sate with his disciples.

4 Now the Passeouer, a * feast of the Iewes, was nere. *Leuit.23.7.*

5 * Then IESVS lift vp *his* eyes, and seeing that a *deut.16.1.*
great multitude came vnto him, he said vnto Philippe, *Mat.14.16*
Whence shall we bye bread that these might eate? *mar.6.37.*

6 (And this he said to proue him: for he him selfe knewe *luke.9.13.*
what he would do.)

7 Philippe aunswered him, Two hundreth penyworth of
bread is not sufficient for them, that euery one of them
may take a litle.

8 Then said vnto him one of his disciples, Andrew, Simon
Peters brother,

9 There is a litle boy here, which hath fiue barlie loaues,
and two fishes: but what are they among so many?

10 And Iesus saide, Make the people sit downe. (Nowe
there was much grasse in that place.) Then the men
sate downe in nomber, about fiue thousand.

11 And Iesus tooke the breade, and gaue thankes, and
gaue to the disciples, and the disciples to them that
were set downe: and likewise of the fishes as much as
they would.

12 And when they were satisfied, he said vnto his disci-
ples, Gather vp the broken meat which remaineth, that
nothing be lost.

13 Then they gathered it together, and filled twelue
baskets with the broken meat of the fiue barlie loaues,
which remained vnto them that had eaten.

14 Then the men, when they had ſeene the miracle that Ieſus did, ſaide, This is of a trueth that Prophet that ſhould come into the worlde.

15 When Ieſus therefore perceiued that they would come, and take him to make him a King, he departed againe into a mountaine himſelfe alone.

16 ¶ When euen was now come, his diſciples went downe vnto the ſea,

17 * And entred into a ſhip, and went ouer the ſea, towardes Capernaum: and nowe it was darke, and Ieſus was not come to them.

Mat. 14. 25 mar. 6. 47.

18 And the ſea aroſe with a great winde that bleue.

19 And when they had rowed about fiue and twentie, or thirtie furlongs, they ſaw Ieſus walking on the ſea, and drawing nere vnto the ſhip: ſo they were afraid.

20 But he ſaid vnto them, It is I: be not afraid.

21 Then willingly they receiued him into the ſhip, and the ſhip was by and by at the land, whither they went.

22 ¶ The day following, the people which ſtood on the other ſide of the ſea, ſawe that there was none other ſhip there, ſaue that one, whereinto his diſciples were entred, and that Ieſus went not with his diſciples in the ſhip, but that his diſciples were gone alone,

23 And that there came other ſhips from Tiberias, neere vnto the place where they ate the breade, after the Lord had giuen thankes.

24 Now when the people ſawe that Ieſus was not there, neither his diſciples, they alſo tooke ſhipping, & came to Capernaum, ſeeking for Ieſus.

25 And when they had founde him on the other ſide of the ſea, they ſaide vnto him, Rabbi, when cameſt thou hither?

26 Ieſus aunſwered them, and ſaide, Verely, verely I ſaye vnto you, ye ſeeke me not becauſe ye ſawe the miracles, but becauſe ye ate of the loaues, and were filled.

27 Labour not for the meate which periſheth, but for the meate that endureth vnto euerlaſting life, which the Sonne of man ſhall giue vnto you: for him hath * God the Father ſealed.

Ioh. 1. 32. mat. 3. 17. & 17. 3.

28 Then ſaid they vnto him, What ſhall we do, that we might worke the workes of God?

29 Ieſus

29 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, *This is the worke of God, that ye beleeue in him, whome he hath sent. *1.Ioh.3.23.

30 They said therefore vnto him, What signe shewest thou then, that we may see it, and beleeue thee? what doest thou worke?

31 Our fathers did eat Manna in the desert, as it is *written, He gaue them bread from heauen to eate. *Exo.16.14. *nomb.11.7. *psal.78.25.

32 Then Iesus said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, Moses gaue you not that bread from heauen, but my Father giueth you that true bread from heauen.

33 For the bread of God is he which commeth downe from heauen, and giueth life vnto the worlde.

34 Then they said vnto him, Lord, euermore giue vs this bread.

35 And Iesus said vnto them, I am that bread of life: he that commeth to me, shal not hunger, and he that beleeueth in me, shal neuer thirst.

36 But I said vnto you, that ye also haue seene me, and beleeue not.

37 Al that the Father giueth me, shal come to me: and him that commeth to me, I cast not away.

38 For I came downe from heauen, not to do mine owne wil, but his wil which hath sent me.

39 And this is the Fathers wil which hath sent me, that of al which he hath giuen me, I should lose nothing, but should raise it vp againe at the last day.

40 And this is the wil of him that sent me, that euerie man which seeth the Sonne, & beleeueth in him, should haue euerlasting life: and I wil raise him vp at the last day.

41 The Iewes then murmured at him because he said, I am that bread, which is come downe from heauen.

42 And they said, *Is not this Iesus that sonne of Ioseph, whose father and mother we know? how then saith he, I came downe from heauen? *Mat.13.55.

43 Iesus then answered, and said vnto them, Murmure not among your selues.

44 No man can come to me, except the Father, which hath sent me, drawe him: and I wil raise him vp at the last day.

45 It is written in the * Prophets, And they shalbe all taught of God. Euerie man therefore that hath heard, & *Isa.54.13. *ierem.31.33.

hath learned of the Father, commeth vnto me:
Mat.11.27. 46 * Not that anie man hath seene the Father, saue he which is of God, he hath seene the Father.
47 Verely, verely I say vnto you, He that beleeueth in me, hath euerlasting life.
48 I am that bread of life.
Exo.16.15. 49 * Your fathers did eate Manna in the wildernes, and are dead.
50 This is that bread, which commeth downe from heauen, that he which eateth of it, should not die.
51 I am that liuing bread, which came downe from heauen: if anie man eat of this bread, he shal liue for euer: and the bread that I wil giue, is my flesh, which I will giue for the life of the worlde.
52 Then the Iewes stroue among them selues, saying, How can this man giue vs *his* flesh to eate?
53 Then Iesus said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, Except ye eate the flesh of the Sonne of man, and drinke his blood, ye haue no life in you.
1.Cor.11. 27. 54 Whosoeuer * eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life, and I wil raise him vp at the last day.
55 For my flesh is meate in deede, and my blood is drinke in deede.
56 He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.
57 As that liuing Father hath sent me, so liue I by the Father, and he that eateth me, euen he shal liue by me.
58 This is that bread which came downe from heauen: not as your fathers haue eaten Manna, and are dead. He that eateth of this bread, shal liue for euer.
59 These things spake he in the Synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.
60 Manie therefore of his disciples (when they heard this) said, This is an hard saying: who can heare it?
61 But Iesus knowing in him selfe, that his disciples murmured at this, said vnto them, Doeth this offend you?
62 *What* then if ye should see that Sonne of man ascend vp * where he was before?
Chap.3.13.
63 It is the Spirit that quickeneth: the flesh profiteth nothing: the wordes that I speake vnto you, are spirit and life.
64 But there are some of you that beleeue not: for Iesus knew

knew from the beginning, which they were that beleeued not, and who should betray him.

65 And he said, Therefore said I vnto you, that no man can come vnto me, except it be giuen vnto him of my Father.

66 From that time, manie of his disciples went backe, and walked no more with him.

67 Then said Iesus to the twelue, Wil ye also go away?

68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Master, to whom shal we go? thou hast the words of eternal life:

69 And we beleeue and know that thou art that Christ that Sonne of the liuing God.

70 Iesus answered them, Haue not I *chosen you twelue, and one of you is a deuil? *Mat.26.16.*

71 Now he spake it of Iudas Iscariot the *sonne* of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, though he was one of the twelue.

CHAP. VII.

Christ, after his cousins were gone vp to the feast of Tabernacles, 10 goeth thither priuily. 12 The peoples sundrie opinions of him. 14 He teacheth in the Temple. 32 The Priests commaund to take him. 41 Strife among the multitude about him, 47 and betweene the Pharises and the officers that were sent to take him, 50 and Nicodemus.

1 AFter these things, Iesus walked in Galile, and woulde not walke in Iudea: for the Iewes sought to kill him.

2 Now the Iewes *feast of the Tabernacles was at hand. *Leu.23.34.*

3 His brethren therefore said vnto him, Depart hence, & go into Iudea, that thy disciples may see thy workes that thou doest.

4 For there is no man that doeth anie thing secretly, and he him selfe seeketh to be famous. If thou doest these things, shew thy selfe to the worlde.

5 For as yet his brethren beleeued not in him.

6 Then Iesus said vnto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alway readie.

7 The world can not hate you: but me it hateth, because I testifie of it, that the workes thereof are euil.

8 Go ye vp vnto this feast: I wil not go vp yet vnto this feast; *for my time is not yet fulfilled. *Chap.8.20.*

9 ¶These things he said vnto them, and abode stil in Ga-
lile.
10 But assone as his brethren were gone vp, then went
he also vp vnto the feast, not openly, but as *it were* pri-
uilie.
11 Then the Iewes sought him at the feast, and said,
Where is he?
12 And much murmuring was there of him among the
people. Some said, He is a good man: other said, Nay,
but he deceiueth the people.
13 Howbeit no man spake openly of him for feare of the
Iewes.
14 Now when halfe the feast was done, Iesus went vp into
to the Temple and taught.
15 And the Iewes marueiled, saying, How knoweth this
man the Scriptures, seeing that he neuer learned?
16 Iesus answered them, and saide, My doctrine is not
mine, but his that sent me.
17 If any man wil do his wil, he shal know of the doctrine,
whether it be of God, or whether I speake of my selfe.
18 He that speaketh of him selfe, seeketh his owne glorie:
but he that seeketh his glorie that sent him, the same is
true, and no vnrighteousnes is in him.
Exod.24.3. *Deut.5.18.* 19 * Did not Moses giue you a Lawe, and *yet* none of you
keepeth the Lawe? * Why go ye about to kil me?
20 The people answered, and said, Thou hast a deuil:
who goeth about to kil thee?
21 Iesus answered, and saide to them, I haue done one
worke, and ye al marueile.
Leuit.12.3. *Gen.17.10.* 22 * Moses therefore gaue vnto you circumcision (not be-
cause it is of Moses, but of the * fathers,) and ye on the
Sabbath *day* circumcise a man.
23 If a man on the Sabbath receiue circumcision, that the
Law of Moses should not be broken, be ye angrie with
me, because I haue made a man euery whit whole on
the Sabbath *day*?
Deut.1.16. 24 * Iudge not according to the appearance, but iudge
righteous iudgement.
25 ¶Then said some of them of Hierusalem, Is not this
he, whome they go about to kil?
26 And beholde, he speaketh openly, and they say no-
thing to him: do the rulers know in deede that this is
in

in deede that Christ?
27 Howbeit we know this man whence he is: but when that Christ commeth, no man shal know whence he is.
28 ¶Then cried Iesus in the Temple as he taught, saying, Ye both knowe me, and knowe whence I am: yet am I not come of my selfe, but he that sent me, is true, whom ye know not.
29 But I knowe him: for I am of him, and he hath sent me,
30 Then they sought to take him, but no man laid hands on him, because his houre was not yet come.
31 Now manie of the people beleeued in him, and said, When that Christ commeth, wil he do mo miracles thē this man hath done?
32 The Pharises heard that the people murmured these things of him, and the Pharises, and high Priests sent officers to take him.
33 Then said Iesus vnto them, Yet am I a litle while with you, and then go I vnto him that sent me.
34 * Ye shal seeke me, and shal not finde *me*, and where I am, can ye not come. *Chap. 13. 33*
35 Then said the Iewes amongs themselues, Whither wil he go, that we shal not finde him? Wil he go vnto them that are dispersed among the Grecians, and teach the Grecians?
36 What saying is this that he said, Ye shal seeke me, and shal not finde *me*? and where I am, can ye not come?
37 Now in the last *and* * great day of the feast, Iesus stode and cried, saying, If anie man thirst, let him come vnto me, and drinke. *Leui. 23. 36*
38 He that beleeueth in me, * as saieth the Scripture, out of his bellie shal flowe riuers of water of life. *Deut. 18. 15*
39 (* This spake he of the Spirit which they that beleeued in him, should receiue: for the holie Ghost was not yet *giuen*, because that Iesus was not yet glorified.) *Ioel. 2. 28. Actes. 2. 17.*
40 So, manie of the people when they heard this saying, said, * Of a treueth this is that Prophet. *Deut. 18. 15*
41 Other said, This is that Christ: and some said, But shal that Christ come out of Galile?
42 * Saieth not the Scripture that that Christ shal come of the seede of Dauid, & out of the towne of Beth-leem, where Dauid was? *Mich. 5. 2. mat. 2. 5.*

43 So was there diſſenſion among the people for him.
44 And ſome of them would haue taken him, but no man laid hands on him.
45 Then came the officers to the hie Prieſts and Phariſes, and they ſaid vnto them, Why haue ye not brought him?
46 The officers anſwered, Neuer man ſpake like this man.
47 Then anſwered them the Phariſes, Are ye alſo deceiued?
48 Doeth anie of the rulers, or of the Phariſes beleeue in him?
49 But this people, which knowe not the Lawe, are curſed.
Chap.3.2. 50 Nicodemus ſaid vnto them, (* he that came to Ieſus by night, and was one of them.)
51 Doeth our Lawe iudge a man before it heare him, *Deut.17.8.* * and know what he hath done?
and 19.15. 52 They anſwered, and ſaid vnto him, Art thou alſo of Galile? Search and looke: for out of Galile ariſeth no Prophet.
53 And euerie man went vnto his owne houſe.

CHAP. VIII.

3 The woman taken in adulterie, 11 hath her ſinnes forgiuen her. 12 Chriſt the light of the worlde. 19 The Phariſes aske where his Father is. 59 The ſonnes of Abrahaam. 43 The ſonnes of God. 44 The deuil the father of lying. 56 Abraham ſawe Chriſts daye.

1 AND Ieſus went vnto the mount of Oliues,
2 And early in the morning came againe into the Temple, and all the people came vnto him, and he ſate downe, and taught them.
3 Then the Scribes, and the Phariſes brought vnto him a woman, taken in adulterie, and ſet her in the middes,
4 And ſaid vnto him, Maiſter, we found this woman committing adulterie, euen in the verie acte.
Leui.20.10. 5 * Now Moſes in our Lawe commanded, that ſuch ſhould be ſtoned: what ſaieſt thou therefore?
6 And this they ſaid to tempt him, that they might haue wherof to accuſe him. But Ieſus ſtouped downe, and with his finger wrote on the ground.
7 And while they continued asking him, he liſt him ſelfe vp,

vp, and said vnto them, * Let him that is among you without sinne, cast the first stone at her. *Deut.17.7*

8 And againe he stouped downe, and wrote on the ground.

9 And when they heard it, being accused by their owne conscience, they went out one by one, beginning at the eldest euen to the last: so Iesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the middes.

10 When Iesus had lift vp himselfe againe, and sawe no man, but the woman, he said vnto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?

11 She said, No man, Lord. And Iesus said, Neither do I condemne thee: go and sinne no more.

12 Then spake Iesus againe vnto them, saying, I * am that light of the world: he that followeth me, shal not walke in darkenes, but shal haue that light of life. *Chap.1.5. and 9.5.*

13 The Pharises therefore said vnto him, Thou beareſt recorde of thy selfe: thy record is not true.

14 * Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Though I beare recorde of my selfe, *yet* my recorde is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I go: but ye can not tell whence I come, and whither I go. *Chap.5.31.*

15 Ye iudge after the flesh: I iudge no man.

16 And if I also iudge, my iudgement is true: for I am not alone, but I, and the Father, that sent me.

17 And it is also written in your Lawe, * that the testimonie of two men is true. *Deut.17.6. and 19.15. mat.18.16. 2 cor.13.1.*

18 I am one that beare witnes of my selfe, and the Father that sent me, beareth witnes of me.

19 Then said they vnto him, Where is that Father of thine? Iesus answered, Ye neither knowe me, nor that Father of mine. If ye had knowen me, ye should haue knowen that Father of mine also. *Heb.10.28.*

20 These words spake Iesus in the treasurie, as he taught in the Temple, and no man laid hands on him: for his houre was not yet come.

21 Then said Iesus againe vnto them, I go my way, and ye shal seeke me, and shal die in your sinnes. Whither I go, can ye not come.

22 Then said the Iewes, Wil he kil himselfe, because he saith, Whither I go, can ye not come?

23 And he said vnto them, Ye are from beneath: I am from
aboue: ye are of this world: I am not of this worlde.
24 I said therefore vnto you, That ye shal die in your
sinnes: for except ye beleeue, that I am he, ye shal die
in your sinnes.
25 Then said they vnto him, Who art thou? And Iesus
said vnto them, Euen the same thing that I saide vnto
you from the beginning.
26 I haue manie things to say, and to iudge of you: but
he that sent me, is true, & the things that I haue heard
of him, those speake I to the world.
27 They vnderstoode not that he spake to them of the
Father.
28 Then said Iesus vnto them, When ye haue lift vp the
Sonne of man, then shal ye knowe that I am he, and that
I do nothing of my selfe, but as my Father hath taught
me, so I speake these things.
29 For he that sent me, is with me: the Father hath not
left me alone, because I do alwayes those thinges that
please him.
30 ¶As he spake these things, manie beleeued in him.
31 Then said Iesus to the Iewes which beleeued in him,
If ye continue in my word, ye are verely my disciples,
32 And shal know the trueth, and the trueth shal make
you free.
33 They answered him, We be Abrahams seede, and were
neuer bond to anie man: why sayest thou then, Ye shalbe
made free?
34 Iesus answered them, Verely, verely I say vnto you,
Rom. 6. 20. that whosoeuer committeth sinne, is the * seruant of
2. Pet. 2. 19. sinne.
35 And the seruant abideth not in the house for euer: but
the Sonne abideth for euer.
36 If that Sonne therefore shal make you free, ye shalbe
free in deede.
37 I know that ye are Abrahams seede, but ye seeke to
kil me, because my word hath no place in you.
38 I speake that which I haue seene with my Father: and
ye do that which ye haue seene with your father.
39 They answered, and said vnto him, Abraham is our fa-
ther. Iesus said vnto them, If ye were Abrahams chil-
dren, ye would do the workes of Abraham.

40 But

40 But now ye go about to kil me, a man that haue tolde you the trueth, which I haue heard of God: this did not Abraham.

41 Ye do the workes of your father. Then said they to him, We are not borne of fornication: we haue one Father, which is God.

42 Therefore Iesus said vnto them, If God were your Father, then would ye loue me: for I proceeded forth, and came from God, neither came I of my selfe, but he sent me.

43 Why doe ye not vnderstand my talke? because ye can not heare my word.

44 * Ye are of your father the deuil, and the lustes of your father ye wil do: he hath bene a murtherer from the beginning, and abode not in the trueth, because there is no trueth in him. When he speaketh a lie, then speaketh he of his owne: for he is a liar, and the father thereof. 1. Iohn. 3. 8.

45 And because I tell you the trueth, ye beleeue me not.

46 Which of you can rebuke me of sinne? and if I say the trueth, why do ye not beleeue me?

47 * He that is of God, heareth Gods wordes: ye therefore heare them not, because ye are not of God. 1. Iohn. 4. 6.

48 Then answered the Iewes, and said vnto him, Say we not wel that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a deuil?

49 Iesus answered, I haue not a deuil, but I honour my Father, and ye haue dishonoured me.

50 And I seeke not mine owne praise: but there is one that seeketh it, and iudgeth.

51 Verely, verely I say vnto you, If a man kepe my word, he shal neuer see death.

52 Then said the Iewes to him, Now know we that thou hast a deuil. Abraham is dead, and the Prophets, and thou saiest, If a man keepe my word, he shal neuer taste of death.

53 Art thou greater then our father Abraham, which is dead? and the Prophets are dead: whome makest thou thy selfe?

54 Iesus answered, If I honour my selfe, mine honour is nothing worth: it is my Father that honoureth me, whom ye say, that he is your God.

55 Yet

55 Yet ye haue not knowen him: but I knowe him, and if I should say, I knowe him not, I should be a liar like vnto you: but I know him, and keepe his word.
56 Your Father Abraham reioyced to see my day, and he sawe it, and was glad.
57 Then said the Iewes vnto him, Thou art not yet fifty yere olde, and hast thou seene Abraham?
58 Iesus said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, before Abraham was, I am.
59 Then tooke they vp stones, to cast at him, but Iesus hid him selfe, and went out of the Temple: And he passed through the middes of them, & so went his way.

CHAP. IX.

1 Christ giueth sight on the Sabbath day, to him that was borne blind. 13 Whom, after he had long reasoned against the Pharisees, 22. 35 and was cast out of the Synagogue, 36 Christ endueth with the knowledge of the euerlasting light.

1 AND as Iesus passed by, he sawe a man which was blinde from his birth.
2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sinne, this man, or his parents, that he was borne blinde?
3 Iesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents, but that the workes of God should be shewed on him.
4 I must worke the workes of him that sent me, while it is day: the night commeth when no man can worke.
5 As long as I am in the world, * I am the light of the world.
6 Assone as he had thus spoken, he spate on the ground, and made claye of the spettle, and anointed the eyes of the blinde with the clay,
7 And saide vnto him, Goe washe in the poole of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent:) He went his way therefore, and washed, and came againe seeing.
8 Now the neighbours and they that had seene him before, when he was blinde, said, Is not this he that sate & begged?
9 Some said, This is he: and other said, He is like him: but he him selfe said, I am he.
10 Therefore they said vnto him, How were thine eyes opened?
11 He answered, and said, The man that is called Iesus made

Chap. 1. 9. and 8. 12. and 12. 35

made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said vnto me, Goe to the poole of Siloam, and wash. So I went, and washed, and receiued sight.

12 Then they said vnto him, Where is he? He said, I can not tel.

13 ¶ They brought to the Pharises him that was once blinde,

14 And it was the Sabbath *day*, when Iesus made the clay, and opened his eyes.

15 Then againe the Pharises also asked him, howe he had receiued sight. And he said vnto them, He laid claye on mine eyes, and I washed, and do see.

16 Then said some of the Pharises, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the Sabbath *day*. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner, do such miracles? & there was a dissension among them.

17 Then spake they vnto the blinde againe, What sayest thou of him, because he hath opened thine eyes? And he said, He is a Prophet.

18 Then the Iewes did not beleeue him, (that he had bene blinde, & receiued his sight) vntil they had called the parents of him that had receiued sight.

19 And they asked them, saying, Is this your sonne, whome ye saye was borne blinde? Howe doeth he now see then?

20 His parents answered them, and said, We knowe that this is our sonne, and that he was borne blinde:

21 But by what meanes he now seeth, we knowe not: or who hath opened his eyes, can we not tell: he is olde enough: aske him: He shal answere for him selfe.

22 These wordes spake his parents, because they feared the Iewes: for the Iewes had ordained already, that if any man did confesse that he was Christ, he shoulde be *excommunicate* out of the Synagogue.

23 Therefore said his parents, He is olde enoughe: aske him.

24 Then againe called they the man that had bene blind, and said vnto him, Giue glorye vnto God: we knowe that this man is a sinner.

25 Then he answered, and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I cannot tel: one thing I knowe, that I was blinde, and nowe I see.

26 Then said they to him againe, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?
27 He answered them, I haue tolde you already, and ye haue not heard it: wherefore would ye heare it againe? wil ye also be his disciples?
28 Then reuiled they him, and said, Be thou his disciple: we be Moses disciples.
29 We knowe that God spake with Moses: but this man we knowe not from whence he is.
30 The man answered, and said vnto them, Doutelesse, this is a marueilous thing, that ye knowe not whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes.
31 Now we know, that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his wil, him heareth he.
32 Since the world began was it not heard, that any man opened the eyes of one that was borne blinde.
33 If this man were not of God, he could haue done nothing.
34 They answered, & said vnto him, Thou art altogether borne in sinnes, and doest thou teach vs? so they cast him out.
35 Iesus heard that they had cast him out: and when he had found him, he said vnto him, Doest thou beleeue in the Sonne of God?
36 He answered, and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might beleeue in him?
37 And Iesus said vnto him, Both thou hast seene him, and he it is that talketh with thee.
38 Then he said, Lord, I beleeue, and worshipped him.
39 And Iesus said, I am come vnto iudgement into this world, that they which see not, might see: and that they * which see, might be made blinde.
Chap. 3. 17. and 12. 47.
40 And some of the Pharises which were with him, heard these things, and said vnto him, Are we blinde also?
41 Iesus said vnto them, If ye were blinde, ye should not haue sinne: but now ye say, We see: therefore your sinne remaineth.

CHAP. X.

1 Christ proueth that the Pharises are the euill shepheardes, 8 and by many reasons, that him selfe 11 14 is the good shepheard: 19 And thereof dissension ariseth. 31 They

take vp stones, 39 & goe about to take him, but he escapeth.

1 VErely, verely I say vnto you, He that entreth not in by the doore into the sheepefolde, but climeth vp another way, he is a thiefe and a robber.

2 But he that goeth in by the doore, is the shepheard of the sheepe.

3 To him the porter openeth, and the sheepe heare his voyce, and he calleth his owne sheepe by name, and leadeth them out.

4 And when he hath sent forth his owne sheepe, he goeth before them, and the sheepe followe him: for they knowe his voyce.

5 And they wil not follow a stranger, but they flee from him: for they knowe not the voyce of strangers.

6 This parable spake Iesus vnto them: but they vnderstoode not what things they were, which he spake vnto them.

7 Then said Iesus vnto them againe, Verely, verely I say vnto you, I am that doore of the sheepe.

8 Al, that euer came before me, are theeues & robbers: but the sheepe did not heare them.

9 I am that doore: by me if any man enter in, he shalbe saued, and shal go in, and go out, and finde pasture.

10 The thiefe commeth not, but for to steale, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might haue life, & haue it in aboundance.

11 * I am that good shepheard: that good shepheard giueth his life for his sheepe. *Isai.40.11. Ezec.34.23.*

12 But an hireling, and he which is not the shepheard, neither the sheepe are his own, seeth the wolfe comming, and he leaueth his sheepe, and fleeth, and the wolfe catcheth them, and scattereth the sheepe.

13 So the hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheepe.

14 I am that good shepheard, and know mine, and am knowen of mine.

15 As the Father knoweth me, so knowe I the Father: & I lay downe my life for *my* sheepe.

16 Other sheepe I haue also, which are not of this folde: them also must I bring, and they shal heare my voyce: and * there shalbe one sheepefolde, *and* one shepeheard. *Ezec.37.23.*

17 Therefore

17 Therefore doeth my Father loue me, because *I lay
Isai. 53. 7. downe my life, that I might take it againe.
18 No man taketh it from me, but I laye it downe of my
selfe: I haue power to laye it downe, and haue power
Act. 2. 24. to take it againe: this * commandement haue I recei-
ued of my Father.
19 ¶ Then there was a diſſenſion againe among the
Iewes for theſe ſayings,
20 And many of them ſaid, He hath a deuil, and is madde:
why heare ye him?
21 Others ſaid, Theſe are not the wordes of him that hath
a deuil: can the deuil open the eyes of the blinde?
22 And it was at Hieruſalem the *feaſt of the* Dedication,
and it was winter.
23 And Ieſus walked in the Temple, in Solomons porch.
24 Then came the Iewes round about him, and ſaid vnto
him, How long doeſt thou make vs doute? If thou be
that Chriſt, tel vs plainely.
25 Ieſus anſwered them, I tolde you, and ye beleeue not:
the workes that I do in my Fathers Name, they beare
witnes of me.
26 But ye beleeue not: for ye are not of my ſheepe, as I
ſaid vnto you.
27 My ſheepe heare my voyce, and I knowe them, and
they followe me,
28 And I giue vnto them eternal life, and they ſhall
neuer periſhe, neither ſhall any plucke them out of
mine hand.
29 My Father which gaue *them* me, is greater then all,
and none is able to take them out of my Fathers hand.
30 I and my Father are one.
Chap. 8. 59. 31 * Then the Iewes againe tooke vp ſtones, to ſtone
him.
32 Ieſus anſwered them, Many good workes haue I ſhe-
wed you from my Father: for which of theſe workes
do ye ſtone me?
33 The Iewes anſwered him, ſaying, For the good worke
we ſtone thee not, but for blaſphemie, and that thou be-
ing a man, makeſt thy ſelfe God.
34 Ieſus anſwered them, Is it not written in your Lawe,
Pſal. 82. 6. *I ſaid, ye are gods?
35 If he called them gods, vnto whome the word of God
was

was giuen, and the Scripture cannot be broken,
36 Say ye of him, whome the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest, because I said, I am the Sonne of God?
37 If I doe not the workes of my Father, beleeue me not.
38 But if I do, then though ye beleeue not me, yet beleeue the workes, that ye may knowe and beleeue, that the Father *is* in me, and I in him.
39 Againe they went about to take him: but he escaped out of their hands,
40 And went againe beyond Iordan, into the place where Iohn first baptized, and there abode.
41 And many resorted vnto him, and said, Iohn did no miracle: but all thinges that Iohn spake of this man, were true.
42 And many beleeued in him there.

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ, to shewe that he is 25 the life & the resurrection, 14 commeth to Lazarus being dead, 17. 34 and buried, 43 and rayseth him vp. 47 As the Priests were consulting together, 49 Caiaphas 50 propheciethe that one must dye for the people: 56. 57 They commaund to seeke Christ out, and to take him.

1 AND a certaine man was sicke, *named* Lazarus of Bethania, the towne of Marie, and her sister Martha.
2 (And it was that * Marie which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feete with her heare, whose brother Lazarus was sicke.) *Chap. 12. 3. mat. 26. 7.*
3 Therefore *his* sisters sent vnto him, saying, Lorde, beholde, he whom thou loueſt, is sicke.
4 When Iesus heard it, he said, This sickenes is not vnto death, but for the glorie of God, that the Sonne of God might be glorified thereby.
5 ¶ Now Iesus loued Martha and her sister, and Lazarus.
6 And after he had heard that he was sicke, yet abode he two dayes still in the same place where he was.
7 Then after that, sayde he to his disciples, Let vs goe into Iudea agayne.
8 The disciples sayde vnto him, Master, the Iewes lately sought to * stone thee, and dooſt thou goe thither agayne? *Chap. 7. 30. & 8. 59. & 10. 33.*

9 Iesus

9 Iesus answered, Are there not twelue houres in the day? If a man walke in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world.
10 But if a man walke in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him.
11 These things spake he, and after he said vnto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth: but I go to wake him vp.
12 Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleepe, he shall be safe.
13 Howbeit, Iesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of the naturall sleepe.
14 Then said Iesus vnto them plainely, Lazarus is dead.
15 And I am glad for your sakes, that I was not there, that ye may beleeue: but let vs go vnto him.
16 Then said Thomas (which is called Didymus) vnto his fellowe disciples, Let vs also go, that we may dye with him.
17 ¶ Then came Iesus, and found that he had lien in the graue foure dayes already.
18 (Now Bethania was nere vnto Hierusalem, about fifteene furlongs of.)
19 And many of the Iewes were come to Martha and Marie to comfort them for their brother.
20 Then Martha, whē she heard that Iesus was comming, went to meete him: but Marie sate stil in the house.
21 Then said Martha vnto Iesus, Lord, if thou hadest been here, my brother had not been dead.
22 But now I know also, that whatsoeuer thou askest of God, God wil giue it thee.
23 Iesus said vnto her, Thy brother shal rise againe.
24 Martha said vnto him, I knowe that he shal rise again *in the resurrection at the last day.
Chap. 5.29.
25 Iesus said vnto her, I am the resurrection and the life: *he that beleeueth in me, though he were dead, yet shal he liue.
Luke.14.14. Chap. 6.35.
26 And whosoeuer liueth, and beleeueth in me, shal neuer dye: Beleeuest thou this?
27 She said vnto him, Yea, Lord, I beleeue that thou art that Christ that Sonne of God, which should come into the worlde.
28 ¶ And when she had so said, she went her way, and called Marie her sister secretly, saying, The master is come,

come, and calleth for thee.
29 And when she heard it, she arose quickely, and came vnto him.
30 For Iesus was not yet come into the towne, but was in the place where Martha met him.
31 The Iewes then which were with her in the house, & comforted her, when they sawe Marie, that she rose vp hastily, and went out, folowed her, saying, She goeth vnto the graue, to weepe there.
32 Then when Marie was come where Iesus was, and saw him, she fel downe at his feete, saying vnto him, Lord, if thou haddest bene here, my brother had not bene dead.
33 When Iesus therefore sawe her weepe, and the Iewes *also* weepe which came with her, he groned in the spirit, and was troubled in him selfe,
34 And said, Where haue ye laide him? They said vnto him, Lord, come and see.
35 *And* Iesus wept.
36 Then said the Iewes, Beholde, how he loued him.
37 And some of them said, * Could not he, which opened the eyes of the blinde, haue made also, that this man should not haue died? *Chap. 9. 6.*
38 Iesus therefore againe groned in him selfe, and came to the graue. And it was a cane, and a stone was laide vpon it.
39 Iesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha the sister of him that was dead, said vnto him, Lord, he stinketh alreadie: for he hath bene *dead* foure daies.
40 Iesus said vnto her, Said I not vnto thee, that if thou diddest beleeue, thou shouldest see the glorie of God?
41 Then they tooke away the stone *from the place* where the dead was laide. And Iesus list vp his eyes, and said, Father, I thanke thee, because thou hast heard me.
42 I knowe that thou hearest me alwayes, but because of the people that stand by, I said it, that they may beleeue, that thou hast sent me.
43 As he had spoken these things, he cryed with a loude voyce, Lazarus, come forth.
44 Then he that was dead, came forth, bound hand and foote with bands, and his face was bound with a napkin. Iesus said vnto them, Loose him, and let him go.

45 ¶ Then manie of the Iewes, which came to Marie, and had ſeene the things, which Ieſus did, beleeued in him.
46 But ſome of them went their way to the Phariſes, and tolde them what things Ieſus had done.
47 Then gathered the hie Prieſts, and the Phariſes a counſel, and ſaid, What ſhal we do? For this man doeth manie miracles.
48 If we let him thus alone, al men wil beleeue in him, and the Romanes wil come and take away both our place, and the nation.
49 Then one of them *named* Caiaphas, which was the hie Prieſt that ſame yere, ſaid vnto them, Ye perceiue nothing at al,
Chap.18.14 50 * Nor yet do you conſider that it is expedient for vs, that one man die for the people, and that the whole nation periſh not.
51 This ſpake he not of him ſelfe: but being hie Prieſt that ſame yere, he prophecied that Ieſus ſhould die for that nation:
52 And not for that nation onely, but that he ſhould gather together in one, the children of God, which were ſcattered.
53 Then from that day forth they conſulted together, to put him to death.
54 Ieſus therefore walked no more openly among the Iewes, but went thence vnto a countrey nere to the wildernes, into a citie called Ephraim, and there continued with his diſciples.
55 ¶ And the Iewes Paſſeouer was at hand, and manie went out of the countrey vp to Hieruſalem before the Paſſeouer, to purifie them ſelues.
56 Then ſought they for Ieſus, and ſpake among them ſelues, as they ſtoode in the Temple, What thinke ye, that he commeth not to the feaſt?
57 Now both the hie Prieſts and the Phariſes had giuen a commandement, that if anie man knewe where he were, he ſhould ſhew it, that they might take him.

CHAP. XII.

2 *As Chriſt is at ſupper with Lazarus,* 3 *Marie anoynteth his feete.* 5 *Iudas findeth fault with her:* 7 *Chriſt defendeth her.* 10 *The Prieſts would put Lazarus to death.* 12 *As Chriſt commeth to Hierusalem,* 18 *the people meete him.*

20 *The*

20 *The Grecians desire to see him.* 42 *The chiefe Rulers that beleeue in him, but for feare doe not confesse him,* 44 *he exhorteth to faith.*

1 THen * Iesus, sixe daies before the Passeouer, came to Bethania, where Lazarus was, who died, whome he had raised from the dead. *Chap. 26. 7. mar. 14. 3.*

2 There they made him a supper, and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sate at the table with him.

3 Then tooke Marie a pound of ointment of Spikenarde verie costly, and anointed Iesus feete, and wipte his feete with her heare, and the house was filled with the sauour of the ointment.

4 Then said one of his disciples, *euen* Iudas Iscariot Simons *sonne*, which should betray him:

5 Why was not this ointment solde for three hundreth pence, and giuen to the poore?

6 Now he said this, not that he cared for the poore, but because he was a theefe, and * had the bagge, and bare that which was giuen. *Chap. 13. 29.*

7 Then said Iesus, Let her alone: against the day of my burying she kept it.

8 For the poore alwayes ye haue with you, but me ye shal not haue alwaies.

9 Then much people of the Iewes knewe that he was there: and they came, not for Iesus sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whome he had raised from the dead.

10 The hie Priests therefore consulted, that they might put Lazarus to death also,

11 Because that for his sake manie of the Iewes went away, and beleeued in Iesus.

12 ¶ * On the morow a great multitude that were come to the feast, when they heard that Iesus should come to Hierusalem, *Mat. 21. 8. mar. 11. 8. luke 19. 35.*

13 Tooke branches of palme trees: and went forth to meete him, and cryed, Hosanna, Blessed is the King of Israel that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

14 And Iesus found a yong asse, and sate thereon, as it is written,

15 * Feare not daughter of Sion: beholde, thy King commeth sitting on an asses colte. *Zach. 9. 9.*

16 But his disciples vnderstoode not these things at the first: but when Iesus was glorified, then remembred they, that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things vnto him.

17 The people therefore that was with him, bare witnes that he called Lazarus out of the graue, and raised him from the dead.

18 Therfore met him the people also, because they heard that he had done this miracle.

19 And the Pharises said among them selues, Perceiue ye how ye preuaile nothing? Beholde, the worlde goeth after him.

20 ¶Now there were certaine Greekes among them that came vp to worship at the feast.

21 And they came to Philippe, which was of Bethsaida in Galile, and desired him, saying, Sir, we woulde see that Iesus.

22 Philippe came and tolde Andrewe: and againe Andrewe and Philippe tolde Iesus.

23 And Iesus answered them, saying, The houre is come, that the Sonne of man must be glorified.

24 Verely, verely I say vnto you, Except the wheat corne fall into the ground and dye, it bideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruite.

Mat.10.39 and 16.25. mar.8.35. luke 9.24. and 17.33. 25 * He that loueth his life, shal lose it, & he that hateth his life in this world, shal keepe it vnto life eternal.

26 * If anie man serue me, let him follow me: for where I am, there shal also my seruant be: and if anie man serue me, him wil my Father honour.

Chap.12.27 27 Now is my soule troubled: and what shal I say? Father, saue me from this houre: but therefore came I vnto this houre.

28 Father, glorifie thy Name. Then came there a voyce from heauen, *saying*, I haue both glorified it, and wil glorifie it againe.

29 Then said the people that stoode by, *and* heard, that it was a thunder: other said, An Angel spake to him.

30 Iesus answered, & said, This voyce came not because of me, but for your sakes.

31 Now is the iudgement of this world: now shall the prince of this worlde be cast out.

Chap.3.14. 32 *And I, if I were lift vp from the earth, wil drawe al

men

men vnto me.
33 Now this said he, signifying what death he shoulde die.
34 The people answered him, We haue heard out of the * Lawe, that that Christ bideth for euer: and how saiest thou, that that Sonne of man must be lift vp? Who is that Sonne of man? *Psal.89.36 and 110.4. and 117.2.
35 Then Iesus said vnto them, Yet a litle while is * the light with you: walke while ye haue that light, least the darknes come vpon you: for he that walketh in the darke, knoweth not whither he goeth. *Isai.40.8. & ch.37. 25. Chap.1.9.
36 While ye haue that light, beleeue in that light, that ye may be the children of the light. These things spake Iesus, and departed, and hid him selfe from them.
37 ¶ And though he had done so manie miracles before them, *yet* beleeued they not on him,
38 That the saying of Esaias the Prophet might be fulfilled, that he said, *Lord, who beleeued our report? and to whome is the arme of the Lord reueiled? *Isai.53.1. rom.10.16.
39 Therfore could they not beleeue, because that Esaias saith againe,
40 * He hath blinded their eyes, & hardened their heart, that they should not see with *their* eyes, nor vnderstād with *their* heart, and should be conuerted, and I should heale them. *Isai.6.9. mat.13.14. mark.4.12. luke.8.10.
41 These things said Esaias when he sawe his glorie, and spake of him. *actes.28.26 rom.11.8.
42 Neuertheles, euen among the chiefe rulers, manie beleeued in him: but because of the Pharises they did not confesse him, least they shoulde be *cast* out of the Synagogue.
43 * For they loued the praise of men, more then the praise of God. Chap.5.44.
44 And Iesus cryed, and said, He that beleeueth in me, beleeueth not in me, but in him that sent me.
45 And he that seeth me, seeth him that sent me.
46 I * am come a light into the worlde, that whosoeuer beleeueth in me, should not abide in darkenes. Chap.3.19. and 9.39.
47 * And if anie man heare my wordes, and beleeue not, I iudge him not: for I came not to iudge the world, but to saue the worlde. Chap.3.17.
48 He that refuseth me, and receiueth not my wordes,

Mar.16.16 hath one that iudgeth him: * the word that I haue spoken, it shal iudge him in the last day.

49 For I haue not spoken of my selfe: but the Father which sent me, he gaue me a commandement what I should say, and what I should speake.

50 And I know that his cõmandement is life euerlasting: the things therfore that I speake, I speake *them* so as the Father said vnto me.

CHAP. XIII.

Christ rising from supper, 15 to commend humilitie to his Apostles, washeth their feete. 21 He noteth the traitour Iudas 26 with an euident token. 34 He commendeth charitie. 37. 39 He foretelleth Peter of his denial.

Mat.26.2. mar.14.1. luke.22.1. 1 NOw * before the feast of the Passeouer, when Iesus knew that his houre was come, that he should depart out of this worlde vnto the Father, forasmuch as he loued his owne which were in the worlde, vnto the ende he loued them.

2 And when supper was done (& that the deuil had now put in the heart of Iudas Iscariot, Simons *sonne*, to betray him)

3 Iesus knowing that the Father had giuen al things into his hands, and that he was come forth from God, and went to God,

4 He riseth from supper, and layeth aside *his vpper* garments, and tooke a towel, and gird him selfe.

5 After that he powred water into a basin, and began to wash the disciples feete, and to wipe them with the towel, wherewith he was girde.

6 Then came he to Simon Peter, who said to him, Lord, doest thou wash my feete?

7 Iesus answered and said vnto him, What I do, thou knowest not now: but thou shalt knowe it hereafter.

8 Peter said vnto him, Thou shalt neuer wash my feete. Iesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou shalt haue no part with me.

9 Simon Peter said vnto him, Lord, not my feete onely, but also the hands and the head.

10 Iesus said to him, He that is washed, needeth not, saue to wash *his* feete, but is cleane euerie whit: and * ye are cleane, but not all.

Chap.15.3.

11 For he knewe who shoulde betray him: therfore said he,

he, Ye are not al cleane.

12 ¶ So after he had washed their feete, and had taken his garments, and was set downe againe, he said vnto them, Knowe ye what I haue done to you?

13 Ye call me Master, and Lord, and ye say well: for *so* am I:

14 If I then your Lord, and Master, haue washed your feete, ye also ought to washe one an others feete.

15 For I haue giuen you an example, that ye should do, euen as I haue done to you.

16 Verely, verely I say vnto you, * The seruant is not greater then his master, neither the ambassadour greater then he that sent him. *Cha.15,20. mat.10.24. luke 6.40.*

17 If ye know these thinges, blessed are ye, if ye do them.

18 ¶ I speake not of you al: I knowe whome I haue chosen: but *it is* that the Scripture might be fulfilled, * He that eateth bread with me, hath lift vp his heele against me. *Psal.41.9.*

19 From henceforth tel I you before it come, that when it is come to passe, ye might beleeue that I am he.

20 * Verely, verely I say vnto you, If I send anie, he that receiueth him, receiueth me, and he that receiueth me, receiueth him that sent me. *Mat.10.40. luke 10.16.*

21 When Iesus had said these things, he was troubled in the Spirit, and testified, and said, Verely, verely I say vnto you, that one of you shal betray me.

22 * Then the disciples looked one on another, douting of whom he spake. *Mat.26.21. mar.14.18.*

23 Now there was one of his disciples, which leaned on Iesus bosome, whome Iesus loued. *luke 22.23.*

24 To him beckened therfore Simon Peter, that he should aske who it was of whome he spake.

25 He then, as he leaned on Iesus breast, said vnto him, Lord, who is it?

26 Iesus answered, He it is, to whom I shal giue a soppe, when I haue dipt it: and he wet a soppe, and gaue it to Iudas Iscariot, Simons *sonne*.

27 And after the soppe, Satan entred into him. Then said Iesus vnto him, That thou doest, do quickely.

28 But none of them that were at table, knew, for what cause he spake it vnto him.

29 For some of them thought because Iudas had the bagge,

bagge, that Ieſus had ſaid vnto him, Bye thoſe thinges that we haue nede of againſt the feaſt: or that he ſhould giue ſome thing to the poore.

30 Aſſone then as he had receiued the ſoppe, he went immediately out, and it was night.

31 ¶ When he was gone out, Ieſus ſaid, Nowe is the Sonne of man glorified, and God is glorified in him.

32 If God be glorified in him, God ſhal alſo glorifie him in him ſelfe, and ſhal ſtraight waye glorifie him.

33 Litle children, yet a litle while am I with you: ye
Chap.7.34. ſhall ſeeke me, but as I ſaid vnto the * Iewes, Whither I go, can ye not come: alſo to you ſay I nowe,

Cha.15.12. 34 * A newe commaundement giue I vnto you, that ye
Leui.19.18. loue one another: as I haue loued you, that ye alſo loue
Mat.22.39. one another.
Iacob.4.21.

35 By this ſhall all men knowe that ye are my diſciples, if ye haue loue one to another.

36 Simon Peter ſaid vnto him, Lord, whither goeſt thou? Ieſus anſwered him, Whither I go, thou canſt not followe me now: but thou ſhalt follow me afterward.

37 Peter ſaid vnto him, Lord, why can I not follow thee
Mat.26.33. now? * I wil lay downe my life for thy ſake.

mar.14.29. 38 Ieſus anſwered him, Wilt thou lay downe thy life for
luke.22.33. my ſake? Verely, verely I ſay vnto thee, The cocke ſhal not crowe, til thou haue denied me thriſe.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 He comforteth his diſciples, 2. 7 declaring his diuinitie & the fruite of his death, 16 promiſing the Comforter 17 euen the holie Spirit, 26 whoſe office he ſetteth out. 27 He promiſeth his peace.

1 LEt not your heart be troubled: ye beleeue in God, beleeue alſo in me.

2 In my Fathers houſe are many dwelling places: if it were not ſo, I would haue tolde you: I go to prepare a place for you.

3 And if I go to prepare a place for you, I wil come againe, and receiue you vnto my ſelfe, that where I am, there may ye be alſo.

4 And whither I goe, ye knowe, and the waye ye knowe.

5 Thomas ſaid vnto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goeſt: how can we then know the way?

6 Iesus said vnto him, I am that Way, & that Trueth, & that Life. No man commeth vnto the Father, but by me.
7 If ye had knowen me, ye should haue knowen my Father also: and from hence forth ye knowe him, and haue seene him.
8 Philippe said vnto him, Lord, shew vs *thy* Father, and it sufficeth vs.
9 Iesus said vnto him, I haue bene so long time with you, and hast thou not knowen me, Philippe? he that hath seene me, hath seene my Father: how then sayest thou, Shewe vs *thy* Father?
10 Beleeuest thou not, that I am in the Father, and the Father is in me? The wordes that I speake vnto you, I speake not of my selfe: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the workes.
11 Beleeue me, that I *am* in the Father, and the Father *is* in me: at the least, beleeue me for the very workes sake.
12 Verely, verely I say vnto you, he that beleeueth in me, the workes that I do, he shal doe also, and greater then these shal he do: for I go vnto my Father.
13 * And whatsoeuer ye aske in my Name, that wil I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Sonne. *Cha.16.23.*
14 If ye shal aske any thing in my Name, I wil do it. *mat.7.7.*
15 If ye loue me, keepe my commandements. *mar.11.24.*
16 And I wil pray the Father, and he shal giue you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for euer, *iam.1.5.*
17 *Euen* the Spirit of trueth, whome the world cannot receiue, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye knowe him: for he dwelleth with you, and shal be in you.
18 I wil not leaue you fatherles: *but* I wil come to you.
19 Yet a litle *while*, and the world shal see me no more, but ye shal see me: because I liue, ye shal liue also.
20 At that day shal ye know that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you.
21 He that hath my commandements, and keepeth them, is he that loueth me: and he that loueth me, shalbe loued of my Father: and I wil loue him, and wil shew mine owne selfe to him.
22 Iudas said vnto him (not Iscariot) Lord, what is the cause that thou wilt shew thy self vnto vs, and not vnto the world?

23 Iesus

23 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, if any man loue me, he wil keepe my word, and my Father wil loue him, and we wil come vnto him, and wil dwel with him.

24 He that loueth me not, keepeth not my wordes, and the word which ye heare, is not mine, but the Fathers which sent me.

25 These things haue I spoken vnto you, being present with you.

26 *But the Comforter, which is the holy Ghost, whome the Father wil send in my Name, he shal teache you all things, and bring al things to your remembrance, which I haue tolde you. *Iha.15.26.

27 Peace I leaue with you: my peace I giue vnto you: not as the world giueth, giue I vnto you. Let not your heart be troubled, nor feare.

28 Ye haue heard how I said vnto you, I go away, and wil come vnto you. If ye loued me, ye would verely reioyce because I said, I go vnto the Father: for the Father is greater then I.

29 And now haue I spoken vnto you, before it come, that when it is come to passe, ye might beleeue.

30 Hereafter wil I not speake many things vnto you: for the prince of this world commeth, and hath nought in me.

31 But *it is* that the worlde may knowe that I loue my Father: and as the Father hath commaunded me, so I do. Arise, let vs go hence.

CHAP. XV.

1 *By the parable of the vine,* 2 *and the branches,* 5.6 *He declareth how the disciples may beare fruite.* 12. 17 *He commendeth mutual loue.* 18 *He exhorteth them to beare afflictions patiently,* 20 *by his owne example.*

1 I Am that true vine, and my Father is that husbandeman.

2 *Every branche that beareth not fruite in me, he taketh away: and euery one that beareth fruite, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruite. *Mat.15.13.

3 *Now are ye cleane through the worde, which I haue spoken vnto you. *Iha.13.10.

4 Abide in me, and I in you: as the branche can not beare fruite of it selfe, except it abide in the vine, no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

5 I am

5 I am that vine: ye *are* the branches: he that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruite: for without me can ye do nothing.
6 * If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and withereth: and men gather them, and cast *them* into the fire, and they burne. *Colos.* 1.23.
7 * If ye abide in me, and my wordes abide in you, aske what ye wil, and it shalbe done to you. 1. *Iob.* 3.22.
8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye beare muche fruite, and be made my disciples.
9 As the Father hath loued me, so haue I loued you: continue in that my loue.
10 If ye shal keepe my commandements, ye shal abide in my loue, as I haue kept my Fathers commandements, & abide in his loue.
11 These things haue I spokē vnto you, that my ioy might remaine in you, and that your ioye might be full.
12 * This is my commandement, that ye loue one another, as I haue loued you. *Cha.* 13.34. 1. *thes.* 4.9.
13 Greater loue then this hath no man, whē any man bestoweth his life for his friends. 1. *Iob.* 3.11. *and* 4.21.
14 Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoeuer I cōmande you.
15 Henceforth, call I you not seruants: for the seruant knoweth not what his master doeth: but I haue called you friends: for al things that I haue heard of my Father, haue I made knowen to you.
16 Ye haue not chosen me, but I haue chosen you, and ordeined you, * that ye go and bring forth fruite, and that your fruite remaine, that whatsoeuer ye shal aske of the Father in my Name, he may giue it you. *Mat.* 28.19.
17 These things commande I you, that ye loue one another.
18 If the world hate you, ye knowe that it hated me before you.
19 If ye were of the world, the world would loue his owne: but because ye are not of the worlde, but I haue chosen you out of the worlde, therefore the worlde hateth you.
20 Remember the word that I said vnto you, * the seruant is not greater then his master. * If they haue persecuted me, they wil persecute you also: if they haue kept my word, they wil also keepe yours. *Cha.* 13.16. *mat.* 10.24. *Mat.* 24.9.

21 But

Chap.16.4. 21 But * al these thinges wil they doe vnto you for my Names sake, because they haue not knowen him that sent me.

22 If I had not come and spoken vnto them, they shoulde not haue had sinne: but now haue they no cloke for their sinne.

23 He that hateth me, hateth my Father also.

24 If I had not done workes among them which none other man did, they had not had sinne: but nowe haue they both seene, & haue hated both me, and my Father.

25 But *it is* that the word might be fulfilled, that is written in their Lawe, * They hated me without a cause.

Psal.35.19. Cha.14.26. & 15.26. & 24.49. 26 But when that Comforter shall come, * whom I will send vnto you from the Father, *euen* the Spirit of trueth, which proceedeth of the Father, he shall testifie of me.

27 And ye shall witnes also, because ye haue bene with me from the beginning.

CHAP. XVI.

1 He foretelleth the disciples of persecution. 7 He promiseth the Comforter, and declareth his office. 21 He compareth the afflictions of his to a woman that trauileth with childe.

1 THese things haue I said vnto you, that ye should not be offended.

2 They shall excommunicate you: yea, the time shall come, that whosoeuer killeth you, wil thinke that he doeth God seruice.

3 And these things wil they do vnto you, because they haue not knowen the Father, nor me:

Cha.15.21. 4 * But these things haue I tolde you, that when the houre shal come, ye might remember, that I tolde you them. And these things said I not vnto you from the beginning, because I was with you.

5 But now I go my way to him that sent me, and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?

6 But because I haue said these things vnto you, your hearts are ful of sorowe.

7 Yet I tel you the trueth, It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, that Comforter wil not come vnto you: but if I depart, I wil send him vnto you.

8 And whē he is come, he wil reproue the world of sinne, and of righteousnes, and of iudgement:

9 Of sinne, because they beleeue not in me:

10 Of righteousnes, because I go to my Father, and ye shal see me no more:
11 Of iudgement, because the prince of this worlde is iudged.
12 I haue yet many things to say vnto you, but ye can not beare them nowe.
13 Howbeit, when he is come which is the Spirit of trueth, he wil leade you into al trueth: for he shal not speake of him selfe, but whatsoeuer he shall heare, shal he speake, and he will shewe you the things to come.
14 He shal glorifie me: for he shal receiue of mine, and shal shewe it vnto you.
15 All things that the Father hath, are mine: therefore said I, that he shal take of mine, and shewe it vnto you.
16 A litle *while*, and ye shal not see me: and againe a litle *while*, and ye shal see me: for I go to the Father?
17 Then saide *some* of his disciples among them selues, What is this that he saith vnto vs, A litle *while*, and ye shal not see me, and againe, a litle *while*, and ye shall see me, and, For I go to the Father?
18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A litle *while*? we know not what he saith.
19 Now Iesus knewe that they would aske him, and said vnto them, Do ye enquire among your selues, of that I said, A litle *while*, and ye shall not see me: and againe, a litle *while*, and ye shal see me?
20 Verely, verely I say vnto you, that ye shal weepe and lament, and the world shal reioyce: and ye shall sorow, but your sorowe shalbe turned to ioye.
21 A woman when she trauaileth, hath sorowe, because her houre is come: but assone as she is deliuered of the childe, she remembreth no more the anguish, for ioye that a man is borne into the worlde.
22 And ye nowe therefore are in sorowe: but I wil see you againe, and your hearts shal reioyce, and your ioye shal no man take from you.
23 And in that day shal ye aske me nothing. * Verely, verely I say vnto you, whatsoeuer ye shal aske the Father in my Name, he wil giue it you. *Cha.14.13. mat.7.7. and 21.22. mar.11.24. luk.11.9. iam.1.5.*
24 Hitherto haue ye asked nothing in my Name: aske, & ye shal receiue, that your ioy may be full.
25 These things haue I spoken vnto you in parables: but the

the time wil come, when I shal no more speake to you in parables: but I shal shewe you plainely of the Father.
26 At that day shal ye aske in my Name, & I say not vnto you, that I wil pray vnto the Father for you:
27 For the Father him selfe loueth you, because ye haue loued me, * and haue beleeued that I came out from God.
Chap. 17.8.
28 I am come out from the Father, and came into the world: againe I leaue the world, and go to the Father.
29 His disciples said vnto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainely, and thou speakest no parable.
30 Now knowe we that thou knowest al things, and needest not that any man should aske thee. By this we beleeue, that thou art come out from God.
31 Iesus answered them, Do you beleeue now?
Mat. 26. 31. mar. 14. 27.
32 * Behold, the houre commeth, and is already come, that ye shalbe scattered euery man into his owne, and shal leaue me alone: but I am not alone: for the Father is with me.
33 These things haue I spoken vnto you, that in me ye might haue peace: in the world ye shal haue affliction, but be of good comfort: I haue ouercome the world.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Christ prayeth that his glory together with his Fathers may be made manifest. 9 He prayeth for his Apostles, 20 and for al beleeuers.

1 THese things spake Iesus, & lift vp his eyes to heauen, and said, Father, that houre is come: glorifie thy Sonne, that thy Sonne also may glorifie thee,
Mat. 28. 18.
2 * As thou hast giuen him power ouer al flesh, that he should giue eternal life to al them that thou hast giuen him.
3 And this is life eternal, that they know thee to be the onely very God, and whom thou hast sent, Iesus Christ.
4 I haue glorified thee on the earth: I haue finished the worke which thou gauest me to do.
5 And now glorifie me, thou Father, with thine owne selfe, with the glorie which I had with thee before the world was.
6 I haue declared thy Name vnto the men which thou gauest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gauest them me, and they haue kept thy word.

7 * Now

7 * Now they knowe that al things whatsoeuer thou haſt giuen me, are of thee. Cha.16.15
8 For I haue giuen vnto them the wordes which thou gaueſt me, and they haue receiued *them*, & haue knowen ſurely that I came out from thee, and haue beleeued that thou haſt ſent me.
9 I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou haſt giuen me: for they are thine.
10 And al mine are thine, and thine are mine, and I am glorified in them.
11 And now am I no more in the world, but theſe are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keepe them in thy Name, *euen* them whome thou haſt giuen me, that they may be one as we *are*.
12 While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy Name: thoſe that thou gaueſt me, haue I kept, and none of them is loſt, but the childe of perdition, that the * Scripture might be fulfilled. Pſa.109.8
13 And now come I to thee, and theſe things ſpeake I in the world, that they might haue my ioye fulfilled in themſelues.
14 I haue giuen them thy word, and the world hath hated them, becauſe they are not of the world, as I am not of the world.
15 I pray not that thou ſhouldeſt take them out of the world, but that thou keepe them from euil.
16 They are not of the world, as I am not of the world.
17 Sanctifie them with thy trueth: thy word is trueth.
18 As thou diddeſt ſend me into the world, ſo haue I ſent them into the world.
19 And for their ſakes ſanctifie I my ſelfe, that they alſo may be ſanctified through the trueth.
20 I pray not for theſe alone, but for them alſo which ſhal beleeue in me, through their word,
21 That they al may be one, as thou, O Father *art* in me, and I in thee: *euen* that they may be alſo one in vs, that the world may beleeue that thou haſt ſent me.
22 And the glory that thou gaueſt me, I haue giuen them, that they may be one, as we are one,
23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may knowe that thou haſt ſent me, & haſt loued them, as thou haſt loued me.

24 * Father

Cha.12.26. 24 * Father, I wil that they which thou hast giuen me, be with me euen where I am, that they may beholde my glorie, which thou hast giuen me: for thou louedst me before the foundation of the world.

25 O righteous Father, the world also hath not knowen thee, but I haue knowen thee, and these haue knowen that thou hast sent me.

26 And I haue declared vnto them thy Name, and will declare it, that the loue wherewith thou hast loued me may be in them, and I in them.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 By Christes power, whome Iudas betrayeth, 6 the souldiers are cast downe to the ground. 13 Christ is lead to Annas, & from him to Caiaphas. 22. 23 His answere to the officer that smote him with a rod. 28 Being deliuered to Pilate, 36 he declareth his kingdome.

1 WHen Iesus had spoken these things, he went forth with his disciples ouer the brooke * Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entred, and his disciples.

Mat.26.36. mar.14.32. luk.22.39.

2 And Iudas which betrayed him, knew also the place: for Iesus oft times resorted thither with his disciples.

3 * Iudas then, after he had receiued a band of men and officers of the hie Priests, and of the Pharises, came thither with lanternes and torches, and weapons.

Mat.26.47. mar.14.43. luke.22.47.

4 Then Iesus, knowing all things that should come vnto him, went forth and said vnto them, Whome seeke ye?

5 They answered him, Iesus of Nazareth. Iesus said vnto them, I am he. Now Iudas also which betrayed him, stoode with them.

6 Assone then as he had said vnto them, I am he, they went away backewardes, and fel to the ground.

7 Then he asked them againe, Whom seeke ye? And they said, Iesus of Nazareth.

8 Iesus answered, I said vnto you, that I am he: therefore if ye seeke me, let these go their way.

9 *This was* that the worde might be fulfilled which he spake, * Of them which thou gauest me, haue I lost none.

Cha.17.12.

10 Then Simon Peter hauing a sworde, drew it, & smote the hie Priests seruant, and cut of his right eare. Now the seruants name was Malchus.

11 Then said Iesus vnto Peter, Put vp thy sworde into the

the sheath: shall I not drinke of the cup which my Father hath giuen me?

12 Then the bande and the captaine, and the officers of the Iewes tooke Iesus, and bound him,

13 And led him away to * Annas first (for he was father in lawe to Caiaphas, which was the hie Priest that same yere) *Luk.3.2.*

14 * And Caiaphas was he, that gaue counsell to the Iewes, that it was expedient that one man shoulde die for the people. *Cha.11.50.*

15 ¶ * Nowe Simon Peter folowed Iesus, and another disciple, and that disciple was knowen of the hie Priest: therefore he went in with Iesus into the hall of the hie Priest: *Mat.26.58, mar.14.54. luk.22.54.*

16 But Peter stoode at the doore without. Then went out the other disciple which was knowen vnto the hie Priest, and spake to her that kept the doore, & brought in Peter.

17 Then saide the mayde that kept the doore, vnto Peter, Art not thou also one of this mans disciples? He said, I am not.

18 And the seruants and officers stood there, which had made a fire of coles: for it was colde, and they warmed themselues. And Peter also stoode among them, and warmed himselfe.

19 ¶ (The hie Priest then asked Iesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine.

20 Iesus answered him, I spake openly to the worlde: I euer taught in the Synagogue and in the Temple, whither the Iewes resort continually, and in secret haue I said nothing.

21 Why askest thou me? aske them which hearde me what I sayde vnto them: beholde, they knowe what I saide.

22 When he had spoken these things, one of the officers which stoode by, smote Iesus with *his* rod, saying, Answerest thou the hie Priest so?

23 Iesus answered him, If I haue euill spoken, beare witnes of the euill: but if I haue well spoken, why smitest thou me?

24 ¶ * Nowe Annas had sent him bounde vnto Caiaphas the hie Priest. *Mat.26.57. luk.22.54.*

Mat.26.69. mar.14.59. luke.22.55. 25 * And Simon Peter stoode and warmed him selfe, and they said vnto him, Art not thou also of his disciples? He denyed it, and said, I am not.

26 One of the seruants of the hie Priest, his cousin whose eare Peter smote of, said, Did not I see thee in the garden with him?

22 Peter then denied againe, and immediatly the cocke crewe.

Mat.27.2. mar.15.1. luk.23.1. Act.10.28 28 ¶ * Then led they Iesus from Caiaphas into the common hall. Now it was morning, and they themselues went not into the common hall, lest they should be * defiled, but that they might eate the Passeouer.

and.11.3. 29 Pilate then went out vnto them, and said, What accusation bring ye against this man?

30 They answered, and saide vnto him, If he were not an euill doer, we woulde not haue delinered him vnto thee.

31 Then sayde Pilate vnto them, Take ye him, and judge him after your owne Lawe. Then the Iewes sayde vnto him, It is not lawfull for vs to put any man to death.

Mat.20.19. 32 *It was* that the worde of Iesus * might be fulfilled which he spake, signifying what death he should die.

Mat.27.11. mar.15.2. luke.23.3. 33 * So Pilate entred into the common hall againe, and called Iesus, and said vnto him, Art thou the King of the Iewes?

34 Iesus answered him, Sayest thou that of thy selfe, or did other tell it thee of me?

35 Pilate answered, Am I a Iewe? Thine owne nation, and the hie Priestes haue delinered thee vnto me. What hast thou done?

36 Iesus answered, My kingdome is not of this worlde: if my kingdome were of this worlde, my seruauntes woulde surely fight, that I should not be delinered to the Iewes: but nowe is my kingdome not from hence.

37 Pilate then said vnto him, Art thou a King then? Iesus answered, Thou saist that I am a King: for this cause am I borne, and for this cause came I into the worlde, that I should beare witnes vnto the trueth: euery one that is of the trueth, heareth my voyce.

38 Pilate saide vnto him, What is trueth? And when he had

had said that, he went out againe vnto the Iewes, and said vnto them, I finde in him no cause at all.

39 * But you haue a custome, that I shoulde deliuer you one loose at the Passeouer: will ye then that I loose vnto you the King of the Iewes? *Mat.27.15 mar.15.6. luke.23.17.*

40 * Then cried they all againe, saying, Not him, but Barabbas: now this Barabbas was a murtherer. *Act. 3.14.*

CHAP. XIX.

1 Pilate, when Christ was scourged, 2 and crowned with thorne, 4 was desirous to let him loose: 8 but being ouercome with the outrage of the Iewes, 16 he deliuereth him to be crucified. 26 Iesus committeth his mother to the disciple. 30 Hauing tasted vineger, he dieth: 34 and being deade, his side is pearced with a speare. 40 He is buryed.

1 THen * Pilate tooke Iesus and scourged him. *Mat.27.27.*

2 And the souldiers platted a crowne of thornes, and put it on his head, & they put on him a purple garmẽt, *mar.15.16.*

3 And said, Haile, King of the Iewes. And they smote him with *their* roddes.

4 Then Pilate went forth againe, and said vnto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may knowe, that I finde no faulte in him at all.

5 Then came Iesus foorth wearing a crowne of thornes, and a purple garment. And *Pilate* said vnto them, Beholde the man.

6 ¶ Then when the hie Priestes and officers sawe him, they cried, saying, Crucifie, crucifie *him*. Pilate said vnto them, Take ye him and crucifie *him*: for I finde no fault in him.

7 The Iewes answered him, We haue a lawe, and by our law he ought to die, because he made him selfe the Sonne of God.

8 ¶ When Pilate then hearde that woorde, he was the more afraid,

9 And went againe into the common hall, and saide vnto Iesus, Whence art thou? But Iesus gaue him none answere.

10 Then saide Pilate vnto him, Speakest thou not vnto me? Knowest thou not that I haue power to crucifie thee, and haue power to loose thee?

11 Iesus answered, Thou couldest haue no power at all

against me, except it were giuen thee from aboue: therefore he that deliuered me vnto thee, hath the greater sinne.

12 From thence forth Pilate sought to loose him, but the Iewes cried, saying, If thou deliuer him, thou art not Cesars friend. *for* whosoeuer maketh him selfe a King, speaketh against Cesar.

13 ¶ When Pilate heard this worde, he brought Iesus forth, and sate downe in the iudgement seate in a place called the Pauement, and in Hebrewe, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the Preparation of the Passeouer, and about the sixt houre: and he saide vnto the Iewes, Behold your King.

15 But they cried, Away with him, away with him, crucifie him. Pilate said vnto them, Shall I crucifie your King? The high Priestes aunswered, We haue no King but Cesar.

16 Then deliuered he him vnto them, to be crucified. *Mat.27.31.* * And they tooke Iesus, and led him away.

mar.15.25 17 And he bare his owne crosse, and came into a place *Luk.23.26.* named *of dead mens* Skulles, which is called in Hebrewe, Golgotha:

18 Where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either side one, and Iesus in the middes.

19 ¶ And Pilate wrote also a title, and put it on the crosse, & it was writtē, IESVS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE IEWES.

20 This title then read many of the Iewes: for the place where Iesus was crucified, was nere to the citie: and it was written in Hebrewe, Greeke, and Latin.

21 Then saide the hie Priestes of the Iewes to Pilate, Write not, the King of the Iewes, but that he said, I am King of the Iewes.

22 Pilate answered, What I haue written, I haue writtē.

Mat.27.35. 23 ¶ Then the * souldiers, when they had crucified Ie-*mar.15.24* sus, tooke his garments (and made foure parts, to euerie souldier a part) and *his* coate: and the coate was without seame wouen from the top throughout.

24 Therefore they said one to another, Let vs not deuide it, but cast lots for it, whose it shalbe. *This was* that the *Psal.22.18* Scripture might be fulfilled, which saith, * They parted my

my garments among them, & on my coat did caſt lots. So the ſouldiers did theſe things in deede.

25 ¶ Then ſtood by the croſſe of Ieſus, his mother, and his mothers ſiſter, Marie *the wife of* Cleopas, and Marie Magdalene.

26 And when Ieſus ſaw his mother, and the diſciple ſtanding by, whom he loued, he ſaid vnto his mother, Woman, behold thy ſonne.

27 Then ſayd he to the diſciple, Beholde thy mother: and from that houre, the diſciple tooke her home vnto him.

28 ¶ After, when Ieſus knewe that all thinges were performed, that the * Scripture might be fulfilled, he ſaid, I thirſt. *Pſal.69.22*

29 And there was ſet a veſſell full of vineger: and they filled a ſpondge with vineger, and put it about an Hyſſope *ſtalke*, and put it to his mouth.

30 Nowe when Ieſus had receiued of the vineger, he ſaide, It is finiſhed, and bowed his head, and gaue vp the ghoſt.

31 The Iewes then (becauſe it was the Preparation, that the bodies ſhould not remaine vpon the croſſe on the Sabbath *day*: for that Sabbath was an hie day) beſought Pilate that their legges might be broken, and that they might be taken downe.

32 Then came the ſouldiers and brake the legges of the firſt, and of the other, which was crucified with *Ieſus*.

33 But when they came to Ieſus, and ſawe that he was dead alreadie, they brake not his legges.

34 But one of the ſouldiers with a ſpeare pearced his ſide, and forthwith came there out bloud and water.

35 And he that ſawe it, bare recorde, and his recorde is true: and he knoweth that he ſaith true, that ye might beleeue it.

36 For theſe things were done, that the Scripture ſhould be fulfilled, * Not a bone of him ſhalbe broken. *Exod.12.46 num.9.12.*

37 And againe another Scripture ſaith, * They ſhall ſee him whom they haue thruſt through. *Zac.12.10*

38 * And after theſe things, Ioſeph of Arimathea (who was a diſciple of Ieſus, but ſecretly for feare of the Iewes) beſought Pilate that he might take downe the *Mat.27.57. mar.15.42. luke.23.50*

bodie of Ieſus. And Pilate gaue him licence. He came then and tooke Ieſus bodie.

39 And there came * alſo Nicodemus (which firſt came to Ieſus by night) and brought of myrrhe and aloes mingled together about an hundreth pound. [Chap. 3. 2.

40 Then tooke they the bodie of Ieſus, and wrapped it in linnen clothes with the odours, as the maner of the Iewes is to burie.

41 And in that place where Ieſus was crucified, was a garden, and in the garden a newe ſepulchre, wherein was neuer man yet laid.

42 There then laid they Ieſus, becauſe of the Iewes Preparation *day*, for the ſepulchre was neere.

CHAP. XX.

1 *Marie bringeth worde that Chriſt is riſen:* 3 *Peter and Iohn* 4 *runne to ſee it.* 15 *Ieſus appeareth to Marie,* 19 *and to the diſciples that were together in the houſe.* 25 *Thomas, before faithleſſe,* 29 *now beleeueth.*

1 NOw * the firſt *day* of the weeke came Marie Magdalene, earely when it was yet darke, vnto the ſepulchre, and ſawe the ſtone taken away from the tombe. Mar. 16. 1. Luke 24. 1.

2 Then ſhe ranne, and came to Simon Peter, and to the other diſciple whom Ieſus loued, and ſaid vnto them, They haue taken away the Lord out of the ſepulchre, and we know not where they haue laid him.

3 Peter therefore went forth, and the other diſciple, and they came vnto the ſepulchre.

4 So they ranne both together, but the other diſciple did outrunne Peter, and came firſt to the ſepulchre.

5 And he ſtouped downe, and ſaw the linnen clothes lying: yet went he not in.

6 Then came Simon Peter following him, and went into the ſepulchre, and ſaw the linnen clothes lye,

7 And the kercheſe that was vpon his heade, not lying with the linnen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it ſelfe.

8 Then went in alſo the other diſciple, which came firſt to the ſepulchre, and he ſaw it, and beleeued.

9 For as yet they knew not the Scripture, That he muſt riſe againe from the dead.

10 And

10 And the disciples went away againe vnto their owne home.

11 ¶ * But Marie stoode without at the sepulchre weeping: and as she wept, she bowed her selfe into the sepulchre, *Mat. 28. 1. mar. 16. 5.*

12 And saw two Angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feete, where the bodie of Iesus had lyen,

13 And they said vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saide vnto them, They haue taken away my Lord, and I know not where they haue laid him.

14 When she had thus said, she turned her selfe backe, & saw Iesus standing, and knew not that it was Iesus.

15 Iesus sayth vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She supposing that he had bene the gardiner, saide vnto him, Sir, if thou hast borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laide him, and I will take him away.

16 Iesus saith vnto her, Marie. She turned her selfe, and said vnto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master.

17 Iesus saith vnto her, Touch me not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say vnto them, I ascend vnto my Father, & to your Father, and to my God, and your God.

18 Marie Magdalene came and tolde the disciples that she had seene the Lord, and that he had spoken these things vnto her.

19 ¶ * The same day then at night, which was the first *day* of the weeke, & when the doores were shut where the disciples were assembled for feare of the Iewes, came Iesus and stood in the middes, and said to them, Peace *be* vnto you. *Mar. 16. 14 luk. 24. 36. 1. cor. 15. 5.*

20 And when he had so saide, he shewed vnto them *his* hands, and his side. Then were the disciples glad when they had seene the Lord.

21 * Then said Iesus to them againe, Peace *be* vnto you: as my Father sent me, so send I you. *Mat. 28. 18*

22 And when he had said that, he breathed on them, & said vnto them, Receiue the holy Ghost.

23 Whosoeuers sinnes ye remit, they are remitted vnto them: *and* whosoeuers sinnes ye reteine, they are retained.

24 ¶ But Thomas one of the twelue, called Didymus, was not with them when Iesus came.

25 The other disciples therefore said vnto him, We haue seene the Lord: but he said vnto them, Except I see in his hands the print of the nailes, and put my finger into the print of the nailes, and put mine hand into his side, I will not beleeue it.

26 ¶ And eight dayes after againe his disciples were within, and Thomas with them. *Then* came Iesus, when the doores were shut, and stoode in the middes, and said, Peace *be* vnto you.

27 After, said he to Thomas, Put thy finger here, and see mine hands, and put forth thine hand, and put it into my side, and be not faithles, but faithfull.

28 Then Thomas answered, and said vnto him, *Thou art* my Lord, and my God.

29 Iesus said vnto him, Thomas, because thou hast seene me, thou beleeuest: blessed *are* they that haue not seene, and haue beleeued.

chap.21.25 30 ¶* And manye other signes also did Iesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this booke.

31 But these thinges are written, that ye might beleeue, that Iesus is that Christ that Sonne of God, & that in beleeuing ye might haue life through his Name.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Iesus appeareth to his disciples as they were a fishing. 4. 7. whome they knowe by a miraculous draught of fishes. 15 He committeth the charge of the sheepe to Peter, 18 and foretelleth him of the maner of his death.

1 AFter these things, Iesus shewed him selfe againe to his disciples at the sea of Tiberias: and thus shewed he *him selfe*:

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas, which is called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galile, and the *sonnes* of Zebedeus, and two other of his disciples.

3 Simon Peter said vnto them, I go a fishing. They saide vnto him, We also will goe with thee. They went their way and entred into a ship straight way, and that night caught they nothing.

4 But

4 But when the morning was now come, Iesus stoode on the shore: neuertheles the disciples knewe not that it was Iesus.

5 Iesus then sayd vnto them, Syrs, haue ye anie meate? They answered him, No.

6 Then he said vnto them, Cast out the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall finde: So they cast out, and they were not able at all to drawe it, for the multitude of fishes.

7 Therfore said the disciple whom Iesus loued, vnto Peter, It is the Lord. When Simon Peter hearde that it was the Lord, he gird his coate to him (for he was naked) and cast him selfe into the sea.

8 But the other disciples came by shippe (for they were not farre from lande, but about two hundreth cubites) and they drewe the net with fishes.

9 Assoone then as they were come to lande, they sawe hoate coles, and fishe laide thereon, and bread.

10 Iesus said vnto them, Bring of the fishes, which ye haue now caught.

11 Simon Peter stepped forth and drewe the net to land, full of great fishes, an hundreth, fiftie and three: and albeit there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

12 Iesus said vnto them, Come, *and* dine. And none of the disciples durst aske him, Who art thou? seeing they knewe that he was the Lord.

13 Iesus then came and tooke bread, and gaue them, and fishe likewise.

14 This is now the third time that Iesus shewed him selfe to his disciples, after that he was risen againe from the dead.

15 ¶ So when they had dined, Iesus said to Simon Peter, Simon *the sonne* of Iona, louest thou me more thē these? He said vnto him, Yea Lorde, thou knowest that I loue thee. He said vnto him, Feede my lambes.

16 He said to him againe the seconde tyme, Simon *the sonne* of Iona, louest thou me? He saide vnto him, Yea Lord, thou knowest that I loue thee. He sayd vnto him, Feede my sheepe.

17 He saide vnto him the third time, Simon *the sonne* of Iona, louest thou me? Peter was sorie because he saide to him the third time, Louest thou me? and sayde vnto

him, Lord, thou knoweſt all things: thou knoweſt that I loue thee. Ieſus ſaid vnto him, Feede my ſheepe.

18 Verely, verely I ſay vnto thee, When thou waſt yong, thou girdedſt thy ſelf, and walkedſt whither thou wouldeſt: but when thou ſhalt be olde, thou ſhalt ſtretch forth thine handes, and another ſhall girde thee, and leade thee whither thou wouldeſt not.

19 And this ſpake he ſignifying by what death he ſhould glorifie God. And when he had ſaide this, he ſaid to him, Folowe me.

20 Then Peter turned about, and ſaw the diſciple whome IESVS loued, folowing, which had alſo * leaned on his breaſt at ſupper, and had ſaid, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee? *Chap.13.23*

21 When Peter therfore ſawe him, he ſaid to Ieſus, Lord, what ſhall this man do?

22 Ieſus ſaid vnto him, If I will that he tarie til I come, what is it to thee? folow thou me.

23 Then went this worde abroade among the brethren, that this diſciple ſhould not die. Yet Ieſus ſaid not to him, he ſhall not die: but if I will that he tarie till I come, what is it to thee?

24 This is that diſciple, which teſtifieth of theſe things, and wrote theſe things, & we knowe that his teſtimonie is true.

25 * Now there are alſo many other thinges which Ieſus did, the which if they ſhould be written euery one, I ſuppoſe the worlde could not conteine the bookes that ſhould be written, Amen. *Chap.20.30*

THE

THE ACTES OF THE HOLY APOSTLES VVRITTEN by Luke the Euangelist.

CHAP. I.

1 *Luke tyeth this historie to his Gospel.* 9 *Christ being taken into heauen,* 10 *the Apostles* 11 *being warned by the Angels,* 12 *returne,* 14 *and giue themselues to prayer.* 15 *By Peters motion,* 18 *into Iudas the traytours place, Matthias is chosen.*

1 THE former treatise, O Theophilus, of all that IESVS began to do and teach,

2 Vntill the day, that he was taken vp, after that he through the holy Ghost, had giuen commaundements vnto the Apostles, whom he had chosen:

3 To whom also he presented him selfe aliue after that he had suffred, by many infallible tokens, being seene of them by the *space* of fourtie dayes, and speaking of those thinges which *appertaine* to the kingdome of God.

4 * And when he had gathered *them* together, he commaunded them, that they should not depart from Hierusalem, but to waite for the promes of the Father, * which, *said he*, ye haue heard of me: *Luke.24.49. Iohn 14.25.*

5 *For Iohn in deede baptized with water, but ye shalbe baptized with the holy Ghost within these few dayes. *Chap.2.3. and 11.16. and 19.4. mat.3.11. mar.1.8. luke 3.16.*

6 When they therefore were come togither, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore the kingdome to Israel?

7 And he said vnto them, It is not for you to knowe the times, or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his owne power,

8 * But ye shall receiue power of the holy Ghost, when he shall come on you: and ye shalbe witnesses vnto me both in Hierusalem and in all Iudea, and in Samaria, and vnto the vttermost part of the earth. *Chap.2.2.*

9 * And when he had spoken these things, while they beholde, he was taken vp: for a cloud tooke him vp out of their sight. *Luk.24.50.*

10 And

10 And while they looked ſtedfaſtly towarde heauen, as he went, beholde, two men ſtoode by them in white apparell,

11 Which alſo ſaide, Ye men of Galile, why ſtand ye gasing into heauen? This Ieſus which is taken vp frō you into heauen, ſhall ſo come, as ye haue ſeene him go into heauen.

12 ¶ Then returned they vnto Hieruſalem from the mount that is called *the mount* of Oliues, which is nere to Hieruſalem, being from it a Sabbath *dayes* iourney.

13 And when they were come in, they went vp into an vpper chamber, where abode both Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and Andrewe, Philippe, and Thomas, Bartlemewe, and Matthewe, Iames *the ſonne* of Alpheus, and Simon Zelotes, and Iudas Iames *brether*.

14 Theſe all continued with one accorde in prayer and ſupplication with the women, and Marie the mother of Ieſus, and with his brethren.

15 ¶ And in thoſe dayes Peter ſtoode vp in the middes of the diſciples, and ſayd (nowe the nomber of names that were in one place were about an hundreth and twentie)

16 Ye men *and* brethren, this Scripture muſt nedes haue bene fulfilled, which the * holy Ghoſt by the mouth of Dauid ſpake before of Iudas, which was *guide to them that tooke Ieſus.

Pſalm.41.9
Iohn.13.27

17 For he was nombred with vs, and had obteined felowſhip in this miniſtration.

18 He therefore hath purchaſed a field with the rewarde of iniquitie: and when he * had throwen downe himſelfe headlong, he braſt a ſunder in the middes, and all his bowels guſhed out.

Math.27.5.

19 And it is knowen vnto al the inhabitants of Hieruſalē, in ſo much, that that field is called in their owne language, Aceldama, that is, The fielde of blood.

20 For it is written in the booke of Pſalmes, *Let his habitation be voyde, and let no man dwell therein: * alſo, Let another take his charge.

Pſal.69.26
Pſal.109.7

21 Wherefore, of theſe men which haue companied with vs, all the time that the Lorde Ieſus was conuerſant among vs,

22 Beginning from the Baptiſme of Iohn vnto the daye that

that he was taken vp from vs, must one of them be made a witnes with vs of his resurrection.

23 And they presented two, Ioseph called Barsabas, whose surname was Iustus, and Matthias.

24 And they prayed, saying, Thou Lorde, which knowest the heartes of all men, shewe whether of these two thou hast chosen,

25 That he may take the roume of this ministration and Apostleship, from which Iudas hath gone astray, to goe to his owne place.

26 Then they gaue forth their lottes: and the lot fel on Matthias, and he was by a cõmon consent counted with the Eleuen Apostles.

CHAP. II.

1 The Apostles 4 filled with the holy Ghost 8 speake with diuers tongues: 12 They are thought to be drunke, 15 but Peter disproueth that: 34 He teacheth that Christ is the Messias: 37 and seeing the hearers astonied, 38 he exhorteth them to repentance.

1 AND when the day of Pentecoste was come, they were all with one accorde in one place.

2 And sodainly there came a sounde from heauen, as of a russhing *and* mightie winde, and it filled al the house where they sate.

3 And there appeared vnto them clouen tongues, like fire, and it sate vpon eche of them.

4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and began to speake with other tongues, as the Spirit gaue them vtterance.

5 And there were dwelling at Hierusalem Iewes, men that feared God, of euery nation vnder heauen.

6 Nowe when this was noised, the multitude came together and were astonied, because that euery man heard them speake his owne language.

7 And they wondered all, and marueiled, saying among themselues, Behold, are not all these which speake, of Galile?

8 How then heare we euery man our owne language, wherein we were borne?

9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the inhabitants of Mesopotamia, and of Iudea, and of Cappadocia, of Pontus, and Asia,

10 And

10 And of Phrygia, and Pamphylia, of Egypt, and of the partes of Libya, which is beside Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, and Iewes, and proselytes,
11 Cretes, and Arabians: we heard them speake in our owne tongues the wonderfull *workes* of God.
12 They were all then amased, and douted, saying one to another, What may this be?
13 And others mocked, and saide, They are full of newe wine.
14 ¶ But Peter stading with the Eleuen, lift vp his voyce, and said vnto them, Ye men of Iudea, *and* ye all that inhabit Hierusalem, be this knowen vnto you, and hearken vnto my wordes.
15 For these are not drunken, as ye suppose, since it is but the third houre of the day.
16 But this is that, which was spoken by the Prophete
Ioel.2.28. * Ioel,
Isa.24.3. 17 And it shalbe in the last dayes, sayth God, I wil powre out of my Spirit vpon all flesshe, and your sonnes, and your daughters shal prophecie, and your yong men shal see visions, and your olde men shall dreame dreames.
18 And on my seruants, and on mine handemaides I wil powre out of my Spirit in those dayes, and they shall prophecie.
19 And I will shewe wonders in heauen aboue, and tokens in the earth beneath, blood, and fire, and the vapour of smoke.
20 The Sunne shalbe turned into darkenes, & the moone into blood, before that great and notable day of the Lorde come.
21 And it shalbe, that whosoeuer shall call on the Name of the Lord, shalbe saued.
22 Ye men of Israel, heare these wordes, IESVS of Nazareth, a man approued of God among you with great workes, and wonders, and signes, which God did by him in the middes of you, as ye your selues also know:
23 Him, *I say*, being deliuered by the determinate counsell, and foreknowledge of God, after you had taken, with wicked hands yee haue crucified and slaine.
24 Whom God hath raised vp, & loosed the sorowes of death, because it was vnpossible that he shoulde be holden of it.

25 For

25 For Dauid saith concerning him, * I beheelde the Lord alwayes before me: for he is at my right hand, that I should not be shaken. *Psal.16.8.*

26 Therefore did mine heart reioyce, and my tongue was glad, and moreouer also my flesh shall rest in hope,

27 Because thou wilt not leaue my soule in graue, neyther wilt suffer thine Holy one to see corruption.

28 Thou hast shewed me the waies of life, and shalt make me full of ioye with thy countenance.

29 Men *and* brethren, I may boldely speake vnto you of the Patriarke Dauid, *that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre remayneth with vs vnto this day. *Cha.13.36. 1.kin.2.10.*

30 Therefore, seeing he was a Prophet, and knewe that God had * sworne with an othe to him, that of the fruit of his loynes he would rayse vp Christ concerning the flesshe, to set him vpon his throne, *Psal.132. 11.*

31 He knowing this before, spake of the resurrection of Christ, that * his soule should not be left in graue, neyther his flesh should see corruption. *Cha.13.35. psal.16.10.*

32 This Iesus hath God raised vp, whereof we all are witnesses.

33 Since thē that he by the right hand of God hath bene exalted, and hath receiued of his Father the promise of the holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this which ye now see and heare.

34 For Dauid is not ascended into heauen, but he sayeth, * The Lord said to my Lorde, Sit at my right hand, *Psal.110.1*

35 Vntill I make thine enemies thy footestoole.

36 Therefore, let all the house of Israel knowe for a suertie, that God hath made him both Lorde, and Christ, this Iesus, *I say*, whom ye haue crucified.

37 Nowe when they heard it, they were pricked in their heartes, and sayd vnto Peter and the other Apostles, Men *and* brethren, what shall we doe?

38 Then Peter said vnto them, Amend your liues, and be baptized euery one of you in the Name of Iesus Christ for the remission of sinnes: and ye shall receyue the gift of the holy Ghost.

39 For the promise *is made* vnto you, and to your children, and to all that are a farre of, *euen* as many as the Lord our God shall call.

40 And with many other words he besought and exhor-

ted

ted *them*, saying, Saue your selues from this frowarde generation.

41 Then they that gladly receyued his word, were baptized: and the same day, there were added *to the Church* about three thousand soules.

42 And they continued in the Apostles doctrine, and fellowship, and breaking of bread, and prayers.

43 ¶ And feare came vpon euery soule: and many wonders and signes were done by the Apostles.

44 And all that beleeued, were in one place, and had all things common.

45 And they solde their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as euery one had neede.

46 And they continued dayly with one accorde in the Temple, and breaking bread at home, did eate their meate together with gladnes and singlenes of heart,

47 Praysing God, and had fauour with al the people: and the Lord added to the Church from day to day, such as should be saued.

CHAP. III.

1 Peter going vp into the Temple with Iohn, 2 healeth the creple. 9 To the people gathered together to see the miracle, 12 he expoundeth the mysterie of our saluation through Christ, 14 accusing their ingratitude, 19 and requiring their repentance.

1 NOwe Peter and Iohn went vp together into the Temple, at the ninth houre of prayer.

2 And a certaine man which was a creple from his mothers wombe, was caried, whom they layd daily at the gate of the Temple called Beautifull, to aske almes of them that entred into the Temple.

3 Who seeing Peter and Iohn, that they would enter into the Temple, desired to receiue an almes.

4 And Peter earnestly beholding him with Iohn, sayde, Looke on vs.

5 And he gaue heede vnto thē, trusting to receiue some thing of them.

6 Then said Peter, Siluer and golde haue I none, but such as I haue, that giue I thee: In the Name of Iesus Christ of Nazareth, rise vp and walke.

7 And he tooke him by the right hande, and lift *him* vp, & immediatly his feete & ankle bones receiued strength.

8 And

8 And he leaped vp, ſtoode, and walked, and entred with them into the Temple, walking and leaping, and prayſing God.
9 And all the people ſawe him walke, and prayſing God.
10 And they knewe him, that it was he which ſate for the almes at the Beautifull gate of the Temple: and they were amaſed, and ſore aſtonied at that, which was come vnto him.
11 ¶ And as the creeple which was healed, helde Peter and Iohn, all the people ran amaſed vnto them in the porche which is called Solomons.
12 So when Peter ſawe it, he anſwered vnto the people, Ye mē of Iſrael, why mārueile ye at this? or why looke ye ſo ſtedfaſtly on vs, as though by our owne power or godlines, we had made this man go?
13 The God of Abraham, and Iſaac, and Iacob, the *God of our fathers hath glorified his Sonne Ieſus, whome ye betrayed, and denied in the preſence of Pilate, when he had iudged him to be deliuered. *Chap. 5. 30.
14 But ye denied the Holy one and the Iuſt, and deſired a murtherer to be giuen you,
15 And killed the Lord of life, whom God hath raiſed from the dead, whereof we are witneſſes.
16 And his Name hath made this man ſounde, whom ye ſee, and knowe, through faith in his Name: and the fayth which is by him, hath giuen to him this perfite health of his whole body in the preſence of you all.
17 And now brethren, I knowe that through ignorance ye did it, as *did* alſo your gouernours.
18 But thoſe things which God before had ſhewed by the mouth of all his Prophets, that Chriſt ſhould ſuffer, he hath thus fulfilled.
19 Amend your liues therefore, and turne, that your ſinnes may be put away, when the time of refreſhing ſhall come from the preſence of the Lord.
20 And he ſhall ſende Ieſus Chriſt, which before was preached vnto you,
21 Whom the heauen muſt conteine vntill the time that all things be reſtored, which God had ſpoken by the mouth of all his holy Prophetes ſince the world began.
22 * For Moſes ſaid vnto the Fathers, The Lorde your God ſhall raiſe vp vnto you a Prophet, *euen* of your *Deu. 18. 15*

brethren like vnto me: ye shal heare him in all things whatsoeuer he shall say vnto you.

23 For it shalbe that euery person which shall not heare that Prophet, shalbe destroyed out of the people.

24 Also all the Prophetes from Samuel, and thenceforth as many as haue spoken, haue likewise foretolde of these dayes.

25 Ye are the children of the Prophetes, and of the couenant, which God hath made vnto our fathers, saying to Abraham, * Euen in thy seede shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed.

Gen.12.3. Gal.3.8.

26 First vnto you hath God raised vp his Sonne Iesus, and him he hath sent to blesse you, in turning euery one of you from your iniquities.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Peter and Iohn 3 are taken and brought before the Counsell: 7 and 19 They speake boldely in Christs cause. 24 The disciples praye vnto God. 32 Many sell their possessions: 36 Of whom Barnabas is one.

1 AND as they spake vnto the people, the Priestes and the Captaine of the Temple, and the Sadducees came vpon them,

2 Taking it grieuously that they taught the people, and preached in Iesus *Name* the resurrection from the dead:

3 And they layd handes on them, and put them in holde vntill the next day: for it was now euentide.

4 Howbeit, many of them which heard the worde, beleeued, and the number of the men was about fiue thousande.

5 ¶ And it came to passe on the morrowe, that their rulers, and Elders, and Scribes, were gathered together at Hierusalem,

6 And Annas the chiefe Priest, and Caiaphas, and Iohn, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the hie Priestes.

7 And when they had set them before them, they asked, By what power, or in what Name haue ye done this?

8 Then Peter ful of the holy Ghost, saide vnto them, Ye rulers of the people, and Elders of Israel,

9 For

9 For asmuch as we this day are examined of the good deede *done* to the impotent man, *to wit*, by what meanes he is made whole,

10 Be it knowen vnto you al, and to all the people of Israel, that by the Name of IESVS CHRIST of Nazareth, whom ye haue crucified, whome God raised againe from the dead, *euen* by him doth this man stande here before you, whole.

11 *This is the stone cast aside of you buylders, which is become the head of the corner. *Psa.*118.22 *isa.*28.16. *mat.*21.42. *mar.*12.10. *luke* 20.17. *rom.*9.33. 1.*pet.*2.7.

12 Neyther is there saluation in any other: for among men there is giuen none other Name vnder heauen, whereby we must be saued.

13 Now when they sawe the boldenes of Peter and Iohn, and vnderstoode that they were vnlearned men and without knowledge, they marueiled, and knewe them, that they had bene with Iesus:

14 And beholding also the man which was healed standing with them, they had nothing to say against it.

15 Then they commaunded them to goe aside out of the Councill, and conferred among them selues.

16 Saying, What shall we doe to these men? for surely a manifest signe is done by them, *and it is* openly knowen to al them that dwel in Hierusalem: and we can not denie it.

17 But that it be noised no farther among the people, let vs threaten and charge them, that they speake henceforth to no man in this Name.

18 So they called them, and commaunded them, that in no wise they should speake or teache in the Name of Iesus.

19 But Peter and Iohn answered vnto them, and sayde, Whether it be right in the sight of God, to obey you rather then God, iudge ye.

20 For we can not but speake the things which we haue seene and heard.

21 So they threatened them, and let them goe, and founde nothing howe to punishe them, because of the people: for all men praysed God for that which was done.

22 For the man was aboue fourtie yeres olde, on whome this miracle of healing was shewed.

23 Then assoone as they were let go, they came to their fellowes, and shewed all that the hie Priestes and Elders had said vnto them.

24 And when they heard it, they lift vp their voyces to God with one accorde, and said, O Lorde, thou art the God which hast made the heaue̅, and the earth, the sea, and all things that are in them,

25 Which by the mouth of thy seruaunt Dauid hast sayd, *Psalm.2.1.* * Why did the Gentiles rage, and the people imagine vaine things?

26 The Kings of the earth assembled, and the rulers came together against the Lord, and against his Christ.

27 For doutles, against thine holy Sonne Iesus, whome thou haddest anointed, both Herod and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles and the people of Israel gathered them selues together,

28 To do whatsoeuer thine hand, and thy counsel had determined before to be done.

29 And nowe, O Lorde, beholde their threatninges, and graunt vnto thy seruantes with all boldenes to speake thy worde,

30 So that thou stretche forth thine hand, that healing, & signes, and wonders may be done by the Name of thine holy Sonne Iesus.

31 And when as they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together, and they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God boldely.

32 And the multitude of them that beleeued, were of one heart, and of one soule: neyther any of them said, that any thing of that which he possessed, was his owne, but *Chap.2.44.* they had all things * common.

33 And with great power gaue the Apostles witnes of the resurrection of the Lord Iesus: and great grace was vpon them all.

34 Neither was there any among them, that lacked: for as many as were possessours of landes or houses, solde them, and brought the price of the things that were solde,

35 And laid it downe at the Apostles feete, and it was distributed vnto euery man, according as he had neede.

36 Also Ioses which was called of the Apostles, Barnabas (that

(that is by interpretation the sonne of consolation) being a Leuite, *and* of the countrey of Cyprus,

37 Where as he had land, solde it, and brought the money, and laid it downe at the Apostles feete.

CHAP. V.

1 Ananias, for his deceit in keeping backe part of the price, 5 falleth downe dead, 10 and likewise Sapphira his wife. 12 Through diuerse the Apostles miracles 14 the faith is increased. 18 The Apostles that were imprisoned 19 are deliuered by an Angel, 26 and being before the Synode of the Priestes, 36 through Gamaliels counsell they are kept aliue 40 and beaten: 41 They glorifie God.

1 BVt a certaine man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, solde a possession,

2 And kept away *parte* of the price, his wife also being of counsell, and brought a certaine parte, and laid it down at the Apostles feete.

3 Then said Peter, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine hearte, that thou shouldest lie vnto the holy Ghost, and keepe away *parte* of the price of this possession?

4 Whiles it remained, appertained it not vnto thee? and after it was solde, was it not in thine owne power? how is it that thou hast conceiued this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied vnto men, but vnto God.

5 Nowe when Ananias heard these wordes, he fel down, & gaue vp the ghost. Then great feare came on al them that hearde these things.

6 And the yong men rose vp, and tooke him vp, and caried *him* out, and buried *him*.

7 And it came to passe about the space of three houres after, that his wife came in, ignorant of that which was done.

8 And Peter sayd vnto her, Tell me, solde ye the land for so much? And she said, Yea, for so much.

9 Then Peter sayd vnto her, Why haue ye agreed together, to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? beholde, the feete of them which haue buried thine husbande, *are* at the doore, and shall carie thee out.

10 Then she fell downe straight way at his feete, and yeelded vp the ghost: and the yong men came in, and founde her dead, and caryed her out, and buried her by her husband.

11 And great feare came on all the Church, and on as many as heard these things.

12 Thus by the hands of the Apostles were many signes and wonders shewed among the people (and they were all with one accorde in Solomons porche.

13 And of the other durst no man ioyne himselfe to thē: neuertheles the people magnified them,

14 Also the number of them that beleeued in the Lord, both of men and women, grewe more and more)

15 In so much that they brought the sicke into the stretes, and laid them on beddes and couches, that at the least way the shadowe of Peter, when he came by, might shadowe some of them.

16 There came also a multitude out of the cities rounde about vnto Hierusalem, bringing sicke folkes, and them which were vexed with vncleane spirits, who were all healed.

17 ¶ Then the chiefe Priest rose vp, and all they that were with him (which was the secte of the Sadducees) and were full of indignation,

18 And laid handes on the Apostles, and put them in the common prison.

19 But the Angel of the Lord, by night opened the prison doores, and brought them forth, and sayd,

20 Go your way, and stand in the temple, & speake to the people, all the wordes of this life.

21 So when they heard it, they entred into the Temple early in the morning, and taught. And the chiefe Priest came, and they that were with him, and called the Councill together, and all the Elders of the children of Israel, & sent to the prison, to cause them to be brought.

22 But when the officers came, and founde them not in the prison, they returned and tolde it,

23 Saying, Certainly we founde the prison shut as sure as was possible, and the keepers standing without, before the doores: but when we had opened, we founde no man within.

24 Then when the chiefe Priest, and the captaine of the Temple, and the hie Priests hearde these things, they doubted of them, whereunto this would growe.

25 Then came one and shewed them, saying, Beholde, the men that ye put in prison, are standing in the Temple,

ple, and teache the people.
26 Then went the captaine with the officers, & brought them without violence (for they feared the people, lest they should haue bene stoned)
27 And when they had brought them, they set them before the Councill, and the chiefe Priest asked them,
28 Saying, Did not we straitely commaunde you, that ye should not teache in this Name? and behold, ye haue filled Hierusalem with your doctrine, and ye woulde bring this mans blood vpon vs.
29 Then Peter and the Apostles answered, and sayde, We ought rather to obey God then men.
30 The * God of our fathers hath raised vp Iesus, whome ye slewe, and hanged on a tree. *Chap. 3. 13.*
31 Him hath God lift vp with his right hand, *to be* a Prince and a Sauiour, to giue repentance to Israel, and forgiuenes of sinnes.
32 And we are his witnesses concerning these thinges which we say: yea, and the holy Ghost, whom God hath giuen to them that obey him.
33 Now when they heard it, they brast for anger, & consulted to slay them.
34 Then stoode there vp in the Councill a certaine Pharise named Gamaliel, a doctour of the Lawe, honoured of all the people, and commaunded to put the Apostles forth a litle space.
35 And saide vnto them, Men of Israel, take heede to your selues, what ye intende to doe touching these men.
36 For before these times, rose vp Theudas boasting himselfe, to whom resorted a nomber of men, about a foure hundreth, who was slaine: and they all which obeyed him, were scattered, and brought to nought.
37 After this man, arose vp Iudas of Galile, in the dayes of the tribute, and drewe away much people after him: he also perished, and all that obeyed him, were scattered abroade.
38 And now I say vnto you, refraine your selues from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsell, or this worke be of men, it will come to nought:
39 But if it be of God, ye can not destroy it, least ye be founde euen fighters against God.

40 And to him they agreed, and called the Apoſtles: and when they had beaten them, they commaunded that they ſhould not ſpeake in the Name of Ieſus, and let them goe.

41 So they departed from the Councill, reioycing, that they were counted worthie to ſuffer rebuke for his Name.

42 And dayly in the Tẽple, and from houſe to houſe they ceaſſed not to teache, and preache Ieſus Chriſt.

CHAP. VI.

2 The Apoſtles 3 appoint the office of Deaconship 5 to ſeuen choſen men: 8 Of whom Steuen, full of fayth, is one: 12 He is taken 13 and accuſed as a tranſgreſſour of Moſes Lawe.

1 AND in thoſe daies, as the nomber of the diſciples grewe, there aroſe a murmuring of the Grecians towards the Hebrewes, becauſe their widowes were neglected in the daily miniſtring.

2 Then the twelue called the multitude of the diſciples together, and ſaid, It is not meete that we ſhould leaue the worde of God to ſerue the tables.

3 Wherefore brethren, looke ye out among you ſeuen men of honeſt report, and full of the holy Ghoſt, and of wiſedome, which we may appoint to this buſines.

4 And we will giue our ſelues continually to prayer, & to the miniſtration of the worde.

5 And the ſaying pleaſed the whole multitude: and they choſe Steuen a man full of faith and of the holy Ghoſt, and * Philippe, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas, a Proſelyte of Antiochia,

Chap. 21. 8.

6 Which they ſet before the Apoſtles: and they prayed, and layed their hands on them.

7 And the word of God increaſed, and the nomber of the diſciples was multiplied in Hieruſalem greatly, and a great cõpanie of the Prieſts were obedient to the faith.

8 ¶ Now Steuen full of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people.

9 Then there aroſe certaine of the Synagogue, which are called Libertines, & Cyrenians, and of Alexandria, and of them of Cilicia, and of Aſia, and diſputed with Steuen.

10 But they were not able to reſiſt the wiſedome, and the Spirit by the which he ſpake.

11 Then

11 Then they ſuborned men, which ſaide, We haue heard him ſpeake blaſphemous wordes againſt Moſes, and God.

12 Thus they moued the people and the Elders, and the Scribes: and running vpon him, caught him, & brought him to the Council,

13 And ſet forth falſe witneſſes, which ſaide, This man ceaſeth not to ſpeake blaſphemous wordes againſt this holy place, and the Lawe.

14 For we haue heard him ſay, that this Ieſus of Nazareth ſhall deſtroye this place, and ſhall change the ordinances, which Moſes gaue vs.

15 And as all that ſate in the Council, looked ſtedfaſtly on him, they ſawe his face as *it had bene* the face of an Angel.

CHAP. VII.

1 *Steuen pleading his cauſe ſheweth that God choſe the Fathers,* 20 *before Moſes was borne,* 47 *and before the Temple was built:* 44 *And that all outwarde ceremonies were ordeined according to the heauenly Patterne:* 54 *The Iewes gnaſhing their teeth,* 59 *ſtone him.*

1 THen ſaid the chiefe Prieſt, Are theſe things ſo?

2 And he ſaid, Ye men, brethren and Fathers, hearken. * That God of glorie appeared vnto our father Abraham, while he was in Meſopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran, *Gen.12.4*

3 And ſaide vnto him, Come out of thy countrey, and from thy kindred, and come into the land which I ſhal ſhew thee.

4 Then came he out of the land of the Chaldeans, and dwelt in Charran. And after that his father was dead, *God* brought him from thence into this land, wherein ye now dwell,

5 And he gaue him none inheritance in it, no, not the bredth of a foote: yet he promiſed that he would giue it to him for a poſſeſſion, and to his ſeede after him, when as yet he had no childe.

6 But God ſpake thus, that his * ſeede ſhoulde be a ſoiourner in a ſtrange lande, and that they ſhoulde keepe it in bondage, and entreate it euill foure hundreth yeres. *Gen.15.13*

7 But the nation to whome they ſhalbe in bondage, will

I iudge, saith God: & after that, they shall come forth and serue me in this place.

Gen.17.9. 8 * He gaue him also the couenant of circumcision: & so *Abraham* begate * Isaac, and circumcised him the
Gen. 21. 3. eight day: and Isaac *begate* * Iacob, and Iacob the
Gen.25.24 twelue * Patriarkes.
Gen.29.33. & 30.5. & 9 And the Patriarkes moued with enuie solde * Ioseph
35.23. into Egypt: but God was with him,
Gen.37.28. 10 And deliuered him out of all his afflictions, & * gaue
Gen.41.37. him fauour and wisedome in the sight of Pharao King of Egypt, who made him gouernour ouer Egypt, & ouer his whole house.

11 ¶ Then came there a famine ouer all the lande of Egypt and Chanaan, and great affliction, that our fathers found no sustenance.

Gen.42.1. 12 But when * Iacob heard that there was corne in Egypt, he sent our fathers first:

Gen.45.4. 13 * And at the second time, Ioseph was knowen of his brethren, and Iosephs kindred was made knowen vnto Pharao.

14 Then sent Ioseph and caused his father to be brought, and all his kindred, euen three score and fifteene soules.

Gen.46.5. 15 So * Iacob went downe into Egypt, and he * died,
Gen.49.33 and our fathers,

16 And were remoued into Sychem, and were put in the
Gen.23.16. sepulchre, that Abraham had bought * for money of the sonnes of Emor, *sonne* of Sychem.

17 But when the time of the promes drewe neere, which
Exod.1.7. God had sworne to Abraham, the people * grewe and multiplied in Egypt,

18 Till another King arose, which knew not Ioseph.

19 The same dealt subtilly with our kindred, and euil intreated our fathers, and made them to cast out their yong children, that they should not remaine aliue.

Exod.2.2. 20 * The same time was Moses borne, and was acceptable vnto God, which was nourished vp in his fathers house three moneths.

21 And when he was cast out, Pharaos daughter tooke him vp, and nourished him for her owne sonne.

22 And Moses was learned in all the wisedome of the Egyptians, and was mightie in wordes and in deedes.

23 Now

23 Now when he was full fourtie yere olde, it came into his heart to visite his brethren, the children of Israel.

24 * And when he saw one *of them* suffer wrong, he defended him, and auenged his quarell that had the harme done to him, and smote the Egyptian. *Exod.2.11.*

25 For he supposed his brethren would haue vnderstand, that God by his hand should giue them deliuerance: but they vnderstood it not.

26 * And the next day, he shewed him selfe vnto them as they stroue, and woulde haue set them at one againe, saying, Sirs, ye are brethren: why do ye wrong one to another? *Exod.2.13.*

27 But he that did his neighbour wronge, thrust him away, saying, Who made thee a prince, and a iudge ouer vs?

28 Wilt thou kill me, as thou didàest the Egyptian yesterday?

29 Then fled Moses at that saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begate two sonnes.

30 And whē fourtie yeres were expired, there appeared to him in the * wildernes of mount Sina, an Angel of the Lord in a flame of fire, in a bush. *Exod.3.2.*

31 And when Moses saw it, he wondred at the sight: and as he drewe nere to consider it, the voyce of the Lord came vnto him, *saying*,

32 I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob. Then Moses trembled, and durst not beholde it.

33 Then the Lord saide to him, Put of thy shoes from thy feete: for the place where thou standest, is holy grounde.

34 I haue seene, I haue seene the affliction of my people, which is in Egypt, and I haue heard their groning, and am come downe to deliuer them: and nowe come, and I will send thee into Egypt.

35 This Moses whom they forsooke, saying, Who made thee a prince & a iudge? the same God sēt for a prince, and a deliuerer by the hande of the Angel, which appeared to him in the bush. *Exod.7.8.9. 10. 11.14. chapters.*

36 He * brought them out, doing wonders, and miracles in the land of Egypt, and in the red sea, and in the wildernes * fourtie yeres. *Exod.16.1.*

37 This

37 This is that Moſes, which ſaid vnto the children of
Deut. 18.15. Iſrael, * A Prophet ſhall the Lord your God raiſe vp vnto you, *euen* of your brethren, like vnto me: him ſhall ye heare.

Exod. 19.2. 38 * This is he that was in the Congregation, in the wildernes with the Angel, which ſpake to him in mount Sina, and with our fathers, who receiued the liuely oracles to giue vnto vs.

39 To whome our fathers woulde not obeye, but refuſed, and in their heartes turned backe againe into Egypt:

Exod. 32.1. 40 Saying vnto Aaron, * Make vs gods that may go before vs: for we know not what is become of this Moſes that brought vs out of the land of Egypt.

41 And they made a calfe in thoſe dayes, and offred ſacrifice vnto the idole, and reioyced in the workes of their owne handes.

42 Then God turned him ſelfe away, and gaue them vp to ſerue the hoſt of heauen, as it is writtē in the booke
Amos. 5.25 of the Prophets, * O houſe of Iſrael, haue ye offred to me ſlaine beaſtes and ſacrifices by the ſpace of fourtie yeres in the wildernes?

43 And ye tooke vp the tabernacle of Moloch, and the ſtarre of your god Remphan, figures, which ye made to worſhip them: therefore I will carie you away beyond Babylon.

44 Our fathers had the tabernacle of witnes in the wil-
Exod. 25.40 dernes, as he had appointed, ſpeaking vnto * Moſes, that
Hebre. 8.5. he ſhoulde make it according to the faſhion that he had ſeene.

Ioſh. 3.14. 45 * Which *tabernacle* alſo our fathers receiued, and brought in with Ieſus into the poſſeſſion of the Gētiles, which God draue out before our fathers, vnto the dayes of Dauid:

2. Sam. 7.2. 46 * Who found fauour before God, and deſired that he
Pſal. 132.5. might finde a tabernacle for the God of Iacob.

1. Chron. 17 47 * But Solomon built him an houſe.
12, 1. king. 48 Howbeit the moſt High * dwelleth not in temples
6.1. made with hands, as ſaith the Prophet,

Chap. 17.24 49 * Heauen *is* my throne, and earth *is* my ſootſtoole: what
Iſa. 66.1. houſe will ye builde for me, ſaith the Lorde? or what place is it that I ſhould reſt in?

50 Hath

50 Hath not mine hand made all these thinges?
51 *Ye stiffenecked and of vncircumcised heartes and eares, ye haue alwayes resisted the holy Ghost: as your fathers *did*, so *do* you. *Jerem.9.26 ezek.44.9.
52 Which of the Prophets haue not your fathers persecuted? and they haue slaine them, which shewed before of the comming of that Iust, of whom ye are now the betrayers and murtherers,
53 *Which haue receiued the Law by the ordinance of Angels, and haue not kept it. *Exo.19.16. galat.3.19.
54 But when they heard these things, their hearts brast for anger, and they gnashed at him with *their* teeth.
55 But he being full of the holy Ghost, looked stedfastly into heauen, and saw the glorie of God, and Iesus standing at the right hand of God.
56 And said, Behold, I see the heauens open, & the Sonne of man standing at the right hand of God.
57 Then they gaue a shout with a loude voyce, and stopped their eares, and ranne vpon him violently all at once,
58 And cast him out of the citie, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid downe their clothes at a yong mans feete, named Saul.
59 And they stoned Steuen, who called on *God*, and said, Lord Iesus, receiue my spirit.
60 And he kneeled downe, and cried with a loud voyce, Lord, lay not this sinne to their charge. And when he had thus spoken, he slept.

CHAP. VIII.

2 The godly make lamentation for Steuen. 3 Saul maketh hauock of the Church. 5 Philippe preacheth Christ at Samaria. 9 Simon Magus 18 his couetousnes reproued. 26 Philippe 27 commeth to the Ethiopian Eunuche, 38 and baptizeth him.

1 AND Saul consented to his death, and at that time, there was a great persecution against the Church which was at Hierusalem, and they were all scattered abroade through the regions of Iudea and of Samaria, except the Apostles.
2 Then *certaine* men fearing God, caried Steuen amongs them, *to be buried*, and made great lamentation for him.

3 But

3 But Saul made hauocke of the Church, and entred into euerie house, and drew out both men and women, and put them into prison.

4 Therefore they that were scattered abroade, went to and fro preaching the word.

5 ¶ Then came Philippe into the citie of Samaria, and preached Christ vnto them.

6 And the people gaue heede vnto those things which Philippe spake, with one accord, hearing & seeing the miracles which he did.

7 For vncleane spirites crying with a loude voyce, came out of manye that were possessed *of them*: and manye taken with palsies, and that halted, were healed.

8 And there was great ioye in that citie.

9 And there was before in the citie a certaine man called Simon, which vsed witchcraft, and bewitched the people of Samaria, saying that he him selfe was some great man.

10 To whome they gaue heede from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is that great power of God.

11 And they gaue heede vnto him, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries.

12 But assone as they beleeued Philippe, which preached the thinges that concerned the kingdome of God, and the Name of Iesus Christ, they were baptized both men and women.

13 Then Simon him selfe beleeued also, and was baptized, and continued with Philippe, and wondred, when he saw the signes and great miracles which were done.

14 ¶ Nowe when the Apostles, which were at Hierusalem, heard say, that Samaria had receiued the worde of God, they sent vnto them Peter and Iohn.

15 Which when they were come downe, prayed for them, that they might receiue the holy Ghost.

16 (For as yet, he was fallen downe on none of them, but they were baptized onely in the Name of the Lord Iesus.)

17 Then laid they their hands on them, and they receiued the holy Ghost.

18 And when Simon saw, that through laying on of the Apostles

Apostles handes the holy Ghost was giuen, he offred them money,

19 Saying, Giue me also this power, that on whomsoeuer I lay the hands, he may receiue the holy Ghost.

20 Then said Peter vnto him, Thy money perishe with thee, because thou thinkest that the gift of God may be obteined with money.

21 Thou hast neither part nor felowship in this busines: for thine heart is not right in the sight of God.

22 Repent therefore of this thy wickednes, and pray God, that if it be possible, the thought of thine heart may be forgiuen thee.

23 For I see that thou art in the gall of bitternes, and in the bond of iniquitie.

24 Then answered Simon, and said, Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of these thinges which ye haue spoken, come vpon me.

25 ¶ So they, when they had testified and preached the worde of the Lorde, returned to Hierusalem, and preached the Gospell in many townes of the Samaritans.

26 Then the Angel of the Lord spake vnto Philippe, saying, Arise, and go towarde the South vnto the way that goeth downe from Hierusalem vnto Gaza, which is waste.

27 And he arose and went on: and beholde, a certaine Eunuche of Ethiopia, Candaces the Queene of the Ethiopians chiefe Gouernour, who had the rule of all her treasure, and came to Hierusalem to worshippe.

28 And as he returned sitting in his charet, he read Esaias the Prophet.

29 Then the Spirite saide vnto Philippe, Go neere and ioyne thy selfe to yonder charet.

30 And Philippe ranne thither, and heard him reade the Prophet Esaias, and saide, But vnderstandest thou what thou readest?

31 And he said, Howe can I, except I had a guide? And he desired Philippe, that he woulde come vp and sit with him.

32 Now the place of the Scripture which he read, was this,* He was lead as a sheepe to the slaughter: & like a lambe *Esa. 53. 7.

a lambe domme before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth.

33 In his humilitie his iudgement hath bene exalted: but who shall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth.

34 Then the Eunuche answered Philippe, and saide, I pray thee of whom speaketh the Prophet this? of himselfe, or of some other man?

35 Then Philippe opened his mouth, and began at the same Scripture, and preached vnto him Iesus.

36 And as they went on their way, they came vnto a certaine water, and the Eunuche saide, See, here is water: what doeth let me to be baptized?

37 And Philippe saide vnto him, If thou beleeuest with all thine heart, thou mayest. Then he answered, and saide, I beleeue that that Iesus Christ is that Sonne of God.

38 Then he commaunded the charet to stand still: and they went downe both into the water, both Philippe and the Eunuche, and he baptized him.

39 And assone as they were come vp out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philippe, that the Eunuche sawe him no more: so he went on his way reioycing.

40 But Philippe was founde at Azotus, and he walked to and fro preaching in all the cities, till he came to Cesarea.

CHAP. IX.

2. Saul going towards Damascus, 4 is stricken downe to the ground of the Lord: 10 Ananias is sent, 18 to baptize him. 23 The laying awayte of the Iewes 25 he escapeth, being let downe through the wall. 33 Peter cureth Aeneas of the palsie, 36 and by him Tabitha being dead 40 is restored to life.

Rom 9.3. Galat.1.13. 1 AND * Saul yet breathing out threateninges and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went vnto the hie Priest,

2 And desired of him letters to Damascus to the Synagogues, that if he founde any that were of that way (either men or women) he might bring them bounde vnto Hierusalem.

3 Nowe as he journeied, it came to passe that as he was come

come nere to Damascus, * sodenly there shined round about him a light from heauen. (Chap. 22.6. 1.cor.15.8.)

4 And he fel to the earth, and heard a voyce, saying to him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

5 And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Iesus whome thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kicke against prickes.

6 He *then* both trēbling, & astonied, said, Lord, what wilt thou that I do? And the Lord said vnto him, Arise, & go into the citie, & it shalbe tolde thee what thou shalt do.

7 The men also which iourneyed with him, stoode amased, hearing *his* voyce, but seeing no man.

8 And Saul arose from the ground, and opened his eyes, but sawe no man. Then lead they him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus,

9 Where he was three dayes without sight, and neither ate nor dranke.

10 And there was a certaine disciple at Damascus named Ananias, and to him said the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold, I am *here*, Lord.

11 Then the Lord said vnto him, Arise, and go into the streete which is called Straight, and seeke in the house of Iudas after one called Saul of Tarsus: for beholde he prayeth.

12 (And he sawe in a vision a man named Ananias comming in *to him*, and putting his hands on him, that he might receiue his sight.)

13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I haue heard by many of this man, how much euil he hath done to thy Saynts at Hierusalem.

14 Moreouer, here he hath authoritie of the hie Priests, to binde al that call on thy Name.

15 Then the Lord said vnto him, Goe thy way: for he is a chosen vessel vnto me, to beare my Name before the Gentiles, and Kings, and the children of Israel.

16 For I wil shew him, how many things he must suffer for my Names sake.

17 Then Ananias went his way, & entred into that house, and put his hands on him, and said, Brother Saul, the Lord hath sent me (*euen* Iesus that appeared vnto thee in the way as thou camest) that thou mightest receiue thy sight, and be filled with the holy Ghost.

18 And immediatly there fel from his eyes as *it had bene* scales, and sodenly he receiued sight, and arose, and was baptized,

19 And receiued meate, and was strengthened. So was Saul certaine dayes with the disciples which were at Damascus.

20 And straight waye he preached Christ in the Synagogues, that he was that Sonne of God,

21 So that all that heard him, were amased, and said, Is not this he that made hauocke of them which called on this Name in Hierusalem, & came hither for that intent, that he should bring them bound vnto the hie Priests?

22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Iewes which dwelt at Damascus, confirming that this was that Christ.

23 And after that many dayes were fulfilled, the Iewes tooke counsel together, to kil him,

24 But their laying awayte was knowen of Saul: now 2. Cor. 11. 32. they * watched the gates daye and night, that they might kil him.

25 Then the disciples tooke him by night, and put him through the wall, & let him downe by a rope in a basket.

26 And whē Saul was come to Hierusalem, he assaied to ioyne himself with the disciples: but they were al afraid of him, & beleeued not that he was a disciple.

27 But Barnabas tooke him, and brought him to the Apostles, and declared to them, how he had seene the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken vnto him, and how he had spoken boldely at Damascus in the Name of Iesus.

28 And he was conuersant with them at Hierusalem,

29 And spake boldely in the Name of the Lord Iesus, and spake and disputed against the Grecians: but they went about to slaye him.

30 But when the brethren knew it, they brought him to Cesarea, and sent him forth to Tarsus.

31 Then had the Churches rest through al Iudea, and Galile, and Samaria, and were edified and walked in the feare of the Lord, and were multiplied by the comfort of the holy Ghost.

32 And it came to passe, as Peter walked throughout all *quarters*, he came also to the saintes which dwelt at Lydda.

33 And

33 And there he found a certaine man, named Aeneas, which had kept his couch eight yeres, and was sicke of the palsie.

34 Then said Peter vnto him, Aeneas, Iesus Christ maketh thee whole: arise and trusse thy couch together. And he arose immediatly.

35 And all that dwelt at Lydda and Saron, sawe him, and turned to the Lord.

36 There was also at Ioppa a certain *woman*, a disciple named Tabitha (which by interpretation is called Dorcas) she was ful of good workes & almes which she did.

37 And it came to passe in those dayes, that she was sicke and died: and when they had washed her, they laid her in an vpper chamber.

38 Now forasmuch as Lydda was nere to Ioppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent vnto him two men, desiring that he woulde not delaye to come vnto them.

39 Then Peter arose and came with them: and when he was come, they brought him into the vpper chamber, where al the widowes stood by him weeping, and shewing the coates and garments which Dorcas made, while she was with them.

40 But Peter put them al forth, and kneeled down, & prayed, and turned him to the body, and said, Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes, & when she saw Peter, sate vp.

41 Then he gaue her the hand and lift her vp, and called the Saintes and widowes, and restored her aliue.

42 And it was knowen throughout all Ioppa, and many beleeued in the Lord.

43 And it came to passe that he taried many dayes in Ioppa with one Simon a tanner.

CHAP. X.

1 *Cornelius, 4 at the Angels commandement, 5 sendeth for Peter, 11 who also by a vision 15. 20 is taught not to despise the Gentiles: 34 He preacheth the Gospel to Cornelius and his household. 45 Who hauing receiued the holy Ghost, 47 are baptized.*

1 FVrthermore there was a certaine man in Cesarea called Cornelius, a captaine of the band called the Italian *band*,

2 A deuout man, and one that feared God with all his

housholde, which gaue much almes to the people, and prayed God continually.

3 He saw in a vision euidently (about the ninth houre of the day) an Angel of God comming in to him, and saying vnto him, Cornelius.

4 But when he loked on him, he was afraid, & said, What is it, Lord? And he said vnto him, Thy prayers and thine almes are come vp into remembrance before God.

5 Now therefore send men to Ioppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter.

6 He lodgeth with one Simon a tãner, whose house is by the sea side: he shal tel thee what thou oughtest to do.

7 And when the Angel which spake vnto Cornelius, was departed, he called two of his seruants, and a souldier that feared God, one of them that waited on him,

8 And tolde them all things, and sent them to Ioppa.

9 On the morowe as they went on their iourney, and drewe neere vnto the citie, Peter went vp vpon the house to pray, about the sixt houre.

10 Then waxed he an hũgred, and would haue eaten: but while they made *some thing* ready, he fel into a trance.

11 And he sawe heauen opened, & a certaine vessel come downe vnto him, as *it had bene* a great sheete, knit at the foure corners, and was let downe to the earth.

12 Wherein were all maner of foure footed beastes of the earth, and wilde beastes and creeping things, and foules of the heauen.

13 And there came a voyce to him, Arise, Peter: kil, and eate.

14 But Peter said, Not so, Lord: for I haue neuer eaten any thing that is polluted, or vncleane.

15 And the voyce *spake* vnto him again the second time, The thinges that God hath purified, pollute thou not.

16 This was so done thrise: and the vessel was drawen vp againe into heauen.

17 ¶ Now while Peter donted in himselfe what this vision which he had seene, meant, behold, the men which were sent from Cornelius, had enquired for Simons house, and stoode at the gate,

18 And called, and asked, whether Simon, which was surnamed Peter, were lodged there.

19 And while Peter thought on the vision, the Spirit said vnto

vnto him, Beholde, three men seeke thee.
20 Arise therefore, and get thee down, and go with them, and doute nothing: for I haue sent them.
21 ¶ Then Peter went downe to the men, which were sent vnto him from Cornelius, and said, Behold, I am he whom ye seke: what is the cause wherfore ye are come?
22 And they said, Cornelius the captaine, a iust man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among al the nations of the Iewes, was warned from heauen by an holy Angel, to send for thee into his house, and to heare thy wordes.
23 Then called he them in, and lodged them, & the next day, Peter went forth with them, and certaine brethren from Ioppa accompanied him.
24 ¶ And the day after, they entred into Cesarea. Now Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsemen, and special friends.
25 And it came to passe as Peter came in, that Cornelius met him, and fell downe at his feete, & worshipped him.
26 But Peter tooke him vp, saying, Stand vp: for euen I my selfe am a man.
27 And as he talked with him, he came in, and found many that were come together.
28 And he said vnto them, Ye knowe that it is an vnlawful thing for a man that is a Iewe, to company, or come vnto one of another nation: but God hath shewed me, that I should not call any man polluted, or vncleane.
29 Therefore came I vnto you without saying nay, when I was sent for. I aske therefore, for what intent haue ye sent for me?
30 The Cornelius said, Foure daies ago, about this houre I fasted, and at the ninth houre I prayed in mine house, and behold, a man stoode before me in bright clothing,
31 And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine almes are had in remembrance in the sight of God.
32 Send therefore to Ioppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter (he is lodged in the house of Simon a tanner by the sea side) who when he commeth, shall speake vnto thee.
33 Then sent I for thee immediatly, & thou hast wel done to come. Now therefore are we al here present before God, to heare al things that are cōmanded thee of God.

34 Then Peter opened *his* mouth, and ſaid, Of a truth I perceiue, that * God is no accepter of perſons.

Deu.10.17. 2.chron.19. 7.iob.34. 19.rom.2. 11.gal.2.6. eph.6.9.col. 3.25.1.pet. 1.17.

35 But in euery nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteouſnes, is accepted with him.

36 Ye know the word which God hath ſent to the children of Iſrael, preaching peace by Ieſus Chriſt, which is Lord of all.

37 *Euen* the worde which came through al Iudea, * beginning in Galile, after the baptiſme which Iohn preached.

Luk.4.14.

38 *To wit*, how God anointed Ieſus of Nazareth with the holy Ghoſt, and with power: who went about doing good, and healing al that were oppreſſed of the deuill: for God was with him.

39 And we are witneſſes of all things which he did both in the land of the Iewes and in Hieruſalem, whom they ſlew, hanging him on a tree.

40 Him God raiſed vp the third day, and cauſed that he was ſhewed openly:

41 Not to al the people, but vnto the witneſſes choſen before of God, *euen* to vs which did eat and drinke with him, after he aroſe from the dead.

42 And he commanded vs to preach vnto the people, and to teſtifie, that it is he that is ordeined of God a iudge of quicke and dead.

Chap.15.9. ver.31.34. rom.3.18.

43 To him alſo, giue all the * Prophets witneſſe, that through his Name al that beleue in him, ſhal receiue remiſſion of ſinnes.

44 While Peter yet ſpake theſe wordes, the holy Ghoſt fel on al them which heard the worde,

45 So they of the circumciſion which beleeued, were aſtonied, as many as came with Peter, becauſe that on the Gentiles alſo was powred out the gift of the holye Ghoſt.

46 For they heard them ſpeake with tongues, and magnifie God. Then anſwered Peter,

47 Can any man forbid water, that theſe ſhould not be baptized, which haue receiued the holy Ghoſt, as wel as we?

48 So he commanded them to be baptized in the Name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tary certaine dayes.

2 *Peter being accused for going to the Gentiles,* 5 *defendeth himselfe.* 22 *Barnabas is sent to Antiochia,* 26 *where the disciples are called Christians:* 28 *And there Agabus foretelleth a famine to come.*

1 NOw the Apostles and the brethren that were in Iudea, heard, that the Gentiles had also receiued the word of God.

2 And when Peter was come vp to Hierusalem, they of the circumcision contended against him,

3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men vncircumcised, and hast eaten with them.

4 Then Peter began, and expounded *the thing* in order to them, saying,

5 I was in the citie of Ioppa, praying, and in a trance I saw *this* vision, A certaine vessel comming downe as it *had bene* a great sheete, let downe from heauen by the foure corners, and it came to me.

6 Toward the which when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered, & saw foure footed beastes of the earth, and wilde beasts, & creeping things, & foules of the heauen.

7 Also I heard a voyce, saying vnto me, arise, Peter: slaye and eate.

8 And I said, God forbid, Lord: for nothing polluted or vncleane hath at any time entred into my mouth.

9 But the voyce answered me the second time from heauē, The things that God hath purified, pollute thou not.

10 And this was done three times, and al were taken vp againe into heauen.

11 Then behold, immediatly there were three men alreadie come vnto the house, where I was, sent from Cesarea vnto me.

12 And the Spirit said vnto me, that I should go with them, without douting: moreouer these sixe brethren came with me, and we entred into the mans house.

13 And he shewed vs, how he had seene an Angel in his house, which stoode and said to him, Send men to Ioppa and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter.

14 He shal speake wordes vnto thee, whereby both thou and all thine house shalbe saued.

15 And as I began to speake, the holy Ghost fell on them, * euen as vpon vs at the beginning. *Chap. 2. 4.*

16 Then I remembred the word of the Lord, how he said,

Chap.1.5. and 19.4. mat.3.11 mar.1.8. luke.3.16. iohn.1.26.

* Iohn baptized with water, but ye shalbe baptized with the holy Ghost.

17 For as much then as God gaue them a like gift, as he *did* vnto vs, when we beleeued in the Lord Iesus Christ, who was I, that I could let God?

18 When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance vnto life.

Chap.8.1.

19 ¶And they which were * scattered abroad because of the affliction that arose about Steuen, went throughout til they came vnto Phenice & Cyprus, & Antiochia, preaching the word to no man, but vnto the Iewes onely.

20 Now some of them were men of Cyprus & of Cyrene, which when they were come into Antiochia, spake vnto the Grecians, and preached the Lord Iesus.

21 And the hande of the Lord was with them, so that a great number beleeued and turned vnto the Lord,

22 Then tidings of those things came vnto the eares of the Church, which was in Hierusalem, and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should go vnto Antiochia.

23 Who when he was come & had seene the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted all, that with purpose of heart they would continue in the Lord.

24 For he was a good man, and ful of the holy Ghost, and faith, & much people ioyned them selues vnto the Lord.

25 ¶ Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus to seeke Saul:

26 And when he had found him, he brought him vnto Antiochia, & it came to passe that a whole yere they were conuersant with the Church, and taught much people, in so much, that the disciples were first called Christians in Antiochia.

27 In those dayes also came Prophets from Hierusalem vnto Antiochia.

28 And there stood vp one of them named Agabus, and signified by the Spirit, that there should be great famine throughout al the world, which also came to passe vnder Claudius Cesar.

29 Then the disciples, euery man according to his habilitie, purposed to send succour vnto the brethren which dwelt in Iudea.

30 Which thing they also did, and sent it to the Elders, by the hand of Barnabas and Saul.

1 *Herod killeth Iames with the sword:* 4 *And imprisoneth*
Peter, 8 *whome the Angel deliuereth.* 20 *Herod being of-*
fended with them of Tyrus, 21 *is pacified:* 22 *And taking*
the honour due to God, to himselfe, 23 *he is eaten with*
wormes, and so dyeth.

1 NOw about that time, Herod the King stretched forth
his hands to vexe certaine of the Church,
2 And he killed Iames the brother of Iohn with the
sword.
3 And when he sawe that it pleased the Iewes, he proce-
ded further, to take Peter also (then were the daies of
vnleauened bread.)
4 And when he had caught him, he put him in prison, and
deliuered him to foure quaternions of souldiers to be
kept, intending after the Passeouer to bring him forth
to the people.
5 So Peter was kept in prison, but earnest praier was
made of the Church vnto God for him.
6 And when Herod would haue brought him out vnto
the people, the same night slept Peter betwene two
souldiers, bound with two chaines, and the keepers be-
fore the doore, kept the prison.
7 * And behold, the Angel of the Lord came vpon them, *Chap. 5. 19.*
and a light shined in the house, and he smote Peter on
the side, and raised him vp, saying, Arise quickely. And
his chaines fel of from *his* hands.
8 And the Angel said vnto him, Gird thy selfe, and binde
on thy sandales. And so he did. Then he said vnto him,
Cast thy garment about thee, and followe me.
9 So *Peter* came out and followed him, and knewe not
that it was true, which was done by the Angel, but
thought he had seene a vision.
10 Now when they were past the first and the seconde
watch, they came vnto the yron gate, that leadeth vnto
the citie, which opened to them by it owne accord, and
they went out, and passed through one streete, and by
and by the Angel departed from him.
11 ¶ And when Peter was come to him selfe, he said, Now
I know for a trueth, that the Lord hath sent his Angel,
and hath deliuered me out of the hand of *Herod*, and
from al the waiting for of the people of the Iewes.
12 And as he considered *the thing*, he came to the house

of Marie, the mother of Iohn, whose surname was Marke, where many were gathered together, & praied.
13 And when Peter knocked at the entrie doore, a maid came forth to hearken, named Rhode.
14 But when she knew Peters voyce, she opened not the entrie *doore* for gladnes, but ran in, and told how Peter stoode before the entrie.
15 But they said vnto her, Thou art mad. Yet she affirmed it constantly, that it was so. Then said they, It is his Angel.
16 But Peter continued knocking, and when they had opened it, and sawe him, they were astonied.
17 And he beckened vnto them with the hand, to holde their peace, and tolde them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And he said, Go shew these things vnto Iames and to the brethren: and he departed and went into another place.
18 ¶Now assone as it was day, there was no smal trouble among the souldiers, what was become of Peter.
19 And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commaunded them to be led to be punished. And he went downe from Iudea to Cesarea, and *there* abode.
20 Then Herod was angrie with them of Tyrus & Sidon, but they came al with one accord vnto him, and persuaded Blastus the Kings Chamberlaine, and they desired peace, because their countrey was nourished by the Kings *land*.
21 And vpon a day appointed, Herod arayed him selfe in royal apparel, and sate on the iudgement seate, and made an oration vnto them.
22 And the people gaue a shoute, *saying*, The voyce of God, and not of man.
23 But immediately the Angel of the Lord smote him, because he gaue not glorie vnto God, so that he was eaten of wormes, and gaue vp the ghost.
24 And the word of God grewe, and multiplied.
25 So Barnabas and Saul returned from Hierusalem, whe they had fulfilled their office, and tooke with them Iohn, whose surname was Marke.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *The holie Ghost commaundeth that Paul and Barnabas be separated*

Separated vnto him. 6 *At Paphus* 8 *Elymas the sorcerer* 11 *is strooken blinde:* 14 *From whence being come to Antiochia* 17 *they preache the Gospel,* 45 *the Iewes vehementlie withstanding them.*

1 THere were also in the Church that was at Antiochia, certaine Prophets and teachers, as Barnabas, and Simeon called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manahen (which had bene brought vp with Herod the Tetrarch) and Saul.

2 Now as they ministred to the Lord, and fasted, the holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas & Saul, for the worke whereunto I haue called them.

3 Then fasted they and prayed, and laid their hands on them, and let them go.

4 And they, after they were sent forth of the holy Ghost, came downe vnto Seleucia, and from thence they sailed to Cyprus.

5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the Synagogues of the Iewes: and they had also Iohn to *their* minister.

6 So when they had gone throughout the yle vnto Paphus, they found a certaine sorcerer, a false Prophet, being a Iewe, named Barieſus,

7 Which was with the Deputie Sergius Paulus, a prudent man. He called vnto him Barnabas and Saul, and desired to heare the word of God.

8 But Elymas, the sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstode them, & sought to turne away the Deputie from the faith.

9 Then Saul (which also *is called* Paul) being ful of the holie Ghost, set his eyes on him,

10 And said, O ful of al subtiltie & al mischiefe, the childe of the deuil, *and* enemie of all righteousnes, wilt thou not cease to pernert the straite wayes of the Lord?

11 Now therefore beholde, the hand of the Lord *is* vpon thee, and thou shalt be blinde, and not see the sunne for a season. And immediately there fel on him a mist and a darkenes, and he went about, seeking some to leade him by the hand.

12 Then the Deputie when he sawe what was done, beleeued, and was astonied at the doctrine of the Lord.

13 Now when Paul & they that were with him were departed

parted by ship from Paphus, they came to Perga *a citie* of Pamphylia: then Iohn departed from them, and returned to Hierusalem.

24 But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antiochia *a citie* of Pisidia, and went into the Synagogue on the Sabbath day, and sate downe.

25 And after the lecture of the Lawe and Prophets, the rulers of the Synagogue sent vnto them, saying, Ye men and brethren, if ye haue anie word of exhortation for the people, say on.

26 Then Paul stoode vp and beckened with the hand, and said, Men of Israel, and ye that feare God, hearken.

27 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people when they dwelt in the land of * Egypt, and with an * high arme brought them out therof.

Exod.1.9.
Exo.13.14.
Exod.16.1.

28 And about the time * of fourtie yeres, suffred he their maners in the wildernes.

29 And he destroyed seuen nations in the land of Chanaan, and * deuided their land to them by lot.

Ios.14.1.

Iudg.3.9.

30 Then afterward he gaue vnto them * Iudges about foure hundreth and fiftie yeres, vnto *the time of* Samuel the Prophet.

31 So after that, they desired a * King, and God gaue vnto them * Saul, the sonne of Cis, a man of the tribe of Beniamin, *by the space* of fourtie yeres.

1.Sam.8.5.
1.Sam.9.
15. & 10.1

32 And after he had taken him away, he raised vp * Dauid to be their King, of whome he witnessed, saying, I haue found Dauid *the sonne* of Iesse, a man after mine owne heart, which wil do al things that I wil.

1.Sam.16.
13.

Psal.89.21.

33 Of this mans seede hath God * according to *his* promise raised vp to Israel, the Sauiour Iesus:

Isai. 11.1.

Malach.3.1

34 When * Iohn had first preached before his comming the baptisme of repentance to al the people of Israel.

mat.3.1.
mar.1.2.

35 And when Iohn had fulfilled *his* course, he said, * Whom ye thinke that I am, I am not he: but beholde, there commeth one after me, whose shooe of *his* feete I am not worthie to loose.

luke 3.2.
Mat.3.11.
mar.1.7.
iohn.1.20.

36 Ye men and brethren, children of the generation of Abraham, and whosoeuer among you feareth God, to you is the word of this saluation sent.

37 For the inhabitants of Hierusalem, and their rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the wordes of the

Prophets,

Prophets, which are read euerie Sabbath *day*, they haue fulfilled them in condemning him.

28 And though they found no cause of death *in him*, * *yet* desired they Pilate to kil him. *Mat.27.22 mar.15.13. luke 23.23.*

29 And when they had fulfilled al things that were written of him, they tooke him downe from the tree, and put him in a sepulchre. *iohn.19.6.*

30 But God * raised him from the dead. *Mat.28.2.*

31 And he was seene manie dayes of them, which came vp with him from Galile to Hierusalem, which are his witnesses vnto the people. *mar.16.6. luke 24.6. iohn.20.19.*

32 And we declare vnto you, that touching the promise made vnto the fathers,

33 God hath fulfilled it vnto vs their children, in that he raised vp Iesus, euen as it is writtē in the secōd Psalme, * Thou art my Sonne: this day haue I begotten thee. *Psal.2.7.*

34 Now as concerning that he raised him vp from the dead, no more to returne to corruption, he hath said thus, * I wil giue you the holie things of Dauid, which are faithful. *hebr.1.5. and 5.5. Isai.55.3.*

35 Wherefore he saith also in another place, * Thou wilt not suffer thine Holie one to see corruption. *Chap.2.31. psal.16.11.*

36 Howbeit, Dauid after he had serued his time by the counsel of God, he* slept, and was laide with his fathers, and sawe corruption. *Chap.2.29. 1.king.2.10.*

37 But he whome God raised vp, sawe no corruption.

38 Be it knowen vnto you therefore, men *and* brethren, that through this man is preached vnto you the forgiuenes of sinnes.

39 And from al things, from which ye could not be iustified by the Law of Moses, by him euerie one that beleeueth, is iustified.

40 Beware therefore lest that come vpon you, which is spoken of in the Prophets,

41 * Beholde, ye despisers, and wonder, and vanish away: for I worke a worke in your daies, a worke which ye shal not beleeue, if a man would declare it you. *Habak.1.5.*

42 ¶And when they were come out of the Synagogue of the Iewes, the Gentiles besought, that they would preach these wordes to them the next Sabbath *day*.

43 Now when the congregation was dissolued, manie of the Iewes, and Proselytes that feared God, followed

Paul

Paul and Barnabas, which ſpake to them, and exhorted them to continue in the grace of God.

44 And the next Sabbath *day* came almoſt the whole citie together, to heare the word of God.

45 But when the Iewes ſawe the people, they were ful of enuie, and ſpake againſt thoſe thinges, which were ſpoken of Paul contrarying *them*, and railing on *them*.

46 Then Paul and Barnabas ſpake boldely, and ſaid, It was neceſſarie that the word of God ſhould firſt haue bene ſpoken vnto you: but ſeing ye put it from you, and iudge your ſelues vnworthie of euerlaſting life, lo, we turne to the Gentiles.

Iſai.49.6. 47 For ſo hath the Lord commanded vs, *ſaying*, * I haue made thee a light of the Gentiles, that thou ſhouldeſt be the ſaluation vnto the end of the worlde.

48 And when the Gentiles heard it, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as manie as were ordeined vnto eternal life, beleeued.

49 Thus the word of the Lord was publiſhed throughout the whole countrey,

50 But the Iewes ſtirred *certaine* deuoute and honorable women, and the chiefe men of the citie, and raiſed perſecution againſt Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coaſts.

Chap.13.6. 51 But they * ſhooke of the duſt of their feete againſt
mat.10.14. them, and came vnto Iconium.
mar.6.11. 52 And the diſciples were filled with ioye, and with the
luke.9.5. holie Ghoſt.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas 5 are perſecuted from Iconium: 6 At Liſtra Paul 10 healeth a creple: 13 They are about to do ſacrifice vnto them, 15 but they forbid it: 19 Paul, by the perſuaſion of certaine Iewes, is ſtoned: 23 From thence paſſing through diuers Churches, 26 they returne to Antiochia.

1 AND it came to paſſe in Iconium, that they went both together into the Synagogue of the Iewes, and ſo ſpake, that a great multitude both of the Iewes and of the Grecians beleeued.

2 And the vnbeleeuing Iewes ſtirred vp, and corrupted the mindes of the Gentiles againſt the brethren.

3 So therefore they abode there a long time, and ſpake boldely in the Lord, which gaue teſtimonie vnto the word

word of his grace, and caused signes and wonders to be done by their hands.
4 But the multitude of the citie was deuided: and some were with the Iewes, and some with the Apostles.
5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and of the Iewes with their rulers, to do them violence, and to stone them,
6 They were ware of it, and fled vnto Lystra, and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and vnto the region round about,
7 And there preached the Gospel.
8 ¶ Now there sate a certaine man at Lystra, impotent in his feete, which was a creeple from his mothers wombe, who had neuer walked.
9 He heard Paul speake: who beholding him, and perceiuing that he had faith to be healed,
10 Said with a loude voyce, Stand vpright on thy feete. And he leaped vp, and walked.
11 Then when the people sawe what Paul had done, they lift vp their voyces, saying in the speach of Lycaonia, Gods are come downe to vs in the likenes of men.
12 And they called Barnabas, Iupiter: and Paul, Mercurius, because he was the chiefe speaker.
13 Then Iupiters priest, which was before their citie, brought bulles with garlands vnto the gates, & would haue sacrificed with the people.
14 But when the Apostles, Barnabas and Paul heard it, they rent their clothes, and ran in among the people, crying,
15 And saying, O men, why do ye these things? We are euen men subiect to the like passions that ye be, and preache vnto you, that ye shoulde turne from these vaine thinges vnto the liuing God, * which made heauen and earth, and the sea, and al thinges that in them are: *Gen.1.1. psal.146.5. reuel.14.7.*
16 Who in times past * suffred all the Gentiles to walke in their owne waies. *Psal.81.13 rom.1,24.*
17 Neuertheles, he left not him selfe without witnes, in that he did good & gaue vs raine from heauen, & fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with foode, and gladnes.
18 And speaking these things, scarse appeased they the multitude, that they had not sacrificed vnto them.
19 Then there came certaine Iewes from Antiochia and Iconium,

Iconium, which when they had perſwaded the people,
2.Cor.11. 25. * ſtoned Paul, and drewe him out of the citie, ſuppoſing he had bene dead.

20 Howbeit, as the diſciples ſtoode rounde about him, he aroſe vp, & came into the citie, & the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

21 And after they had preached the glad tidings of the Goſpel to that citie, and had taught manie, they returned to Lyſtra, and to Iconium, and to Antiochia,

22 Confirming the diſciples hearts, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, *affirming* that we muſt through manie afflictions enter into the kingdome of God.

23 And when they had ordeined them Elders by election in euerie Church, and praied, and faſted, they commended them to the Lord in whome they beleeued.

24 Thus they went throughout Piſidia, and came to Pamphylia.

25 And when they had preached the word in Perga, they came downe to Attalia.

Chap.13.3. 26 And thence ſailed to Antiochia, * frō whence they had bene commended vnto the grace of God, to the worke which they had fulfilled.

27 And when they were come and had gathered the Church together, they rehearſed al the things that God had done by them, and how he had opened the dore of faith vnto the Gentiles.

28 So there they abode a long time with the diſciples.

CHAP. XV.

1 Certaine go about to bring in circumciſion at Antiochia: 6 About which matter the Apoſtles conſult: 19 and what muſt be done 23 they declare by letters. 36 Paul and Barnabas 39 are at great variance.

1 THen came downe certaine from Iudea, & taught the brethren, *ſaying* Except ye be circumciſed after the maner of Moſes, ye can not be ſaued.

2 And when there was great diſſenſion and diſputation by Paul and Barnabas againſt them, they ordeined that Paul and Barnabas, and certaine other of them, ſhould go vp to Hieruſalem vnto the Apoſtles and Elders about this queſtion.

3 Thus being brought forth by the Church, they paſſed through Phenice and Samaria, declaring the conuerſion of

of the Gentiles, and they brought great ioye vnto al the brethren.

4 And when they were come to Hierusalem, they were receiued of the Church, and of the Apostles & Elders, and they declared what things God had done by them.

5 But *said they*, certaine of the sect of the Pharises, which did beleeue, rose vp, saying, that it was needeful to circumcise them, and to commaund *them* to kepe the Lawe of Moses.

6 Then the Apostles and Elders came together to looke to this matter.

7 And when there had bene great disputation, Peter rose vp, and said vnto them, * Ye men *and* brethren, ye knowe that a good while ago, among vs God chose out *me*, that the Gentiles by my mouth should heare the word of the Gospel, and beleeue. *Chap.* 10. 20. & 11. 13.

8 And God which knoweth the hearts, bare thē witnes, in giuing vnto thē the holie Ghost euē as *he did* vnto vs.

9 And he put no difference betwene vs and them, after that * by faith he had purified their hearts. *Chap.* 10. 43

10 Now therefore, why tempt ye God, to * laye a yoke on the disciples neckes, which neither our fathers, nor we were able to beare? 1. *Cor.* 1. 2. *Mat.* 23. 4.

11 But we beleeue, through the grace of the Lord Iesus Christ to be saued, euen as they *do*.

12 Then al the multitude kept silence, and heard Barnabas and Paul, which tolde what signes and wonders God had done among the Gentiles by them.

13 And when they helde their peace, Iames answered, saying, Men *and* brethren, hearken vnto me.

14 Simeon hath declared, how God first did visite the Gentiles, to take *of them* a people vnto his Name.

15 And to this agree the wordes of the Prophets, as it is written,

16 *After this I wil returne, and wil builde againe the tabernacle of Dauid, which is fallen downe, and the ruines therof wil I builde againe, and I wil set it vp, *Amos* 9. 11

17 That the residue of men might seeke after the Lord, and al the Gentiles vpon whome my Name is called, saith the Lord which doeth al these things.

18 From the beginning of the worlde, God knoweth all his workes.

19 Wherefore my ſentence is, that we trouble not them of the Gentiles that are turned to God,
20 But that we ſend vnto them, that they abſteine themſelues from filthines of idoles, and fornication, and that that is ſtrangled, and from blood.
21 For Moſes of olde time hath in euerie citie them that preach him, ſeeing he is read in the Synagogues euerie Sabbath *day*.
22 Then it ſeemed good to the Apoſtles and Elders with the whole Church, to ſend choſen men of their owne companie to Antiochia with Paul and Barnabas: *to wit*, Iudas whoſe ſurname was Barſabas & Silas, which were chiefe men among the brethren,
23 And wrote letters by them after this maner, THE APOSTLES, and the Elders, & the brethren, vnto the brethren which are of the Gentiles in Antiochia, and in Syria, and in Cilicia, ſend greeting.
24 Foraſmuch as we haue heard, that certaine which went out from vs, haue troubled you with words, and cumbred your mindes, ſaying, Ye muſt be circumciſed and keepe the Lawe: to whome we gaue no ſuch commaundement,
25 It ſeemed therefore good to vs, when we were come together with one accord, to ſend choſen men vnto you, with our beloued Barnabas and Paul,
26 Men that haue giuen vp their liues for the Name of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt.
27 We haue therefore ſent Iudas and Silas, which ſhal alſo tel you the ſame things by mouth.
28 For it ſeemed good to the holie Ghoſt, and to vs, to lay no more burden vpon you, then theſe neceſſarie things,
29 *That is*, that ye abſteine from *things offered to idoles*, and blood, and that that is ſtrangled, and from fornication: from which if ye keepe your ſelues, ye ſhal do wel. Fare ye wel.
30 Now when they were departed, they came to Antiochia, and after that they had aſſembled the multitude, they deliuered the Epiſtle.
31 And when they had read it, they reioyced for the conſolation.
32 And Iudas and Silas being Prophets, exhorted the brethren

brethren with manie wordes, and ſtrengthened them.
33 And after they had taried there a ſpace, they were let go in peace of the brethren vnto the Apoſtles.
34 Notwithſtanding Silas thought good to abide there ſtill.
35 Paul alſo and Barnabas continued in Antiochia, teaching and preaching with manie other, the word of the Lord.
36 ¶ But after certaine daies, Paul ſaid vnto Barnabas, Let vs returne, and viſite our brethren in euerie citie, where we haue preached the word of the Lord, *and ſee* how they do.
37 And Barnabas counſelled to take with them Iohn, called Marke.
38 But Paul thought it not meete to take him vnto their companie, which departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the worke.
39 Then were they ſo ſtirred, that they departed a ſunder one from the other, ſo that Barnabas tooke Marke, and ſailed vnto Cyprus.
40 And Paul choſe Silas and departed, being commended of the brethren vnto the grace of God.
41 And he went through Syria and Cilicia, ſtabliſhing the Churches.

CHAP. XVI.

1 *Paul hauing circumciſed Timotheus,* 12 *being at Philippi,* 14 *inſtructeth Lydia in the faith:* 16 *The ſpirit of diuination* 18 *is by him caſt out:* 20 *and for that cauſe* 22 *they are whipped,* 24 *and impriſoned:* 26 *Through an earthquake* 27 *the priſon doores are opened.* 31.32 *The Iailer receiueth the faith.*

1 THen came he to Derbe and to Lyſtra: and beholde, a certaine diſciple was there named * Timotheus, a womans ſonne, which was a Ieweſſe and beleeued, but his father was a Grecian, *Rom.16.21 philip.2.19. 1.theſ.3.2.*
2 Of whome the brethren which were at Lyſtra and Iconium, reported well.
3 Therefore Paul woulde that he ſhould go forth with him, and tooke and circumciſed him, becauſe of the Iewes, which were in thoſe quarters: for they knew al, that his father was a Grecian.
4 And as they went through the cities, they deliuered

them the decrees to keepe, ordeined of the Apostles and Elders, which were at Hierusalem.

5 And so were the Churches stablished in the faith, and encreased in number daily.

6 ¶ Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, they were forbidden of the holie Ghost to preache the word in Asia.

7 Then came they to Mysia, and sought to go into Bithynia: but the Spirit suffred them not.

8 Therfore they passed through Mysia, and came downe to Troas,

9 Where a vision appeared to Paul in the night. There stoode a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come into Macedonia, and helpe vs.

10 And after he had seene the vision, immediately we prepared to go into Macedonia, being assured that the Lord had called vs to preach the Gospel vnto them.

11 Then went we forth from Troas, and with a straight course came to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis,

12 ¶ And from thence to Philippi, which is the chiefe citie in the partes of Macedonia, and whose inhabitantes came from Rome to dwel there, and we were in that citie abiding certaine daies.

13 And on the Sabbath day, we went out of the citie, beside a Riuer, where they were wont to pray: & we sate downe, and spake vnto the women, which were come together.

14 And a certaine woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the citie of the Thyatirians, which worshipped God, heard vs: whose heart the Lord opened, that she attended vnto the things, which Paul spake.

15 And when she was baptized, and her housholde, she besought vs, saying, If ye haue iudged me to be faithful to the Lord, come into mine house, & abide *there*: and she constrained vs.

16 And it came to passe that as we went to praier, a certaine maide hauing a spirit of diuination, mette vs, which gate her masters much vantage with diuining.

17 She folowed Paul and vs, and cried, saying, These men are the seruants of the most high God, which shew vnto you the way of saluation.

18 And

18 And this did she manie daies: but Paul being grieued, turned about, and said to the spirit, I command thee in the Name of Iesus Christ, that thou come out of her. And he came out the same houre.

19 Now when her masters sawe that the hope of their gaine was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drewe them into the market place vnto the magistrates,

20 And brought them to the gouernours, saying, These men which are Iewes, trouble our citie,

21 And preach ordinances, which are not lawful for vs to receiue, neither to obserue, seeing we are Romanes.

22 The people also rose vp together against them, and the gouernours rent their clothes, and commaunded *them* to be beaten with roddes.

23 And when they had beaten them sore, they cast *them* into prison, cómaunding the Iayler to keepe thē surely.

24 Who hauing receiued such commaundement, cast them into the inner prison, and made their feete fast in the stockes.

25 Nowe at midnight Paul and Silas praied, *and* sung Psalmes vnto God: and the prisoners heard them.

26 And sodenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundation of the prison was shaken: and by and by all the doores opened, and euerie mans bands were loosed.

27 Then the keeper of the prison waked out of his sleepe, and when he sawe the prison doores open, he drew out his sword and would haue killed him selfe, supposing the prisoners had bene fled.

28 But Paul cried with a loude voyce, saying, Do thy self no harme: for we are al here.

29 Then he called for a light, and leaped in, and came trembling, and fel downe before Paul and Silas,

30 And brought them out, and said, Syrs, what must I do to be saued?

31 And they said, Beleeue in the Lord Iesus Christ, and thou shalt be saued, and thine housholde.

32 And they preached vnto him the word of the Lord, & to al that were in his house.

33 Afterward he tooke them the same houre of the night, and washed *their* stripes, and was baptized with al that belonged vnto him, straight way.

34 And when he had brought them into his house, he set

meat before them, and reioyced that he with all his houshold beleeued in God.

35 And when it was day, the gouernours sent the sergeants, saying, Let those men go.

36 Then the keeper of the prison tolde these wordes vnto Paul, *saying*, The gouernours haue sent to loose you: now therefore get you hence, and go in peace.

37 Then said Paul vnto them, After that they haue beaten vs openly vncondemned, which are Romanes, they haue cast vs into prison, and now would they put vs out priuilie? nay verely: but let them come and bring vs out.

38 And the sergeants tolde these wordes vnto the gouernours, who feared when they heard that they were Romanes.

39 Then came they and praied them, and brought them out, and desired them to depart out of the citie.

40 And they went out of the prison, and entred into *the house of* Lydia: and when they had seene the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

CHAP. XVII.

1. *Paul at Thessalonica 3 preaching Christ, 6.7 is intertained of Iason: 10 He is sent to Berea: 15 from thence commeth to Athens, 19 in Mars streete 23 he preacheth the liuing God to them vnknowen, 34 and so, many are conuerted to Christ.*

1 NOw as they passed through Amphipolis, and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a Synagogue of the Iewes.

2 And Paul, as his maner was, went in vnto them, and three Sabbath *dayes* disputed with them by the Scriptures,

3 Opening, and alleadging that Christ must haue suffred, and risen againe from the dead: and this is Iesus Christ, whome, *said he*, I preach to you.

4 And some of them beleeued, and ioyned in companie with Paul and Silas: also of the Grecians that feared God a great multitude, and of the chiefe women not a fewe.

5 But the Iewes which beleeued not, moued with enuie, tooke vnto thē certaine vagabonds *and* wicked felowes, and when they had assembled the multitude, they made a tumult in the citie, and made assault against the house of Iason, and sought to bring them out to the people.

6 But

6 But when they found them not, they drewe Iaſon and certaine brethren vnto the heads of the citie, crying, Theſe are they which haue ſubuerted the ſtate of the world, and here they are,

7 Whome Iaſon hath receiued, and theſe all do againſt the decrees of Ceſar, ſaying that there is another King, one Ieſus.

8 Then they troubled the people, and the heads of the citie, when they heard theſe things.

9 Notwithſtanding when they had receiued ſufficient aſſurance of Iaſon and of the other, they let them go.

10 And the brethren immediately ſent away Paul and Silas by night vnto Berea, which when they were come thither, entred into the Synagogue of the Iewes.

11 Theſe were alſo more noble men thē they which were at Theſſalonica, which receiued the word with all readines, and ſearched the Scriptures daily, whether thoſe things were ſo.

12 Therefore manie of them beleeued, and of honeſt women, which were Grecians, and men not a fewe.

13 ¶ But when the Iewes of Theſſalonica knew, that the word of God was alſo preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither alſo, and moued the people.

14 But by and by the brethren ſent away Paul to go as it were to the ſea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there ſtill.

15 And they that did conduct Paul, brought him vnto Athenes: and when they had receiued a commanndemēt vnto Silas & Timotheus that they ſhould come to him at once, they departed.

16 ¶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his ſpirit was ſtirred in him, when he ſawe the citie ſubiect to idolatrie.

17 Therefore he diſputed in the Synagogue with the Iewes, and with them that were religious, and in the market daily with whomſoeuer he met.

18 Then certaine Philoſophers of the Epicures, and of the Stoickes, diſputed with him, & ſome ſaid, What wil this babler ſay? Others ſaid, He ſeemeth to be a ſetter forth of ſtrange gods (becauſe he preached vnto them Ieſus, and the reſurrection.)

19 And they tooke him, and brought him into Mars

ſtreete, ſaying, May we not knowe, what this new doctrine, whereof thou ſpeakeſt, is?

20 For thou bringeſt certaine ſtrange thinges vnto our eares: we would knowe therefore, what theſe thinges meane.

21 For al the Athenians, and ſtrangers which dwelt there, gaue themſelues to nothing els, but either to tel, or to heare ſome newes.

22 Then Paul ſtoode in the middes of Mars ſtreete, and ſaid, Ye men of Athenes, I perceiue that in al things ye are to ſuperſtitious.

23 For as I paſſed by, and beheld your deuocions, I found an altar wherein was written, VNTO THE VNKNOWEN GOD. Whome ye then ignorantly worſhip, him ſhew I vnto you.

24 God that made the world, and al things that are therein, ſeeing that he is Lord of heauen and earth, * dwelleth not in temples made with hands,

Chap. 7. 48.

Pſal. 50. 8. 25 * Neither is worſhipped with mens hands, as though he needed anie thing, ſeeing he giueth to all life and breath and all things,

26 And hath made of one blood al mankinde, to dwel on al the face of the earth, and hath aſsigned the ſeaſons which were ordeined before, and the bounds of their habitation,

27 That they ſhould ſeeke the Lord, if ſo be they might haue groped after him, and found *him*, though doubtles he be not farre from euerie one of vs.

28 For in him we liue, and moue, and haue our being, as alſo certaine of your owne Poets haue ſaid, for we are alſo his generation.

Iſai. 40. 19. 29 * Foraſmuch then, as we are the generation of God, we ought not to thinke that the godhead is like vnto gold, or ſiluer, or ſtone grauen by arte and the inuention of man.

30 And the time of this ignorance God *regarded not: but* now he admoniſheth al men euerie where to repent.

31 Becauſe he hath appointed a day in the which he wil iudge the world *in righteouſnes*, by that man whome he hath appointed, *whereof* he hath giuen an aſſurance to al men, in that he hath raiſed him from the dead.

32 Now when they heard of the reſurrection from the dead,

dead, some mocked, and other said, We will here thee
againe of this thing.
33 And so Paul departed from among them.
34 Howbeit certaine men clave vnto Paul, and beleeued:
among whome was also Denis Areopagita, and a wo-
man named Damaris, and other with them.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 *As Paul at Corinth & taught the Gentiles, 9 the Lorde*
comforteth him. 12 He is accused before Gallio, 16 but in
vaine: 18 From thence he sayleth to Syria, 19 and so to
Ephesus: 23 At Galatia & Phrygia he strēgtheneth the dis-
ciples. 24 Apollos being more perfectly instructed by Aqui-
la, 28 preacheth Christ with great efficacie.

1 AFter these things, Paul departed from Athenes, and
came to Corinthus,
2 And found a certaine Iewe named * Aquila, borne in
Pontus, lately come from Italie, & his wife Priscilla (be-
cause that Claudius had commaunded all Iewes to de-
part from Rome) and he came vnto them.
3 And because he was of the same craft, he abode with
them, & wrought (for their craft was to make tents.)
4 And he disputed in the Synagogue euery Sabbath *day*,
and exhorted the Iewes, and the Grecians.
5 Now when Silas and Timotheus were come from Ma-
cedonia, Paul forced in spirit, testified to the Iewes that
Iesus was the Christ.
6 And when they resisted and blasphemed, he * shouke *Act. 13.51.*
his raiment, and said vnto them, Your blood *be* vpon *mat. 10.14.*
your owne head: I am cleane: from hencefoorth wil I
go vnto the Gentiles.
7 So he departed thence, and entred into a certain mans
house, named Iustus, a worshipper of God, whose house
ioyned hard to the Synagogue.
8 And * Crispus the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, be- *1.Cor.1.14.*
leeued in the Lord with all his housholde: and many of
the Corinthians hearing it, beleeued & were baptized.
9 Then said the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision,
Feare not, but speake, and hold not thy peace.
10 For I am with thee, and no man shal lay *hands* on thee
to hurt thee: for I haue much people in this citie.
11 So he continued there a yere and sixe moneths, and
taught the word of God among them.

12 ¶Nowe

12 Now when Gallio was Deputie of Achaia, the Iewes rose with one accord against Paul, and brought him to the iudgement seate,

13 Saying, This felowe persuadeth men to worshippe God otherwise then the Law appointeth.

14 And as Paul was about to open his mouth, Gallio said vnto the Iewes, If it were a matter of wrong, or an euill deede, O ye Iewes, I would according to reason maintaine you.

15 But if it be a question of wordes, and names, and of your Law, looke ye to it your selues: for I wilbe no iudge of those things.

16 And he draue them from the iudgement seate.

17 Then tooke al the Grecians Sosthenes the chiefe ruler of the Synagogue, and beat him before the iudgement seate: but Gallio cared nothing for those things.

18 But when Paul had taried there yet a good while, he tooke leaue of the brethren, and sayled into Syria (and with him Priscilla and Aquila) after that he had shorne his head in Cenchrea: for he had a * vowe.

Chap.21.24 Num.6.18.

19 Then he came to Ephesus, and left them there: but he entred into the Synagogue & disputed with the Iewes.

20 Who desired him to tarye a longer time with them: but he would not consent,

21 But bade them fare well, saying, I must needes keepe this feast that commeth, in Hierusalem: but I will returne agayne vnto you, * if GOD will. So he sayled from Ephesus.

1.Cor.4.19 Iam.4.15.

22 ¶ And when he came downe to Cesarea, he went vp *to Hierusalem:* and when he had saluted the Churche, he went downe vnto Antiochia.

23 Nowe when he had taryed *there* a while, he departed, and went through the countrey of Galatia and Phrygia by order, strengthening all the disciples.

1.Cor.1.12.

24 And a certaine Iewe named * Apollos, borne at Alexandria, came to Ephesus, an eloquent man, and mightie in the Scriptures.

25 The same was *instructed* in the waye of the Lorde, and he spake feruentlye in the Spirit, and taughte diligently the things of the Lorde, and knewe but the baptisme of Iohn onely.

26 And he beganne to speake boldely in the Synagogue. Whome

Whome when * Aquila and Priſcilla had heard, they tooke him vnto them, and expounded vnto him the way of God more perfectly. *Rom. 16.3.*

27 And when he was minded to go into Achaia, the brethren exhorting him, wrote to the diſciples to receiue him: and after he was come thither, he holpe them much which had beleeued through grace.

28 For mightily he confuted publikely the Iewes, with great vehemencie, ſhewing by the Scriptures, that Ieſus was that Chriſt.

CHAP. XIX.

1 Certaine diſciples at Epheſus, 3 hauing only receiued Johns baptiſme, 2 knewe not the viſible gifts of the holy Ghoſt, wherewith God had beautified his Sonnes kingdome, 5 are baptized in the Name of Jeſus. 13 The Iewiſh exorciſtes 16 are beaten of the deuill. 19 Conjuring bookes are burnt. 24 Demetrius 29 raiſeth ſedition againſt Paul.

1 AND it came to paſſe, while Apollos was at Corinthus, that Paul when he paſſed through the vpper coaſtes, came to Epheſus, and found certaine diſciples,

2 And ſaid vnto them, Haue ye receiued the holy Ghoſt ſince ye beleeued? And they ſaid vnto him, We haue not ſo much as heard whether there be an holy Ghoſt.

3 And he ſaid vnto them, Vnto what were ye then baptized? And they ſaid, Vnto Iohns baptiſme.

4 Then ſaid Paul, * Iohn verely baptized with the baptiſme of repentance, ſaying vnto the people, that they ſhould beleeue in him, which ſhould come after him, that is, in Chriſt Ieſus. *Chap. 1.5. & 2.2. & 11. 16. mat. 3. 11. mar. 1.8 luke. 3.16. iohn. 1.26.*

5 And when they heard it, they were baptized in the Name of the Lord Ieſus.

6 So Paul laid his hands vpon them, and the holy Ghoſt came on them, & they ſpake the tongues, & prophecied.

7 And al the men were about twelue.

8 ¶ Moreouer he went into the Synagogue, and ſpake boldly ſo the ſpace of three moneths, diſputing and exhorting to the things that *appertaine* to the kingdome of God.

9 But when certaine were hardened, & diſobeyed, ſpeaking euil of the way *of God* before the multitude, he departed from them, and ſeparated the diſciples, and diſputed dayly in the ſchole of one Tyrannus.

10 And

10 And this was done by the ſpace of two yeres, ſo that al they which dwelt in Aſia, heard the word of the Lord Ieſus, both Iewes and Grecians.

11 And God wrought no ſmal miracles by the handes of Paul.

12 So that from his body were brought vnto the ſicke, kercheſs or handkercheſs, and the diſeaſes departed from them, and the euil ſpirits went out of them.

13 Then certaine of the vagabonde Iewes, exorciſtes, tooke in hand to name ouer them which had euil ſpirits, the Name of the Lord Ieſus, ſaying, We adiure you by Ieſus, whome Paul preacheth.

14 (And there were certaine ſonnes of Sceua a Iewe, the Prieſt, *about* ſeuen which did this)

15 And the euil ſpirit anſwered, and ſaid, Ieſus I acknowledge, and Paul I know: but who are ye?

16 And the man in whom the euil ſpirit was, ran on them, and ouercame them, and prenailed againſt them, ſo that they fled out of that houſe, naked, and wounded.

17 And this was knowen to al the Iewes and Grecians alſo, which dwelt at Epheſus, and feare came on them al, and the Name of the Lord Ieſus was magnified,

18 And many that beleeued, came and confeſſed, and ſhewed their workes.

19 Many alſo of them which vſed curious artes, brought their bookes, and burned them before al men, and they counted the price of them, and found it fiftie thouſand *pieces* of ſiluer.

20 So the worde of God grewe mightily, and prenailed.

21 ¶ Now when theſe things were accompliſhed, Paul purpoſed by the Spirit to paſſe through Macedonia and Achaia, and to goe to Hieruſalem, ſaying, After I haue bene there, I muſt alſo ſee Rome.

22 So ſent he into Macedonia, two of them that miniſtred vnto him, Timotheus and Eraſtus, *but* he remained in Aſia for a ſeaſon.

23 And the ſame time there aroſe no ſmal trouble about that way.

24 For a certaine man named Demetrius a ſiluerſmith, which made ſiluer temples of Diana, brought great gaines vnto the craftes men,

25 Whome he called together, with the workemen of like

like things, and said, Syrs, ye know that by this craft we haue our goods:

26 Moreouer ye see and heare, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout al Asia this Paul hath perswaded, and turned away much people, saying, That they be not gods which are made with hands.

27 So that not onely this thing is dangerous vnto vs, that this our portion shalbe reproued, but also that the temple of the great goddesse Diana should be nothing esteemed, and that it would come to passe that her magnificence, which all Asia & the world worshippeth, should be destroyed.

28 Now when they heard it, they were full of wrath, and cryed out, saying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

29 And the whole citie was full of confusion, and they rushed into the common place with one assent, and caught * Gaius, and * Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, and Pauls companions of his iourney. *Ro. 16.23. 1.cor.1.14.*

30 And whē Paul would haue entred in vnto the people, the disciples suffred him not. *Col.4.10.*

31 Certaine also of the chiefe of Asia, which were his friends, sent vnto him, desiring him that he woulde not present himselfe in the common place.

32 Some therefore cryed one thing, and some another: for the assemblye was out of order, and the more parte knew not wherfore they were come together.

33 And *some* of the company drewe forth Alexander, the Iewes thrusting him forwardes. Alexander then beckened with the hand, and would haue excused the matter to the people.

34 But when they knewe that he was a Iewe, there arose a shoute almost for the space of two houres, of all men crying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

35 Then the towne clarke when he had stayed the people, saied, Ye men of Ephesus, what man is it that knoweth not how that the city of the Ephesians is a worshipper of the great goddesse Diana, and of the *image*, which came downe from Iupiter?

36 Seing thē that no man can speake against these things, ye ought to be appeased, and to do nothing rashly.

37 For ye haue brought hither these men, which haue neyther committed sacrilege, neither do blaspheme

your

your goddesse.

38 Wherefore, if Demetrius and the craftes men which are with him, haue a matter against any man, the law is open, and there are Deputies: let them accuse one another.

39 But if ye inquire any thing concerning other matters, it may be determined in a lawful assemblye.

40 For we are euen in ieopardy to be accused of this dayes sedition, forasmuch as there is no cause, whereby we may giue a reason of this concourse of people.

41 And when he had thus spoken, he let the assembly departe.

CHAP. XX.

1 Paul appointeth to goe to Macedonia: 7 In Troas preaching vntill midnight, 9 Eutychus fel downe dead out of a window, 10 he raiseth him to life. 15 At Miletum, 17 hauing called the Elders of Ephesus together, 23 he declareth what things shall come vpon him selfe, 28 and others.

1 NOw after the tumult was appeased, Paul called the disciples vnto him, and embraced them, and departed to go into Macedonia.

2 And when he had gone through those parts, & had exhorted them with many wordes, he came into Grecia.

3 And hauing taried *there* three moneths, because the Iewes laid wait for him, as he was about to saile into Syria, he purposed to returne through Macedonia.

4 And there accompanied him into Asia Sopater of Berea, and of them of Thessalonica, Aristarchus, and Secundus, and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus, and of them of Asia Tychicus, and Trophimus.

5 These went before, and taried vs at Troas.

6 And we sailed forth from Philippi, after the dayes of vnleauened bread, and came vnto them to Troas in fiue dayes, where we abode seuen dayes.

7 And the first day of the weeke, the disciples being come together to breake bread, Paul preached vnto them, ready to depart on the morow, and continued the preaching vnto midnight.

8 And there were many lightes in an vpper chamber, where they were gathered together.

9 And there sate in a window a certaine yong man, named Eutychus, fallen into a deepe sleepe: and as Paul

was

was long preaching, he ouercome with sleepe, fel down from the third loft, and was taken vp dead.

10 But Paul went downe, and laid himselfe vpon him, and embraced him, saying, Trouble not your selues: for his life is in him.

11 Then when *Paul* was come vp againe, and had broken bread, and eaten, hauing spoken a long while till the dawning of the day, he so departed.

12 And they brought the boye aliue, and they were not a litle comforted.

13 ¶ Then we went before to ship, and sailed vnto *the cite* Assos, that we might receiue Paul there: for so had he appointed, and would himselfe go afoote.

14 Now when he was come vnto Assos, & we had receiued him, we came to Mitylenes.

15 And we sailed thence, and came the next day ouer against Chios, and the next day we arriued at Samos, & taryed at Trogylium: the next day we came to Miletū.

16 For Paul had determined to saile by Ephesus, because he would not spend the time in Asia: for he hasted to be, if he could possible, at Hierusalem, at the day of Pentecoste.

17 ¶ Wherefore from Miletum, he sent to Ephesus, and called the Elders of the Church.

18 Who when they were come to him, he said vnto them, Ye knowe from the firste daye that I came into Asia, after what maner I haue bene with you at all seasons,

19 Seruing the Lord with all modestie, and with many teares, and tentations, which came vnto me by the layings awaite of the Iewes,

20 And how I kept backe nothing that was profitable, but haue shewed you, & taught you openly and throughout euery house,

21 Witnessing both to the Iewes, and to the Grecians the repentance towarde God, and faith towarde our Lord Iesus Christ.

22 And now beholde, I go bound in the spirit vnto Hierusalem, & know not what things shal come vnto me there,

23 Sane that the holy Ghost witnesseth in euery citie, saying, that bondes and afflictions abide me.

24 But I passe not at all, neither is my life deare vnto my selfe, so that I may fulfil my course with ioye, and the ministration

ministration which I haue receiued of the Lord Iesus to testifie the Gospel of the grace of God.

25 And nowe beholde, I knowe that henceforth ye all, through whom I haue gone preaching the kingdome of God, shal see my face no more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men.

27 For I haue kept nothing backe, but haue shewed you al the counsel of God.

28 Take heede therefore vnto your selues, and to all the flocke, whereof the holy Ghost hath made you Ouerseers, to feede the Church of God, which he hath purchased with that his owne blood.

29 For I know this, that after my departing shal grieuous wolues enter in among you, not sparing the flocke.

30 Moreouer of your owne selues shal men arise speaking peruerse things, to drawe disciples after them.

31 Therefore watch, and remember that by *the space* of three yeres I ceassed not to warne euery one, both night and day with teares.

32 And now brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build further, and to giue you an inheritance, among all them which are sanctified.

33 I haue coueted no mans siluer, nor gold, nor apparell.

34 Yea, ye know, that these hands haue ministred vnto my
2.Cor.4.12. * necessities, & to them that were with me.

1.Thess.2.9. 35 I haue shewed you al things, how that so labouring, ye
2.Thess.3.8. ought to supporte the weake, and to remember the words of the Lord Iesus, how that he said, It is a blessed thing to giue, rather then to receiue.

36 And when he had thus spoken, he kneeled downe, and prayed with them all.

37 Then they wept all abounda[n]tly, & fel on Pauls necke, and kissed him,

38 Being chiefly sory for the wordes which he spake, That they should see his face no more. And they accompanied him vnto the ship.

CHAP. XXI.

1 *Paul goeth toward Hierusalem:* 8 *At Cesarea he talketh with Philippe the Euangelist:* 10 *Agabus foretelleth him of his bondes.* 17 *After he came to Hierusalem,* 26 *& into the Temple,*

Temple, 27 the Iewes laid hands on him: 32 Lysias the Captaine taketh him from them.

1 AND as we launched forth, and were departed from them, we came with a straight course vnto Coos, and the day following vnto the Rhodes, & from thence vnto Patara.

2 And we founde a ship that went ouer vnto Phenice, and went aboard, and set forth.

3 And when we had discouered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and sailed toward Syria, and arriued at Tyrus: for there the ship vnladed the burden.

4 And when we had found disciples, we taried there seuen dayes. And they tolde Paul through the Spirit, that he should not go vp to Hierusalem.

5 But when the dayes were ended, we departed & went our way, and they all accompanied vs with *their* wiues and children, euen out of the citie: and we kneeling downe on the shore, praied.

6 Then when we had embraced one another, we tooke ship, and they returned home.

7 And when we had ended the course from Tyrus, we arriued at Ptolemais, and saluted the brethren, and abode with them one day.

8 And the next day, Paul and we that were with him, departed, and came vnto Cesarea: and we entred into the house of * Philippe the Euangelist, which was one of the seuen *Deacons*, and abode with him. *Chap. 6. 5.*

9 Now he had foure daughters virgins, which did prophecie.

10 And as we taried there many dayes, there came a certaine Prophet from Iudea, named Agabus.

11 And when he was come vnto vs, he tooke Pauls girdle, and bound his owne hands and feete, and said, Thus saith the holy Ghost, So shall the Iewes at Hierusalem binde the man that oweth this girdle, and shall deliuer him into the hands of the Gentiles.

12 And when we had heard these things, both we and other of the same place besought him that he woulde not go vp to Hierusalem.

13 Then Paul answered, and said, What do ye weeping, and breaking mine heart? For I am readie not to be bounde onely, but also to die at Hierusalem for the

Name of the Lord Ieſus.

14 So when he would not be perſuaded, we ceaſed, ſaying, The will of the Lord be done.

15 And after thoſe dayes we truſſed vp our fardels, and went vp to Hieruſalem.

16 There went with vs alſo certeine of the diſciples of Ceſarea, and brought with them one Mnaſon of Cyprus, an olde diſciple, with whom we ſhould lodge.

17 And when we were come to Hieruſalem, the brethren receiued vs gladly.

18 And the next day Paul went in with vs vnto Iames: and all the Elders were there aſſembled.

19 And when he had embraced them, he tolde by order all things, that God had wrought among the Gentiles by his miniſtration.

20 So when they heard it, they glorified God, and ſaide vnto him, Thou ſeeſt, brother, howe many thouſande Iewes there are which beleeue, and they are all zealous of the Law:

21 Nowe they are informed of thee, that thou teacheſt all the Iewes, which are among the Gentiles, to forſake Moſes, and ſaiſt, that they ought not to circumciſe their ſonnes, neither to liue *after* the cuſtomes.

22 What is then *to be done*? the multitude muſt needes come together: for they ſhall heare that thou art come.

23 Do therefore this that we ſay to thee. We haue foure men, which haue made a vowe,

24 Them take, and purifie thy ſelfe with them, and contribute with them, that they may * ſhaue their heades: and all ſhall knowe, that thoſe thinges, whereof they haue bene informed concerning thee, are nothing, but that thou thy ſelfe alſo walkeſt and keepeſt the Lawe.

Iha. 18. 18. num. 6. 18.

25 For as touching the Gentiles, which beleeue, we haue written, & determined that they obſerue no ſuch thing, but that they keepe them ſelues from things offred to idoles, and from blood, and from that that is ſtrangled, and from fornication.

26 Then Paul tooke the men, and the next day was purified with them, and entred into the Temple, declaring the accompliſhment of the dayes of the purifica-

tion,

tion, vntill that an offring shoulde be offred for euerie one of them.

27 And when the seuen dayes were almost ended, the Iewes which were of Asia (when they sawe him in the Temple) moued all the people, and layde handes on him,

28 Crying, Men of Israel, helpe: this is the man that teacheth all men euerie where against the people, and the Lawe, and this place: moreouer, he hath brought Grecians into the Temple, and hath polluted this holy place.

29 For they had seene before Trophimus an Ephesian with him in the citie, whome they supposed that Paul had brought into the Temple.

30 Then all the citie was moued, and the people ran together: and they tooke Paul and drewe him out of the Temple, and forthwith the doores were shut.

31 But as they went about to kill him, tydings came vnto the chiefe Captaine of the band, that all Hierusalem was on an vproare.

32 Who immediatly tooke souldiers & Centurions, and ran downe vnto them: and when they sawe the chiefe Captaine and the souldiers, they left beating of Paul.

33 Then the chiefe Captaine came nere and tooke him, and commaunded him to be bounde with two chaines, and demaunded who he was, and what he had done.

34 And one cried this, another that, among the people. So when he could not knowe the certeintie for the tumult, he commanded him to be lead into the castel.

35 And when he came to the grieces, it was so that he was borne of the souldiers, for the violence of the people.

36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, Away with him.

37 And as Paul should haue bene lead into the castel, he saide vnto the chiefe Captaine, May I speake vnto thee? Who said, Canst thou *speake* Greeke?

38 Art not thou the Egyptian who before these dayes raised a sedition, and lead out into the wildernes fowre thousand men that were murtherers?

39 Then Paul sayde, Doubtles I am a man which am a Iewe, and citizen of Tarsus, a famous citie of Cilicia,

and I beſeeche thee, ſuffer me to ſpeake vnto the people.

40 And when he had giuen him licence, Paul ſtoode on the greeces,& beckned with the hand vnto the people: and when there was made great ſilence,he ſpake vnto them in the Hebrewe tongue,ſaying,

CHAP. XXII.

1 Paul yeldeth a reaſon of his faith, 22 and the Iewes heare him a while: 23 But ſo ſoone as they cried out, 24 he is commanded to be ſcourged and examined, 27 and ſo declareth that he is a citizen of Rome.

1 YE men,brethren and Fathers,heare my defence now towards you.

2 (And when they hearde that he ſpake in the Hebrewe tongue to them,they kept the more ſilence,and he ſaid)

3 I am verely a man,*which am* a Iewe,borne in Tarſus in Cilicia,but brought vp in this citie at the feete of Gamaliel,and inſtructed according to the perfect maner of the Law of the Fathers,and was zealous toward God,as ye all are this day.

4 And I perſecuted this way vnto the death, binding & deliuering into priſon both men and women.

5 As alſo the chiefe Prieſt doeth beare me witnes, and all the companie of the Elders: of whome alſo I receiued letters vnto the brethren, and went to Damaſcus to bring them which were there,bounde vnto Hieruſalem,that they might be puniſhed.

6 ¶ And ſo it was, as I iourneyed and was come neere vnto Damaſcus about noone, that ſodenly there ſhone from heauen a great light round about me.

7 So I fell vnto the earth,and heard a voice,ſaying vnto me,Saul,Saul,why perſecuteſt thou me?

8 Then I aunſwered, Who art thou, Lorde? And he ſayde to me,I am Ieſus of Nazareth,whome thou perſecuteſt.

9 Moreouer they that were with me, ſawe in deede a light and were afraide: but they heard not the voice of him that ſpake vnto me.

10 Then I ſayde,What ſhall I doe Lord? And the Lord ſayde vnto me,Ariſe, and go into Damaſcus: and there it ſhalbe tolde thee of all thinges, which are appointed

ted for thee to doe.
11 So when I could not see for the glorie of that light, I was lead by the hande of them that were with me, and came into Damascus.
12 And one Ananias a godly man, as perteining to the Lawe, hauing good report of all the Iewes which dwelt there,
13 Came vnto me, and stood, and said vnto me, Brother Saul, receiue thy sight: and that same houre I looked vpon him.
14 And he saide, the God of our fathers hath appointed thee, that thou shouldest knowe his will, and shouldest see that Iust one, and shouldest heare the voyce of his mouth.
15 For thou shalt be his witnes vnto all mē of the things, which thou hast seene and heard.
16 Nowe therefore why tarriest thou? Arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sinnes, in calling on the Name of the Lord.
17 ¶ And it came to passe, that when I was come againe to Hierusalem, and prayed in the Temple, I was in a traunce,
18 And saw him saying vnto me, Make hast, and get thee quickly out of Hierusalem: for they will not receiue thy witnes concerning me.
19 Then I saide, Lord, they knowe that I prisoned, and beat in euery Synagogue them that beleeued in thee.
20 And when the blood of thy martyr Steuen was shed, I also stoode by, and consented vnto his death, and kept the clothes of them that slew him.
21 Then he said vnto me, Depart: for I will sende thee farre hence vnto the Gentiles.
22 ¶ And they hearde him vnto this worde, *but* then they lift vp their voyces, and saide, Away with such a fellowe from the earth: for it is not meete that he should liue.
23 And as they cried and cast of their clothes, and threw dust into the aire,
24 The chiefe captaine commaunded him to be lead into the castel, and bade that he should be scourged, and examined, that he might knowe wherefore they cryed so on him.

25 And as they bound him with thongs, Paul saide vnto the Centurion that stoode by, Is it lawfull for you to scourge one that is a Romane, and not condemned?
26 Now when the Centurion heard it, he went, & tolde the chiefe captaine, saying, Take heede what thou doest: for this man is a Romane.
27 Then the chiefe captaine came, and saide to him, Tell me, art thou a Romane? And he said, Yea.
28 And the chiefe captaine answered, With a great summe obtained I this freedome. Then Paul said, But I was so borne.
29 Then straight way they departed from him, which should haue examined him: and the chiefe captaine also was afraid, after he knewe that he was a Romane, and that he had bound him.
30 On the next day, because he would haue knowen the certaintie wherefore he was accused of the Iewes, he loosed him from *his* bondes, and commaunded the hie Priests and all their Council to come *together*: and he brought Paul, and set him before them.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 As Paul pleadeth his cause, 2 Ananias commandeth them to smite him: 7 Dissension among his accusers. 11 God encourageth him. 14 The Iewes laying wait for Paul, 20 is declared vnto the chiefe captaine: 27 He sendeth him to Felix the Gouernour.

1 AND Paul beheld earnestly the Councel, and said, Men and brethren, I haue in all good conscience serued God vntill this day.
2 Then the high Priest Ananias commaunded them that stood by, to smite him on the mouth.
3 Then said Paul to him, God will smite thee, thou whited wall: for thou sittest to iudge me according to the Law, and transgressing the Law, commandest thou me to be smitten?
4 And they that stoode by, saide, Reuilest thou Gods hie Priest?
5 Then said Paul, I knew not, brethren, that he was the hie Priest: for it is written, * Thou shalt not speake euill of the Ruler of thy people.
6 But when Paul perceiued that the one part were of the Sadduces, and the other of the Pharises, he cryed in the Councel,

Exod. 22.27

Council, Men and brethren, * I am a Phariſe, the ſonne of a Phariſe: I am accuſed of the hope and reſurrection of the dead. *Chap.24.21. philip.3.5.

7 And when he had ſaid this, there was a diſſenſion betweene the Phariſes and the Sadduces, ſo that the multitude was deuided.

8 * For the Sadduces ſaye that there is no reſurrection, neither Angel, nor ſpirit: but the Phariſes confeſſe both. *Mat.22.23.

9 Then there was a great crie: and the Scribes of the Phariſes part roſe vp, and ſtroue, ſaying, We finde none euill in this man: but if a ſpirit or an Angel hath ſpoken to him, let vs not fight againſt God.

10 And when there was a great diſſenſion, the chiefe captaine, fearing leſt Paul ſhoulde haue bene pulled in pieces of them, commanded the ſouldiers to go down, and to take him from among them, and to bring him into the caſtel.

11 ¶ Nowe the night following the Lord ſtoode by him, and ſaid, be of good courage, Paul: for as thou haſt teſtified of me in Hieruſalem, ſo muſt thou beare witnes alſo at Rome.

12 And when the day was come, certaine of the Iewes made an aſſemblie, and bound them ſelues with a curſe, ſaying, that they woulde neither eate nor drinke, till they had killed Paul.

13 And they were more then fourtie, which had made this conſpiracie.

14 And they came to the chiefe Prieſts and Elders, and ſaid, We haue bounde our ſelues with a ſolemne curſe, that we will eate nothing, vntill we haue ſlaine Paul.

15 Nowe therefore, ye and the Councel ſignifie to the chiefe captaine, that he bring him forth vnto you to morow, as though ye would know ſome thing more perfectly of him, and we, or euer he come nere, will be readie to kill him.

16 But when Pauls ſiſters ſonne heard of their laying awaite, he went, and entred into the caſtel, & tolde Paul.

17 And Paul called one of the Centurions vnto him, and ſaid, Take this yong man hence vnto the chiefe captaine: for he hath a certaine thing to ſhew him.

18 So he toke him & brought him to the chiefe captaine,

and said, Paul the prisoner called me vnto him, & prayed me to bring this yong man vnto thee, which hath some thing to say vnto thee.

19 Then the chiefe captaine tooke him by the hand, and went apart with him alone, and asked him, What hast thou to shew me?

20 And he said, The Iewes haue conspired to desire thee, that thou wouldest bring forth Paul to morow into the Councel, as though they woulde inquire somewhat of him more perfectly:

21 But let them not perswade thee: for there lie in waite for him of them, more then fourtie men, which haue bounde them selues with a curse, that they will neither eate nor drinke, till they haue killed him: and now are they readie, and wait for thy promes.

22 The chiefe captaine then let the yong man depart, after he had charged him to vtter it to no man, that he had[a] shewed him these things.

[a] *Greeke, that thou hast shewed these things to me.*

23 And he called vnto him two certaine Centurions, saying, Make readie two hundreth souldiers that they may go to Cesarea, and horsemen three score and ten, and two hundreth with dartes, at the third houre of the night.

24 And let them make readie an horse that Paul being set on, may be brought safe vnto Felix the Gouernour.

25 And he wrote an epistle in this maner:

26 Claudius Lysias vnto the most noble Gouernour Felix sendeth greeting.

27 As this man was taken of the Iewes, and should haue bene killed of them, I came vpon them with the garison, and rescued him, perceiuing that he was a Romane.

28 And when I woulde haue knowen the cause, wherefore they accused him, I brought him forth into their Councel.

29 *There* I perceiued that he was accused of questions of their Lawe, but had no crime worthie of death, or of bondes.

30 And when it was shewed me, how that the Iewes layed wait for the man, I sent *him* straight way to thee, & commaunded his accusers to speake before thee the things that they had against him. Farewell.

31 Then

31 Then the ſouldiers as it was commanded them, tooke Paul, and brought him by night to Antipatris.
32 And the next day, they left the horſemen to go with him, and returned vnto the Caſtel.
33 Nowe when they came to Ceſarea, they delinered the Epiſtle to the Gouernour, and preſented Paul alſo vnto him.
34 So when the Gouernour had read it, he asked of what prouince he was: and when he vnderſtoode that he was of Cilicia,
35 I will heare thee, ſaide he, when thine accuſers alſo are come, and commanded him to be kept in Herods iudgement hall.

CHAP. XXIIII.

Tertullus accuſeth Paul: 10 *He anſwereth for himſelfe:* 25 *He preacheth Chriſt to the Gouernour and his wife.* 27 *Felix hopeth, but in vaine, to receiue a bribe,* 28 *who going from his office leaueth Paul in priſon.*

1 NOwe after fiue daies, Ananias the hie Prieſt came downe with the Elders, and *with* Tertullus a certaine oratour, which appeared before the Gouernour againſt Paul.
2 And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuſe *him*, ſaying, Seeing that we haue obtained great quietnes through thee, and that many worthie things are done vnto this nation through thy prouidence,
3 We acknowledge it wholly, and in all places moſt noble Felix, with all thankes.
4 But that I be not tedious vnto thee, I pray thee, that thou wouldeſt heare vs of thy courteſie a few wordes.
5 Certainely we haue found this man a peſtilent ſelow, & a moner of ſedition among al the Iewes throughout the worlde, and a chief mainteiner of the ſecte of the Nazarites:
6 And hath gone about to pollute the Temple: therfore we tooke him, and would haue iudged him according to our Lawe:
7 But the chief captaine Lyſias came vpon vs, and with great violence tooke him out of our handes,
8 Commaunding his accuſers to come to thee: of whom thou mayeſt (if thou wilt inquire) know al theſe things whereof we accuſe him.

9 And the Iewes likewise affirmed, saying that it was so.
10 Then Paul, after that the gouernour had beckened vnto him that he should speake, answered, I doe the more gladly answere for my self, for as much as I know that thou hast bene of many yeres a iudge vnto this nation,
11 Seeing that thou mayest knowe, that there are but twelue daies since I came vp to worship in Hierusalem.
12 And they neither founde me in the Temple disputing with any man, neither making vproare among the people, neither in the Synagogues, nor in the citie.
13 Neither can they prone the things, whereof they now accuse me.
14 But this I confesse vnto thee, that after the way (which they call heresie) so worship I the God of my fathers, beleeuing all things which are written in the Law and the Prophetes,
15 And haue hope towards God, that the resurrection of the dead, which they them selues looke for also, shalbe both of iust and vniust.
16 And herein I endeuour my self to haue alway a cleare conscience toward God, and toward men.
17 Now after many yeres, I came and brought almes to my nation and offrings.
18 At what time, certaine Iewes of Asia founde me purified in the Temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult.
19 Who ought to haue bene present before thee, and accuse *me*, if they had ought against me.
20 Or let these them selues say, if they haue founde any vniust thing in me, while I stoode in the Councill,
21 Except *it be* for this one voyce, that I cried standing among them, Of the resurrection of the dead am I accused of you this day.
22 Nowe when Felix hearde these things, he deferred them, and said, When I shall more perfectly knowe the things which concerne this way, by the comming of Lysias the chiefe Captaine, I will decise your matter.
23 Then he commaunded a Centurion to keepe Paul, and that he should haue ease, and that he should forbid none of his acquaintance to minister vnto him, or to come vnto him.

24 ¶ And

24 ¶ And after certaine dayes, came Felix with his wife Drusilla, which was a Ieweſſe, *and* he called forth Paul, and heard him of the faith in Christ.
25 And as he disputed of righteousnes and temperance, and of the iudgement to come, Felix trembled, and answered, Go thy way for this time, and when I haue cõuenient time, I will call for thee.
26 He hõped also that money shoulde haue bene ginen him of Paul, that he might looſe him: wherefore he sent for him the ostener, and communed with him.
27 When two yeres were expired, Porcius Festus came into Felix roume: and *Felix* willing to get fauour of the Iewes, left Paul bounde.

CHAP. XXV.

1 Festus succeeding Felix, 6 commandeth Paul to be brought forth. 11 Paul appealeth vnto Cesar. 14 Festus openeth Pauls matter to King Agrippa, 23 and bringeth him before him, 27 that he may vnderstande his cause.

1 WHen Festus was then come into the prouince, after three dayes he went vp from Cesarea vnto Hierusalem.
2 Then the high Priest, and the chiefe of the Iewes appeared before him against Paul: and they besought him,
3 And desired fauour against him, that he would sende for him to Hierusalem: and they laid waite to kill him by the way.
4 But Festus answered, that Paul should be kept at Cesarea, and that he him self would shortly depart *thither*.
5 Let them therfore, said he, which among you are able, come downe with vs: and if there be any wickednes in the man, let them accuse him.
6 ¶ Nowe when he had taried among them no more then ten dayes, he went downe to Cesarea, and the next day sate in the iudgement seat, and commaunded Paul to be brought.
7 And when he was come, the Iewes which were come from Hierusalem, stoode about him, and laid many and grieuous complaintes against Paul, whereof they could make no plaine proofe,
8 Forasmuch as he answered, that he had neither offended any thing against the law of the Iewes, neither against the temple, nor against Cesar.

9 Yet

9 Yet Festus willing to get fauour of the Iewes, answered Paul and said, Wilt thou go vp to Hierusalem, and there be iudged of these things before me?

10 Then said Paul, I stande at Cesars iudgement seate, where I ought to be iudged: to the Iewes I haue done no wrong, as thou very well knowest.

11 For if I haue done wrong, or committed any thing worthie of death, I refuse not to die: but if there be none of these things whereof they accuse me, no man to pleasure them, can deliuer me to them: I appeale vnto Cesar.

12 Then when Festus had spoken with the Councill, he answered, Hast thou appealed vnto Cesar? vnto Cesar shalt thou go.

13 ¶ And after certaine dayes, King Agrippa and Bernice came downe to Cesarea to salute Festus.

14 And whē they had remained there many dayes, Festus declared Pauls cause vnto the King, saying, There is a certaine man left in prison by Felix,

15 Of whom when I came to Hierusalem, the high Priests and Elders of the Iewes informed me, and desired to haue iudgement against him.

16 To whō I answered, that it is not the maner of the Romanes for fauour to deliuer any mā to the death, before that he which is accused, haue the accusers before him, and haue place to defende him selfe, concerning the crime.

17 Therefore when they were come hither, without delay the day folowing I sate on the iudgement seate, and commaunded the man to be brought forth.

18 Against whom when the accusers stoode vp, they brought no crime of such things as I supposed:

19 But had certaine questions against him of their owne superstition, and of one Iesus which was dead, whome Paul affirmed to be aliue.

20 And because I doubted of such maner of question, I asked him whether he would go to Hierusalem, & there be iudged of these things.

21 But because he appealed to be reserued to the examination of Augustus, I commaunded him to be kept, tyll I might sende him to Cesar.

22 Then Agrippa sayd vnto Festus, I would also heare the man

man my self. To morowe, said he, thou shalt heare him.
23 And on the morowe when Agrippa was come and Bernice with great pompe, and were entred into the Common hall with the chiefe captaines and chiefe men of the citie, at Festus cõmaundement Paul was brought forth.
24 And Festus sayde, King Agrippa, and all men which are present with vs, ye see this man, about whom all the multitude of the Iewes haue called vpon me, both at Hierusalem, and here, crying, that he ought not to liue any longer.
25 Yet haue I founde nothing worthy of death, that he hath committed: neuertheles, seeing that he hath appealed to Augustus, I haue determined to send him.
26 Of whom I haue no certaine thing to write vnto my Lord: wherefore I haue brought him forth vnto you, & specially vnto thee, King Agrippa, that after examination had, I might haue somewhat to write.
27 For me thinketh it vnreasonable to sende a prisoner, and not to shewe the causes which are *layed* against him.

CHAP. XXVI.

1 Paul in the presence of Agrippa, 4 declareth his life from his childhood, 16 & his calling, 22 with such efficacie of words, 28 that almost he perswadeth him to Christianitie: 30 but he and his companie departe doing nothing in Pauls matter.

1 THen Agrippa sayd vnto Paul, Thou art permitted to speake for thy selfe. So Paul stretched forth the hand, and answered for him selfe.
2 I thinke my selfe happie, King Agrippa, because I shall answere this day before thee of all the things whereof I am accused of the Iewes.
3 Chiefly, because thou hast knowledge of all customes, and questions which are among the Iewes: wherefore, I beseeche thee, to heare me paciently.
4 As touching my life from *my* childehoode, and what it was from the beginning among mine owne nation at Hierusalem, know all the Iewes,
5 Which knewe me heretofore, euen from my elders (if they would testifie) that after the most straite secte of our religion I liued a Pharise.
6 And nowe I stande and am accused for the hope of the promes

promes made of God vnto our fathers.
7 Whereunto our twelue tribes instantly serving God day and night, hope to come: for the which hopes sake, O King Agrippa, I am accused of the Iewes.
8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible vnto you, that God should raise againe the dead?
9 I also verely thought in my selfe, that I ought to do manie contrarie things against the Name of IESVS of Nazareth.
Chap. 8. 3. 10 * Which thing I also did in Hierusalem: for manie of the Saintes I shut vp in prison, hauing receiued authoritie of the high Priestes, and when they were put to death, I gaue my sentence.
11 And I punished them throughout all the Synagogues, and compelled them to blaspheme, & being more mad against them, I persecuted thē, euen vnto strange cities.
Chap. 9. 2. 12 At which time, euen as I went to * Damascus with authoritie, and commission from the high Priests,
13 At midday, O King, I saw in the way a light from heauen, passing the brightnes of the sunne, shine rounde about me, and them which went with me.
14 So when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voyce speaking vnto me, and saying in the Hebrewe tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? It is harde for thee to kicke against prickes.
15 Then I said, Who art thou, Lord? And he said, I am Iesus whom thou persecutest.
16 But rise and stand vp on thy feete: for I haue appeared vnto thee for this purpose, to appoint thee a minister and a witnes, both of the thinges which thou hast seene, and of the things in the which I will appeare vnto thee,
17 Deliuering thee from this people, and from the Gentiles, vnto whom now I sende thee,
18 To open their eyes, that they may turne from darknes to light, and from the power of Satan vnto God, that they may receyue forgiuenes of sinnes, and inheritance among them, which are sanctified by faith in me.
19 Wherefore, King Agrippa, I was not disobedient vnto the heauenly vision,
Chap. 9. 22. 20 * But shewed first vnto them of Damascus, and at
26, & 13. 4 Hierusalem, and throughout all the coastes of Iudea, & then

then to the Gentiles, that they should repent, and turne
to God, and do workes worthie amendement of life.
21 For this cause the Iewes caught me in the * Temple, *Act.21.30.
and went about to kill me.
22 Neuertheles, I obteined helpe of God, and continue
vnto this day, witnessing both to small and to great, say-
ing none other things, then those which the Prophetes
and Moses did say should come,
23 To wit, that Christ should suffer, and that he shoulde
be the first that should rise from the dead, and shoulde
shewe light vnto this people, and to the Gentiles.
24 And as he thus answered for him selfe, Festus sayde
with a loude voice, Paul, thou art besides thy selfe: much
learning doeth make thee mad.
25 But he said, I am not mad, O noble Festus, but I speake
the wordes of trueth and sobernes.
26 For the King knoweth of these things, before whome
also I speake boldely: for I am persuaded that none of
these things are hid from him: for this thing was not
done in a corner.
27 O King Agrippa, beleeuest thou the Prophetes? I know
that thou beleeuest.
28 Then Agrippa sayd vnto Paul, Almost thou persuadest
me to become a Christian.
29 Then Paul said, I would to God that not onely thou,
but also all that heare me to day, were both almost, and
altogether such as I am, except these bondes.
30 And when he had thus spoken, the King rose vp, & the
gouernour, and Bernice, and they that sate with them.
31 And when they were gone apart, they talked betwene
them selues, saying, This man doeth nothing worthie of
death, nor of bondes.
32 Then said Agrippa vnto Festus, This man might haue
bene loosed, if he had not appealed vnto Cesar.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 *Paul 7.9 foretelleth the peril of the vyage, 11 but he is not beleeued. 14 They are tossed to and fro with the tempest, 21.41 and suffer shipwrack: 34 yet al safe & saued 44 escape to land.*

1 NOw when it was concluded, that we should saile in-
to Italie, they deliuered both Paul, and certaine o-
ther prisoners vnto a Centurion named Iulius, of the
band of Augustus.

2 And

2. Cor. 11. 25.

2 And * we entred into a ship of Adramyttium purposing to saile by the coastes of Asia, and launched forth, & had Aristarchus of Macedonia, a Thessalonian, with vs.

3 And the next day we arriued at Sidō: and Iulius courteously intreated Paul, and gaue him libertie to go vnto his friends, that they might refresh him.

4 And from thence we launched, and sailed hard by Cyprus, because the windes were contrarie.

5 Then sailed we ouer the sea by Cilicia, and Pamphylia, and came to Myra, *a citie* in Lycia.

6 And there the Centurion founde a shippe of Alexandria, sailing into Italie, and put vs therein.

7 And when we had sailed slowly manie dayes, & scarce were come against Gnidum, because the winde suffred vs not, we sailed hard by Candie, neere to Salmone.

8 And with much a do sailed beyond it, and came vnto a certaine place called the Faire hauens, neere vnto the which was the citie Lasea.

9 So when much time was spent, and sailing was nowe ieopardous, because also the Fast was nowe passed, Paul exhorted *them*,

10 And sayd vnto them, Syrs, I see that this viage will be with hurt and much damage, not of the lading and ship onely, but also of our liues.

11 Nenertheles the Centurion beleeued rather the gouernour and the master of the ship, then those things which were spoken of Paul.

12 And because the hauen was not commodious to winter in, many tooke counsell to depart thence, if by anie meanes they might attaine to Phenice, *there* to winter, which is an hauen of Candie, and lieth towarde the Southwest & by West, and Northwest & by West.

13 And when the Southerne winde blewe softly, they supposing to obteine their purpose, loosed neerer, and sailed by Candie.

14 But anon after, there arose by it a stormy winde called Enroclydon.

15 And when the shippe was caught, and could not resist the winde, we let her goe, and were caried away.

16 And we ran vnder a litle yle named Clauda, and had much a do to get the boat.

17 Which they tooke vp and vsed all helpe, vndergirding the

the ship, fearing least they should haue fallen into Syrtes, and they strake saile, and so were caried.

28 The next day when we were tossed with an exceeding tempest, they lightned the ship.

29 And the third day we cast out with our owne handes the takling of the ship.

30 And when neither sunne nor starres in manie dales appeared, and no small tempest lay vpon vs, all hope that we should be saued, was then taken away.

31 But after long abstinence, Paul stoode forth in the middes of them, and said, Syrs, ye should haue hearkened to me, and not haue loosed from Candie: so should ye haue gained this hurt and losse.

32 But now I exhort you to be of good courage: for there shalbe no losse of anie mans life among you, saue of the ship onely.

33 For there stoode by me this night the Angel of God, whose I am, and whome I serue,

34 Saying, Feare not, Paul: for thou must be brought before Cesar: and lo, God hath giuen vnto thee freely all that saile with thee.

35 Wherefore, sirs, be of good courage: for I beleeue God, that it shalbe so as it hath bene tolde me.

36 Howbeit, we must be cast into a certaine ylande.

37 And when the fourteenth night was come, as we were caried to and fro in the Adriatical *sea* about midnight, the shipmen deemed that some countrey approched vnto them,

38 And sounded, and found it twentie fathoms: and whē they had gone a litle further, they sounded againe, and found fiftene fathoms.

39 Then fearing lest they should haue fallen into some rough places, they cast foure ancres out of the sterne, & wished that the day were come.

40 Now as the mariners were about to flee out of the ship, and had let downe the boate into the sea vnder a colour as though they woulde haue cast ancres out of the foreship,

41 Paul said vnto the Centurion & the souldiers, Except these abide in the ship, ye can not be safe.

42 Then the souldiers cut of the ropes of the boat, and let it fall away.

33 And when it began to be day, Paul exhorted them all to take meate, saying, This is the fourteenth day that ye haue tarried, and continued fasting, receiuing nothing:

34 Wherefore I exhort you to take meate: for this is for your safegarde: for there shall not an heare fall from the head of any of you.

35 And when he had thus spoken, he tooke bread, and gaue thankes to God, in presence of them all, and brake it, and began to eate.

36 Then were they all of good courage, and they also tooke meate.

37 Now we were in the shippe in all two hundreth three score and sixteene soules.

38 And when they had eaten ynough, they lightned the ship, and cast out the wheat into the sea.

39 And when it was day, they knewe not the countrey, but they spied a certaine creeke with a banke, into the which they were minded (if it were possible) to thrust in the ship.

40 So when they had taken vp the ancres, they committed *the ship* vnto the sea, & loosed the rudder bondes, & hoised vp the maine saile to the wind, & drew to the shore.

41 And when they fell into a place, where two seas met, they thrust in the ship: and the forepart stucke fast, and could not be moued, but the hinder parte was broken with the violence of the wawes.

42 Then the souldiers counsel was to kil the prisoners, lest any of them, when he had swome out, should flee away.

43 But the Centurion willing to saue Paul, staied them from *this* counsell, and commanded that they that could swimme, should cast them selues first into the sea, and go out to land:

44 And the other, some on boardes, and some on certaine *peces* of the shippe: and so it came to passe that they came all safe to land.

CHAP. XXVIII.

2. The Barbarians courteise towards Paul and his companie. 3 A viper on Pauls hand: 6 He shaketh it of without harme: 8 Publius 9 and others are by him healed. 11 They departe from Melita, 16 and come to Rome. 17 Paul preacheth to the Iewes 20 the cause of his comming: 23 He preacheth Jesus 30 two yere.

1 And

1 AND when they were come safe, then they knewe that
the yle was called Melita.
2 And the Barbarians shewed vs no litle kindnes: for they
kindled a fire, and receiued vs euerie one, because of
the present showre, and because of the colde.
3 And when Paul had gathered a nomber of stickes, and
laid them on the fire, there came a viper out of the
heat, and leapt on his hand.
4 Now when the Barbarians sawe the worme hang on
his hand, they said among them selues, This man surely
is a murtherer, whom, though he hath escaped the sea,
yet Vengeance hath not suffred to liue.
5 But he shooke of the worme into the fire, and felt no
harme.
6 Howbeit they waited when he should haue swolne, or
fallen downe dead sodenly: but after they had looked
a great while, and sawe no inconuenience come to him,
they changed their mindes and saide, That he was a
God.
7 In the same quarters, the chiefe man of the yle (whose
name was Publius) had possessions: the same receiued
vs, and lodged vs three daies courteously.
8 And so it was, that the father of Publius lay sicke of the
feuer, and of a bloodie flixe: to whom Paul entred in, &
when he prayed, he laide *his* handes on him, and healed
him.
9 When this then was done, other also in the yle, which
had diseases, came to him and were healed,
10 Which also did vs great honour: and when we depar-
ted, they laded vs with things necessarie.
11 ¶ Now after three moneths we departed in a ship of
Alexandria, which had wintered in the yle, whose badge
was Castor and Pollux.
12 And when we arriued at Syracuse, we taried *there* three
daies.
13 And from thence we fet a compasse, and came to Rhe-
gium: and after one day, the South winde blewe, and
we came the second day to Putioli:
14 Where we found brethren, and were desired to tarie
with them seuen daies, and so we went toward Rome.
15 ¶ And from thence, when the brethrē heard of vs, they
came to meete vs at the Market of Appius, and at the

three tauernes, whom when Paul ſaw, he thanked God, and waxed bolde.

16 So when we came to Rome, the Centurion delinered the priſoners to the generall captaine: but Paul was ſuffred to dwel by him ſelf with a ſouldier that kept him.

17 And the third day after, Paul called the chiefe of the Iewes together: and when they were come, he ſaid vnto them, Men *and* brethren, though I haue committed nothing againſt the people, or lawes of the Fathers, yet was I deliuered priſoner from Hieruſalem into the handes of the Romanes.

18 Who when they had examined me, would haue let me go, becauſe there was no cauſe of death in me.

19 But when the Iewes ſpake contrarie, I was conſtrained to appeale vnto Ceſar, not becauſe I had ought to accuſe my nation of.

20 For this cauſe therefore haue I called for you, *to ſee you, &* to ſpeake with *you:* for that hope of Iſraels ſake, I am bound with this chayne.

21 Then they ſaid vnto him, We neither receiued letters out of Iudea concerning thee, neither came anie of the brethren that ſhewed or ſpake anie euil of thee.

22 But we will heare of thee what thou thinkeſt: for as concerning this ſecte, we know that euerie where it is ſpoken againſt.

23 And when they had appointed him a day, there came manie vnto him into *his* lodging, to whom he expounded and teſtified the kingdome of God, and perſuading them thoſe things that concerne Ieſus, both out of the Lawe of Moſes, and out of the Prophets, from morning to night.

24 And ſome were perſuaded with the thinges, which were ſpoken, and ſome beleeued not.

25 Therefore when they agreed not among themſelues, they departed, after that Paul had ſpoken one word, *to wit,* Wel ſpake the holie Ghoſt by Eſaias the Prophet vnto our Fathers,

Iſa.6.9. 26 Saying, * Go vnto this people, and ſay, By hearing ye
mat.13.14. ſhall heare, and ſhall not vnderſtand, and ſeeing ye ſhall
zear.4.12. ſee, and not perceiue.
luke 8.10. 27 For the heart of this people is waxed fat, and their
ſchn.12.40. eares are dull of hearing, and with their eyes haue they
rom.11.8. winked,

winked, least they should see with *their* eyes, and heare with *their* eares, and vnderstand with *their* heartes, and should returne that I might heale them.
28 Be it knowen therefore vnto you, that this saluation of God is sent to the Gentiles, and they shal heare it.
29 And when he had saide these things, the Iewes departed, and had great reasoning among them selues.
30 And Paul remained two yeres full in an house hired for him selfe, and receiued all that came in vnto him,
31 Preaching the kingdome of God, and teaching those things, which concerne the Lord Iesus Christ, with all boldenes of speache, without let.

THE EPISTLE OF THE APOSTLE PAVL TO THE ROMANES.

CHAP. I.

1 *He first sheweth on what authoritie his Apostleship standeth,* 15 *Then he commendeth the Gospell,* 16 *by which God setteth out his power to those that are saued* 17 *by faith,* 21 *but were guiltie of wicked vnthankefulnes to God.* 26 *For which his wrath was worthilie powred on them,* 29 *so that they ranne headlong into all kindes of sinne.*

1 PAul a seruant of IESVS CHRIST, called *to be* an Apostle, * put apart *to preache* the Gospel of God, * Act. 13.2.
2 (Which he had promised afore by his Prophets in the holie Scriptures)
3 Concerning his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lord (which was made of the seede of Dauid, according to the flesh,
4 And declared mightily *to be* the Sonne of God, touching the Spirit of sanctification by the resurrection frō the dead)
5 By whome we haue receiued grace and Apostleship (that obedience might be giuen vnto the faith) for his Name among all the Gentiles,
6 Among whom ye be also the called of Iesus Christ:
7 To all you that be at Rome beloued of God, called *to*

be Saintes: Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

8 First I thanke my God through Iesus Christ for you all, because your faith is published throughout the whole worlde.

9 For God is my witnes, (whome I serue in my spirit in the Gospel of his Sonne) that without ceasing I make mention of you:

10 Alwaies in my praiers, beseeching, that by some meanes, one time or other I might haue a prosperous iourney by the will of God, to come vnto you.

11 For I long to see you, that I might bestowe among you some spirituall gift, that you might be strengthened:

12 That is, that I might be comforted together with you, through *our* mutual faith, both yours and mine.

13 Now my brethren, I would that ye should not be ignorant, how that I haue oftentimes purposed to come vnto you (but haue bene let hitherto) that I might haue some fruite also among you, as *I haue* among the other Gentiles,

14 I am detter both to the Grecians, and to the Barbarians, both to the wise men and vnto the vnwise.

15 Therefore, as much as in me is, I am readie to preach the Gospel to you also that are at Rome.

16 For I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God vnto saluation to euerie one that beleeueth, to the Iewe first, and also to the Grecian.

17 For by it the righteousnes of God is reuealed *frō* faith to faith: as it is written, * The iust shal liue by faith. *Hab. 2, 4.*

18 For the wrath of God is reuealed from heauen against all vngodlines, and vnrighteousnes of men, which withholde the trueth in vnrighteousnes,

19 Forasmuch as that, which may be knowen of God, is manifest in them: for God hath shewed it vnto them.

20 For the inuisible things of him, that is, his eternal power and Godhead, are seene by the creation of the worlde, being considered in *his* workes, to the intent that they should be without excuse:

21 Because that when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankefull, but became vaine in their thoughtes, and their foolishe heart was full of darknes.

22 When

22 When they professed them selues to be wise, they became fooles.
23 For they turned the glory of the incorruptible God to the similitude of the image of a corruptible man, and of birdes, & foure footed beasts, & of creeping things.
24 Wherefore also God gaue them vp to their hearts lustes, vnto vncleannes, to defile their owne bodies betweene them selues:
25 Which turned the trueth of God vnto a lie, and worshipped and serued the creature, forsaking the Creator, which is blessed for euer, Amen.
26 For this cause God gaue them vp vnto vile affections: for euen their women did change the naturall vse into that which is against nature.
27 And likewise also the men left the naturall vse of the woman, and burned in their lust one towarde another, and man with man wrought filthines, and receiued in them selues such recompence of their errour, as was meete.
28 For as they regarded not to acknowledge God, *euen so* God deliuered them vp vnto a reprobate minde, to do those things which are not conuenient,
29 Being full of all vnrighteousnes, fornication, wickednes, couetousnes, maliciousnes, ful of enuie, of murther, of debate, of deceite, taking all things in the euill part, whisperers,
30 Backebiters, haters of God, doers of wrong, proude, boasters, inuenters of euill things, disobedient to parents, without vnderstanding, couenant breakers, without naturall affection, such as can neuer be appeased, mercilesse.
31 Which men, though they knewe the Lawe of God, how that they which commit such thinges, are worthie of death; *yet* not onely do the same, but also fauour them that do them.

CHAP. II.

1 *He bringeth all before the iudgement seat of God.* 12 *The excuse, that the Gentiles might pretend* 14 *of ignorance, he taketh quite away.* 17 *He tryeth the Iewes with the written Lawe,* 23 *in which they boasted:* 27 *And so maketh both Iewe and Gentile alike.*

1 THerefore thou art inexcuſable, O man, whoſoeuer thou art that condemneſt: for in that that thou condemneſt another, thou condemneſt thy ſelfe: for thou that condemneſt, doeſt the ſame things.

2 But we know that the iudgement of God is according to trueth, againſt them which commit ſuch things.

3 And thinkeſt thou this, O thou man, that condemneſt them which do ſuch things, and doeſt the ſame, that thou ſhalt eſcape the iudgement of God?

4 Or deſpiſeſt thou the riches of his bountifulnes, and patience, and long ſufferance, not knowing that the bountifulnes of God leadeth thee to repentance?

5 But thou, after thine hardenes, and heart that can not repent, * heapeſt vp as a treaſure vnto thy ſelfe wrath againſt the day of wrath, and of the declaration of the iuſt iudgement of God,

Iam.5.3.

Pſal.62.12 6 *Who wil reward euerie man according to his works:

mat.16.27. 7 *That is*, to them which through pacience in wel doing
reuel.22.12 ſeeke glorie, & honour, & immortalitie, euerlaſting life:

8 But vnto them that are contentious and diſobey the trueth, and obey vnrighteouſnes, *ſhalbe* indignation and wrath.

9 Tribulation and anguiſhe *ſhalbe* vpon the ſoule of euerie man that doeth euil: of the Iewe firſt, and *alſo* of the Grecian.

10 But to euerie man that doeth good, *ſhalbe* glorie, and honour, and peace, to the Iewe firſt, and *alſo* to the Grecian.

11 For there is no reſpect of perſons with God.

12 For as manie as haue ſinned without the Law, ſhal periſhe alſo without the Lawe: and as manie as haue ſinned in the Lawe, ſhalbe iudged by the Lawe,

13 (For the hearers of the Law *are* not righteous before God: but the doers of the Law ſhalbe iuſtified.

14 For when the Gentiles which haue not the Lawe, do by nature the things *contained* in the Lawe, they hauing not the Lawe, are a Lawe vnto them ſelues,

15 Which ſhew the effect of the Lawe written in their hearts, their conſcience alſo bearing witnes, and their thoughts accuſing one another, or excuſing,)

16 At the day when God ſhall iudge the ſecrets of men by Ieſus Chriſt, according to my Goſpell.

17 ¶ Be-

17 ¶ Behold, thou art called a Iewe, & reſteſt in the Law, and glorieſt in God,
18 And knoweſt *his* wil, and ‖ trieſt the things that diſſent from it, in that thou art inſtructed by the Law:
19 And perſwadeſt thy ſelfe that thou art a guide of the blinde, a light of them which *are* in darkenes,
20 An inſtructer of them which lacke diſcretion, a teacher of the vnlearned, which haſt the forme of knowledge, and of the trueth in the Law.
21 Thou therefore, which teacheſt another, teacheſt thou not thy ſelfe? thou that preacheſt, A man ſhoulde not ſteale, doeſt thou ſteale?
22 Thou that ſaieſt, A man ſhould not commit adulterie, doeſt thou commit adulterie? thou that abhorreſt idoles, committeſt thou ſacrilege?
23 Thou that glorieſt in the Law, through breaking the Law, diſhonoureſt thou God?
24 For the Name of God is blaſphemed among the Gentiles through you, * as it is written.
25 For circumciſion verely is profitable, if thou do the Law: but if thou be a tranſgreſſour of the Law, thy circumciſion is made vncircumciſion.
26 Therefore if the vncircumciſion keepe the ordinances of the Law, ſhal not his vncircumciſion be counted for circumciſion?
27 And ſhall not vncircumciſion which is by nature (if it keepe the Law) condemne thee which by the letter & circumciſion *art* a tranſgreſſor of the Law?
28 For he is not a Iewe, which is one outwarde: neither is that circumciſion, which is outward in the fleſh:
29 But he is a Iew which is one within, and the circumciſion *is* of the heart, in the ſpirit, not in the letter, whoſe praiſe is not of men, but of God.

‖ Or alloweſt the things that are excellent.

Iſai. 52. 5. Ezek. 36. 20.

CHAP. III.

1 He giueth the Iewes ſome 2 preferment, for the couenants ſake, 4 but yet ſuch, as wholy dependeth on Gods mercie. 9 That both Iewes and Gentiles are ſinners, 11 he proueth by Scripture: 19 and ſhewing the vſe of the Law, 28 he concludeth that we are iuſtified by faith.

1 WHat is then the preferment of the Iewe? or what is the profite of circumciſion?
2 Much euery maner of way: for chiefly, becauſe vnto them

them were of credite committed the oracles of God.
3 For what, though some did not beleeue? shal their vnbeliefe make the faith of God without effect?
4 God forbid: yea, let God be true, and euery man a lyar, as it is written, That thou mightest be iustified in thy wordes, and ouercome, when thou art iudged.
5 Now if our vnrighteousnes cõmende the righteousnes of God, what shal we say? Is God vnrighteous which punisheth? (I speake as a man)
6 God forbid: els how shall God iudge the worlde?
7 For if the veritie of God hath more abounded through my lie vnto his glory, why am I yet condemned as a sinner?
8 And (as we are blamed, and as some affirme that we say) why do we not euill, that good may come thereof? whose damnation is iust.
9 What then? are we more excellent? No, in no wise: for we haue already proued, that all, both Iewes and Gentiles are vnder sinne.
Psal. 14. 1. 3. and 53. 1, 3. 10 As it is written, * There is none righteous, no not one.
11 There is none that vnderstandeth: there is none that seeketh God.
12 They haue all gone out of the way: they haue bene made altogether vnprofitable: there is none that doeth good, no not one.
Psal. 5. 10. Psal. 140. 3. 13 * Their throat is an open sepulchre: they haue vsed their tongues to deceite: * the poyson of aspes is vnder their lippes.
Psal. 10. 7. 14 * Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitternes.
Isai. 59. 7. 15 * Their feete are swift to shedde blood.
16 Destruction and calamitie *are* in their wayes,
17 And the way of peace they haue not known.
Psal. 36. 1. 18 * The feare of God is not before their eyes.
19 Nowe we knowe that whatsoeuer the Lawe saieth, it saieth it to them which are vnder the Lawe, that euery mouth may be stopped, and all the worlde be subiect to the iudgement of God.
20 Therefore by the workes of the Law shall no flesh be iustified *in* his sight: for by the Law *commeth* the knowledge of sinne.
21 But now is the righteousnes of God made manifest without

without the Law, hauing witnes of the Lawe and of the Prophetes,
22 *To wit*, the righteousnes of God by the faith of Iesus Christ, vnto all, and vpon all that beleeue.
23 For there is no difference: for all haue sinned, and are depriued of the glorie of God,
24 And are iustified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Christ Iesus,
25 Whome God hath set forth *to be* a reconciliation through faith in his blood to declare his righteousnes, by the forgiuenes of the sinnes that are passed,
26 Through the patience of God, to shewe at this time his righteousnes, that he might be iust, and a iustifier of him which is of the faith of Iesus.
27 Where is then the reioycinge? It is excluded. By what Lawe? of workes? Naye: but by the Lawe of fayth.
28 Therefore we conclude, that a man is iustified by faith without the workes of the Law.
29 *God*, is he the God of the Iewes onely, and not of the Gentiles also? Yes, euen of the Gentiles also.
30 For it is one God who shall iustifie circumcision of faith, and vncircumcision through faith.
31 Doe we then make the Lawe of none effect through faith? God forbid: yea, we establishe the Lawe.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He proueth that which he saide before of faith, by the example of Abraham, 3. 6 and the testimonie of the Scripture: and ten times in the chapter he beateth vpon this worde imputation.

1 What shall we say then, that Abraham our father hath found concerning the flesh?
2 For if Abraham were iustified by workes, he hath wherein to reioyce, but not with God.
3 For what saith the Scripture? Abraham beleeued God, and it was counted to him for righteousnes.
4 Now to him that worketh, the wages is not counted by fauour, but by dette:
5 But to him that worketh not, but beleeueth in him that iustifieth the vngodly, his faith is counted for righteousnes.
6 Euen as Dauid declareth the blessednes of the man, vnto

vnto whom God imputeth righteousnes without works,
saying,

7 Blessed *are* they, whose iniquities are forgiuen, and whose sinnes are couered.

8 Blessed *is* the man, to whome the Lord imputeth not sinne.

9 *Came* this blessednes then vpon the circumcision *only*, or vpon the vncircumcision also? For we say, that faith was imputed vnto Abraham for righteousnes.

10 How was it then imputed? when he was circumcised, or vncircumcised? not when he was circumcised, but when he was vncircumcised.

11 After, he receiued the signe of circumcision, *as the* seale of the righteousnes of the fayth which he had, when he was vncircumcised, that he shoulde be the father of all them that beleeue, not being circumcised, that righteousnes might be imputed to them also,

12 And the Father of circumcision, not vnto them only which are of the circumcision, but vnto them also that walke in the steppes of the faith of our father Abraham, *which he had* when he was vncircumcised.

13 For the promise that he shoulde be the heire of the worlde, was not *giuen* to Abraham, or to his seede, through the Lawe, but through the righteousnes of faith.

14 For if they which are of the Lawe, *be* heires, fayth is made voyde, and the promise is made of none effecte.

15 For the Lawe causeth wrath: for where no Lawe is, there *is* no transgression.

16 Therefore *it is* by faith, that *it might come* by grace, and the promise might be sure to all the seede, not to that onely which is of the Lawe: but also to that which is of the fayth of Abraham, who is the father of vs all,

17 (As it is written, I haue made thee a father of many nations) *euen* before God whome he beleeued, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not, as though they were.

18 Which *Abraham* aboue hope, beleeued vnder hope, that he should be the father of many nations: according to that which was spoken *to him*, So shall thy seede be.

19 And

19 And he not weake in the faith, considered not his owne body, which was now deade, being almost an hundreth yeere olde, neither the deadnes of Saras wombe.
20 Neither did he doute of the promise of God through vnbelieſe, but was ſtrengthened in the faith, and gaue glory to God,
21 Being fully assured that he which had promiſed, was also able to do it.
22 And therefore it was imputed to him for righteouſnes.
23 Now it is not written for him onely, that it was imputed to him for righteouſnes,
24 But also for vs, to whome it ſhal be imputed *for righteouſnes*, which beleeue in him that raiſed vp Ieſus our Lord from the dead,
25 Who was deliuered *to death* for our ſinnes, and is riſen againe for our iuſtification.

CHAP. V.

1 He amplifieth 2 Chriſtes righteouſnes, which is layed holde on by faith, 5 who was giuen for the weake, 8 and ſinfull. 14 He compareth Chriſt with Adam, 17 Death with Life, 20 and the Law with Grace.

1 THen being iuſtified by faith, we haue peace toward God through our Lord Ieſus Chriſt.
2 * By whome also through faith, we haue had this acceſſe into this grace, wherein we ſtand, and reioyce vnder the hope of the glorie of God. *Epheſ.2.18.*
3 Neither *that* onely, but also we * reioyce in tribulations, knowing that tribulation bringeth forth patience, *Iam.1.2.*
4 And patience experience, and experience hope,
5 And hope maketh not aſhamed, becauſe the loue of God is ſhed abroade in our hearts by the holy Ghoſt, which is giuen vnto vs.
6 For Chriſt, when we were yet of no ſtrength, at *his* time, died for the * vngodly. *Hebr.9.22.*
7 Doutles one wil ſcarce dye for a righteous man: but yet for a good man it may be that one dare die. *1.pet.3.18.*
8 But God ſetteth out his loue towards vs, ſeeing that while we were yet ſinners, Chriſt died for vs.
9 Much more then, being now iuſtified by his blood, we ſhalbe ſaued from wrath through him.

10 For

10 For if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Sonne, much more being reconciled, we shalbe saued by his life,

11 And not onely *so*, but we also reioyce in God through our Lord Iesus Christ, by whom we haue now receiued the atonement.

12 Wherefore, as by one man sinne entred into the worlde, and death by sinne, and so death went ouer all men: in whom all men haue sinned.

13 For vnto the time of the Law was sinne in the worlde but sinne is not imputed, while there is no Lawe.

14 But death reigned from Adam to Moses, euen ouer them also that sinned not after the like maner of the transgression of Adam, which was the figure of him that was to come.

15 But yet the gifte is not so, as is the offence: for if through the offence of that one, many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace which is by one man Iesus Christ, hath abounded vnto many.

16 Neyther is the gift *so*, as *that which entred in by one* that sinned: for the sault *came* of one *offence* vnto condemnation: but the gift *is* of many offences to iustification.

17 For if by the offence of one, death reigned through one, much more shall they which receiue that abundance of grace, and of that gifte of that righteousnes reigne in life through one, *that is*, Iesus Christ.

18 Likewise then as by the offence of one, *the fault came* on all men to condemnation, so by the iustifying of one, *the benefite abounded* towarde all men to the iustification of life.

19 For as by one mans disobedience many were made sinners, so by that obedience of that one shall many also be made righteous.

20 Moreouer the Law entred thereupon that the offence shoulde abounde: neuertheles, where sinne abounded, *there* grace abounded much more:

21 That as sinne had reigned vnto death, so might grace also reigne by righteousnes vnto eternall life, through Iesus Christ our Lord.

1 *He commeth to ſanctification, without which, that no man putteth on Chriſtes righteouſnes, he proueth 4 by an argument taken of Baptiſme: 12 and thereupon exhorteth to holines of life, 16 briefely making mention of the Law tranſgreſſed.*

1 WHat ſhall we ſay then? Shall we continue ſtill in ſinne, that grace may abound? God forbid.
2 How ſhal we, that are dead to ſinne, liue yet therein?
3 Know ye not, that * all we which haue bene baptized into Ieſus Chriſt, haue bene baptized into his death? *Gal.3.29.*
4 * We are buried then with him by baptiſme into his death, that like as Chriſt was raiſed vp from the dead to the glorie of the Father, ſo we alſo ſhould * walke in newnes of life. *Col.2.12.* *Ephe.4.23.* *coloſ.3.8.*
5 * For if we be planted with him to the ſimilitude of his death, euen ſo ſhall we be *to the ſimilitude* of his reſurrection, *heb.12.1.* *1.pet.2.1.* *1.cor.6.14* *2.tim.2.15.*
6 Knowing this, that our olde man is crucified with him, that the bodie of ſinne might be deſtroyed, that henceforth we ſhould not ſerue ſinne.
7 For he that is dead, is freed from ſinne.
8 Wherefore, if we be dead with Chriſt, we beleeue that we ſhall liue alſo with him,
9 Knowing that Chriſt being raiſed from the deade, dieth no more: death hath no more dominion ouer him.
10 For in that he died, he died once to ſinne: but in that he liueth, he liueth to God.
11 Likewiſe thinke ye alſo, that ye are dead to ſinne, but are aliue to God in Ieſus Chriſt our Lord.
12 Let not ſinne reigne therefore in your mortall bodie, that ye ſhould obey it in the luſtes thereof.
13 Neyther giue ye your members *as* weapons of vnrighteouſnes vnto ſinne: but giue your ſelues vnto God, as they that are aliue from the dead, and *giue* your members as weapons of righteouſnes vnto God.
14 For ſinne ſhall not haue dominion ouer you: for ye are not vnder the Law, but vnder grace.
15 What then? ſhall we ſinne, becauſe we are not vnder the Law, but vnder grace? God forbid.
16 * Know ye not, that to whoſoeuer ye giue your ſelues

ar ſeruants to obey, his ſeruants ye are to whome ye obey, whether it be of ſinne vnto death, or of obedience vnto righteouſnes?

17 But God *be* thanked, that ye haue bene the ſeruants of ſinne, but ye haue obeyed from the heart vnto the forme of the doctrine, whereunto ye were delivered.

18 Being then made free from ſinne, ye are made the ſeruants of righteouſnes.

19 I ſpeake after the maner of man, becauſe of the infirmitie of your fleſh: for as ye haue giuen your members ſeruants to vncleannes and to iniquitie, to *commit* iniquitie, ſo now giue your members ſeruants vnto righteouſnes in holines.

20 For when ye were the ſeruants of ſinne, ye were free from righteouſnes.

21 What fruite had ye then in thoſe things, whereof ye are nowe aſhamed? for the ende of thoſe things *is* death.

22 But nowe being freed from ſinne, and made ſeruants vnto God, ye haue your fruite in holines, and the ende euerlaſting life.

23 For the wages of ſinne is death: but the gift of God *is* eternall life, through Ieſus Chriſt our Lord.

CHAP. VII.

1 *He declareth what it is, to be no more vnder the Law, and by an example taken of the Law of marriage:* 7. 13 *leaſt the Law ſhould ſeeme faultie,* 14 *he proueth, that ſinne is the cauſe,* 13 *that the ſeme is an occaſion of death,* 17 *which was giuen vs, vnto life:* 21 *He ſetteth out the battaile betweene the fleſh and the ſpirit.*

1 KNowe ye not, brethren, (for I ſpeake to them that know the Law) that the Law hath dominion ouer a man as long as he liueth?

2 * For the woman which is in ſubiection to a man, is bound by the Lawe to the man, while he liueth: but if the man be dead, ſhe is deliuered from the Lawe of the man. *1.Cor.7.39.

3 So then, if while the man liueth, ſhe take another man, ſhe ſhalbe called an * adultereſſe: but if the man be dead, ſhe is free from the Law, ſo that ſhe is not an adultereſſe, though ſhe take another man. *Mat.5.32.

4 So

4 So ye, my brethren, are dead also to the Law by the body of Christ, that ye should be vnto another, *euen* vnto him that is raised vp from the dead, that we shoulde bring forth fruite vnto God.
5 For when we were in the flesh, the affections of sinnes, which were by the Lawe, had force in our members, to bring forth fruite vnto death.
6 But nowe we are deliuered from the Lawe, he being dead in whome we were holden, that we should serue in newnes of Spirit, and not in the oldenes of the letter.
7 What shal we say then? *Is* the Law sinne? God forbid. Nay, I knew not sinne, but by the Law: for I had not knowen lust, except the Law had said, * Thou shalt not lust. *Exo.20.17. deu.5.21.*
8 But sinne tooke an occasion by the commandement, & wrought in me all maner of concupiscence: for without the Law sinne *is* dead.
9 For I once was aliue, without the Law: but when the commandement came, sinne reuiued,
10 But I died: and the same commandement which was *ordeined* vnto life, was found *to be* vnto me vnto death.
11 For sinne tooke occasion by the commandement, and deceiued me, and thereby slew *me*.
12 Wherefore the Law is * holy, & that commandement is holy, and iust, and good. 1.*Tim.* 1.8.
13 Was that then which is good, made death vnto me? God forbid: but sinne, that it might appeare sinne, wrought death in me by that which is good, that sinne might be out of measure sinful by the commandement.
14 For we knowe that the Lawe is spiritual, but I am carnal, solde vnder sinne.
15 For I alowe not that which I doe: for what I woulde, that do I not: but what I hate, that do I.
16 If I do then that which I would not, I consent to the Law, that *it is* good.
17 Nowe then, it is no more I, that do it, but sinne that dwelleth in me.
18 For I know, that in me, that is, in my flesh, dwelleth no good thing: for to wil is present with me: but I finde no meanes to performe that which is good.
19 For I do not the good thing, which I would, but the euil, which I would not, that do I.

20 Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that doe it, but the ſinne that dwelleth in me.
21 I finde then that when I would do good, I am thus yoked, that euil is preſent with me.
22 For I delite in the Law of God, concerning the inner man:
23 But I ſee another Law in my members, rebelling againſt the lawe of my minde, and leading me captiue vnto the lawe of ſinne, which is in my members.
24 O wretched man that I am, who ſhal deliuer me from the body of this death?
25 I thanke God through Ieſus Chriſt our Lord. Then I my ſelfe in my minde ſerue the Law of God, but in my fleſh the law of ſinne.

CHAP. VIII.

1 He concludeth that there is no condemnation to them, who are graffed in Chriſt through his Spirit, 3 howſoeuer they be as yet burdened with ſinnes: 8 for they liue through that Spirite, 14 whoſe teſtimonie 15 driueth away al feare, 28 and releeueth our preſent miſeries.

1 NOw then there *is* no condemnation to them that are in Chriſt Ieſus, which walke not after the fleſh, but after the Spirit.
2 For the Law of the Spirit of life *which is* in Chriſt Ieſus, hath freed me from the law of ſinne and of death.
3 For (that that was impoſsible to the Law, in as much as it was weake, becauſe of the fleſh) God ſending his owne Sonne, in the ſimilitude of ſinful fleſh, & for ſinne, condemned ſinne in the fleſh.
4 That that righteouſnes of the Law might be fulfilled in vs, which walke not after the fleſh, but after the Spirit.
5 For they that are after the fleſh, fauour the things of the fleſh: but they that are after the Spirit, the things of the Spirit.
6 For the wiſdome of the fleſh *is* death: but the wiſdom of the Spirit *is* life and peace,
7 Becauſe the wiſdom of the fleſh *is* enimity againſt God: for it is not ſubiect to the Law of God, neither indeede can be.
8 So then they that are in the fleſh, cannot pleaſe God.
9 Now ye are not in the fleſh, but in the Spirit, becauſe the Spirit of God dwelleth in you: but if any man hath not

not the Spirit of Christ, the same is not his.
10 And if Christ be in you, the body is dead, because of sinne: but the Spirit *is* life for righteousnes sake.
11 But if the Spirit of him that raised vp Iesus from the dead, dwell in you, he that raised vp Christ from the dead, shal also quicken your mortal bodyes, by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.
12 Therefore brethren, we are detters not to the flesh, to liue after the flesh:
13 For if ye liue after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye mortifie the deedes of the body by the Spirit, ye shall liue.
14 For as many as are lead by the Spirit of God, they are the sonnes of God.
15 For ye haue not receiued the Spirit of bondage to feare againe: but ye haue receiued the Spirit of adoption, whereby we crye Abba, Father.
16 The same Spirit beareth witnesse with our Spirit, that we are the children of God.
17 If *we be* children, *we are* also heires, euen the heires of God, and heires annexed with Christ: if so be that we suffer with him, that we may also be glorified with him.
18 For I counte that the afflictions of this present time *are* not worthy of the glory, which shalbe shewed vnto vs.
19 For the feruent desire of the creature waiteth when the sonnes of God shalbe reuealed.
20 Because the creature is subiect to vanitie, not of it owne wil, but by reason of him, which hath subdued it vnder hope,
21 Because the creature also shalbe deliuered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious libertie of the sonnes of God.
22 For we know that euery creature groneth with vs also, and trauaileth in paine together vnto this present.
23 And not onely *the creature*, but we also which haue the first fruites of the Spirit, euen we do sighe in our selues, waiting for the adoption, *euen* the * redemption of our body. *Luk.21.28.*
24 For we are saued by hope: but hope that is seene, is not hope: for how can a man hope for that which he seeth?
25 But if we hope for that which we see not, we do with patience abide for it.

26 Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what to pray as we ought: but the Spirit it selfe maketh request for vs with sighs, which can not be expressed.

27 But he that searcheth the hearts, knoweth what is the meaning of the Spirit: for he maketh request for the Saincts, according to *the wil of* God.

28 Also we know that all things worke together for the best vnto them that loue God, euē to them that are called of *his* purpose.

29 For those which he knew before, he also predestinate to be made like to the image of his Sonne, that he might be the first borne among many brethren.

30 Moreouer whom he predestinate, them also he called, and whome he called, them also he iustified, and whome he iustified, them he also glorified.

31 What shal we then say to these things? If God be on our side, who *can be* against vs?

32 Who spared not his owne Sonne, but gaue him for vs all *to death*, how shal he not with him, giue vs all things also?

33 Who shal lay any thing to the charge of Gods chosen? *it is* God that iustifieth,

34 Who shal condemne? *it is* Christ which is dead, yea or rather, which is risen againe, who is also at the right hand of God, and maketh request also for vs.

35 Who shal separate vs from the loue of Christ? shal tribulation or anguish, or persecution, or famine, or nakednes, or peril, or sworde?

Psal.44.22. 36 As it is written, * For thy sake are we killed all dayes long: we are counted as sheepe for the slaughter.

37 Neuertheles, in al these things we are more then conquerours through him that loued vs.

38 For I am persuaded that neither death, nor life, nor Angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come,

39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature shalbe able to separate vs from the loue of God, which is in Christ Iesus our Lord.

CHAP. IX.

1 *He answereth an obiection, that might be brought on the Iewes behalfe,* 7 *& telleth of two sortes of Abrahams children,*

ren, 15 *and that God worketh al things in this matter according to his wil,* 20 *euen as the potter doth.* 24. 30 *He proueth aswel the calling of the Gentiles,* 31 *as also the reiecting of the Iewes,* 25. 27 *by the testimonies of the Prophets.*

1 I Say the trueth in Christ, I lye not, my conscience bearing me witnes in the holy Ghost,
2 That I haue great heauines, and continuall sorowe in mine heart.
3 For I would wish my selfe to be separate from Christ, for my brethren that are my kinsemen according to the flesh,
4 Which are the Israelites, to whome *pertaineth* the adoption, and the glorie, and the * Conenants, and the giuing of the Lawe, and the seruice *of God*, and the promises. *Chap.* 2.17. *eph.*2.12.
5 Of whome *are* the fathers, and of whom concerning the flesh, Christ *came*, who is God ouer all, blessed for euer, Amen.
6 * Notwithstanding it can not be that the worde of God should take none effect: for al they are not Israel, which are of Israel: *Chap.* 2.28.
7 Neither *are they* al children, because they are the seede of Abraham: * but, in Isaac shal thy seede be called: *Gen.*21.12.
8 That is, they which are the children of the flesh, are not the children of God: but the * children of the promes, are counted for the seede. *heb.*11.18. *Gal.*4.28.
9 For this is a word of promes, * In this same time wil I come, and Sara shal haue a sonne. *Gen.*18.10.
10 Neither *he* onely *felt this*, but also * Rebecca when she had conceiued by one *euen* by our father Isaac. *Gen.*25.21.
11 For yer *the children* were borne, and when they had neither done good, nor euil (that the purpose of GOD might remaine according to election not by workes, but by him that calleth)
12 It was said vnto her, * The elder shal serue the yonger. *Gen.*25.23.
13 As it is writtē, * I haue loued Iacob, & haue hated Esau. *Malac.*1.2.
14 What shal we say then? Is there vnrighteousnes with God? God forbid.
15 For he saith to Moses, * I will haue mercy on him, to whome I wil shew mercy: and wil haue compassion on him, on whom I wil haue compassion. *Exo.*33.19.

16 So then *it is* not in him that willeth, nor in him that runneth, but in God that sheweth mercy.

Exo.9.16. 17 For the Scripture saith vnto Pharao, * For this same purpose haue I stirred thee vp, that I might shewe my power in thee, and that my Name might be declared throughout al the earth.

18 Therefore he hath mercy on whome he wil, and whom he wil, he hardeneth.

19 Thou wilt say then vnto me, Why doeth he yet complaine? for who hath resisted his wil?

20 But, O man, who art thou which pleadest against God? *Isai.45.9.* shal the * thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?

Sap.12.6. 21 * Hath not the potter power of the clay to make of the same lumpe one vessel to honour, and another vnto dishonour?

22 *What* and if God would, to shewe his wrath, and to make his power knowen, suffer with long patience the vessels of wrath, prepared to destruction?

23 And that he might declare the riches of his glory vpon the vessels of mercye, which he hath prepared vnto glory?

24 Euen vs, whome he hath called, not of the Iewes onely, but also of the Gentiles,

Hose.2.23. 25 As he saith also in Osee, * I wil cal them, My people, *1.pet.2.10.* which were not my people: and her, Beloued, which was not beloued.

26 And it shalbe in the place where it was said vnto them, *Hose.1.10.* * Ye are not my people, that there they shalbe called, The children of the liuing God.

Isai.10.22. 27 Also Esaias cryeth concerning Israel, * Though the nomber of the children of Israel were as the sand of the sea, *yet* shal *but* a remnant be saued.

28 For he wil make his account, and gather it into a short summe with righteousnes: for the Lord wil make a short count in the earth.

Isa.1.9. 29 * And as Esaias said before, Except the Lord of hosts had left vs a seede, we had bene made as Sodom, and had bene like to Gomorrha.

30 What shal we say then? That the Gentiles which followed not righteousnes, haue attained vnto righteousnes, euen the righteousnes which is of faith.

31 But

31 But Iſrael which followed the Law of righteouſnes,
could not atteine vnto the Law of righteouſnes.
32 Wherefore? Becauſe *they ſought it* not by faith, but as
it were by the workes of the Law: for they haue ſtum-
bled at the ſtumbling ſtone,
33 As it is written, *Beholde, I lay in Sion a ſtumbling* *Pſal.118.*
ſtone, and a rocke to make men fall: and euery one *22.Iſa.8.14.*
that beleeueth in him, ſhal not be aſhamed. *& 28.16.*
1.pet.2.6.

CHAP. X.

1 He handleth the effects of election, 3 that ſome refuſe, and
ſome embrace 4 Chriſt, who is the end of the Law. 15 He
ſheweth that Moſes foretolde the calling of the Gentiles, 20
and Eſaias the hardening of the Iewes.

1 BRethren, mine hearts deſire and prayer to God for
Iſrael is, that they might be ſaued.
2 For I beare them record, that they haue the zeale of
God, but not according to knowledge.
3 For they, being ignorant of the righteouſnes of God,
and going about to ſtabliſh their owne righteouſnes,
haue not ſubmitted themſelues to the righteouſnes of
God.
4 *For Chriſt is the ende of the Law for righteouſnes* *Gal.3.24.*
vnto euery one that beleeueth.
5 For Moſes *thus* deſcribeth the righteouſnes which is
of the Law, *That the man which doeth theſe thinges,* *Leuit.18.5.*
ſhal liue thereby. *eze.20.11.*
6 But the righteouſnes which is of faith, ſpeaketh on *Gala.3.12.*
this wiſe, *Say not in thine heart, Who ſhal aſcend into*
heauen? (that is to bring Chriſt from aboue) *Deu.30.12.*
7 Or, Who ſhal deſcend into the deepe? (that is to bring
Chriſt againe from the dead)
8 But what ſaith it? *The word is neere thee, euen in* *Deu.30.14.*
thy mouth, and in thine heart. This is the word of faith
which we preach.
9 For if thou ſhalt confeſſe with thy mouth the Lord Ie-
ſus, and ſhalt beleeue in thine heart, that God raiſed
him vp from the dead, thou ſhalt be ſaued:
10 For with the heart man beleeueth vnto righteouſnes,
and with the mouth man confeſſeth to ſaluation.
11 For the Scripture ſaith, *Whoſoeuer beleeueth in* *Iſa.28.16.*
him, ſhal not be aſhamed.
12 For there is no difference betweene the Iewe and the

Grecian: for he that is Lorde ouer all, is rich vnto all that call on him.

Ioel.1.38. 13 * For whosoeuer shal cal vpon the Name of the Lord, shalbe saued.

14 But how shal they call on him, in wheme they haue not beleeued? & how shal they beleeue in him, of whom they haue not heard? and how shal they heare without a preacher?

15 And how shal they preach, except they be sent? as it is Isai.52.7. nahũ.1.15. written, * How beautiful are the feete of them which bring glad tidinges of peace, and bring glad tidinges of good things.

16 But they haue not all obeyed the Gospel: for Esaias Isai.52.1. saith, * Lord, who hath beleeued our report?

iohn.12.38. 17 Then faith *is* by hearing, and hearing by the worde of God.

Psal. 19.3. 18 But I demaund, Haue they not heard? * No doubte their sound went out through all the earth, and their wordes into the endes of the worlde.

19 But I demaund, Did not Israel know *God*? First Moses Deu.32.21. saith, * I wil prouoke you to ennie by a nation that is not *my* nation, and by a foolish *nation* I wil anger you.

Isai.65.1.ᵛ 20 * And Esaias is bolde, and saith, I was found of them that sought me not, and haue bene made manifest to them that asked not after me.

Isa.65.2. 21 And vnto Israel he saith, * Al the day long haue I stretched forth mine hand vnto a disobedient, and gainsaying people.

CHAP. XI.

1 *Lest the casting off of the Iewes should be limited according to the outward appearance,* 4 *he sheweth that Elias was in times past deceiued,* 16 *and that, seeing they haue an holy roote,* 23 *many of them likewise shalbe holy.* 18.24 *He exhorteth the Gentiles to be humble,* 33 *and cryeth out, that Gods iudgements are vnsearchable.*

1 I Demaund then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid: for I also am an Israelite, of the seede of Abraham, of the tribe of Beniamin.

2 God hath not cast away his people which he knew before. Know ye not what the Scripture saith of Elias, how he communeth with God against Israel, saying,

1.Kin.19. 3 * Lorde, they haue killed thy Prophetes, and digged

10. downe

downe thine altars: and I am left alone, and they seeke my life?

4 But what saith the answere of God to him? * I haue reserued vnto my selfe seuen thousand men, which haue not bowed the knee to Baal. 1. *King.* 19. 18.

5 Euen so then at this present time is there a remnant according to the election of grace.

6 And if *it be* of grace, it is no more of workes: or els were grace no more grace: but if it be of workes, it is no more grace: or els were worke no more worke.

7 What then? Israel hath not obtained that he sought: but the election hath obteined it, & the rest haue bene hardened.

8 According as it is written, * God hath giuen them the spirit of slumber: eyes that they should not see, & eares that they should not heare vnto this day. *Isai.* 6. 9. & 29. 10. *mat.* 13. 14. *iohn* 12. 40. *actes* 28. 26.

9 And Dauid saith, * Let their table be made a snare, and a net, and a stumbling blocke, euen for a recompence vnto them. *Psal.* 69. 23

10 Let their eyes be darkened that they see not, & bowe downe their backe alwaies.

11 I demaund then, Haue they stumbled, that they should fall? God forbid: but through their fall, saluation *commeth* vnto the Gentiles, to prouoke thē to follow them.

12 Wherefore if the fall of them *be* the riches of the worlde, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles, how much more shall their aboundance *be*?

13 For *in that* I speake to you Gentiles, in as much as I am the Apostle of the Gentiles, I magnifie mine office,

14 *To trie* if by anie meanes I might prouoke them of my flesh to follow them, and might saue some of them.

15 For if the casting away of them *be* the reconciling of the world, what *shall* the receiuing *be*, but life from the dead?

16 For if the first fruites *be* holie, so *is* the whole lumpe: and if the roote be holie, so *are* the branches.

17 * And though some of the branches be broken of, and thou being a wild Oline tree, wast graft in for them, & made partaker of the roote, & fatnes of the Olive tree: *Iere.* 11. 16.

18 Boast not thy selfe against the branches: and if thou boast thy selfe, thou beares not the roote, but the roote thee.

19 Thou wilt say then, The branches are broken of, that I might be graft in.
20 Wel: through vnbeliefe they are broken of, & thou standest by faith: be not hie minded, but feare.
21 For if God spared not the natural branches, *take heede*, lest he also spare not thee.
22 Beholde therefore the bountifulnes, and seueritie of God: towarde them which haue fallen, seueritie: but toward thee, bountifulnes, if thou continue in *his* bountifulnes: or els thou shalt also be cut of.
23 And they also, if they abide not stil in vnbelief, shalbe grafted in: for God is able to graffe them in againe.
24 For if thou wast cut out of the Oliue tree, which was wilde by nature, and wast grafted contrarie to nature in a right Oliue tree, how much more shall they that are by nature, be grafted in their owne Oliue tree?
25 For I would not, brethren, that ye shoulde be ignorant of this secret (least ye should be arrogant in your selues) that partly obstinacie is come to Israel, vntill the fulnes of the Gentiles be come in.
Isai.59.20. 26 And so all Israel shalbe saued, as it is written, *The deliuerer shall come out of Sion, and shall turne away the vngodlines from Iacob.
Isai.27.9. 27 And this is my couenant to them, *When I shal take away their sinnes.
28 As concerning the Gospel, *they are* enemies for your sakes: but as touching the election, they are beloued for the fathers sakes.
29 For the giftes and calling of God are without repentance.
30 For euen as ye in time past haue not beleeued God, yet haue nowe obtained mercie through their vnbeliefe:
31 Euen so now haue they not beleeued by the mercie *shewed* vnto you, that they also may obtaine mercie.
32 For God hath shut vp al in vnbelief, that he might haue mercie on all.
33 O the deepenes of the riches, both of the wisdome, & knowledge of God! how vnsearchable are his iudgements, and his wayes past finding out!
Iob.41.2.
Isai.40.13. 34 *For who hath knowen the mind of the Lord? or who
1.Cor.2.16. was his counsellour?

35 Or

35 Or who hath giuen vnto him firſt, and he ſhalbe recompenſed?
36 For of him, and through him, and for him are al things: to him *be* glorie for euer. Amen.

CHAP. XII.

1 *He exhorteth 2 to that worſhip which is acceptable to God:*
9 *To loue vnfained, 14.20 euen towards our enemies.*

1 I Beſeech you therefore brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye giue vp your bodies a liuing ſacrifice, holie, acceptable vnto God, *which is* your reaſonable ſeruing of God.
2 And faſhion not your ſelues like vnto this worlde, but be ye changed by the renewing of your minde, that ye may * proue what that good, and acceptable and perfect will of God is. *Ephe.5.17. 1.theſſ.4.3.*
3 For I ſay through the grace that is giuen vnto me, to euerie one that is among you, that no man preſume to vnderſtand aboue that which is meete to vnderſtand, but that he vnderſtand according to ſobrietie, as God hath dealt to euerie man the * meaſure of faith. *1.Cor.12.*
4 For as we haue manie members in one bodie, and all members haue not one office, *11.ephe.4.7*
5 So we being manie are one bodie in Chriſt, and euerie one, one anothers members.
6 * Seeing then that we haue giftes that are diuers, according to the grace that is giuen vnto vs, whether *we haue* propheſie, *let vs propheſie* according to the proportion of faith. *1.Pet.4.10*
7 Or an office, *let vs wait* on the office: or he that teacheth, on teaching:
8 Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that diſtributeth, *let him do it* * with ſimplicitie: he that ruleth, with diligence: he that ſheweth mercy, with cheereſulnes. *Mat.6.2. 2.cor.9.7.*
9 *Let* loue *be* without diſſimulatiō. *Abhorre that which is euill, and cleaue vnto that which is good. *Amos.5.15*
10 * Be affectioned to loue one another with brotherly loue. In giuing honour, go one before another, *Ephe.4.2. 1.pet.2.17.*
11 Not ſlouthful to do ſeruice: feruent in ſpirit: ſeruing the Lord,
12 Reioycing in hope, pacient in tribulation, * continuing in praier: *1.Pet.5.8. Luke 18.1.*
13 * Diſtributing vnto the neceſsities of the Saintes: *1.cor.16.1.*

* giuing

Heb.13.2. * giuing your ſelues to hoſpitalitie.
1.pet.4.13. 14 * Bleſſe them which perſecute you: bleſſe, *I ſay*, and
Mat.5.44. curſe not.
15 Reioyce with them that reioyce, and weepe with them that weepe.
Prou.3.7. 16 Be of like affection one towards another: *be not hie
Iſa.5.11. minded: but make your ſelues equal to them of the lower ſort: be not wiſe in your ſelues.
Prou.20.22 17 *Recompence to no man euil for euil: procure things
mat.5.39. honeſt in the ſight of all men.
2.cor.8.11. 18 * If it be poſsible, as much as in you is, haue peace
1.pet.3.9. with all men.
Hebr.12.14 19 Dearely beloued, * auenge not your ſelues, but giue
Eccle.2.18. place vnto wrath: for it is written, * Vengeance is mine:
mat.5.39. I wil repay, ſaith the Lord.
Deut.32.35 20 *Therefore, if thine enemie hunger, feede him: if he
hebr.10.30 thirſt, giue him drinke: for in ſo doing, thou ſhalt heape
Prou.25.22 coales of fire on his head.
21 Be not ouercome of euil, but ouercome euil with goodnes.

CHAP. XIII.

1 He willeth that we ſubmit our ſelues to Magiſtrates: 8 To loue our neighbours: 12 To liue vprightly, 14 and to put on Chriſt.

Tit.3.1. 1 LEt * euerie ſoule be ſubiect vnto the higher powers:
1.pet.2.13. for there is no power but of God: & the powers that be, are ordeined of God.
2 Whoſoeuer therfore reſiſteth the power, reſiſteth the ordinance of God: and they that reſiſt, ſhal receiue to them ſelues condemnation.
3 For Magiſtrates are not to be feared *for* good workes, but *for* euil. Wilt thou then be without feare of the power? do well: ſo ſhalt thou haue praiſe of the ſame.
4 For he is the miniſter of God for thy wealth, but if thou do euil, feare: for he beareth not the ſworde for nought: for he is the miniſter of God to take vengeance on him that doeth euil.
5 Wherefore ye muſt be ſubiect, not becauſe of wrath onely, but alſo for conſcience ſake.
6 For, for this cauſe ye pay alſo tribute: for they are Gods miniſters, applying them ſelues for the ſame thing.
Mat.22.11. 7 * Giue to all men therefore their dutie: tribute, to whome

whome *ye owe* tribute: custome, to whome custome: feare, to whome feare: honour, to whom *ye owe* honour.

8 Owe nothing to anie man, but to loue one another: for he that loueth another, hath fulfilled the Lawe.

9 For this, * Thou shalt not cõmit adulterie, Thou shalt not kil, Thou shalt not steale, Thou shalt not beare false witnes, Thou shalt not couet: and if there be anie other commandement, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, *euen* in this, * Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe. *Exod.20.14 deut. 5. 18. Leu.19.18. mat.22.39.*

10 Loue doeth not euil to his neighbour: therefore is loue the * fulfilling of the Lawe. *mar.12.31. galat.5. 14.*

11 And that, considering the season, that *it is* now time that we should arise from sleepe: for now is our saluation neerer, then when we beleeued it. *iam.2.8. 1.Tim.1. 15.*

12 The night is past, and the day is at hand, let vs therefore cast away the workes of darkenes, and let vs put on the armour of light,

13 So that we walke honestly, as in the day: not in * glutonie, and drunkennes, neither in chambering and wantonnes, nor in strife and enuying: *Luk.21.34.*

14 *But put ye on the Lord IESVS CHRIST, and take no thought for the flesh, to *fulfill* the lustes of it. *Galat.5.16 1.pet.2. 11.*

CHAP. XIIII.

1 He willeth that we so deale with the weake in faith, 15 that through our fault they be not offended. 16 And on the other side he commandeth them not rashly to iudge of the stronger: 19 That within the boundes of edification 20 and charitie, 22 Christian liberty may consist.

1 HIm that is weake in the faith, receiue vnto you, *but* not for controuersies of disputations.

2 One beleeueth that he may eat of all things: and another, which is weake, eateth herbes.

3 Let not him that eateth, despise him that eateth not: and let not him which eateth not, condemne him that eateth: for God hath receiued him.

4 * Who art thou that condemnest another mans seruant? he standeth or falleth to his owne master: yea, he shalbe established: for God is able to make him stand. *Iam.4.12.*

5 This man esteemeth one day aboue another day, and another man counteth euerie day alike: let euerie man

man be fully perſuaded in his minde.

6 He that obſerueth the day, obſerueth it to the Lord: and he that obſerueth not the day, obſerueth it not to the Lord. He that eateth, eateth to the Lord: for he giueth God thankes: and he that eateth not, eateth not to the Lord, and giueth God thankes.

7 For none of vs liueth to him ſelfe, neither doeth anie die to him ſelfe.

8 For whether we liue, we liue vnto the Lord: or whether we die, we die vnto the Lord: whether we liue therefore, or die, we are the Lordes.

9 For Chriſt therfore died and roſe againe, & reuiued, that he might be Lord both of the dead & the quicke.

10 But why doeſt thou condemne thy brother? or why doeſt thou deſpiſe thy brother? * for we ſhall all appeare before the iudgement ſeate of Chriſt.

2.Cor.5.10

Iſai.45.23. Philip.2.10. 11 For it is written, * I liue, ſaith the Lord, and euerie knee ſhall bowe to me, and all tongues ſhall confeſſe vnto God.

12 So then euerie one of vs ſhall giue accounts of him ſelfe to God.

13 Let vs not therefore iudge one another anie more: but vſe *your* iudgement rather in this, that no man put an occaſion to fal, or a ſtumbling blocke before *his* brother.

14 I knowe, and am perſuaded through the Lord Ieſus, that there is nothing vncleane of it ſelfe: but vnto him that iudgeth anie thing to be vncleane, to him *it is* vncleane.

15 But if thy brother be grieued for the meat, now walkeſt thou not charitably: * deſtroy not him with thy meate, for whome Chriſt dyed.

1.Cor.8.11

16 Cauſe not your commoditie to be euil ſpoken of.

17 For the kingdome of God, is not meat nor drinke, but righteouſnes, and peace, and ioye in the holie Ghoſt.

18 For whoſoeuer in theſe things ſerueth Chriſt, is acceptable vnto God, and is approued of men.

19 Let vs then follow thoſe things which concerne peace, and wherewith one may edifie another.

1Ti.1.15. 20 Deſtroy not the worke of God for meates ſake: * all thinges in deede are pure: but *it is* euill for the man which eateth with offence.

2.Cor.8.13. 21 * *It is* good neither to eate fleſh, nor to drinke wine, nor

nor anie thing whereby thy brother ſtumbleth, or is offended, or made weake:

22 Haſt thou faith? haue it with thy ſelfe before God: bleſſed *is* he that condemneth not himſelf in that thing which he alloweth.

23 For he that doubteth, is condemned if he eat, becauſe *he eateth* not of faith: and whatſoeuer is not of faith, is ſinne.

CHAP. XV.

1 *The ſtronger muſt imploye their ſtrength to ſtrengthen the weake,* 3 *by Chriſtes example,* 7 *who receiued* 8 *not only the Iewes,* 10 *but alſo the Gentiles.* 15 *The cauſe why he wrote this Epiſtle.*

1 WE which are ſtrong, ought to beare the infirmities of the weake, and not to pleaſe our ſelues.

2 *Therefore* let euerie man pleaſe his neighbour in that that is good to edification.

3 For Chriſt alſo woulde not pleaſe him ſelfe, but as it is written, * The rebukes of them which rebuke thee, fel on me. *Pſal.69.10*

4 For whatſoeuer things are written aforetime, are written for our learning, that we through patience, and cõfort of the Scriptures might haue hope.

5 Now the God of patience and conſolation giue you that ye be * like minded one towards another, according to Chriſt Ieſus, *1.Cor.1.10*

6 That ye with one minde, *and* with one mouth maye praiſe God, euen the Father of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt.

7 Wherefore receiue ye one another, as Chriſt alſo receiued vs to the glorie of God.

8 Now I ſay, that Ieſus Chriſt was a miniſter of the circumciſion, for the trueth of God, to confirme the promiſes *made* vnto the fathers.

9 And let the Gentiles praiſe God, for *his* mercie, as it is written, * For this cauſe I wil confeſſe thee among the Gentiles, and ſing vnto thy Name. *Pſal.18.50*

10 And againe he ſaith, * Reioyce, ye Gentiles with his people. *Deut.32.43*

11 And againe, * Praiſe the Lord, all ye Gentiles, & laude ye him, all people together. *Pſal.117.1*

12 And againe Eſaias ſaith, * There ſhalbe a roote of Ieſſe, & he that ſhall riſe to reigne ouer the Gentiles, in *Iſai.11.10.*

him

him shall the Gentiles trust.

13 Now the God of hope fill you with all ioye, and peace in beleeuing, that ye may abound in hope through the power of the holie Ghost.

14 And I my self also am perswaded of you, my brethren, that ye also are full of goodnes, and filled with all knowledge, and are able to admonish one another.

15 Neuertheles brethren, I haue somewhat boldely after a sorte written vnto you, as one that putteth you in remembrance, through the grace that is giuen me of God,

16 That I should be the minister of Iesus Christ, toward the Gentiles, ministring the Gospel of God, that the offring vp of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the holy Ghost.

17 I haue therefore whereof I may reioyce in Christ Iesus in those things which *pertaine* to God.

18 For I dare not speake of anie thing, which Christ hath not wrought by me, *to make* the Gentiles obedient in word and deede,

19 With the power of signes and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God: so that from Hierusalem, & round about vnto Illyricum, I haue caused to abound the Gospel of Christ.

20 Yea, so I enforced my selfe to preache the Gospel, not where Christ was named, lest I should haue buylt on an other mans foundation.

Isai. 52. 15. 21 But as it is written, * To whome he was not spoken of, they shall see *him*, and they that heard not, shall vnderstand *him*.

Chap. 1. 11. 22 * Therefore also I haue bene oft let to come vnto you:

23 But now seeing I haue no more place in these quarters, and also haue * bene desirous manie yeres agone

1. *Thes.* 1. 17. to come vnto you,

24 When I shall take my iourney into Spaine, I wil come to you: for I trust to see you in my iourney, and to be brought on my way thitherward by you, after that I haue bene somewhat filled with your *companie*.

25 But now goe I to Hierusalem, to minister vnto the Saintes.

26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia, to make a certaine distribution vnto the poore Saintes

which

which are at Hierusalem.
27 For it hath pleased them, and their detters are they: * for if the Gentiles be made partakers of their spiritual things, their duetie is also to minister vnto them in carnal things. * 1.Cor.9.11
28 When I haue therefore performed this, and haue sealed them this fruite, I will passe by you into Spaine.
29 And I knowe when I come, that I shall come to you with abundance of the blessing of the Gospel of Christ.
30 Also brethren, I beseech you for our Lord Iesus Christs sake, and for the loue of the spirit, that ye would striue with me by praiers to God for me.
31 That I may be deliuered from them which are disobedient in Iudea, and that my seruice which I haue to do at Hierusalem, may be accepted of the Saintes.
32 That I may come vnto you with ioy by the wil of God, and may with you be refreshed.
33 Thus the God of peace *be* with you all. Amen.

CHAP. XVI.

1 He commendeth Phebe. 3 He sendeth greeting to manie, 17 and warneth to beware of them which are the causes of diuision.

1 I Commend vnto you Phebe our sister, which is a seruant of the Church of Cenchrea:
2 That ye receiue her in the Lord, as it becommeth Saintes, and that ye assist her in whatsoeuer businesse she needeth of your ayde: for she hath giuen hospitalitie vnto manie, and to me also.
3 Greete * Priscilla, and Aquila my sellowe helpers in Christ Iesus, * Act.18.2.
4 (Which haue for my life laide downe their owne neck. Vnto whome not I onely giue thankes, but also all the Churches of the Gentiles.)
5 Likewise *greete* the Church that is in their house. Salute my beloued Epenetus, which is the first fruites of Achaia in Christ.
6 Greete Marie which bestowed much labour on vs.
7 Salute Andronicus and Iunia my cousins and sellowe prisoners, which are notable among the Apostles, and were in Christ before me.
8 Greete Amplias my beloued in the Lord.
9 Salute Vrbanus our sellowe helper in Christ, and Sta-

chys my beloued.

10 Salute Apelles approued in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus *friends*.

11 Salute Herodion my kinsman. Greete them which are of the *friends* of Narcissus which are in the Lord.

12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, which *women* labour in the Lord. Salute the beloued Persis, which *woman* hath laboured much in the Lord.

13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.

14 Greete Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Mercurius, and the brethren which are with them.

15 Salute Philologus and Iulias, Nereas, and his sister, and Olympas, and all the Saintes which are with them.

1. Cor. 16. 20. 2. Cor. 13. 12. 1. Peter 5. 14.

16 Salute one another with an * holy kisse. The Churches of Christ salute you.

2. John. 10.

17 ¶ Now I beseech you brethren, marke them diligently which cause diuision and offences, contrarie to the doctrine which ye haue learned, and * auoide them.

18 For they that are such, serue not the Lord Iesus Christ, but their owne bellies, and with faire speach and flattering deceiue the hearts of the simple.

19 For your obedience is come abroade among all: I am glad therefore of you: but yet I would haue you wise vnto that which is good, and simple concerning euil.

20 The God of peace shall treade Satan vnder your feete shortly. The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you.

Act. 16. 1. Philip. 2. 19.

21 * Timotheus my helper, and Lucius, and Iason, and Sosipater my kinsmen, salute you.

22 I Tertius, which wrote out this Epistle, salute you in the Lord.

23 Gaius mine hoste, and of the whole Church saluteth you. Erastus the steward of the citie saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

24 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you all. Amen.

Ephe. 3. 20. Ephe. 3. 9. Colos. 1. 26. 2. Tim. 1. 10. Tit. 1. 2.

25 * To him now that is of power to establish you according to my Gospel, and preaching of Iesus Christ, * by the reuelation of the mysterie, which was kept secret since the worlde began:

26 (But now is opened, and published among all nations by

by the Scriptures of the Prophets, at the commandement of the euerlasting God for the obedience of faith)
27 To God, *I say*, onely wise, be praise through Iesus Christ for euer. Amen.

¶Written to the Romanes from Corinthus, *and* sent by Phebe, seruant of the Church, which is at Cenchrea.

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 *After the salutation, to which in effect is an exhortation,* 12 *he reprehendeth the Corinthians sectes and diuisions,* 17 *and calleth them from pride to humilitie:* 20 *For, ouerthrowing all worldly wisdome,* 23.25 *he aduanceth only the preaching of the crosse.*

1 PAVL called *to be* an Apostle of IESVS CHRIST, through the wil of God, and *our* brother Sosthenes,
2 Vnto the Church of God which is at Corinthus, to them that are * sanctified in Christ Iesus, * Saintes by calling, * with all that call on the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ in euerie place, both their *Lord, and ours:*
3 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, & *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.
4 I thanke my God alwaies on your behalf for the grace of God, which is giuen you in Iesus Christ,
5 That in all things ye are made riche in him, in all kind of speache, and in all knowledge:
6 As the testimonie of Iesus Christ hath bene confirmed in you:
7 So that ye are not destitute of anie gift: * waiting for the appearing of our Lord Iesus Christ.
8 * Who shal also confirme you vnto the end, that ye may be blameleſſe in the day of our Lord Iesus Christ.
9 * God is faithful, by whome ye are called vnto the fellowship of his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lord.
10 Now I beseeche you, brethren, by the Name of our

Act.15.9. 1.Thes.4.7. Rom.1.7. ephe.1.1. coloſ.1.12. 1.Tim.1.9. tit.2.3. 2.Tim.1.12. Philip.3.20 tit.2.11. 1.Thes.3. 13 & 5.23 1.Thes.5. 24.

Lord Iesus Christ, that ye all speake one thing, and that there be no dissensions among you: but be ye knit together in one minde, and in one iudgement.

11 For it hath bene declared vnto me, my brethren, of you by them that are of the house of Cloe, that there are contentions among you.

12 Now this I say, that euerie one of you saith, I am Pauls, and I am * Apollos, and I am Cephas, and I am Christs. *Act.18.24*

13 Is Christ deuided? was Paul crucified for you? either were ye baptized into the name of Paul?

14 I thanke God, that I baptized none of you, but * Crispus, and Gaius, *Act. 18.8.*

15 Lest anie should say, that I had baptized into mine owne name.

16 I baptized also the housholde of Stephanas: furthermore know I not, whether I baptized any other.

17 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the Gospel, not with * wisdome of wordes, lest the crosse of Christ should be made of none effect. *Chap.2.13. 2.pet.1.16.*

18 For that preaching of the crosse is to them that perish, foolishnes: but vnto vs, which are saued, it is the * power of God. *Rom.1.16.*

19 For it is written, * I wil destroy the wisdome of the wise, and wil cast away the vnderstanding of the prudent. *Isai.29.14.*

20 Where is the wise? where is the Scribe? where is the disputer of this worlde? hath not God made the wisdome of this world foolishnes?

21 For seeing the world by wisdome knewe not God in the wisdome of God, it pleased God by the foolishnes of preaching to saue them that beleeue.

22 * Seeing also that the Iewes require a signe, and the Grecians seeke after wisdome. *Mat.12.38.*

23 But we preach Christ crucified: vnto the Iewes, euen a stumbling blocke, and vnto the Grecians, foolishnes;

24 But vnto them which are called, both of the Iewes and Grecians, *we preach* Christ, the power of God, and the wisdome of God.

25 For the foolishnes of God is wiser then men, and the weakenes of God is stronger then men.

26 For brethren, you see your calling, how that not many

nie wise men after the flesh, not manie mightie, not manie noble *are called.*

27 But God hath chosen the foolish thinges of the worlde to confound the wise, and God hath chosen the weake thinges of the worlde, to confound the mightie things.

28 And vile things of the world and things which are despised, hath God chosen, and things which are not, to bring to naught things that are,

29 That no flesh should reioyce in his presence.

30 But ye are of him in Christ Iesus, who of God is made vnto vs wisdome and righteousnes, and sanctification, & redemption,

31 That, according as it is written, * He that reioyceth, let him reioyce in the Lord. *Iere.9.24. 2.cor.10.17*

CHAP. II.

1 He setteth downe a platforme of his preaching, 4 which was base in respect of mans wisdome, 7. 13 but noble in respect of the spiritual power and efficacie, 14 and so concludeth that flesh and blood cannot rightly iudge thereof.

1 AND I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with * excellencie of wordes, or of wisdome, shewing vnto you the testimonie of God. *Chap.1.17.*

2 For I esteemed not to knowe anie thing among you, saue Iesus Christ, and him crucified.

3 * And I was among you in weakenes, and in feare, and in much trembling. *Act.18.1.*

4 Neither *stoode* my word, and my preaching in the * entising speach of mans wisdome, but in plaine evidence of the Spirit and of power, *Chap.1.17. 2.pet.1.16.*

5 That your faith should not be in the wisdome of men, but in the power of God.

6 And we speake wisdome among them that are perfect; not the wisdome of this worlde, neither of the princes of this worlde, which come to naught.

7 But we speake the wisdome of God in a mysterie, *even* the hid *wisdome*, which God had determined before the worlde, vnto our glorie.

8 Which none of the princes of this world hath knowen: for had they knowen it, they would not haue crucified the Lord of glorie.

9 But as it is written, * The things which eye hath not seene, neither eare hath heard, neither came into mans *Isai.64.4.*

heart, *are*, which God hath prepared for them that loue him.

10 But God hath reuealed *them* vnto vs by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all thinges, yea, the deepe things of God.

11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, saue the spirit of a man, which is in him? euen so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

12 Now we haue receiued not the spirit of the worlde, but the Spirit, which is of God, that we might knowe the things that are giuen to vs of God.

Chap. 1. 17. 2. *pet.* 1. 16. 13 Which thinges also we speake, not in the * wordes which mans wisdome teacheth, but which the holie Ghost teacheth, comparing spiritual things with spiritual things.

14 But the natural man perceiueth not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishnes vnto him: neither can he knowe *them*, because they are spiritually discerned.

15 But he that is spiritual discerneth all things: yet he him selfe is iudged of no man.

Isai. 40. 13. *Rom.* 11. 34. 16 * For who hath knowen the minde of the Lord, that he might instruct him? But we haue the minde of Christ.

CHAP. III.

1 He yeeldeth a reason why he preached small matters vnto them: 4 He sheweth how they ought to esteeme of ministers: 6 the ministers office. 10 A true forme of edifying. 16 He warneth the Corinthians, that they be not drawne away to prophane things, 18 through the proude wisdome of the flesh.

1 AND I could not speake vnto you, brethren, as vnto spiritual men, but as vnto carnall, *euen* as vnto babes in Christ.

2 I gaue you milke to drinke, & not meate: for ye were not yet able *to beare it*, neither yet now are ye able.

3 For ye are yet carnal: for whereas *there is* among you ennying, and strife, and diuisions, are ye not carnal, and walke as men?

4 For when one saith, I am Pauls, and another, I am Apollos, are ye not carnal?

5 Who is Paul then? and who is Apollos, but the ministers

sters by whome ye beleeued, and as the Lord gaue to euerie man?

6 I haue planted, Apollos watred, but God gaue the increase.

7 So then, neither is he that planteth, anie thing, neither he that watreth, but God that giueth the increase.

8 And he that planteth, and he that watreth, are one, * and euerie man shall receiue his wages, according to his labour. *Psal.62.12. Galat.6.5.*

9 For we together are Gods labourers: ye are Gods husbandrie, *and* Gods building.

10 According to the grace of God giuen to me, as a skilful master builder, I haue laied the foundation, and an other buildeth thereon: but let euerie man take heede how he buildeth vpon it.

11 For other foundation can no man lay, then that which is laied, which is Iesus Christ.

12 And if anie man builde on this foundation, golde, siluer, precious stones, timber, haye, *or* stubble,

13 Euerie mans worke shalbe made manifest: for the day shal declare it, because it shalbe reuciled by the fire: & the fire shal trie euerie mans worke of what sort it is.

14 If anie mans worke, that he hath built vpon, abide, he shall receiue wages.

15 If anie mans worke burne, he shall lose, but he shalbe saued him selfe: neuertheles yet as it were by the fire.

16 * Know ye not that ye are the Temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? *Chap.6.19. 2.Cor.6.16*

17 If anie man destroy the Temple of God, him shal God destroy: for the Temple of God is holy, which ye are.

18 Let no man deceiue him selfe: If anie man among you seeme to be wise in this worlde, let him be a foole, that he may be wise.

19 For the wisdome of this world is foolishnes with God: for it is written, * He catcheth the wise in their owne craftines. *Iob.5.13.*

20 * And againe, the Lord knoweth that the thoughts of the wise be vaine. *Psal.94.11*

21 Therefore let no man reioyce in men: for al things are yours.

22 Whether it be Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death: whether they be things present,

or things to come, euen all are yours,
23 And ye Christes, and Christ Gods.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Bringing in the definition of a true Apostle, 7 he sheweth that humilitie ought rather to be an honour then a shame vnto him. 9 He bringeth in proofe, whereby it may euidently appeare, 10 that he neither had care of glorie, 11 nor of his pellie. 17 He commendeth Timothie.

1 LEt a man so thinke of vs, as of the ministers of Christ, and disposers of the secrets of God;
2 And as for the rest, it is required of the disposers, that euerie man be found faithfull.
3 As touching me, I passe verie litle to be iudged of you, or of mans iudgement: no, I iudge not mine owne selfe.
4 For I know nothing by my selfe, yet am I not thereby iustified: but he that iudgeth me, is the Lord.
Mat.7.1. 5 Therefore * iudge nothing before the time, vntill the Lord come, who wil lighten things that are hid in darknes, and make the counsels of the hearts manifest: and then shall euerie man haue praise of God.
6 Now these things, brethren, I haue figuratiuely applied vnto mine owne selfe and Apollos, for your sakes, that ye might learne by vs, that no man presume aboue that which is written, that one swel not against another for anie mans cause.
7 For who separateth thee? and what hast thou, that thou hast not receiued? if thou hast receiued it, why reioycest thou, as though thou haddest not receiued it?
8 Now ye are full: now ye are made riche: ye reigne as kings without vs, and woulde to God ye did reigne, that we also might reigne with you.
9 For I think that God hath set forth vs the last Apostles, as men appointed to death: for we are made a gasing stocke vnto the worlde, and to the Angels, and to men.
10 We *are* fooles for Christes sake, and ye *are* wise in Christ: we *are* weake, and ye *are* strong: ye *are* honorable, and we *are* despised.
11 Vnto this houre we both hunger, and thirst, and are
Act.20.34 naked, and are buffeted, and haue no certaine dwelling
1.Thes.2.9. place,
2.Thes.3.8. 12 * And labour, working with our owne handes: we

are

are reuiled, and *yet* we bleſſe: we are perſecuted, *and* ſuffer it.

13 * We are euil ſpoken of, and we pray: we are made as the filthe of the worlde, the offskowring of al things, vnto this time. *Mat. 5.44. luke.23.34. act.7.60.*

14 I write not theſe things to ſhame you, but as my beloued children I admoniſh you.

15 For though ye haue ten thouſand inſtructors in Chriſt, yet *haue ye* not many fathers: for in Chriſt Ieſus I haue begotten you through the Goſpel.

16 Wherefore, I pray you, be ye followers of me.

17 For this cauſe haue I ſent vnto you Timotheus, which is my beloued ſonne, and faithful in the Lord, which ſhal put you in remembrance of my wayes in Chriſt as I teach euery where in euery Church.

18 Some are puffed vp as though I would not come to you.

19 But I wil come to you ſhortly, * if the Lord wil, and wil know, not the wordes of them which are puffed vp, but the power. *Act.19.21. iam.4.15.*

20 For the kingdome of God *is not* in word, but in power.

21 What wil ye? ſhal I come vnto you with a rod, or in loue, and in the Spirit of meekenes?

CHAP. V.

1 *That they haue winked at him who committed inceſt with his mother in Law,* 2. 6 *he ſheweth ſhould cauſe them rather to be aſhamed, then to reioyce:* 10 *Such kinde of wickednes is to be puniſhed with excommunication,* 12 *leſt other be infected with it.*

1 IT is heard certainely *that there is* fornication among you, and ſuch fornication as is not once named among the Gentiles, that one ſhould haue his fathers wife.

2 And ye are puffed vp and haue not rather ſorowed, that he which hath done this deede, might be put from among you.

3 For I verely as abſent in bodye, but preſent in ſpirit, haue determined already as though I were preſent, that he that hath thus done this thing,

4 When ye are gathered together, and my ſpirit, in the Name of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, that ſuch one, *I ſay*, by the power of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt,

5 Be deliuered vnto Satan, for the deſtruction of the

flesh, that the Spirit may be saued in the day of the Lord Iesus.

6 Your reioycing is not good, knowe ye not that a litle leauen leaueneth the whole lumpe?

7 Purge out therfore the old leauen, that ye may be a new lumpe, as ye are vnleauened: for Christ our Passeoner is sacrificed for vs.

8 Therefore let vs keepe the feast, not with olde leauen, neither in the leauen of maliciousnesse and wickednesse: but with the vnleauened bread of syncerite and trueth.

9 I wrote vnto you in an Epistle, that ye should not company together with fornicatours,

10 And not altogether with the fornicatours of this worlde, or with the couetous, or with extorcioners, or with idolaters: for then ye must go out of the world.

11 But now I haue written vnto you, that ye company not together: if any that is called a brother, be a fornicatour, or couetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extorsioner, with such one eate not.

12 For what haue I to do, to iudge them also which are without? do ye not iudge them that are within?

13 But God iudgeth them that are without. Put awaye therefore from among your selues that wicked man.

CHAP. VI.

He inueigheth against their contentions in law matters, 6 wherewith they vexed one another vnder iudges that were infideles, to the reproch of the Gospell, 9 and then sharply threatneth fornicatours.

1 DAre any of you, hauing busines against another, be iudged vnder the vniuste, and not vnder the Saintes?

2 Do ye not know, that the Saintes shal iudge the world? If the worlde then shalbe iudged by you, are ye vnworthy to iudge the smallest matters?

3 Know ye not that we shal iudge the Angels? how much more, things that pertaine to this life?

4 If then ye haue iudgements of things pertaining to this life, set vp them which are least esteemed in the Church.

5 I speake it to your shame. Is it so that there is not a wise man among you? no not one, that can iudge be-

tweene

twene his brethren?
6 But a brother goeth to lawe with a brother, and that vnder the infideles.
7 Now therefore there is altogether infirmitie in you, in that ye go to law one with another: * why rather suffer ye not wrong? why rather susteine ye not harme? *Mat.5.39. Luk.6.29.*
8 * Nay, ye your selues do wrong, and do harme, and that to your brethren. *Rom.12.19. 1.Thes.4.6.*
9 Knowe ye not that the vnrighteous shal not inherit the kingdome of God? Be not deceiued: neither fornicatours, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor wantons, nor bonggerers,
10 Nor thieues, nor couetous, nor drunkardes, nor railers, nor extorsioners shal inherite the kingdome of God.
11 And such were * some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are iustified in the Name of the Lord Iesus, and by the Spirit of our God. *Titus.3.3.*
12 ¶ * All things are lawful vnto me: but al things are not profitable. I may do al things, but I wil not be brought vnder the power of any thing. *Cha.10.23.*
13 Meates *are ordeined* for the bellie, and the bellie for the meates: but God shal destroy both it, and them. Now the bodie *is* not for fornication, but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body.
14 And God hath also raised vp the Lord, and * shal raise vs vp by his power. *Rom.6.5.*
15 Knowe ye not, that your bodyes are the members of Christ? shal I then take the members of Christ, & make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.
16 Do ye not know, that he which coupleth himself with an harlot, is one body? * for two, sayeth he, shalbe one flesh. *Gen.2.24. mat.19.5.*
17 But he that is ioyned vnto the Lord, is one spirit. *mar.10.8.*
18 Flee fornication: euery sinne that a man doeth, is without the bodye, but he that committeth fornication, sinneth against his owne bodie. *ephes.5.31.*
19 Knowe ye not that * your bodye is the Temple of the holy Ghost, *which* is in you, whome ye haue of God? and ye are not your owne. *Chap.3.17. 2.cor.6.16.*
20 * For ye are bought for a price: therefore glorifie God in your bodie, and in your spirit: for they are Gods. *Chap.7.23. 1.pet.1.18.*

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

Entreating here of mariage, 4 which is a remedie against fornication, 10 and may not be broken, 18. 20 he willeth every man to liue contented with his lot. 25 He sheweth what the end of virginitie should be, 35 and who ought to marie.

1 NOw concerning the thinges whereof ye wrote vnto me, *It were* good for a man not to touch a woman.

2 Neuertheles, to auoyd fornication, let euery man haue his wife, and let euerie woman haue her owne husband.

2.Pet. 3.7. 3 *Let the husband giue vnto the wife due benevolence, and likewise also the wife vnto the husband.

4 The wife hath not the power of her owne bodye, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not the power of his owne body, but the wife.

5 Defraude not one another, except *it be* with consent for a time, that ye may giue your selues to fasting and prayer, and againe come together that Satan tempt you not for your incontinencie.

6 But I speake this by permission, not by commandement.

7 For I would that all men were euen as I my selfe *am*: but euery man hath his proper gift of God, one after this maner, and another after that.

8 Therefore I say vnto the vnmaried, and vnto the widowes, it is good for them if they abide euen as I *do*.

9 But if they cannot abstaine, let them mary: for it is better to mary then to burne.

10 *And vnto the maried I commaunde, not I, but the Lord, Let not the wife depart from her husband.

Mat. 5.32. and 19.9. mar. 10.11. 12. luk. 16. 18.

11 But and if she depart, let her remaine vnmarried, or be reconciled vnto her husband, and let not the husband put away *his* wife.

12 But to the remnaunt I speake, *and* not the Lord, If anie brother haue a wife, that beleeueth not, if she be content to dwell with him, let him not forsake her,

13 And the woman which hath an husband that beleeueth not, if he be content to dwel with her, let her not forsake him,

14 For the vnbeleeuing husband is sanctified vnto the wife, and the vnbeleeuing wife is sanctified vnto the husband, els were your children vncleane: but now are they holy.

15 But

15 But if the vnbeleeuing departe, let him depart: a brother or a sister is not in subiection in such thinges: but God hath called vs in peace.
16 For what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt saue thine husband? or what knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt saue thy wife?
17 But as God hath distributed to euery man, as the Lord hath called euery one, so let him walke: and so ordaine I, in all Churches.
18 Is any man called being circumcised? let him not gather *his vncircumcision*: is any called vncircumcised, let him not be circumcised.
19 Circumcision is nothing, & vncircumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the commandements of God.
20 * Let euery man abide in the same vocation wherein he was called. *1.Tim. 6.2.*
21 Art thou called *being* a seruant? care not for it: but if yet thou maiest be free, vse it rather.
22 For he that is called in the Lord *being* a seruant, is the Lords freeman: likewise also he that is called *being* free, is Christes seruant.
23 * Ye are bought with a price: be not the seruants of men. *Chap. 6.20. 1.pet.1.18.*
24 Brethren, let euery man, wherein he was called, therein abide with God. 19.
25 Now concerning virgins, I haue no commandement of the Lord: but I giue mine aduise, as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithful.
26 I suppose then this to be good for the present necessitie: *I meane* that it is good for a man so to be.
27 Art thou bound vnto a wife? seeke not to be loosed: art thou loosed from a wife? seeke not a wife.
28 But if thou takest a wife, thou sinnest not: and if a virgine marie, she sinneth not: neuertheles, such shall haue trouble in the flesh: but I spare you.
29 And this I say, brethrē, because the time is short, hereafter that both they which haue wiues, be as though they had none:
30 And they that weepe, as though they wept not: & they that reioyce, as though they reioyced not: and they that bye, as though they possessed not:
31 And they that vse this world, as though they vsed it not:

not: for the fashion of this world goeth away.
31 And I would haue you without care. The vnmarried careth for the thinges of the Lord, how he may please the Lord.
33 But he that is married, careth for the things of the worlde, how he may please *his* wife.
34 There is difference also betweene a virgine and a wife: the vnmaried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy, both in body and in spirit: but shee that is married, careth for the thinges of the world, how she may please her husband.
35 And this I speake for your owne commoditie, not to tangle you in a snare, but that *ye* follow that, which is honest, and that ye may cleaue fast vnto the Lord without separation.
36 But if any man thinke that it is vncomely for his virgine, if she passe the flower of *her* age, and neede so require, let him doe what he wil, he sinneth not: let thē be married.
37 Neuertheles, he that standeth firme in his heart, that he hath no neede, but hath power ouer his owne wil, & hath so decreed in his heart, that he wil keepe his virgine, he doeth wel.
38 So then he that giueth her to mariage, doeth wel, but he that giueth her not to mariage doeth better.
39 The wife is bound by the Law, as long as her husband liueth: but if her husband be dead, she is at libertie to marry with whom she wil, onely in the Lord.
40 But she is more blessed, if she so abide, in my iudgement: * and I thinke that I haue also the Spirit of God.

Rom. 7. 1.

1. Thes. 4. 8.

CHAP. VIII.

1 From this place vnto the end of the tenth Chapter, he willeth them not to beat the Gentiles prophane bankets. 8 Herestraineth the abuse of Christian liberte, 11 and sheweth that knowledge must be tempered with charitie.

1 And as touching thinges sacrificed vnto idoles, we know that we al haue knowledge: knowledge puffeth vp, but loue edifieth.
2 Now, if any man thinke that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to knowe.
3 But if any man loue God, the same is knowen of him.
4 Concerning therefore the eating of things sacrificed vnto

vnto idoles, we knowe that an idole *is* nothinge in the world, and that there *is* none other God but one.

5 For though there be that are called gods, whether in heauen, or in earth, (as there be many gods, and many lords.)

6 Yet vnto vs there *is* but one God, *which is* that Father, of whome are al thinges, and we in him: and * one Lord Iesus Christ, by whome *are* all things & we by him. *Chap.12.3. Ioh.13.13.*

7 But euery man hath not that knowledge: for many hauing conscience of the idole, vntil this houre, eate as a thing sacrificed vnto the idole, and so their conscience being weake, is defiled.

8 But meat maketh not vs acceptable to God, for neither if we eate, haue we the more: neither if we eate not, haue we the lesse.

9 But take heede lest by any meanes this power of yours be an occasion of falling, to them that are weake.

10 For if any man see thee which hast knowledge, sit at table in the idoles temple, shal not the conscience of him which is weake, be boldened to eate those thinges which are sacrificed to idoles?

11 And through thy knowledge shal the * weake brother perish, for whome Christ died. *Rom.14.15*

12 Now when ye sinne so against the brethren, and wound their weake conscience, ye sinne against Christ.

13 * Wherefore if meate offend my brother, I will eate no flesh while the world standeth, that I may not offend my brother. *Rom.14.21*

CHAP. IX.

1 He declareth, that from the liberty which the Lord gaue him, he willingly abstained, 18. 21 lest in things indifferent he should offend any. 24 He sheweth that our life is like vnto a race.

1 AM I not an Apostle? am I not free? haue I not seene Iesus Christ our Lord? are ye not my worke in the Lord?

2 If I be not an Apostle vnto other, yet doutles I am vnto you: for ye are the seale of mine Apostleship in the Lord.

3 My defence to them that examine me, is this,

4 Haue we not power to eate and to drinke?

5 Or haue we not power to leade about a wife being a sister, as wel as the rest of the Apostles, and as the brethren

brethren of the Lord and Cephas?

6 Or I onely and Barnabas, haue not we power not to worke?

7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his owne cost? who planteth a vineyarde, and eateth not of the fruit thereof? or who feedeth a flocke, and eateth not of the milke of the flocke?

8 Say I these things according to man? saith not the Law the same also?

Deut.25.4. 1.Tim.5.18. 9 For it is written in the Law of Moses, * Thou shalt not muzzel the mouth of the oxe, that treadeth out the corne: doeth God take care for oxen?

10 Either saith he it not altogether for our sakes? For our sakes no doute it is written, that he which eareth, should eare in hope, & that he that thresheth in hope, should be partaker of his hope.

Rom.15. 27. 11 * If we haue sowen vnto you spirituall things, *is it* a great thing if we reape your carnall things?

12 If others with you be partakers of *this* power, *are* not we rather? neuertheles, we haue not vsed this power: but suffer all thinges, that we shoulde not hinder the Gospel of Christ.

13 Doe ye not knowe, that they which minister about *Deut.18.1.* the * holy thinges, eate of the thinges of the Temple? and they which waite at the altar, are partakers with the altar?

14 So also hath the Lord ordeined, that they which preach the Gospel, should liue of the Gospel.

15 But I haue vsed none of these things: neither wrote I these things, that it should be so done vnto me: for it were better for me to die, then that any man shoulde make my reioycing vaine.

16 For though I preach the Gospel, I haue nothing to reioyce of: for necessitie is laid vpon me, and woe is vnto me, if I preach not the Gospel.

17 For if I do it willingly, I haue a reward, but if I do it against my will, *notwithstanding* the dispensation is committed vnto me.

18 What is my reward then? verely that when I preach the Gospel, I make the Gospel of Christ free that I abuse not mine authoritie in the Gospel.

19 For though I be free from all men, yet haue I made my

my selfe seruant vnto all men, that I might win the mo.
20 * And vnto the Iewes, I become as a Iewe, that I may winne the Iewes: to them that are vnder the Lawe, as *though I were* vnder the Lawe, that I may winne them that are vnder the Law: *Act. 16.3. galat.2.3.*
21 To the that are without Law, as *though I were* without Law (when I am not without Law as pertaining to God, but *am* in the Lawe through Christ) that I may winne them that are without Lawe:
22 To the weake I become as weake, that I may winne the weake: I am made all things to al men, that I might by all meanes saue some.
23 And this I do for the Gospels sake, that I might be partaker thereof with you.
24 Knowe ye not, that they which runne in a race, runne all, yet one receiueth the price? so runne that ye may obtaine.
25 And euery man that proueth masteries, abstaineth from all things: and they *do it* to obtaine a corruptible crowne: but we for an vncorruptible.
26 I therefore so runne, not as vncertainely: so fight I, not as one that beateth the ayre.
27 But I beate down my bodie, and bring it into subiection, lest by any meanes after that I haue preached to other, I my selfe should be reproued.

CHAP. X.

1 If God spared not the Iewes, neither will he spare those who are of like condition, 3. 4 touching the outward signes of his grace. 14 That it is absurd, that such should be partakers of the table of deuils, who are partakers of the Lordes supper. 24 To haue consideration of our neighbour in things indifferent.

1 MOreouer, brethren, I woulde not that ye shoulde be ignorant, that all our fathers were vnder * that cloude, and all passed through that * sea, *Exo.13.21. numb.9.18.*
2 And were all baptized vnto Moses, in that cloude, and in that sea, *Exod.14.22*
3 * And did all eate the same spirituall meate,
4 * And did all drinke the same spirituall drinke (for they dranke of the spirituall Rocke that followed them: and the Rocke was Christ) *Exo.16.15. Exo.17.6. num.10.20.*
5 But with manie of them God was not pleased: for they *&.21.16.*

Nũ.26.65. were * ouerthrowen in the wildernes.

6 Nowe these thinges are our ensamples, to the intent
Num.11.4. & 26.64. that we shoulde not lust after euill thinges * as they also lusted.

Psa.106.14 Exod.32.6. 7 Neither be ye idolaters as *were* some of them, as it is written,* The people sate downe to eate and drinke, and rose vp to play.

8 Neither let vs commit fornication, as some of them
Num.25.9. committed fornication, and fell in one * day three and twentie thousand.

9 Neither let vs tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted *him*, and * were destroyed of serpents.
Num.21.6.

Psa.106.14 Num.14. 10 Neither murmure ye, as some of them * also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer.

37. Iudg.8. 24. 11 Now all these things came vnto them for ensamples, and were written to admonish vs, vpon whom the ends of the world are come.

12 Wherefore, let him that thinketh he standeth, take heede lest he fall.

13 There hath no tentation taken you, but such as appertaineth to man: and God is faithfull, which will not suffer you to be tempted aboue that you be able, but will euen giue the issue with the tentation, that ye may be able to beare it.

14 Wherefore my beloued, flee from idolatrie.

15 I speake as vnto them which haue vnderstanding: iudge ye what I say.

16 The cup of blessing which we blesse, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we breake, is it not the communion of the bodie of Christ?

17 For we that are many, are one bread and one bodie, because we all are partakers of one bread.

18 Beholde Israel *which is* after the flesh: are not they which eat of the sacrifices partakers of the altar?

19 What say I then? that the idole is any thing? or that that which is sacrificed to idoles, is any thing?

20 *Nay*, but that these thinges which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to deuils, and not vnto God: and I woulde not that ye shoulde haue fellowship with the deuils.

21 Ye can not drinke the cup of the Lord, and the cup of the deuils. Ye can not be partakers of the Lordes table.

table and of the table of deuils.
22 Do we prouoke the Lord to anger? are we stronger then he?
23 *All thinges are lawfull for me, but all thinges are not expedient: all thinges are lawfull for me, but all thinges edifie not. *Chap.6.12.*
24 Let no man seeke his owne, but euerie man anothers welth.
25 Whatsoeuer is solde in the shambles, eat ye, and aske no question for conscience sake.
26 *For the earth *is* the Lords, and all that therein is. *Psal.24.1.*
27 If any of them which beleeue not, call you *to a feast*, & if ye will go, whatsoeuer is set before you, eate, asking no question for conscience sake.
28 But if any man say vnto you, This is sacrificed vnto idols, eate it not, because of him that shewed it, and for the conscience (for the earth *is* the Lords, and all that therein is):
29 And the conscience I say, not thine, but of that other: for why should my libertie be condemned of another mans conscience?
30 For if I through *Gods* benefit be partaker, why am I euill spoken of, for that wherefore I giue thanks?
31 *Whether therefore ye eate, or drinke, or whatsoeuer ye do, do all to the glorie of God. *Col.3.17.*
32 Giue none offence, neither to the Iewes, nor to the Grecians, nor to the Church of God:
33 Euen as I please all men in all thinges, not seeking mine owne profite, but *the profite* of many, that they might be saued.

CHAP. XI.

1 He blameth the Corinthians for that in their holy assemblies, 4 men do pray hauing their heads couered, 6 and women bare headed, and because their meetings tended to euil, 21 who mingled prophane banketts with the holy supper of the Lord, 23 which he requireth to be celebrated according to Christs institution.

1 BE *ye followers of me, euen as I am of Christ. *2.Thes.3.9.*
2 Now brethren, I commend you, that ye remember all my things, and keepe the ordinances, as I deliuered them to you.
3 But I will that ye knowe, that Christ is the *head of *Ephes.5.23.*

euerie man: and the man is the womans head: and God is Christs head.

4 Euerie man praying or propheeying hauing *any thing* on *his* head, dishonoreth his head.

5 But euerie woman that prayeth or propheeieth bare headed, dishonoreth her head: for it is euen one verie thing, as though she were shauen.

6 Therefore if the woman be not couered, let her also be shorne: and if it be shame for a woman to be shorne or shauen, let her be couered.

7 For a man ought not to couer *his* head: forasmuch as he is the *image and glorie of God: but the woman is the glorie of the man.

Gen. 1.26. & 5.1. & 9.6. colos. 3.10.

8 For the man is not of the woman, but the woman of the man.

Gen. 2.22.

9 *For the man was not created for the womans sake: but the woman for the mans sake.

10 Therefore ought the woman to haue power on *her* head, because of the Angels.

11 Nenertheles, neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man in the Lord.

12 For as the woman is of the man, so is the man also by the woman: but all things are of God.

13 Iudge in your selues, is it comely that a woman pray vnto God vncouered?

14 Doeth not nature it selfe teach you, that if a man haue long heare, it is a shame vnto him?

15 But if a woman haue long heare, it is a praise vnto her: for her heare is giuen her for a couering.

16 But if any man lust to be contentious, we haue no such custome, neither the Churches of God.

17 ¶ Now in this that I declare, I praise *you* not, that ye come together, not with profite, but with hurt.

18 For first of all, when ye come together in the Church, I heare that there are dissensions among you: and I beleeue it *to be true* in some part.

19 For there must be heresies euen among you, that they which are approued among you, might be knowē.

20 When ye come together therefore into one place, *this* is not to eate the Lords supper.

21 For euerie man when they shoulde eate, taketh *his* owne supper afore, and one is hungrie, and another

ther is drunken.

22 Haue ye not houses to eate and to drinke in? despise ye the Church of God, and shame them that haue not? what shall I say to you? shall I praise you in this? I praise you not.

23 For I haue receiued of the Lord that which I also haue deliuered vnto you, *to wit*, That the Lord Iesus in the night that he was betrayed, tooke bread:

24 * And when he had giuen thankes, he brake it, & said, Take, eate: this is my bodie, which is broken for you: this do ye in remembrance of me. *Mat. 26. 26 mar. 14. 22. luk. 22. 19.*

25 After the same maner also *he tooke* the cup, when he had supped, saying, This cup is the Newe testament in my blood: this do as oft as ye drinke it, in remembrance of me.

26 For as often as ye shall eat this bread, and drinke this cup, ye shew the Lords death till he come.

27 Wherefore, whosoeuer shall eate this bread, & drinke the cup of the Lord vnworthily, shalbe guilty of the bodie and blood of the Lord.

28 * Let euerie man therefore examine himselfe, and so let him eate of this bread, and drinke of this cup. *2. Cor. 13. 5*

29 For he that eateth and drinketh vnworthily, eateth and drinketh his owne damnation, *because* he discerneth not the Lords bodie.

30 For this cause many *are* weake, and sicke among you, and many sleepe.

31 For if we woulde iudge our selues, we shoulde not be iudged.

32 But when we are iudged, we are chastened of the Lord, because we shoulde not be condemned with the worlde.

33 Wherefore, my brethren, when ye come together to eate, tarie one for another.

34 And if any man be hungrie, let him eate at home, that ye come not together vnto condemnation. Other things will I set in order when I come.

CHAP. XII.

1 *To draw away the Corinthians from contention and pride, he sheweth that spirituall giftes are therefore diuersly bestowed, 7 that, the same being iointly to eche other imployed, 12 we may grow vp together into one bodie of Christ*

in such equall proportion and measure, 20 *as the members of mans bodie do.*

12 1 NOw concerning spirituall *giftes*, brethren, I woulde not haue you ignorant.

2 Ye know that ye were Gentiles, and were caried away vnto the domme idoles, as ye were lead.

Mark.9.39. Chap.8.6. Iohn.13.13. Phil.2.11. 3 Wherefore, I declare vnto you, that no man * speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Iesus * execrable: also no man can saye that Iesus is the Lord, but by the holy Ghost.

4 Now there are diuersities of gifts, but the same Spirit.

5 And there are diuersities of administrations, but the same Lord.

6 And there are diuersities of operations, but God is the same which worketh all in all.

7 But the manifestation of the Spirit *is* giuen to euery man to profite withall.

8 For to one is giuen by the Spirit the worde of wisedome: and to another the worde of knowledge, by the same Spirit:

9 And to another *is giuen* faith, by the same Spirit: and to another the gifts of healing, by the same Spirit:

10 And to another the operations of great works: and to another, prophecie: and to another, the discerning of spirits: and to another, diuersities of tongues: and to another the interpretation of tongues.

Rom.12.3. Ephes.4.7. 11 * And all these things worketh one & the selfe same Spirit, distributing to euery man seuerally as he will.

12 For as the bodie is one, and hath manye members, and all the members of the bodye, which is one, though they be manye, *yet* are *but* one bodie: euen so is Christ.

13 For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one bodie, whether *we be* Iewes, or Grecians, whether *we be* bonde, or free, and haue bene all made to drinke into one Spirit.

14 For the bodie also is not one member, but many.

15 If the foot would say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the bodie, is it therefore not of the bodie?

16 And if the eare would say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the bodie, is it therefore not of the bodie?

17 If the whole bodie *were* an eye, where *were* the hearing?

ring? If the whole *were* hearing, where *were* the smelling?
18 But nowe hath God disposed the members euery one of them in the bodie at his owne pleasure.
19 For if they were all one mẽber, where *were* the body?
20 But now *are* there many members, yet but one body.
21 And the eye can not saye vnto the hande, I haue no neede of thee: nor the head againe to the feet, I haue no neede of you.
22 Yea, much rather those members of the bodie, which seeme to be more feeble, are necessarie.
23 And vpon those *members* of the bodie, which we think most vnhoneſt, put we more honestie on: and our vncomely *parts* haue more comelinesse on.
24 For our comely *parts* neede it not: but God hath tempered the bodie together, and hath giuen the more honour to that *part* which lacked,
25 Lest there shoulde be any diuision in the bodie: but that the members shonld haue the same care one for another.
26 Therefore if one member suffer, all suffer with it: if one member be had in honour, all the members reioyce with it.
27 Nowe ye are the bodie of Christ, and members for *your* part.
28 * And God hath ordained some in the Church: *as* first, Apostles, secondly Prophets, thirdly teachers, then them that doe miracles: after that, the gistes of healinge, helpers, gouernours, diuersitye of tongues. * *Ephes.* 4. 11
29 Are all Apostles? are all Prophets? are all teachers?
30 Are all doers of miracles? haue all the gistes of healing? do all speake with tongues? do all interprete?
31 But desire you the best gifts, and I will yet shew you a more excellent way.

CHAP. XIII.

1 He sheweth that there are no gifts so excellent, which in Gods sight are not corrupt, if Charitie be away: 4 and therefore he digresseth vnto the commendation of it.

1 THough I speake with the tongues of men and Angels, and haue not loue, I am *as* sounding brasse, or a tinkling cymball.
2 And though I had the gift of prophesie, and knewe

all secretes and all knowledge, yea, if I had all faith, so
Mat.17.20 that I could remoue * mountaines, and had not loue,
I were nothing.
3 And though I feede the poore with all my goods, and
though I giue my bodie, that I be burned, and haue not
loue, it profiteth me nothing.
4 Loue suffreth long: it is bountifull: loue enuieth not:
loue doeth not boast it selfe: it is not puffed vp:
5 It doeth no vncomely thing: it seeketh not her owne
things: it is not prouoked to anger: it thinketh not euil:
6 It reioyceth not in iniquitie, but reioyceth in the
trueth:
7 It suffreth all things: it beleeueth all things: it hopeth
all things: it endureth all things.
8 Loue doeth neuer fall away, though that prophecyings
be abolished, or the tongues cease, or knowledge va-
nish away.
9 For we know in part, and we prophecie in part.
10 But when that which is perfect, is come, then that
which is in part, shalbe abolished.
11 When I was a childe, I spake as a childe, I vnderstood
as a childe, I thought as a childe: but when I became a
man, I put away childish things.
12 For nowe we see through a glasse darkly: but then
shall we see face to face. Nowe I know in part: but then
shall I know euen as I am knowen.
13 And now abideth faith, hope & loue, *euen* these three:
but the chiefest of these *is* loue.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 He commendeth the gift of prophecying: 7 and by a similitude taken of musical instruments, 12 he teacheth the true vse of interpreting the Scriptures: 17 he taketh away the abuse: 34 and forbiddeth women to speake in the Congregation.

1 FOllow after loue, and couet spirituall *gifts*, and ra-
ther that ye may propheere.
2 For he that speaketh a *strange* tongue, speaketh not vn-
to men, but vnto God: for no man heareth *him*: howbe-
it in the spirit he speaketh secret things.
3 But he that prophecieth, speaketh vnto men to edify-
ing, and to exhortation, and to comfort.
4 He that speaketh *strange* language, edifieth him selfe:

but

but he that prophecyeth, edifieth the Church.

5 I would that ye all ſpake *ſtrange* languages, but rather that ye prophecyed: for greater is he that prophecieth, then he that ſpeaketh *diuers* tongues, except he expoũd it, that the Church may receiue edification.

6 And now, brethren, if I come vnto you ſpeaking *diuers* tongues, what ſhal I profite you, except I ſpeake to you, eyther by reuelation, or by knowledge, or by prophecying, or by doctrine?

7 Moreouer thinges without life which giue a ſoundc, whether it *be* a pipe or an harpe, except they make a diſtinction in the ſoundes, howe ſhall it be knowen what is piped or harped?

8 And alſo if the trumpet giue an vncertaine ſound, who ſhal prepare him ſelfe to battel?

9 So likewiſe you, by the tongue, except ye vtter wordes that haue ſignification, how ſhall it be vnderſtand what is ſpoken? for ye ſhall ſpeake in the ayre.

10 There are ſo manie kindes of voyces (as it commeth to paſſe) in the worlde, and none of them is domme.

11 Except I knowe then the power of the voyce, I ſhalbe vnto him that ſpeaketh a Barbarian, and he that ſpeaketh, ſhalbe a Barbarian vnto me.

12 Euen ſo, foraſmuch as ye couet ſpirituall *giftes*, ſeeke that ye may excel vnto the edifying of the Church.

13 Wherefore, let him that ſpeaketh a *ſtrange* tongue, pray, that he may interprete.

14 For if I pray in a *ſtrange* tongue, my ſpirit prayeth: but mine vnderſtanding is without fruite.

15 What is it then? I will pray with the ſpirit, but I will pray with the vnderſtanding alſo: I will ſing with the ſpirit, but I will ſing with the vnderſtanding alſo.

16 Elſ, when thou bleſſeſt with the ſpirit, howe ſhall he that occupieth the roome of the vnlearned, ſay, Amen, at thy giuing of thankes, ſeeing he knoweth not what thou ſayeſt?

17 For thou verely gineſt thankes well, but the other is not edified.

18 I thanke my God, I ſpeake languages more then ye al.

19 Yet had I rather in the Church to ſpeake fiue wordes with mine vnderſtanding, that I might alſo inſtruct others, then ten thouſand wordes in a *ſtrange* tongue.

Mat.18.3. 20 Brethren, be not * children in vnderſtanding, but as concerning maliciouſnes be children, but in vnderſtanding be of a ripe age.

Eſa.28.11. 21 In the Law it is written, * By men of other tongues, and by other languages wil I ſpeake vnto this people: yet ſo ſhall they not heare me, ſaith the Lord.

22 Wherfore *ſtrange* tongues are for a ſigne, not to them that beleeue, but to thē that beleeue not. but prophecying *ſerueth* not for thē that beleeue not, but for them which beleeue.

23 If therefore when the whole Church is come together in one, and all ſpeake *ſtrange* tongues, there come in they that are vnlearned, or they which beleeue not, wil they not ſay, that ye are out of your wittes?

24 But if al prophecie, and there come in one that beleeueth not, or one vnlearned, he is rebuked of al men, and is iudged of all.

25 And ſo are the ſecrets of his heart made manifeſt, and ſo he wil fal downe on his face and worſhip God, and ſay plainely that God is in you in deede.

26 What is to be *done* then, brethren? when ye come together, *according as* euery one of you hath a Pſalme, *or* hath doctrine, *or* hath a tongue, *or* hath reuelation, *or* hath interpretatiō, let al things be done vnto edifying.

27 If any man ſpeake a *ſtrange* tongue, *let it be* by two, or at the moſt, by three, and that by courſe, and let one interprete.

28 But if there be no interpreter, let him keepe ſilence in the Church, *which ſpeaketh Languages*, and let him ſpeake to him ſelfe, and to God.

29 Let the Prophetes ſpeake two, or three, and let the other iudge.

30 And if any thing be reueiled to another that ſitteth by, let the firſt hold his peace.

31 For ye may all prophecie one by one, that all may learne, and all may haue comfort.

32 And the *ſpirits* of the Prophetes are ſubiect to the Prophetes.

33 For God is not *the author* of confuſion, but of peace, as *we ſee* in all the Churches of the Saintes.

1.Tim.2.11 34 * Let your women keepe ſilence in the Churches: for it is not permitted vnto them to ſpeake: but *they ought*

to

to be subiect, as also * the Lawe saieth. Gen.3.16.
35 And if they will learne any thing, let them aske their
husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speake
in the Church.
36 Came the word of God out from you? eyther came it
vnto you onely?
37 If any man thinke him selfe to be a Prophete, or spiri-
tuall, let him acknowledge, that the things, that I write
vnto you, are the commaundements of the Lord.
38 And if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.
39 Wherefore, brethren, couet to prophecie, and forbid
not to speake languages.
40 Let al things be done honestly, and by order.

CHAP. XV.

1 The Gospel that Paul preached: 3 The death and resurrection of Christ. 8 Paul sawe Christ. 9 He had persecuted that Church, wherof afterward he was made a minister. 12 Christ first rose againe, and we all shall rise by him. 26 The last enemie, death. 29 To be baptized for dead. 32 At Ephesus Paul fought with beastes. 35 How the dead are raysed. 45 The first Adam. The last Adam. 47 The first and second man. 51 We shal al be changed, we shall not al sleepe. 55 Deathes sting. 57 Victorie. 58 Constancie and stedfastnes.

1 MOreouer, *brethren, I declare vnto you the Gospel, Galat.1.11
which I preached vnto you, which ye haue also receiued, and wherein ye continue,
2 And whereby ye are saued, if ye keepe in memorie, after what maner I preached it vnto you, except ye haue beleeued in vaine.
3 For first of all, I deliuered vnto you that which I receiued, how that Christ died for our sinnes, according to the * Scriptures, Isai.53.5.
4 And that he was buried, and that he arose the third 1.pet.2.24.
day, according to the * Scriptures, Iesus.2.1.
5 * And that he was seene of Cephas, then of the twelue. Iohn.20.19
6 After that, he was seene of mo then fiue hundreth brethren at once, whereof manie remaine vnto this present, and some also are asleepe.
7 After that, he was seene of Iames: then of all the Apostles,

8 * And

Act.9.5. 8 *And last of al he was seene also of me, as of one borne out of due time.

Ephe.3.8. 9 *For I am the least of the Apostles, which am not meete to be called an Apostle, because I persecuted the Church of God.

Ephe.3.7. 10 *But by the grace of God, I am that I am: and his grace which is in me, was not in vaine: but I laboured more abundantly then they all: yet not I, but the grace of God which is with me.

11 Wherefore, whether it were I, or they, so we preach, and so haue ye beleeued.

12 ¶ Now if it be preached, that Christ is risen from the dead, howe say some among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?

13 For if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen:

14 And if Christ be not risen, thē is our preaching vaine, and your faith is also vaine.

15 And we are founde also false witnesses of God: for we haue testified of God, that he hath raised vp Christ: whō he hath not raised vp, if so be the dead be not raised.

16 For if the dead be not raised, then is Christ not raised.

17 And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vaine: ye are yet in your sinnes.

18 And so they which are a sleepe in Christ, are perished.

19 If in this life onely we haue hope in Christ, we are of all men the most miserable.

Col.1.18. Apoc.1.5. 20 But now is Christ risen from the dead, *and* was made the *first fruites of them that slept.

21 For since by man *came* death, by man *came* also the resurrection of the dead.

22 For as in Adam all die, euen so in Christ shall all be made aliue,

1.Thes.4.13. 23 But euery man in his *owne order: the first fruites *is* Christ, afterwarde, they that are of Christ, at his cōming *shall rise againe.*

24 Then *shalbe* the ende, when he hath delinered vp the kingdome to God, euen the Father, when he hath put downe all rule, and all authoritie and power.

Psal.110.1 all.2.34. heb.1.13. and 10.13. 25 For he must reigne *till he hath put all his enemies vnder his feete.

26 The last enemie that shalbe destroyed, *is* death.

27 *For

27 *For he hath put downe all things vnder his feete. *Psal.8.6.*
(And when he saith that all things are subdued *to him*, it *heb.2.8.*
is manifest that he is excepted, which did put downe all
things vnder him.)
28 And when all things shalbe subdued vnto him, then
shall the Sonne also him selfe be subiect vnto him, that
did subdue all things vnder him, that God may be all
in all.
29 Els what shall they do which are baptized for dead?
if the dead rise not at all, why are they then baptized
for dead?
30 Why are we also in ieopardy euery houre?
31 By your reioycing which I haue in Christ Iesus our
Lord, I die dayly.
32 If I haue fought with beastes at Ephesus after the
maner of men, what aduantageth it me, if the dead be
not raised vp? *let vs eate and drinke: for to morowe *Isa.22.13.*
we shall die.
33 Be not deceiued: euill speakinges corrupt good
maners.
34 Awake to *iust* righteously, and sinne not: for some
haue not the knowledge of God, I speake this to your
shame.
35 But some man will say, Howe are the dead raised vp?
and with what body come they forth?
36 O foole, that which thou sowest, is not quickened, ex-
cept it dye:
37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that bo-
dy that shalbe, but bare corne as it falleth, of wheat, or
of some other.
38 But God giueth it a bodie at his pleasure, euen to eue-
rie seede his owne bodie.
39 All flesh *is* not the same flesh, but there is one flesh
of men, and another flesh of beastes, and another of fi-
shes, and another of birdes.
40 *There are* also heauenly bodies, and earthly bodies:
but the glorie of the heauenly *is* one, and *the glorie* of the
earthly *is* another.
41 There is another glorie of the sunne, and another glo-
rie of the moone, and another glorie of the starres: for
one starre differeth from *another* starre in glorie.
42 So also *is* the resurrection of the dead. *The bodie* is sowē
in

in corruption, *and* is raiſed in incorruption.

43 It is ſowen in diſhonour, *and* is raiſed in glorie: it is ſowen in weakenes, *and* is raiſed in power.

44 It is ſowen a naturall bodie, *and* is raiſed a ſpirituall bodie: there is a naturall bodie, *and* there is a ſpirituall bodie.

Gen.2.7. 45 As it is alſo written, The firſt man * Adam was made a liuing ſoule: and the laſt Adam *was made* a quickening Spirit.

46 Howbeit that *was* not firſt which is ſpiritual, but that *which is* natural, and afterward that *which is* ſpirituall.

47 The firſt man *is* of the earth, earthly: the ſeconde man *is* the Lord from heauen.

48 As *is* the earthly, ſuch *are* they that are earthly: and as is the heauenly, ſuch *are* they alſo that are heauenly.

49 And as we haue borne the image of the earthly, ſo ſhall we beare the image of the heauenly.

50 This ſay I, brethren, that fleſhe and blood can not inherit the kingdome of God, neyther doeth corruption inherit incorruption.

51 Beholde, I ſhewe you a ſecret thing, we ſhall not all ſleepe, but we ſhall all be changed,

52 In a moment, in the twinkeling of an eye at the laſt
Mat.24.31. * trumpet: for the trumpet ſhall blowe, and the dead
1.Theſ.4.16 ſhalbe raiſed vp incorruptible, and we ſhalbe changed.

53 For this corruptible muſt put on incorruption: and this mortall *muſt* put on immortalitie.

54 So when this corruptible hath put on incorruption, & this mortall hath put on immortalitie, then ſhalbe
Eſa.25.8. brought to paſſe the ſaying that is written, * Death is
Oſe.13.14. ſwallowed vp into victorie.

55 O death where *is* thy ſting? O graue where *is* thy victorie?

56 The ſting of death *is* ſinne: and the ſtrength of ſinne *is* the Lawe.

1.Iohn.5.5. 57 * But thankes *be* vnto God which hath giuen vs victorie through our Lord Ieſus Chriſt.

58 Therefore my beloued brethren, be ye ſtedfaſt, vnmoueable, aboũdant alwayes in the worke of the Lord, foraſmuch as ye knowe, that your labour is not in vaine in the Lord.

1 *He exhorteth them to helpe the poore brethren of Hierusalem:* 10 *Then he commendeth Timothie:* 13 *and so with a friendly exhortation,* 19 *and commendations, endeth the Epistle.*

1 Concerning the gathering for the Saintes, as I haue ordeined in the Churches of Galatia, so do ye also.

2 Euery first *day* of the weeke, let euery one of you put aside by him self, and lay vp as *God* hath prospered him, that then there be no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I am come, whosoeuer ye shall alowe by letters, them will I sende to bring your liberalitie vnto Hierusalem.

4 And if it be meete that I goe also, they shall go with me.

5 Now I will come vnto you, after I haue gone through Macedonia (for I will passe through Macedonia.)

6 And it may be that I wil abide, yea, or winter with you, that ye may bring me on my way whithersoeuer I go.

7 For I will not see you now in my passage, but I trust to abide a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 And I will tarie at Ephesus vntill Pentecost.

9 For a great doore and effectuall is opened vnto me: and there are many aduersaries.

10 ¶ Nowe if Timotheus come, see that he be without feare with you: for he worketh the worke of the Lord, euen as I *do*.

11 Let no man therefore despise him: but conney him forth in peace, that he may come vnto me: for I looke for him with the brethren.

12 As touching *our* brother Apollos, I greatly desired him, to come vnto you with the brethren: but his mind was not at all to come at this time: howbeit he will come when he shall haue conuenient time.

13 ¶ Watche ye: stand fast in the faith: quite you like men *and* be strong.

14 Let all your things be done in loue.

15 Nowe brethren, I beseeche you (ye knowe the house of Stephanas, that it is the first fruites of Achaia, and that they haue giuen them selues to minister vnto the Saintes)

16 That ye be obedient euen vnto such, and to all that helpe with vs and labour.

17 I am

17 I am glad of the comming of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for they haue supplied the want of you.
18 For they haue comforted my spirit and yours: acknowledge therefore such men.
19 The Churches of Asia salute you: Aquila and Priscilla with the Church that is in their house, salute you greatly in the Lorde.
20 All the brethren greete you. Greete ye one another with an * holy kisse.
21 The salutation of *me* Paul with mine owne hande.
22 If any man loue not the Lord Iesus Christ, let him be had in execration maran-atha.
23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you.
24 My loue *be* with you all in Christ Iesus, Amen.

Rom. 16.16
2.cor.13.12
1.pet.5.14.

¶ The first *Epistle* to the Corinthians, written from Philippi, *and sent* by Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus, and Timotheus.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. I.

He beginneth with the praise of afflictions, 8 declaring what he hath suffred in Asia, 10 and howe happilie God assisted him: 17 He sayeth it was not vpon any lightnes, that he came not, according to his promise.

1 PAVL an Apostle of IESVS Christ, by the will of God, *and* our brother Timotheus, to the Church of God, which is at Corinthus with all the Saintes, which are in all Achaia:
2 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.
3 * Blessed *be* God, euen the Father of our Lorde Iesus Christ, the Father of mercies, & the God of all comfort,

Ephe.1.3.
1.pet.1.3.

4 Which

4 Which comforteth vs in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any affliction by the comfort wherewith we our ſelues are cõforted of God.

5 For as the ſuffrings of Chriſt abound in vs, ſo our conſolation aboundeth through Chriſt.

6 And whether we be afflicted, *it is* for your conſolation and ſaluation, which is wrought in the induring of the ſame ſuffrings, which we alſo ſuffer: or whether we be comforted, *it is* for your conſolation and ſaluation.

7 And our hope is ſtedfaſt concerning you, in as much as we knowe that as ye are partakers of the ſuffrings, ſo *ſhall ye be* alſo of the conſolation.

8 For brethren, we would not haue you ignorant of our affliction, which came vnto vs in Aſia, howe we were preſſed out of meaſure paſſing ſtrength, ſo that we altogether doubted, euen of life.

9 Yea, we receiued the ſentence of death in our ſelues, becauſe we ſhould not truſt in our ſelues, but in God, which raiſeth the dead.

10 Who deliuered vs from ſo great a death, and doeth deliuer *vs*: in whome we truſt, that yet hereafter he will deliuer *vs*,

11 * So that ye labour together in prayer for vs, that for the gift *beſtowed* vpon vs for many, thankes may be giuen by manie perſons for vs. *Rom.* 15.30

12 For our reioycing is this, the teſtimonie of our conſcience, that in ſimplicitie and godlie purenes, *and* not in fleſhly wiſedome, but by the grace of God we haue had our conuerſation in the worlde, and moſt of all to you wardes.

13 For we write none other things vnto you, then that ye reade or els that ye acknowledge, and I truſt ye ſhall acknowledge vnto the end.

14 Euen as ye haue acknowledged vs partly, that we are your reioycing, euen as ye are ours, in the day of *our* Lorde Ieſus.

15 And in this confidence was I minded firſt to come vnto you, that ye might haue had a double grace,

16 And to paſſe by you into Macedonia, and to come againe out of Macedonia vnto you, and to be led forth eoward Iudea of you.

17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I vse lightnes? or minde I those things which I minde, according to the flesshe, that with me should be, Yea, yea, and Nay, nay?

18 Yea, God is faithfull, that our word towarde you was not Yea, and Nay.

19 For the Sonne of God Iesus Christ, who was preached among you by vs, *that is* by me, and Siluanus, and Timothens, was not Yea, and Nay: but in him it was Yea.

20 For all the promises of God in him *are* Yea, and are in him Amen, vnto the glorie of God through vs.

21 And it is God which stablisheth vs with you in Christ, and hath anointed vs.

22 Who hath also sealed vs, and hath giuen the earnest of the Spirit in our heartes.

23 Now, I call God for a recorde vnto my soule, that to spare you, I came not as yet vnto Corinthus.

24 Not that we haue dominion ouer your faith, but we are helpers of your ioye: for by faith ye stand.

CHAP. II.

1 He excuseth his not comming vnto them, 2 and priuily reprehendeth them: 4 He sheweth that such is his affection towardes them, 5 that he neuer reioyceth but when they are merie. 6 Perceiuing the adulterer (whome he commanded to be deliuered vp to Satan) to repent, 7 he requesteth that they forgiue him. 31 He mentioneth his going into Macedonia.

1 BVt I determined thus in my selfe, that I woulde not come againe to you in heauines.

2 For if I make you sorie, who is he then that shoulde make me glad, but the same which is made sorie by me?

3 And I wrote this same thing vnto you, least when I came, I should take heauines of them, of whom I ought to reioyce: this confidence haue I in you all, that my ioye is the *ioye* of you all.

4 For in great affliction, and anguish of heart I wrote vnto you with manie teares: not that ye should be made sorie, but that ye might perceiue the loue which I haue, specially vnto you.

5 And if any hath caused sorowe, the same hath not made me sorie, but partly (lest I should more charge *him*) you all.

6 It is sufficient vnto the same man, that he was rebuked of manie.

7 So,

7 So that now contrariwise ye ought rather to forgiue *him*, and comfort *him*, lest the same should be swalowed vp with ouer much heauines.
8 Wherefore, I pray you, that you woulde cõfirme your loue towardes him.
9 For this cause also did I write, that I might knowe the proofe of you, whether ye would be obedient in all thinges.
10 To whom ye forgiue anie thing, I *forgiue* also: for verely if I forgaue anie thing, to whom I forgaue it, for your sakes *forgaue I it* in the sight of Christ,
11 Lest Satan should circumuent vs: for we are not ignorant of his enterprises.
12 ¶Furthermore, whē I came to Troas *to preach* Christes Gospel, and a doore was opened vnto me of the Lord,
13 I had no rest in my spirit, because I founde not Titus my brother, but tooke my leaue of them, and went away into Macedonia.
14 Nowe thankes *be* vnto God which alwaies maketh vs to triumphe in Christ, and maketh manifest the sauour of his knowledge by vs in euerie place.
15 For we are vnto God the sweete sauour of Christ, in them that are saued, and in them which perishe.
16 To the one *we are* the sauour of death, vnto death, and to the other the sauour of life, vnto life: and who is sufficient for these things?
17 *For we are not as manie, which make marchandise of the word of God: but as of syncerities, but as of God in the sight of God speake we in Christ. *Chap. 4. 2.

CHAP. III.

1 He desireth no other commendation, 3 then their continuing in the faith. 6 He is a minister not of the letter, but of the Spirit. 8 He sheweth the difference of the Lawe and the Gospell, 13 that the brightnes of the Law doeth rather dimme the sight then lighten it: 18 But the Gospell doeth make manifest Gods countenance vnto vs.

1 DO we begin to prayse our selues againe? or nede we as some other, epistles of recommẽdation vnto you, or *letters* of recommendation from you?
2 Ye are our epistle, written in our heartes, which is vnderstand, and read of all men.
3 In that ye are made manifest, to be the epistle of Christ,

ministred by vs, and written, not with ynke, but with the Spirit of the liuing God, not in tables of stone, but in fleshly tables of the heart.

4 And such trust haue we through Christ to God:

5 Not that we are sufficient of our selues, to thinke anie thing, as of our selues: but our sufficientie is of God,

6 Who also hath made vs able ministers of the Newe testament, not of the letter, but of the Spirit: for the letter killeth, but the Spirit giueth life.

7 If then the ministration of death *written* with letters & ingraued in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not behold the face of Moses, for the glorie of his countenance (which *glorie* is done away.)

8 Howe shall not the ministration of the Spirit be more glorious?

9 For if the ministerie of condemnation *was* glorious, much more doeth the ministration of righteousnes exceede in glorie.

10 For euen that which was glorified, was not glorified in this point, *therin*, as touching the exceeding glorie,

11 For if that which should be abolished, *was* glorious, much more shal that which remaineth, be glorious.

12 Seeing then that we haue such trust, we vse great boldenes of speach.

Exo.34.34. 13 * And *we are* not as Moses, *which* put a vaile vpon his face, that the children of Israel should not looke vnto the end of that which should be abolished.

14 Therefore their mindes are hardened: for vntill this day remayneth the same couering vntaken away in the reading of the olde Testament, which *vaile* in Christ is put away.

15 But euen vnto this day, when Moses is read, the vaile is layed ouer their heartes.

16 Nevertheles when their *heart* shalbe turned to the Lord, the vaile shalbe taken away.

Iohn.4.14. 17 Now the Lord is the* Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord *is*, there is libertie.

18 But we all beholde as in a mirrour the glorie of the Lorde with open face, and are changed into the same image, from glorie to glorie, as by the Spirit of the Lorde.

He sheweth that he hath so laboured in preaching the Gospell, 4 that such are euen blinded of Satan, who doe not perceiue the brightnes thereof, 7 that the same is caried in earthen vessels, 10 who are subiect to many miseries, 16 and therefore he exhorteth them by his owne example to be courageous, 17 and contemne this present life.

1 THerefore, seeing that we haue this ministerie, as we haue receiued mercie, we faint not:
2 But haue cast from vs the clokes of shame, and walke not in craftines, neyther handle we the worde of God deceitfully: but in declaration of the trueth we approue our selues to euery mans conscience in the sight of God.
3 If our Gospel be thē hid, it is hid to them that are lost.
4 In whom the God of this worlde hath blinded the mindes, *that is*, of the infideles, that the light of the glorious Gospell of Christ, which is the image of GOD, should not shine vnto them.
5 For we preache not our selues, but Christ Iesus the Lord, and our selues your seruants for Iesus sake.
6 For God * that commanded the light to shine out of darkenes, *is he* which hath shined in our hearts, to giue the light of the knowledge of the glorie of God in the face of Iesus Christ. * Gen. 1. 3.
7 But we haue this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellēcie of that power might be of God, & not of vs.
8 We are afflicted on euery side, yet *are we* not in distresse: we are in doubte, but yet we despaire not.
9 *We are* persecuted, but not forsaken: cast downe, but we perish not.
10 Euery where we beare about in our body the dying of the Lord Iesus, that the life of Iesus might also be made manifest in our bodies.
11 For we which liue, are alwayes deliuered vnto death for Iesus sake, that the life also of Iesus might be made manifest in our mortall flesh.
12 So then death worketh in vs, and life in you.
13 And because we haue the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, * I beleeued, and therefore haue I spoken, we also beleeue, and therefore speake, * Psal. 116. 10.
14 Knowing that he which hath raised vp the Lord Iesus,

shall raise vs vp also by Iesus, and shall set vs with you.
15 For all things *are* for your sakes, that that most plenteous grace by the thankesgiuing of many, may redoud to the prayse of God.
16 Therefore we faint not, but though our outwarde man perish, yet the inward man is renewed daily.
17 For our light affliction which is but for a moment, causeth vnto vs a farre most excellent *and* an eternall weight of glorie:
18 While we looke not on the thinges which are seene, but on the things which are not seene: for the thinges which are seene, *are* temporall: but the thinges which are not seene, *are* eternall.

CHAP. V.

1 *He continueth in the same argument, 6 touching the certaine hope of saluation* 8 *through faith,* 12 *not to praise him selfe,* 14 *seeing he hath God and his Church before his eyes,* 17 *and esteemeth nothing, but newnes of life in Christ.*

1 FOr we knowe that if our earthly house of this tabernacle be destroyed, we haue a building *giuen* of God, *that is,* an house not made with handes, *but* eternall in the heauens.
2 For therefore we sighe, desiring to be clothed with our house, which is from heauen.
Reue.16.15 3 Because yᵗ if we be clothed, we shal not be foūd naked.
4 For in deede we that are in this tabernacle, sighe and are burdened, because we would not be vnclothed, but would be clothed vpon, that mortalitie might be swalowed vp of life.
5 And he that hath created vs for this thing, *is* God, who also hath giuen vnto vs the earnest of the Spirit.
6 Therefore we are alway bolde, though we knowe that whiles we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lorde.
7 (For we walke by faith, and not by sight.)
8 Neuertheles, we are bolde, and loue rather to remoue out of the body, and to dwell with the Lord.
9 Wherefore also we couet, that both dwelling at home, and remouing frō home, we may be acceptable to him.
Rom.14.10 10 * For we must all appeare before the iudgement seate of Christ, that euery man may receiue the things which are *done* in his body, according to that he hath done, whether *it be* good or euill.
11 Kno-

11 Knowing therefore that terrour of the Lorde, we perswade men, and we are made manifeſt vnto God, and I truſt alſo that we are made manifeſt in your cõſciẽces.
12 For we prayſe not our ſelues againe vnto you, but giue you an occaſiõ to reioyce of vs, that ye may haue *to anſwere* againſt them, which reioyce in the face, and not in the heart.
13 For whether we be out of our wit, *we are* it to God: or whether we be in our right minde, *we are it* vnto you.
14 For that loue of Chriſt conſtraineth vs,
15 Becauſe we thus iudge, that if one be dead for all, then were all dead, and he died for all, that they which liue, ſhould not henceforth liue vnto them ſelues, but vnto him which died for them, and roſe againe.
16 Wherefore, henceforth knowe we no man after the fleſhe, yea though we had knowen Chriſt after the fleſh, yet now henceforth knowe we *him* no more.
17 Therefore if any man *be* in Chriſt, *let him be* a newe creature. * Olde things are paſſed away: beholde, all things are become new. *Iſa.43.19. Reuel.21.5.*
18 And all things *are* of God, which hath reconciled vs vnto him ſelfe by Ieſus Chriſt, and hath giuen vnto vs the miniſterie of reconciliation.
19 For God was in Chriſt, and reconciled the worlde to him ſelfe, not imputing their ſinnes vnto them, & hath committed to vs the worde of reconciliation.
20 Now then are we ambaſſadours for Chriſt: as though God did beſeeche *you* through vs, we pray you in Chriſtes ſteade, that ye be reconciled to God.
21 For he hath made him *to be* ſinne for vs, which knewe no ſinne, that we ſhould be made the righteouſnes of God in him.

CHAP. VI.

1 *He exhorteth them to leade their liues as it becommeth Chriſtians,* 5 *neither to be diſmayed in tribulations,* 9 *nor puffed vp with glorie,* 14 *to auoyde all vncleannes,* 16 *conſidering that they are the temples of the liuing God.*

1 SO we therefore as workers together beſeeche *you*, that ye receiue not the grace of God in vaine.
2 For he ſayth, * I haue heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of ſaluation haue I ſuccoured thee: beholde nowe the accepted time, beholde now the day of ſaluation. *Iſa.49.8.*

3 We giue no occasion of offence in any thing, that our
ministerie should not be reprehended.

1.Cor.4.1. 4 But in all things we approue our selues as * the ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses,

5 In stripes, in prisons, in tumultes, in labours,

6 By watchings, by fastings, by puritie, by knowledge, by long suffering, by kindnes, by the holy Ghost, by loue vnfained,

7 By the word of trueth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteousnes on the right hand, & on the left,

8 By honour, and dishonour, by euil reporte, and good reporte, as deceiuers, and *yet* true:

9 As vnknowen, and *yet* knowen: as dying, and beholde, we liue: as chastened, and *yet* not killed:

10 As sorowing, and *yet* alway reioycing: as poore, and *yet* make manie riche: as hauing nothing, and *yet* possessing all things.

11 O Corinthians, our mouth is open vnto you: our heart is made large.

12 Ye are not kept straight in vs, but ye are kept straight in your owne bowels.

13 Now for the same recompence, I speake as to *my* children, Be you also enlarged.

Eccle.13. 18. 14 Be not vnequally yoked with the infidels: for * what felowship hath righteousnes with vnrighteousnes? and what communion hath light with darkenes?

15 And what concorde hath Christ with Belial? or what parte hath the beleeuer with the infidell?

1.Cor.3.16 and 6.19. Leui.26.12 16 And what agreement hath the Temple of God with idoles? * for ye are the Temple of the liuing God: as God hath saide, * I will dwell among them, and walke there: and I wilbe their God, and they shalbe my people.

Isa.52.11. 17 * Wherefore come out from among them, and separate your selues, saith the Lorde: and touche none vncleane thing, and I will receyue you.

Iere.31.1. 18 * And I will be a Father vnto you, and ye shal be my sonnes and daughters, saith the Lord almightie.

CHAP. VII.

1 Lest by ouermuch vrging them he should dismay their tender minides, 2 he prouith that all that he sayd, 4 proceeded of

the great good wil he bare vnto them: 8 And therfore they shoulde not be offended, that he made them sorie, 10 and brought them to repentance not to be repented of.

1 SEing then we haue these promises, dearely beloued, let vs cleanse our selues from all filthinesse of the flesh and spirit, and finish *our* sanctification in the feare of God.

2 Receiue vs: we haue done wrong to no man: we haue corrupted no man: we haue defrauded no man.

3 I speake it not to *your* condemnation: for I haue sayd before, that ye are in our hearts, to die and liue together.

4 I vse great boldnes of speach towarde you: I reioyce greatly in you: I am filled with comfort, and am exceding ioyous in all our tribulation.

5 For when we were come into Macedonia, our flesshe had no rest, but we were troubled on euerie side, fightings without, and terrours within.

6 But God, that comforteth the abiect, comforted vs at the comming of Titus:

7 And not by his comming onely, but also by the consolation wherewith he was comforted of you, when he tolde vs your great desire, your mourning, your feruent minde to mewarde, so that I reioyced much more.

8 For though I made you sorie with a letter, I repent not, though I did repent: for I perceiue that the same epistle made you sorie, though *it were* but for a season.

9 I now reioyce, not that ye were sorie, but that ye sorowed to repentance: for ye sorowed godly, so that in nothing ye were hurt by vs.

10 For godly sorow causeth repentance vnto saluation, not to be repented of: but the worldly sorowe causeth death.

11 For beholde, this thing that ye haue bene godly sorie, what great care it hath wrought in you? yea, what clearing of your selues? yea, *what* indignation? yea, *what* feare? yea, *how* great desire? yea, *what* a zealer yea, *what* reuenge? in all things ye haue shewed your selues, that ye are pure in this matter.

12 Wherefore, though I wrote vnto you, I did not it for

his cause that had done the wrong, neither for his cause that had the iniurie, but that our care towarde you in the sight of God might appeare vnto you.

13 Therefore we were comforted, because ye were comforted: but rather we reioyced much more for the ioy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all.

14 For if that I haue boasted any thing to him of you, I haue not bene ashamed: but as I haue spoken vnto you all thinges in trueth, euen so our boasting vnto Titus was true,

15 And his inwarde affection is more aboundant towarde you, when he remembreth the obedience of you all, *and* howe with feare and trembling ye receyued him.

16 I reioyce *therefore* that I may put my confidence in you in all things.

CHAP. VIII.

1 *He exhorteth them, by the example of the Macedonians, 9 and also euen of Christ him selfe, 14 to be liberall towards the Saintes: 16 For which purpose, he sheweth that Titus 18 and an other brother came vnto them.*

1 WE doe you also to wit, brethren, of the grace of God bestowed vpon the Churches of Macedonia,

2 Because in great tryal of affliction their ioy abounded, and their most extreme pouertie abounded vnto their riche liberalitie.

3 For to *their* power (I beare recorde) yea, and beyonde their power, they were willing,

4 And prayed vs with great instance that we would receiue the grace and fellowship of the ministring which is toward the Saintes.

5 And *this they did*, not as we looked for: but gaue their owne selues, first to the Lord, and *after* vnto vs by the will of God,

6 That we should exhort Titus, that as he had begonne, so he woulde also accomplishe the same grace among you also.

7 Therefore, as ye abounde in euerie thing, in fayth and worde, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your loue towardes vs, *euen so see* that ye abounde in this grace also.

8 This say I not by commandement, but because of the dili-

diligence of others: therefore proue I the naturalnes of your loue.

9 For ye know the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, that he being riche, for your sakes became poore, that ye through his pouertie might be made rich.

10 And I shewe *my* minde herein: for this is expedient for you, which haue begun not to do onely, but also to will, a yere ago.

11 Nowe therefore performe to doe it also, that as *there was* a readines to will, euen so ye may performe it of that which ye haue.

12 For if there be first a willing minde, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not.

13 Neither *is it* that other men should be eased and you grieued: But vpon like condition, at this time your aboundance *supplieth* their lacke:

14 That also their aboundance may be for your lacke, that there may be equalitie:

15 As it is written, * He that *gathered* much, had nothing ouer, and he that *gathered* litle, had not the lesse. *Exo.16.18.*

16 And thanks *be* vnto God, which hath put in the heart of Titus the same care for you.

17 Because he accepted the exhortation, yea, he was so carefull that of his owne accorde he went vnto you.

18 And we haue sent also with him the brother, whose praise *is* in the Gospell throughout all the Churches.

19 (And not so onely, but is also chosen of the Churches to be a fellowe in our iourney, concerning this grace that is ministred by vs vnto the glorie of the same Lord, and *declaration* of your prompt minde)

20 Auoyding this, that no man should blame vs in this aboundance that is ministred by vs,

21 * Prouiding for honest things, not onelie before the Lord, but also before men. *Rom.12.17.*

22 And we haue sent with them our brother, whome we haue oftimes proued to be diligent in many things, but nowe much more diligent, for the great confidence, which *I haue* in you.

23 Whether *any do enquire* of Titus, *he* is my fellowe and helper to you warde: or of our brethren, they are messengers

sengers of the Churches, *and* the glorie of Christ.
24 Wherefore shew toward them, and before the Churches the proofe of your loue, and of the reioycing that we haue of you.

CHAP. IX.

1 *Why, albeit he thinke wel of their readie wils,* 3 *yet earnestly exhorteth them,* 4 *he yeldeth a reason:* 1 *He compareth almes to seede sowne,* 10 *which God doeth repay with great gaines.*

1 FOr as touching the ministring to the Saintes, it is superfluous for me to write vnto you.
2 For I knowe your readines of minde, whereof I boast my selfe of you vnto them of Macedonia, *and say,* that Achaia was prepared a yere ago, and your zeale hath prouoked manie.
3 Now haue I sent the brethren, lest our reioycing ouer you shoulde be in vaine in this behalfe, that ye (as I haue said) be readie:
4 Lest if they of Macedonia come with me, and finde you vnprepared, we (that we may not say, you) should be ashamed in this my constant boasting.
5 Wherefore, I thought it necessarie to exhort the brethren to come before vntó you, and to finish your beneuolence appointed afore, that it might be readie, *and come* as of benenolence, and not of niggardlinesse.
6 This yet *remember,* that he which soweth sparingly, shal reape also sparingly, and he that soweth liberally, shall reape also liberally.
7 As enerie man wisheth in his heart, *so let him giue,* not *grudgingly, or of necessitie: *for God loueth a cheerefull giuer.* Rom. 12.8. Eccl. 35.10
8 And God is able to make all grace to abound towarde you, that ye alwayes hauing all sufficiencie in al things, may abound in enerie good worke,
9 (*As it is written, He hath sparsed abroad & hath giuen to the poore; his beneuolence remaineth for euer. *Psal. 112.9.*
10 Also he that findeth seede to the sower, will minister likewise bread for foode, and multiplie your seede, and increase the fruites of your beneuolence,)
11 That on all parts ye may be made rich vnto al liberalitie, which causeth through vs thanksgiuing vnto God.
12 For the ministration of this seruice not onely supplieth

eth the necessities of the Saintes, but also aboundantly causeth many to giue thanks to God,

13 (Which by the experiment of this ministration praise God for your voluntarie submission to the Gospell of Christ, and for your liberall distribution to them, and to all men)

14 And in their prayer for you, to long after you greatly, for the aboundant grace of God in you.

15 Thankes therefore *be* vnto God for his vnspeakeable gift.

CHAP. X.

2 He sheweth with what confidence, 4 with what weapons, 6 and with what reuenge he is armed against the cauillations of the wicked, 7 and that, when he is present, his deedes haue no lesse power, 11 then his wordes haue force, when he is absent.

1 NOwe I Paul my selfe beseeche you by the meeknes, and gentlenes of Christ, which when I am present among you, *am* base, but am bolde toward you being absent:

2 And *this* I require you, that I neede not to be bolde when I am present, with that same confidence, wherewith I thinke to be bolde against some, which esteeme vs as though we walked according to the flesshe.

3 Neuertheles, though we walke in the flesh, yet we doe not warre after the flesh.

4 (For the weapons of our warrefare are not carnall, but mightie through God, to cast downe holdes)

5 Casting downe the imaginations, and euerie high thing that is exalted against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captiuitie euerie thought to the obedience of Christ,

6 And hauing readie the vengeance against all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

7 Looke ye on things after the appearance? If any man trust in him selfe that he is Christes, let him consider this againe of him selfe, that as he is Christes, euen so *are* we Christes.

8 For though I shoulde boast somewhat more of our authoritie, which the Lord hath giuen vs for edification, and not for your destruction, I should haue no shame.

9 This

9 *This I say* that I may not seeme as *it were* to feare you with letters.

10 For the letters, saith he, are sore and strong, but his bodily presence is weake, and his speach is of no value.

11 Let such one thinke this, that such as we are in worde by letters, when we are absent, such *will we be* also in deede, when we are present.

12 For we dare not make our selues of the nomber, or to compare our selues to them, which praise them selues: but they vnderstand not that they measure them selues with them selues, and compare them selues with them selues.

13 But we will not reioyce of things, which are not within *our* measure, * but according to the measure of the line, whereof God hath distributed vnto vs a measure to attaine euen vnto you. *Ephes. 4. 7.*

14 For we stretch not our selues beyonde *our* measure, as though we had not attained vnto you: for euen to you also haue we come *in preaching* the Gospell of Christ,

15 Not boasting of thinges which are without *our* measure: *that is*, of other mens labours: and we hope, when your fayth shall increase, to be magnified by you according to our line aboundantly,

16 And to preach the Gospell in those *regions* which are beyond you: not to reioyce in another mans line, *that is*, in the things that are prepared alreadie.

17 * But let him that reioyceth, reioyce in the Lord. *Iere. 9. 24. 1. cor. 1. 31.*

18 For he that praiseth himselfe, is not allowed, but he whom the Lord praiseth.

CHAP. XI.

2 He testifieth, that for the great loues sake he beareth to the Corinthians, he is compelled 5 to vtter his owne praises: 9 And that he bestowed his labour on them without any reward, 13 that the false Apostles should not surpasse him in any thing, 22 whome he farre excelled in those things which are praise worthie in deede.

1 WOuld to God, ye could suffer a litle my foolishnes, and in deede, ye suffer me.

2 For I am ielous ouer you, with a godly ielousie: for I haue prepared you for one husband, to present you as a pure virgine to Christ:

3 But

3 But I feare leſt as the * ſerpent beguiled Eue through his ſubtiltie, ſo your mindes ſhoulde be corrupt from the ſimplicitie that is in Chriſt. *Gen.3.4.*

4 For if he that commeth, preacheth another Ieſus whom we haue not preached: or if ye receiue another ſpirit whome ye haue not receiued: either another Goſpel, which ye haue not receiued, ye might well haue ſuffred *him.*

5 Verely I ſuppoſe that I was not inferiour to the verie chiefe Apoſtles.

6 And though *I be* rude in ſpeaking, yet *I am* not *ſo* in knowledge, but among you we haue bene made manifeſt to the vtmoſt, in all things.

7 Haue I committed an offence, becauſe I abaſed my ſelf, that ye might be exalted, and becauſe I preached to you the Goſpell of God freely?

8 I robbed other Churches, and tooke wages *of them* to do you ſeruice.

9 And when I was preſent with you, and had neede, * I was not ſlouthfull to the hinderance of any man: for that which was lacking vnto me, the brethren which came from Macedonia, ſupplied, and in all thinges I kept and will keepe my ſelfe, that I ſhould not be grieuous to you. *Cha.12.13.*

10 The trueth of Chriſt is in me, that this reioycing ſhal not be ſhut vp againſt me in the regions of Achaia:

11 Wherefore? becauſe I loue you not? God knoweth.

12 But what I doe, that will I doe: that I may cut away occaſion from them which deſire occaſion, that they might be founde like vnto vs in that wherein they reioyce.

13 For ſuch falſe apoſtles are deceitfull workers, and transforme them ſelues into the Apoſtles of Chriſt.

14 And no marueile: for Satan him ſelfe is transformed into an Angel of light.

15 Therefore it is no great thing, though his miniſters transforme them ſelues, as though *they were* the miniſters of righteouſnes, whoſe ende ſhalbe according to their workes.

16 I ſay againe, let no man thinke, that I am fooliſhe, or els take me euen as a foole, that I alſo may boaſt my ſelfe a litle.

17 That

17 That I ſpeake, I ſpeake it not after the Lorde: but as it were fooliſhly, in this my great boaſting.
18 Seeing that many reioyce after the fleſhe, I will reioyce alſo.
19 For ye ſuffer fooles gladly, becauſe that ye are wiſe.
20 For ye ſuffer, euen if a man bring you into bondage, if a man deuoure you, if a man take your goodes, if a man exalt him ſelfe, if a man ſmite you on the face.
21 I ſpeake as concerning the reproche: as though that we had bene weake: but wherein any man is bolde (I ſpeake fooliſhly) I am bolde alſo.
Phil.3.5. 22 They are Hebrewes, * ſo am I: they are Iſraelites, ſo am I. they are the ſeede of Abraham, ſo am I:
23 They are the miniſters of Chriſt (I ſpeake as a foole) I am more: in labours more aboundant: in ſtripes aboue meaſure: in priſon more pleuteouſly: in deathes oft.
24 Of the Iewes fiue times receiued I fourtie *ſtripes* ſaue one.
Act.16.23 25 I was thriſe * beaten with roddes: I was * once ſtoned: I ſuffred thriſe * ſhipwracke: night and day haue
Act.14.19 I bene in the deepe ſea.
Act.27.14 26 In iourneying *I was* often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils of mine owne nation, in perils among the Gentiles, in perils in the citie, in perils in wildernes, in perils in the ſea, in perils among falſe brethren,
27 In wearines and paineſulnes, in watching often, in hunger and thirſt, in faſtinges often, in colde and nakednes.
28 Beſide the things which are outward, I am combred dayly, *and haue* the care of all the Churches.
29 Who is weake, and I am not weake? who is offended, and I burne not?
30 If I muſt needes reioyce, I will reioyce of mine infirmities.
31 The God, euen the Father of our Lorde Ieſus Chriſt, which is bleſſed for euermore, knoweth that I lye not.
Act.9.24. 32 In * Damaſcus the gouernour of the people vnder King Aretas, laid watche in the citie of the Damaſcenes, and would haue caught me.

33 That

33 But at a window was I let downe in a basket through the wall, and escaped his hands.

CHAP. XII.

1 *He doeth euen vnwillingly make rehearsall* 3 *of the heauenly visions,* 4 *that were reueiled vnto him:* 6 *for which though he might in deede glorie, yet he wil not,* 10 *being prince of his owne infirmities:* 11 *but they driue him to this kinde of folly,* 20 *in that they giue eare to certaine vayneglorious persons, who drawe them from Christ.*

1 IT is not expedient for me no doute to reioyce: for I wil come to visions and reuelations of the Lord.

2 I knowe a man in Christ aboue fourtene yeres agone, (whether *he were* in the body, I can not tel, or out of the body, I cannot tel: God knoweth) which was taken vp into the third heauen.

3 And I knowe suth a man (whether in the body, or out of the body, I can not tell: God knoweth)

4 How that he was taken vp into Paradise, and hearde wordes which cannot be spoken, which are not possible for man to vtter.

5 Of such a man wil I reioyce: of my selfe wil I not reioyce, except it be of mine infirmities.

6 For though I would reioyce, I should not be a foole: for I will saye the trueth, but I refraine, leste any man should thinke of me aboue that he seeth in me, or that he heareth of me.

7 And lest I should be exalted out of measure through the aboundance of reuelations, there was giuen vnto me a pricke in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, because I should not be exalted out of measure.

8 For this thing I besought the Lord thrise, that it might depart from me.

9 And he said vnto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my power is made perfect through weakenes. Very gladly therefore wil I reioyce rather in mine infirmities, that the power of Christ may dwel in me.

10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproches, in necessities, in persecutions, in anguish for Christes sake: for when I am weake, then am I strong.

11 I was a foole to boast my selfe: ye haue compelled me: for I ought to haue bene commended of you: for in nothing was I inferiour vnto the very chief Apostles,

though I be nothing.

12 The signes of an Apostle were wrought among you with all patience, with signes, and wonders, and great workes.

13 For what is it, wherein ye were inferiours vnto other Churches,* except that I haue not bene slothfull to your hinderance? forgiue me this wrong. *Chap. 11. 9.*

14 Beholde, the third time I am ready to come vnto you, and yet will I not be slothfull to your hinderance: for I seeke not yours, but you: for the children ought not to laye vp for the fathers, but the fathers for the children.

15 And I wil most gladly bestow, and wilbe bestowed for your soules: though the more I loue you, the lesse I am loued.

16 But be it that I charged you not: yet forasmuch as I was craftie, I tooke you with guile.

17 Did I pil you by any of them whome I sent vnto you?

18 I haue desired Titus, and with him I haue sent a brother: did Titus pil you of any thing? walked we not in the selfe same spirit? *walked we* not in the same steppes?

19 Againe, thinke ye that we excuse our selues vnto you? we speake before God in Christ. But *we doe* all things, dearely beloued for your edifiyng.

20 For I feare lest when I come, I shall not finde you such as I would: and that I shalbe found vnto you such as ye would not, and lest *there be* strife, enuying, wrath, contentions, backebitings, whisperings, swellings, *and* discorde.

21 *I feare* lest when I come againe, my God abase me among you, and I shal bewayle many of them which haue sinned already, and haue not repented of the vncleanes, and fornication, and wantonnes, which they haue committed.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *Comming the third time,* 2 *he denounceth the sharper vengeance towards them,* 5 *who haue a perfit tryall of the power of Christ in his Apostleship:* 10 *At length he prayeth for their repentance,* 11 *and wisheth them prosperitie.*

Deu. 19. 15. *Mat. 18. 16.* *Ioan. 8. 17.* *Heb. 10. 28.*

1 LO this *is* the third time that I come vnto you.* In the mouth of two or three witnesses shal euery worde stand.

2 I tolde you before, and tel you before: as though I had

had bene preſent the ſecond time, ſo write I now being abſent to them which heretofore haue ſinned, and to all others, that if I come againe, I wil not ſpare,

3 Seeing that ye ſeeke experience of Chriſt, that ſpeaketh in me, which toward you is not weake, but is mightie in you.

4 For though he was crucified concerning *his* infirmitie, yet liueth he through the power of God. And we no doubte are weake in him, but we ſhal liue with him, through the power of God towarde you.

5 * Proue your ſelues whether ye are in the faith: examine your ſelues: know ye not your owne ſelues, how that Ieſus Chriſt is in you, except ye be reprobates? 1. Cor. 11. 28.

6 But I truſt that ye ſhal knowe that we are not reprobates.

7 Now I pray vnto God that ye do none euil, not that we ſhoulde ſeeme approued, but that ye ſhould doe that which is honeſt: though we be as reprobates.

8 For we cannot *do* any thing againſt the trueth, but for the trueth.

9 For we are glad when we are weake, and that ye are ſtrong: this alſo we wiſh for, *euen* your perfection.

10 Therefore write I theſe things being abſent, leſt when I am preſent, I ſhould vſe ſharpenes, according to the power which the Lord hath giuen me, to edification, & not to deſtruction.

11 Finally brethren, fare ye wel: be perfect: be of good comfort: be of one minde: liue in peace, and the God of loue and peace ſhalbe with you.

12 Greete one another with an * holy kiſſe. Al the Saints ſalute you. 1. Corin. 16. 20.

13 The grace of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, and the Loue of God, and the communion of the holy Ghoſt be with you all, Amen.

¶The ſecond *epiſtle* to the Corinthians, written from Philippi, a citie in Macedonia, *and ſent* by Titus and Lucas.

THE

THE EPISTLE OF THE APOSTLE PAVL TO THE GALATIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 Straight after the salutation, 6 he reprehendeth the Galatians for reuolting 9 from his Gospell, 15 which he receiued from God, 17 before he had communicated with any of the Apostles.

1 PAul an Apostle (not of men, neither by
3.Tit.1.3. man, * but by Iesus Christ, and GOD the Father which hath raised him frō the dead)

2 And al the brethren which are with me, vnto the Churches of Galatia:

3 Grace *be* with you, & peace from God the Father, and *from* our Lord Iesus Christ,

4 Which gaue himselfe for our sinnes, that he might deliuer vs *from this present euil world according to the wil of God euen our Father,
Luke.1.74.

5 To whome *be* glorie for euer and euer, Amen.

6 I marueile that ye are so soone remoued away vnto another Gospell, from him that had called you in the grace of Christ,

7 Which is not another *Gospell*, saue that there be some which trouble you, and intend to peruert the Gospel of Christ.

8 But though that we, or an Angel from heauen preache vnto you otherwise, then that which we haue preached vnto you, let him be accursed.

9 As we said before, so say I now again, If any man preach vnto you otherwise, then that ye haue receiued, let him be accursed.

10 For now preach I mans *doctrine*, or Gods? or go I about to please men? for if I should yet please men, I were not the seruant of Christ.

1.Cor.15.1 11 * Now I certifie you, brethren, that the Gospel which was preached of me, was not after man.

12 For neither receiued I it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the reuelation of Iesus Christ.

13 For ye haue heard of my conuersation in time past, in
Actes.9.1. the Iewish religion, how that * I persecuted the Church of God extreemely, and wasted it,

14 And

14 And profited in the Iewiſh religion aboue many of my companions of mine owne nation, and was much more zealous of the traditions of my fathers.
15 But when it pleaſed God (which had ſeparated me from my mothers wombe, and called *me* by his grace)
16 To reueile his Sonne in me, that I ſhould preach him among the Gentiles, immediately I communicated not with fleſh and blood: *Epheſ. 3.8.*
17 Neither came I againe to Hieruſalem to them which were Apoſtles before me, but I went into Arabia, and turned againe vnto Damaſcus.
18 Then after three yeres I came againe to Hieruſalem to viſite Peter, and abode with him fiftene dayes.
19 And none other of the Apoſtles ſaw I, ſaue Iames the Lordes brother.
20 Now the things that I write vnto you, behold, *I witne:* before God, that I lie not.
21 After that, I went into the coaſtes of Syria and Cilicia: for I was vnknowen by face vnto the Churches of Iudea, which were in Chriſt.
22 But they had heard onely *ſome ſay*, He which perſecuted vs in time paſt, now preacheth the faith which before he deſtroyed.
23 And they glorified God for me.

CHAP. II.

1 *That the Apoſtles did nothing diſagree from his Goſpell,* 3 *he declareth by the example of Titus being vncircumciſed,* 11 *and alſo by his admonishing the ſame againſt Peters diſſimulation:* 17 *And ſo he paſſeth to the handling of our free iuſtification by Chriſt, &c.*

1 THen fourtene yeres after, I went vp againe to Hieruſalem with Barnabas, and tooke with me Titus alſo.
2 And I went vp by reuelation, and declared vnto them that Goſpel which I preach among the Gentiles, but particularly to them that were the chiefe, leſt by anye meanes I ſhould runne, or had runne in vaine:
3 But neither yet Titus which was with me, though he were a Grecian, was compelled to be circumciſed,
4 To wit, for the falſe brethren which were craftily ſent in, and crept in priuily to ſpie out our libertie, which we haue in Chriſt Ieſus, that they might bring vs into bondage.

5 To whome we gaue not place by subiection for an houre, that the trueth of the Gospell might continue with you.

6 But by them which semed to be great, *I was not taught* (whatsoeuer they were in time passed, I am nothing the better: * God accepteth no mans person) for they that are the chiefe, did adde nothing to me *at one that I had.*

Deu.10.17
2.chro.19.7
iob.34.19.
act.10.34.
rom.2.11.
ephe.6.9.
col.3.25.
1.pet.1.17.

7 But contrariwise, when they sawe that the Gospel ouer the vncircumcision was committed vnto me, as *the Gospel* ouer the Circumcision, was vnto Peter.

8 (For he that was mightie by Peter in the Apostleship ouer the Circumcision, was also mightie by me toward the Gentiles.)

9 And when Iames, and Cephas, and Iohn, knew of the grace that was giuen vnto me, which are counted to be pillars, they gaue to me and to Barnabas the right hands of felowship, that we *should preach* vnto the Gentiles, and they vnto the Circumcision.

10 *Warning* onely that we should remember the poore: which thing also I was diligent to do.

11 ¶ And when Peter was come to Antiochia, I withstoode him to his face: for he was to be condemned.

12 For before that certaine came from Iames, he ate with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew and separated himselfe, fearing them which were of the Circumcision.

13 And the other Iewes played the hypocrites likewise with him, insomuch that Barnabas was led away with them by that their hypocrisie.

14 But when I sawe, that they went not the right way to the trueth of the Gospell, I said vnto Peter before all men, If thou being a Iewe, liuest as the Gentiles, and not like the Iewes, why constraynest thou the Gentiles to do like the Iewes?

15 We *which are* Iewes by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles,

16 Know that a man is not iustified by the workes of the Law, but by the faith of Iesus Christ, euen we *I say*, haue beleeued in Iesus Christ, that we might be iustified by the faith of Christ, and not by the workes of the Lawe, because that by the workes of the Lawe no flesh shalbe iustified.

17 * If

17 [4]If then while we seke to be made righteous by Christ, *Rom.3.19.*
we our selues are found sinners, is Christ therefore the
minister of sinne? God forbid.
18 For if I build againe the things that I haue destroyed,
I make my selfe a trespasser.
19 For I through the Lawe am dead to the Lawe, that I
might liue vnto God.
20 I am crucified with Christ, but I liue, *yet* not I any
more, but Christ liueth in me: and in that that I now
liue in the flesh, I liue by the faith in the Sonne of God,
who hath loued me, and giuen him selfe for me.
21 I do not abrogate the grace of God: for if righteous-
nes *be* by the Lawe, then Christ died without a cause.

CHAP. III.

1 He rebuketh them, for suffring them selues to be drawen from the grace of free iustification in Christ, most liuely set out vnto them. 6 He bringeth in Abrahams example, 10 declaring the effect. 21 and causes of the giuing of the Lawe.

1 O Foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that ye
should not obey the trueth, to whō Iesus Christ, be-
fore was described in your sight, *&* amōg you crucified?
2 This onely would I learne of you, Receiued ye the Spi-
rit by the workes of the Lawe, or by the hearing of faith
preached?
3 Are ye so foolish, that after ye haue begun in the Spirit,
ye woulde now be made perfect by the flesh?
4 Haue ye suffred so many things in vaine? if so be it be
euen in vaine.
5 He therefore that ministreth to you the Spirit, & wor-
keth miracles among you, *doeth he it* through the works
of the Law, or by the hearing of faith *preached*?
6 *Yea rather* as Abraham beleeued God, and it was * im- *Gen.15.6.*
puted to him for righteousnes. *rom.4.3.*
7 Knowe ye therefore, that they which are of faith, the *Iam.2.23.*
same are the children of Abraham.
8 For the Scripture foreseeing, that God would iustifie
the Gentiles through faith, preached before the Gospel
vnto Abraham, *saying*, * In thee shal all the Gentiles be *Gen.12.3.*
blessed. *act.3.25.*
9 So then they which be of faith, are blessed with faithful
Abraham.

10 For as many as are of the workes of the Law, are vnder the curse: for it is written, * Cursed is euery man that continueth not in al things, which are written in the booke of the Law, to do them.

Deu.27.26.

11 And that no man is iustified by the Law in the sight of God, it is euident: * for the iust shal liue by faith.

Habak.2.4. rom.1.17. heb.10.38.

12 And the Law is not of faith: but * the man that shall do those things, shal liue in them.

Leuit.18.5.

13 Christ hath redeemed vs from the curse of the Lawe, made a curse for vs (for it is written, * Cursed is euery one that hangeth on tree)

Deu.21.23.

14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Christ Iesus, that we might receiue the promise of the Spirit through faith.

15 Brethren, I speake as men do. * Though it be but a mans couenant, when it is confirmed, yet no man doeth abrogate it, or addeth any thing thereto.

Heb.9.17.

16 Now to Abraham and his seede were the promises made. He saith not, And to the seedes, as *speaking* of many: but, And to thy seede, as of one, *which* is Christ.

17 And this I say, that the couenant that was confirmed afore of God in respect of Christ, the Lawe which was foure hundreth and thirtie yeres after, cannot disanul that it should make the promise of none effect.

18 For if the inheritance *be* of the Lawe, *it is* no more by the promise, but God gaue it freely vnto Abraham by promise.

19 Wherfore then *serueth* the Law? It was added because of the transgressions, til the seede came vnto the which the promise was made: and it was ordeined by Angels in the hand of a Mediatour.

20 Now a Mediatour is not a *Mediatour* of one: but God is one.

21 *Is* the Law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had bene a Lawe giuen which could haue giuen life, surely righteousnes shoulde haue bene by the Lawe.

22 But the Scripture hath * concluded all vnder sinne, that the promise by the faith of Iesus Christ should be giuen to them that beleeue.

Rom.3.9.

23 But before faith came, we were kept vnder the Law, *as vnder* a garison, and shut vp vnto that faith, *which* should

should afterward be reueiled.
24 Wherefore the Lawe was our scholemaster *to bring us* to Christ, that we might be made righteous by faith.
25 But after that faith is come, we are no longer vnder a scholemaster.
26 For ye are all the sonnes of God by faith, in Christ Iesus.
27 For all ye that are baptized into Christ, haue put on Christ.
28 There is neither Iewe nor Grecian: there is neither bonde nor free: there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Iesus.
29 And if *ye be* Christs, then are ye Abrahams seede, and heires by promise.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Being deliuered from the bondage of the Law, 4 by Christs comming, who is the end thereof, 4 it is very absurd to slide backe to beggerly ceremonies: 13 He calleth them againe therefore to the puritie of the doctrine of the Gospel, 21 confirming his discourse with a fine allegorie.

1 THen I say, that the heire as long as he is a childe, differeth nothing frō a seruant, though he be Lord of al,
2 But is vnder tutours and gouernours, vntil the time appointed of the father.
3 Euen so, we when we were children, were in bondage vnder the rudiments of the world.
4 But when the fulnes of time was cōme, God sent forth his Sonne made of a woman, *and* made vnder the Lawe,
5 That he might redeeme them which were vnder the Law, that we * might receiue the adoptiō of the sonnes. *Rom.8.15.*
6 And because ye are sonnes, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Sonne into your hearts, which cryeth, Abba, Father.
7 Wherefore, thou art no more a seruant, but a sonne: now if *thou be* a sonne, *thou art* also the heire of God through Christ.
8 But euen then, when ye knew not God, ye did seruice vnto them, which by nature are not gods:
9 But now seeing ye know God, yea, rather are knowen of God, how turne ye againe vnto impotent and beggerly rudiments, whereunto *as* frō the beginning, ye wil be in bondage againe?

10 Ye obserue daies, and moneths, and times, and yeres.
11 I am in feare of you, leſt I haue beſtowed on you labour in vaine.
12 Be ye as I: for I am euen as you: brethren, I beſeech you: ye haue not hurt me at all.
13 And ye knowe, how through infirmitie of the fleſh I preached the Goſpel vnto you at the firſt.
14 And the trial of me which was in my fleſh, ye deſpiſed not, neither abhorred: but ye receiued me as an Angel of God, *yea*, as Chriſt IESVS.
15 What was then your felicitie? for I beare you record, that if it had bene poſsible, ye would haue plucked out your owne eyes, and haue giuen them vnto me.
16 Am I therefore become your enemie, becauſe I tel you the trueth?
17 They are ielous ouer you amiſſe: yea, they would exclude you, that ye ſhould altogether loue them.
18 But it is a good thing to loue earneſtly alwaies in a good thing, and not onely when I am preſent with you.
19 My litle children, of whome I trauaile in birth againe vntil Chriſt be formed in you.
20 And I would I were with you now, that I might change my voice: for I am in doute of you.
21 Tel me, ye that wil be vnder the Law, do ye not heare the Lawe?
Gen.16.15. 22 For it is written, that Abraham had two ſonnes, * one
Gene.21.1. by a ſeruant, and * one by a free woman.
23 But he which was of the ſeruant, was borne after the fleſh: and he which was of the free woman, *was borne* by promes.
24 By the which things another thing is ment: for theſe *mothers* are the two Teſtaments, the one which is Agar of mount Sina, which gendreth vnto bondage.
25 (For Agar *or* Sina is a mountaine in Arabia, and it anſwereth to Hieruſalem which now is) and ſhe is in bondage with her children.
26 But Hieruſalem, which is aboue, is free: which is the mother of vs all.
Iſai.54.1. 27 For it is written, * Reioyce thou barren that beareſt no children: breake forth, and crie, thou that trauaileſt not: for the deſolate hath manie mo children, then ſhe which hath an husband.

28 * There-

28 * Therefore, brethren, we are after the maner of Isaac, children of the promes. Rom.8.9.

29 But as then he that was borne after the flesh, persecuted him that *was borne* after the spirit, euen so *it is* now.

30 But what saith the Scripture? * Put out the seruant & her sonne: for the sonne of the seruant shal not be heire with the sonne of the free woman. Gen.21.10.

31 Then brethren, we are not children of the seruant, but of the free woman.

CHAP. V.

1 *Hauing declared that we came of the free woman, he sheweth the price of that freedome,* 13 *and how we should vse the same,* 16 *that we may obey the Spirit,* 19 *and resist the flesh.*

1 STand fast therefore in the libertie wherewith Christ hath made vs free, and be not intangled againe with the yoke of bondage.

2 * Beholde, I Paul say vnto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profite you nothing. Actes.15.1

3 For I testifie againe to euerie man, which is circumcised, that he is bound to keepe the whole Lawe.

4 Ye are * abolished from Christ: whosoeuer are iustified by the Lawe, ye are fallen from grace. 1.Cor.1.17

5 For we through the Spirit waite for the hope of righteousnes through faith.

6 For in Iesus Christ neither circumcision auaileth anie thing, neither vncircumcision, but faith which worketh by loue.

7 Ye did runne well: who did let you, that ye did not obey the trueth?

8 *It is* not the persuasion of him that calleth you.

9 * A litle leauen doeth leauen the whole lumpe. 1.Cor.5.6.

10 I haue trust in you through the Lord, that ye wil be none otherwise minded: but he that troubleth you, shal beare *his* condemnation, whosoeuer he be.

11 And brethren, If I yet preach circumcision, why do I yet suffer persecution? Then is the slander of the crosse abolished.

12 Would to God they were euen cut of, which do disquiet you.

13 For brethren, ye haue bene called vnto libertie: onely vse not *your* libertie as an occasion vnto the flesh, but by loue serue one another.

14 For

14 For all the Lawe is fulfilled in one word, which is this:
Leui.19.18 * Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.
mat.22.39. 15 If ye bite and deuoure one another, take heed lest ye
mar.12.31. be consumed one of another.
rom.13.9. 16 Then I say, * walke in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil
iam.2.8. the lustes of the flesh.
Rom.13.14 17 For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit
1.pet.2.11. against the flesh: and these are contrarie one to the other, so that ye cānot do the same things that ye would.
18 And if ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not vnder the Lawe.
19 Moreouer the workes of the flesh are manifest, which are adulterie, fornication, vncleannes, wantonnes,
20 Idolatrie, witchecraft, hatred, debate, emulations, wrath, contentions, seditions, heresies,
21 Enuie, murthers, drunkennes, gluttonie, and such like, whereof I tell you before, as I also haue tolde you before, that they which do such things, shall not inherite the kingdome of God.
22 But the fruite of the Spirit is loue, ioye, peace, long suffring, gentlenes, goodnes, faith,
23 Meekenes, temperancie: against such there is no Law.
24 For they that are Christs, haue crucified the flesh with the affections and the lustes.
25 If we liue in the Spirit, let vs also walke in the Spirit.
26 Let vs not be desirous of vaine glorie, prouoking one another, enuying one another.

CHAP. VI.

1 Now he entreateth particularly of charitie toward such as offend, 6 towardes the Ministers of the word, 10 and those that are of the houshold of faith: 12 Not like vnto such who haue a counterfaite zeale of the Lawe, 13 glorying in the mangling of the flesh, 14 and not in the crosse of Christ.

1 BRethren, if a man be sodainely taken in anie offence, ye which are spiritual, restore such one with the spirit of meekenes, considering thy selfe, least thou also be tempted.
2 Beare ye one anothers burden, and so fulfil the Lawe of Christ.
3 For if anie man seeme to him selfe, that he is somewhat, when he is nothing, he deceiueth him selfe in his imagination.

4 But

4 But let euerie man proue his owne worke: and then shall he haue reioycing in him selfe onely and not in an other.

5 *For euerie man shall beare his owne burden. 1.Cor. 3. 8.

6 Let him that is taught in the worde, make him that hath taught him, partaker of all *his* goods. 1.Cor. 9. 7.

7 Be not deceiued: God is not mocked: for whatsoeuer a man soweth, that shall he also reape.

8 For he that soweth to his flesh, shall of the flesh reape corruption: but he that soweth to the spirit, shal of the spirit reape life euerlasting.

9 *Let vs not therefore be wearie of wel doing: for in due season we shal reape, if we faint not. 2.Thess. 3. 13.

10 While we haue therefore time, let vs do good vnto al men, but specially vnto them, which are of the housholde of faith.

11 ¶ Ye see how large a letter I haue written vnto you with mine owne hand.

12 As manie as desire to make a faire shewe in the flesh, they constraine you to be circumcised, onely because they woulde not suffer persecution for the crosse of Christ.

13 For they themselues which are circumcised keepe not the Law, but desire to haue you circumcised, that they might reioyce in your flesh.

14 But God forbid that I should reioyce, but in the crosse of our Lord Iesus Christ, whereby the world is crucified vnto me, and I vnto the worlde.

15 For in Christ Iesus neither circumcision auaileth anie thing, nor vncircumcision, but a new creature.

16 And as manie as walke according to this rule, peace *shalbe* vpon them, & mercie, and vpon the Israel of God.

17 From henceforth let no man put me to busines: for I beare in my bodie the markes of the Lord Iesus.

18 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with your spirit, Amen.

¶ Vnto the Galatians written from Rome.

THE

THE EPISTLE OF PAVL
TO THE EPHESIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 *After the salutation,* 4 *he entreateth of the free election of God* 5 *and adoption:* 7. 13 *from whence mans salvation floweth, as from the true and naturall fountaine: and because so high a mysterie can not be understood,* 16 *he prayeth that the full* 20 *knowledge of Christ may by God be revealed vnto the Ephesians.*

1 PAVL an Apostle of IESVS Christ by the wil of God, to the * Saintes, which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Iesus:

1.Cor.1.2.

2 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 * Blessed *be* God, and the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, which hath blessed vs with all spiritual blessing in heauenly things in Christ,

1.Cor.1.3. 1.Pet.1.3.

4 As he hath chosen vs in him, before the foundation of the worlde, that we should be holy, and without blame before him in loue:

5 Who hath predestinate vs, to be adopted through Iesus Christ in him selfe, according to the good pleasure of his will,

6 To the praise of the glorie of his grace, wherewith he hath made vs freely accepted in *his* beloued,

7 By whome we haue redemption through his blood, and the forgiuenes of sinnes, according to his rich grace:

8 Whereby he hath bene aboundant towarde vs in all wisdome and vnderstanding.

9 And hath opened vnto vs the mysterie of his will according to his good pleasure, which he had purposed in him,

10 That in the dispensation of the fulnes of the times, he might gather together in one all thinges, both which are in heauen, and which are in earth, *euen* in Christ:

11 In whome also we are chosen when we were predestinate according to the purpose of him which worketh all things after the counsell of his owne wil,

12 That

12 That we, which first trusted in Christ, should be vnto
the praise of his glorie:
13 In whome also ye *haue trusted*, after that ye heard the
word of trueth, *euen* the Gospel of your saluation, where-
in also after that ye beleeued, ye were sealed with the
holie Spirit of promes,
14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance, for the re-
demption of that libertie purchased vnto the praise of
his glorie.
15 Therefore also after that I heard of the faith, which
ye haue in the Lord Iesus, & loue toward al the Saintes,
16 I cease not to giue thankes for you, making mention
of you in my praiers,
17 That the God of our Lord Iesus Christ that Father of
glorie, might giue vnto you the Spirit of wisdome, and
reuelation through the acknowledging of him,
18 That the eyes of your vnderstanding may be lighte-
ned, that ye may knowe what the hope is of his calling,
and what the riches of his glorious inheritance is in the
Saintes,
19 And what is the exceeding greatnes of his power to-
warde vs, which beleeue, * according to the working *Chap.3.7.*
of his mightie power, *coloss.2.12.*
20 Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from
the dead, and set him at his right hand in the heauenlie
places,
21 Farre aboue all principalitie, and power, and might, &
domination, and euerie Name, that is named, not in this
worlde onely, but also in that that is to come,
22 And hath made all things subiect vnder his feete, and
hath giuen him ouer all thinges to be the head to the
Church.
23 Which is his bodie, *euen* the fulnes of him that filleth
all in all things.

CHAP. II.

1 *The better to set out the grace of Christ, he vseth a compa-*
rison, calling them to minde, 5 *that they were altogether*
castawayes and aliantes. 8 *that they are saued by grace,*
13 *and brought neere,* 16 *by reconciliation through Christ,*
19 *published by the Gospel.*

1 AND * you *hath he quickened*, that were dead in treſ- *Coloss.2.13.*
paſſes and ſinnes,

2 Wherein

2 Wherein, in time past ye walked, according to the course of this world, *and* after the prince that ruleth in the aire, *even* the spirit, that now worketh in the children of disobedience,

3 Among whome we also had our conuersation in time past, in the lustes of our flesh, in fulfilling the wil of the flesh, and of the minde, and were by nature the children of wrath, as wel as others.

4 But God which is riche in mercie, through his great loue wherewith he loued vs,

5 Euen when we were dead by sinnes, hath quickened vs together in Christ, *by whose* grace ye are saued,

6 And hath raised vs vp together, and made vs sit together in the heauenly *places* in Christ Iesus,

7 That he might shew in the ages to come the exceeding riches of his grace, through his kindnes towardes vs in Christ Iesus.

8 For by grace are ye saued through faith, and that not of your selues, *it is* the gift of God,

9 Not of workes, lest any man should boast him selfe.

10 For we are his workemanship created in Christ Iesus vnto good workes, which God hath ordeined, that we should walke in them.

11 Wherefore remember that ye being *in time past* Gentiles in the flesh, *and* called vncircumcision of them, which are called circumcision in the flesh, made with hands,

12 That ye were, *I say*, at that time without Christ, and were aliants from the common wealth of Israel, & were strangers from the couenants of promise, and had no hope, and were without God in the worlde.

Rom. 9. 4.

13 But now in Christ Iesus, ye which once were farre off, are made neere by the blood of Christ.

14 For he is our peace, which hath made of both one, and hath broken the stoppe of the partition wall,

Coloss. 2. 14.

15 * In abrogating through his flesh the hatred, *that is* the Law of commandements *which standeth* in ordinances, for to make of twaine one new man in him selfe, so making peace,

16 And that he might reconcile both vnto God in one bodie by *his* crosse, and slay hatred thereby,

17 And came, and preached peace to you which were afarre

afarre of, and to them that were nere.
18 For through him we both haue an entrance vnto the Father by one Spirit.
19 Now therefore ye are no more ſtrangers and foreners: but citizens with the Saintes, and of the houſholde of God,
20 And are buylt vpon the foundation of the Apoſtles and Prophets, Ieſus Chriſt him ſelfe being the chiefe corner ſtone,
21 In whome all the building coupled together, groweth vnto an holie Temple in the Lord,
22 In whome ye alſo are built together, to be the habitation of God by the Spirit.

CHAP. III.

1 *He declareth that therefore he ſuffred manie things of the Iewes,* 3 *becauſe he preached the myſterie touching the ſaluation of the Gentiles,* 8 *at Gods commandement.* 13 *After, he deſireth the Epheſians not to faint for his afflictions:* 14 *And for this cauſe he praieth vnto God,* 18 *that they may vnderſtand the great loue of Chriſt.*

1 FOr this cauſe, I Paul *am* the priſoner of Ieſus Chriſt for you Gentiles,
2 If ye haue heard of the diſpenſation of the grace of God, which is ginen me to you warde,
3 *That is,* that *God* by reuelation hath ſhewed this myſterie vnto me (as I wrote aboue in fewe wordes,
4 Whereby when ye reade, ye may know mine vnderſtanding in the myſterie of Chriſt)
5 Which in other ages was not opened vnto the ſonnes of men, as it is now reuciled vnto his holie Apoſtles and Prophets by the Spirit,
6 That the Gentiles ſhould be inheriters alſo, and of the ſame bodie, and partakers of his promiſe in Chriſt by the Goſpel,
7 Whereof I am made a miniſter by the gift of the grace of God giuen vnto me through the effectual working of his power.
8 Euen vnto me the leaſt of all Saintes is this grace giuen, that I ſhould preach among the Gentiles the vnſearcheable riches of Chriſt,
9 And to make cleare vnto all men what the fellowſhip of the myſterie is, which from the beginning of the

world hath bene hid in God, who hath created al things by Iesus Christ,

10 To the intent, that now vnto principalities & powers in heauenlie *places*, might be knowen by the Church the manifolde wisdome of God,

11 According to the eternal purpose, which he wrought in Christ Iesus our Lord.

12 By whome we haue boldnes and entrance with confidence, by faith in him.

13 Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for your sakes, which is your glorie.

14 For this cause I bowe my knees vnto the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ,

15 (Of whome is named the whole familie in heauen and in earth)

16 That he might graunt you according to the riches of his glorie, that ye may be strengthened by his Spirit in the inner man,

17 That Christ may dwel in your hearts by faith:

18 That ye, being rooted and grounded in loue, may be able to cõprehend with all Saints, what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height:

19 And to knowe the loue of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye may be filled with all fulnes of God.

20 Vnto him therefore that is able to do exceeding abounda[n]tly aboue all that we aske or thinke, according to the power that worketh in vs,

21 *Be* praise in the Church by Christ Iesus, throughout all generations for euer, Amen.

CHAP. IIII.

These three last chapters conteine precepts of maners. 1 *He exhorteth them to mutuall loue.* 7 *Sundrie giftes are therefore bestowed of God,* 16 *that the Church may be built vp.* 18 *He calleth them from the vanitie of the infidels,* 25 *from lying,* 29 *and from filthie talke.*

1 I Therefore, being prisoner in the Lord, pray you that ye walke worthie of the vocation wherevnto ye are called,

2 With al humblenes of minde, and meekenes, with long suffring, supporting one another through loue,

3 Endeuouring to keepe the vnitie of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

4 There

4 There *is* one bodie, and one Spirit, euen as ye are called in one hope of your vocation.
5 *There is* one Lord, one Faith, one Baptisme,
6 One God and Father of all, which is aboue all, and through all, and in you all.
7 But vnto euerie one of vs is giuen grace, according to the measure of the gift of Christ.
8 Wherefore he saieth, When he ascended vp on hie, he led captiuitie captiue, and gaue giftes vnto men.
9 (Now, in that he ascended, what is it but that he had also descended first into the lowest partes of the earth?
10 He that descended, is euen the same that ascended, farre aboue al heauens, that he might fil all things)
11 He therefore gaue some *to be* Apostles, and some Prophets, and some Euangelists, & some Pastours, and Teachers,
12 For the repayring of the Saintes, for the worke of the ministerie, *and* for the edification of the bodie of Christ,
13 Til we all meete together (in the vnitie of faith and that acknowledging of the Sonne of God) vnto a perfite man, *and* vnto the measure of the age of the fulnes of Christ,
14 That we hence forth be no more children, wauering & caryed about with euerie winde of doctrine, by the deceite of men, and with craftines, whereby they lay in waite to deceiue.
15 But let vs followe the trueth in loue, and in all things growe vp into him, which is the head, *that is*, Christ.
16 By whome all the bodie being coupled and knit together by euerie ioynt, for the furniture *thereof* (according to the effectual power, *which is* in the measure of enery part) receiueth increase of the bodie, vnto the edifying of it selfe in loue.
17 This I say therefore and testifie in the Lord, that ye henceforth walke not as * other Gentiles walke, in va- *Rom.1.21.*
nitie of their minde,
18 Hauing their vnderstanding darkened, & being strangers from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the hardnes of their heart:
19 Which being past feeling, haue giuen themselues vnto wantonnes, to worke al vncleannes, *euen* with greedines.
20 But ye haue not so learned Christ,

21 If so be ye haue heard him, and haue bene taught by him, as the trueth is in Iesus,

Colos.3.8. 22 *That is, that ye cast of, concerning the conuersation in time past, that olde man, which is corrupt through the deceiuable lustes,

23 And be renewed in the spirit of your minde,

24 And put on the new man, which after God is created vnto righteousnes, and true holines.

25 Wherfore cast of lying, & speake euery man trueth vnto his neighbour: for we are members one of another.

26 Be angrie, but sinne not: let not the sunne go downe vpon your wrath,

27 Neither giue place to the deuil.

28 Let him that stole, steale no more: but let him rather labour, & work with his hands the thing which is good, that he may haue to giue vnto him that needeth.

29 Let no corrupt communication proceede out of your mouthes: but that which is good, to the vse of edifying, that it may minister grace vnto the hearers.

30 And grieue not the holie Spirit of God, by whome ye are sealed vnto the day of redemption.

31 Let all bitternes, & anger, and wrath, crying, and euill speaking be put away from you, with all maliciousnes.

32 Be ye courteous one to another, and tender hearted, freely forgiuing one another, euen as God for Christes sake, freely forgaue you.

CHAP. V.

3 Leaſt, in thoſe vices which be reprehended, they ſhoulde ſet light by his admonitions, 5 he terrifieth them by denouncing ſeuere iudgement, 8 and ſtirreth them forward: 15 Then he deſcendeth from general leſſons of maners, 21 to the particular duties of wiues 25 and huſbands.

1 BE ye therefore followers of God, as deare children,

Ioh.13.34 & 15.12. 2 * And walke in loue, euen as Christ hath loued vs, & hath giuen him selfe for vs, *to be* an offring & a sacrifice of a sweete smelling sauour to God.

1.Ioh.3.23. Chap.4.29. Colos.3.5. 3 * But fornication, and all vncleannes, or couetousnes, let it not be once named among you, as it becommeth Saintes.

Iob.ſt.2.17 4 Neither filthines, neither fooliſh talking, neither ieſting, which are things not comely, but rather giuing of thankes.

5 For

5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, neither vncleane person, nor couetous person, which is an idolater, hath anie inheritance in the kingdome of Christ, and of God.

6 * Let no man deceiue you with vaine wordes: for, for such things commeth the wrath of God vpon the children of disobedience. *Mat.24.4. mar.13.5. luke 21.8.*

7 Be not therefore companions with them. *2.thess.2.3.*

8 For ye were once darkenes, but are now light in the Lord: walke as children of light,

9 (For the fruite of the Spirit is in all goodnes, and righteousnes, and trueth)

10 Approuing that which is pleasing to the Lord.

11 And haue no fellowship with the vnfruitefull workes of darkenes, but euen reproue them rather.

12 For it is shame euen to speake of the thinges, which are done of them in secret.

13 But al things when they are reproued of the light, are manifest: for it is light that maketh all things manifest.

14 Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, & stand vp from the dead, and Christ shall giue thee light.

15 Take heede therfore that ye walke circumspectly, not as fooles, but as * wise, *Colos.4.5.*

16 Redeeming the season: for the daies are euill.

17 * Wherefore, be ye not vnwise, but vnderstand what the will of the Lord is. *Rom. 12.2. 1.thess.4.3.*

18 And be not drunke with wine, wherein is excesse: but be fulfilled with the Spirit,

19 Speaking vnto your selues in Psalmes, and hymnes, and spirituall songs, singing, and making melodie to the Lord in your hearts,

20 Giuing thankes alwaies for all things vnto God euen the Father, in the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ,

21 Submitting your selues one to another in the feare of God.

22 ¶ * Wiues, submit your selues vnto your husbands, as vnto the Lord. *Colos.3.18. tit.2.5.*

23 * For the husband is the wiues head, euen as Christ is the head of the Church, and the same is the sauiour of his bodie. *1.pet.3.1. 1.cor.11.3*

24 Therfore as the Church is in subiection to Christ, euen so *let* the wiues *be* to their husbands in euerie thing.

25 ¶ * Husbands,

Colos.3.19. 25 ¶ * Husbands, loue your wiues, euen as Christ loued the Church, and gaue him selfe for it,

26 That he might sanctifie it, and cleanse it by the washing of water through the word,

27 That he might make it vnto him selfe a glorious Church, not hauing spot or wrincle, or anie such thing: but that it should be holie and without blame.

28 So ought men to loue their wiues, as their owne bodies: he that loueth his wife, loueth him selfe.

29 For no man euer yet hated his owne flesh, but nourisheth and cherisheth it, euen as the Lord *doeth the* Church.

30 For we are members of his bodie, of his flesh, & of his bones.

Gen.2.24. 31 * For this cause shall a man leaue father and mother,
mat.19.5. and shal cleaue to his wife, and they twaine shalbe one
mar.10.7. flesh.

1.cor.6.16. 32 This is a great secret, but I speake concerning Christ and concerning the Church.

33 Therefore euerie one of you, *do ye so*: let euerie one loue his wife, euen as him selfe, and *let* the wife *see* that she feare her husband.

CHAP. VI.

1 He sheweth the duties of children, 5 seruants 9 and masters: 10 Then he speaketh of the fierce battell that the faithfull haue, 12 and what weapons we must vse in the same: 21 In the end he commendeth Tychicus.

Colos.3.20. 1 CHildren, * obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right.

Exo.20.12. 2 * Honour thy father and mother (which is the first cō-
deut.5.16. maundement with promes)

eccle.3.9. 3 That it may be wel with thee, and that thou maist liue
deut.15.4. long on earth.

mar.7.10. 4 And ye, fathers, prouoke not your children to wrath: but bring them vp in instruction and information of the Lord.

Colos.3.22. 5 * Seruants, be obedient vnto them that are *your* ma-
tit.2.9. sters, according to the flesh, with feare and trembling in
1.pet.2.18. singlenes of your hearts as vnto Christ,

6 Not with seruice to the eye, as mē pleasers, but as the seruants of Christ, doing the wil of God from the heart,

7 With good wil, seruing the Lord, and not men.

8 And

8 And knowe ye that whatsoeuer good thing anie man doeth, that same shall he receiue of the Lord, whether *he be* bond or free.

9 And ye masters, do the same things vnto them, putting away threatning: and know that euen your master also is in heauen, neither is there * respect of persone with him. *Deut.10. 17. 2.chro. 19.7. ioh.34.19. act.10.34. rom.2.11. galat.2.6. colost.3.25. 1.pet.1.17. Ephe.6.2.*

10 ¶ Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.

11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the assaultes of the deuil.

12 For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against * principalities, against powers, *and* against the worldly gouernours, *the princes* of the darkenes of this worlde, against spiritual wickednesses, *which are* in the high places.

13 For this cause take vnto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to resist in the euil day, and hauing finished all things, stand fast.

14 Stand therefore, and your loynes girded about with veritie, and hauing on the brest plate of righteousnes,

15 And your feete shod with the preparation of the Gospel of peace.

16 Aboue all, take the shield of faith, wherewith ye may quenche all the firic dartes of the wicked,

17 And take the helmet of salnation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.

18 And pray alwayes with all maner praier & supplicatiō in the Spirit: and watch thereunto with all perseuerance and supplication for all Saintes,

19 And for me, that vtterance may be giuen vnto me, that I may open my mouth boldely to publish the secret of the Gospel,

20 Whereof I am the ambassadour in bonds, that therein I may speake boldely, as I ought to speake.

21 ¶ But that ye may also know mine affaires, *and* what I do, Tychicus *my* deare brother and faithful minister in the Lord, shall shew you of all things,

22 Whom I haue sent vnto you for the same purpose, that ye might know mine affaires, and that he might comfort your hearts.

23 Peace *be* with the brethren, and loue with faith from

God the Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.
24 Grace *be* with all them which loue our Lord Iesus Christ, to *their* immortalitie, Amen.

¶ Written from Rome vnto the Ephesians, *and sent* by Tychicus.

THE EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE PHILIPPIANS.

CHAP. I.

5 *Hauing testified his godly and tender affection towardes the Philippians,* 12 *he entreateth of him selfe, and his bondes:* 22 *And pricketh them forward by his owne example,* 27 *and exhorteth them to vnitie* 28 *and patience.*

1 PAVL and Timotheus the seruants of IESVS CHRIST, to all the Saintes in Christ Iesus which are at Philippi, with the Bishops, & Deacons:
2 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.
3 I thanke my God *hauing* you in perfect memorie,
4 (Alwaies in all my praiers for all you, praying with gladnes)
5 Because of the fellowship which ye haue in the Gospel from the first day vnto now.
6 And I am perswaded of this same thing that he that hath begonne *this* good worke in you, wil performe it vntil the day of Iesus Christ,
7 As it becommeth me so to iudge of you all, because I haue you in remembrance that both in my bandes, and in *my* defence, and confirmation of the Gospel you all were partakers of my grace.
8 For God is my record, how I long after you all from the verie heart roote in Iesus Christ.
9 And this I pray: that your loue may abound, yet more and more in knowledge, and in all iudgement,
10 That ye may alowe those thinges which are best, that ye may be pure, and without offence vntill the day of Christ,
11 Filled with the fruites of righteousnes, which are by Iesus Christ vnto the glorie and praise of God.

12 ¶ I would

12 ¶ I would ye vnderstoode, brethren, that the thinges which *haue come* vnto me, are turned rather to the furthering of the Gospel,
13 So that my bandes in Christ are famous throughout al the iudgement hall, and in all other *places*.
14 In so much that many of the brethren in the Lord are boldened through my bandes, and dare more frankely speake the word.
15 Some preach Christ euen through enuie and strife, and some also of good wil.
16 The one part preacheth Christ of contention *and* not purely, supposing to adde more affliction to my bandes.
17 But the others of loue, knowing that I am set for the defence of the Gospel.
18 What then? yet Christ is preached al maner wayes, whether *it be* vnder a pretence, or syncerely: and I therin ioye: yea, and wil ioye.
19 For I knowe that this shal turne to my saluation through your prayer, and by the helpe of the Spirit of Iesus Christ,
20 As I feruently looke for, and hope, that in nothing I shalbe ashamed, but that with al confidence, as alwayes, so now Christ shalbe magnified in my body, whether *it be* by life, or by death.
21 For Christ *is* to me bothe in life, and in death aduantage.
22 And whether to liue in the flesh *were* profitable for me, and what to chose I knowe not.
23 For I am distressed betweene both, desiring to be losed and to be with Christ, which is best of all.
24 Neuertheles, to abide in the flesh, *is* more needeful for you.
25 And this am I sure of, that I shal abide, and with you all continue, for your furtherance and ioye of *your* faith,
26 That ye may more abundantly reioyce in Iesus Christ for me, by my comming to you againe.
27 Onely let your conuersation be, as it becommeth the Gospel of Christ, that whether I come and see you, or els be absent, I may heare of your matters that ye continue in one Spirit, *and* in one minde fighting together through the faith of the Gospel.
28 And in nothing feare your aduersaries, which is to them

them a token of perdition, and to you of ſaluation, and that of God.

29 For vnto you it is giuen for Chriſt, that not onelye ye ſhould beleeue in him, but alſo ſuffer for his ſake,

30 Hauing the ſame fight, which ye ſawe in me, and now heare *to be* in me.

CHAP. II.

1 He exhorteth them aboue al things 3 to humilitie, 6 and that by the example of Chriſt. 19 He promiſeth to ſend Timotheus ſhortly vnto them, 26 and excuſeth the long tarrying of Epaphroditus.

1 IF *there be* therefore any conſolation in Chriſt, if any comfort of loue, if any ſelowſhip of the Spirit, if any compaſſion and mercye,

2 Fulfil my ioye, that ye be like minded, haning the ſame loue, being of one accord, and of one iudgement,

3 That nothing *be done* through contention or vaine glorie, but that in meekenes of minde euery man eſteeme other better then himſelfe.

4 Looke not euery man on his owne thinges, but euerye man alſo on the things of other men.

5 Let the ſame minde be in you that was euen in Chriſt Ieſus,

6 Who being in the forme of God, thought it no robberie to be equal with God:

7 But he made him ſelfe of no reputation, and tooke on him the forme of a ſeruant, & was made like vnto men, and was found in ſhape as a man.

8 He humbled him ſelfe, and became obedient vnto the death, euen the death of the croſſe.

9 Wherefore God hath alſo highly exalted him, and giuen him a Name aboue euery name,

10 That at the Name of Ieſus ſhould euery knee bowe, *both* of things in heauen, and things in earth, and things vnder the earth,

11 And that euerye tongue ſhoulde confeſſe, that Ieſus Chriſt *is* the Lord, vnto the glory of God the Father.

12 Wherefore my beloued, as ye haue alwayes obeyed me, not as in my preſence onely, but now much more in mine abſence, *ſo* make an end of your owne ſaluation with feare and trembling:

13 For it is God which worketh in you, both the will and the

the deede, *euen* of *his* good pleasure.
14 Do al things without * murmuring and reasonings, 1.Pet .4.9.
15 That ye may be blameles, and pure, *and* the sonnes of God without rebuke in the middes of a naughtie and crooked nation, among whome ye shine as * lightes in Mat. 5. 14. the world,
16 Holding forth the word of life, that I may reioyce in the day of Christ, that I haue not runne in vaine, neither haue laboured in vaine.
17 Yea, and though I be offered vp vpon the sacrifice, and seruice of your faith, I am glad, & reioyce with you all.
18 For the same cause also be ye glad, and reioyce with me.
19 And I trust in the Lord Iesus, to send *Timotheus shortly vnto you, that I also may be of good comfort, when I know your state. Acts.16.1.
20 For I haue no man like minded, who wil faithfully care for your matters.
21 * For al seeke their owne, *and* not that which is Iesus Christes. 1.Cor.10. 24.
22 But ye knowe the proofe of him, that as a sonne with the father, he hath serued with me in the Gospel.
23 Him therefore I hope to send assoone as I knowe how it wil go with me,
24 And trust in the Lord, that I also my selfe shall come shortly.
25 But I supposed it necessary to send *my* brother Epaphroditus vnto you, my companion in labour, and fellowe souldier, euen your messenger, and he that ministred vnto me such things as I wanted.
26 For he longed after all you, and was full of heauines, because ye had heard, that he had bene sicke.
27 And no doute he was sicke, very neere vnto death: but God had mercye on him, and not on him onely, but on me also, lest I should haue sorowe vpon sorowe.
28 I sent him therefore the more diligently, that when ye should see him againe, ye might reioyce, and I might be the lesse sorowful:
29 Receiue him therefore in the Lord with all gladnes, and make much of such:
30 Because that for the worke of Christ he was nere vnto death, and regarded not his life, to fulfil that seruice

which

which was lacking on your part toward me.

CHAP. III.

2 *He refuteth the vaine boastings of the false apostles,* 7 *and setteth Christ against them.* 10 *He setteth out the force & nature of faith,* 15 *that laying al things aside, they may be partakers of the crosse of Christ,* 18 *the enemies whereof he noteth out.*

1 MOreouer, my brethren, reioyce in the Lord. It grieueth me not to write the same things to you, and for you it is a sure thing.

2 Beware of dogges: beware of euil workers: beware of the concision.

3 For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and reioyce in Christ Iesus, and haue no confidence in the flesh:

4 Though I might also haue confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, much more I,

5 Circumcised the eight day, of the kinred of Israel, of the tribe of Beniamin, * an Ebrewe of the Ebrewes, * by the Law a Pharise.

2 *Cor.* 11. 22
Act. 23. 6.

6 Concerning zeale, I persecuted the church: touching the righteousnes which is in the Lawe, I was vnrebukeable.

7 But the things that were vantage vnto me, the same I counted losse for Christes sake.

8 Yea, doutles I thinke all things but losse for the excellent knowledge sake of Christ Iesus my Lord, for whom I haue counted al things losse, and do iudge *them* to be dongue, that I might winne Christ,

9 And might be founde in him, *that is,* not hauing mine owne righteousnes, which is of the Law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, *euen* the righteousnes which is of God through faith,

10 That I may knowe him, and the vertue of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his afflictions, and be made conformable vnto his death,

11 If by any meanes I might atteine vnto the resurrection of the dead.

12 Not as though I had already attained *to it*, either were already perfect: but I follow, if that I may comprehend *that* for whose sake also I am comprehended of

Christ

Christ Iesus.

13 Brethren, I count not my selfe, that I haue atteined *to it*, but one thing *I do*: I forget that which is behind, and endeuour my selfe vnto that which is before.

14 And followe harde toward the marke, for the price of the hie calling of God in Christ Iesus.

15 Let vs therfore as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if ye be otherwise minded, God shal reuelle euen the same vnto you.

16 Neuertheles, *in that* whereunto we are come, let vs proceede by one rule, that we may minde one thing.

17 Brethren, be followers of me, & looke on them, which walke so, as ye haue vs for an ensample.

18 * For many walke, of whome I haue tolde you often, and now tel you weeping, *that they are* the enemies of the Crosse of Christ. *Rom.16.17*

19 Whose end *is* damnation, whose God *is their* bellie, and whose glorye *is* to their shame, which minde earthly thinges.

20 But our conuersation is in heauen, from whence also we looke for the * Sauiour, *euen* the Lord Iesus Christ. *1.Cor. 1.7.*

21 Who shal change our vile bodye, that it may be fashioned like vnto his glorious body, according to the working, whereby he is able euen to subdue al things vnto himselfe. *iii.2.13.*

CHAP. IIII.

1 *From particular exhortations, 4 he commeth to general. 10 He sayeth that he tooke such ioye in their readines to liberalitie, 12 that he will patiently beare the want.*

1 THerefore, my brethren, beloued and longed for, my ioy and my crowne, so continue in the Lorde, ye beloued.

2 I pray Euodias, and beseeche Syntyche, that they be of one accorde in the Lord.

3 Yea, and I beseeche thee, faithful yokefellow, help those wome, which laboured with me in the Gospel, with Clement also, and with other my fellowe labourers, whose names *are* in the * booke of life. *Reue.3.5. & 13.8. & 21.27.*

4 Reioyce in the Lord alway, againe I say, reioyce.

5 Let your patient mind be knowē vnto al men. The Lord is at hand.

6 Be nothing careful, but in all things let your requestes be

be shewed vnto God in prayer, and supplication with giuing of thankes.

7 And the peace of God which passeth al vnderstanding, shal preserue your hearts and mindes in Christ Iesus.

8 Furthermore, brethren, whatsoeuer things are true, whatsoeuer thinges *are* honest, whatsoeuer things *are* iust, whatsoeuer things *are* pure, whatsoeuer things *are* worthy loue, whatsoeuer things *are* of good reporte, if there *be* any vertue, or if there *be* any praise, thinke on these things,

9 Which ye haue both learned and receiued, & heard, and seene in me: those things do, and the God of peace shalbe with you.

10 Now I reioyce also in the Lord greatly, that nowe at the last your care for me springeth afresh, wherein notwithstanding ye were careful, but ye lacked opportunity.

11 I speake not because of want: for I haue learned in whatsoeuer state I am, therewith to be content.

12 And I can be abased, and I can abounde: euery where in al things I am instructed, both to be ful, & to be hungry, and to abound, and to haue want.

13 I am able to *do* all thinges through the helpe of Christ, which strengtheneth me.

14 Notwithstanding ye haue wel done, that ye did communicate to mine affliction.

15 And ye Philippians know also that in the beginning of the Gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no Church communicated with me, concerning the matter of giuing and receiuing, but ye onely.

16 For euen *when I was* in Thessalonica, ye sent once, and afterwarde againe for my necessitie,

17 Not that I desire a gift: but I desire the fruite which may further your reckoning.

18 Now I haue receiued al, and haue plentie: I was euen filled, after that I had receiued of Epaphroditus that which *came* from you, an odour that smelleth sweete, a sacrifice acceptable and pleasant to God.

19 And my God shal fulfil al your necessities through his riches with glory in Iesus Christ.

20 Vnto God euen our Father, *be* praise for euermore, Amen.

21 Salute all the Saintes in Christ Iesus. The brethren, which

which are with me, greet you.
22 All the Saintes ſalute you, and moſt of all they which are of Ceſars houſholde.
23 The grace of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, *be* with you all, Amen.

¶ Written to the Philippians from Rome, *and ſent* by Epaphroditus.

THE EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE COLOSSIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 *After the ſalutation,* 4 *he praiſeth them the more to make them attentiue vnto him,* 7 *He reporteth the teſtimony of the doctrine which they heard of Epaphras.* 13 *He magnifieth Gods grace towardes them,* 20 *and ſheweth that all the partes of our ſaluation conſiſt in Chriſt alone.*

1 PAul an Apoſtle of Ieſus Chriſt, by the wil of God, & Timotheus *our* brother,
2 To them, which are at Coloſſe, Saints and faithfull brethren in Chriſt: Grace *be* with you, & peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Ieſus Chriſt.
3 We giue thankes to God euen the Father of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, alwayes praying for you:
4 Since we heard of your faith in Chriſt Ieſus, and of *your* loue towarde al Saintes,
5 For the hopes ſake, which is laid vp for you in heauen, whereof ye haue heard before by the worde of trueth, *which is* the Goſpel,
6 Which is come vnto you, euen as *it is* vnto all the world, and is fruiteful, as *it is* alſo among you, from the day that ye heard and truely knewe the grace of God,
7 As ye alſo learned of Epaphras our deare fellowe ſeruant, which is for you a faithful miniſter of Chriſt:
8 Who hath alſo declared vnto vs your loue in the Spirit.
9 For this cauſe we alſo, ſince the daye we heard *of it,* ceaſe not to pray for you, and to deſire that ye might be fulfilled with knowledge of his wil, in all wiſdome, and ſpiritual vnderſtanding,
10 That ye might walke worthy of the Lord, and pleaſe

him in all things, being fruitefull in all good workes, and increasing in the knowledge of God,

11 Strengthened with al might through his glorious power, vnto al patience, and long suffring with ioyfulnes,

12 Giuing thankes vnto the Father, which hath made vs meete to be partakers of the inheritance of the Saints in light.

13 Who hath deliuered vs from the power of darkenes, and hath translated vs into the kingdome * of his deare Sonne,

Mat.3.17. and 17.5. 2.pet.1.17.

14 In whome we haue redemption through his blood, *that is*, the forgiuenes of sinnes,

Hebr.1.3.

15 Who is the * image of the inuisible God, the first begotten of euery creature.

Iohn.1.3.

16 * For by him were all thinges created, which are in heauen, and which are in earth, thinges visible and inuisible: whether *they be* Thrones or Dominions, or Principalities, or Powers, all thinges were created by him, and for him,

17 And he is before al things, and in him al things consist.

18 And he is the heade of the bodie of the Churche: he is the beginning, * *and* the first begotten of the deade, that in all things he might haue the preeminence.

Reuel. 1.5. 1.cor.15.20

Chap.2.9. Iohn.1.14.

19 * For it pleased *the Father*, that in him should all fulnes dwell,

20 And through peace made by that blood of that his crosse, to reconcile to himselfe through him, through him, *I say*, all thinges, both which *are* in earth, and which *are* in heauen.

21 And you which were in times past strangers and enemies, because *your* mindes *were set* in euil workes, hath he now also reconciled,

22 In that bodye of his flesh through death, to make you holy, and vnblameable and without fault in his sight,

23 If ye continue, grounded and stablished in the faith, & be not moued away from the hope of the Gospell, whereof ye haue heard, and which hath bene preached to euery creature which is vnder heauen, whereof I Paul am a minister.

24 Now reioyce I in my sufferings for you, and fulfill the rest of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies sake, which is the Church,

25 Whereof

25 Whereof I am a minister, according to the dispensation of God, which is giuen me vnto you warde, to fulfill the word of God,

26 * *Which* is the mysterie hid since the worlde began, and from *all* ages, but nowe is made manifest to his Saintes, *Ro.16.25. ephes.3.9. 2.tim.1.10. tit.1.2.*

27 To whō God would make knowen what is the riches of his glorious mysterie among the Gentiles, which *riches* is Christ in you, the hope of glorie, *1.pet.1.20.*

28 Whom we preach, admonishing euerie man, and teaching euerie man in all wisedome, that we may present euerie man perfect in Christ Iesus,

29 Whereunto I also labour and striue, according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

CHAP. II.

¶ *He condemneth, as vaine, whatsoeuer is without Christ,* 11 *intreating specially of circumcision,* 16 *of abstinence from meats,* 18 *and of worshipping of Angels.* 20 *That we are deliuered from the traditions of the Law through Christ.*

1 FOr I would ye knewe what great fighting I haue for your sakes, and for them of Laodicea, and for as many as haue not seene my person in the flesh,

2 That their hearts might be comforted, and they knit together in loue, and in all riches of the full assurance of vnderstanding, to knowe the mysterie of God, euen the Father, and of Christ:

3 In whom are hid all the treasures of wisedome and knowledge.

4 And this I say, lest any man shoulde beguile you with entising wordes:

5 * For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, reioycing and beholding your order, and your stedfast faith in Christ. *1.cor.5.3.*

6 As ye haue therefore receiued Christ Iesus the Lord, so walke in him,

7 Rooted and built in him, and stablished in the fayth, as ye haue bene taught, abounding therein with thanks giuing.

8 Beware lest there be any man that spoile you through philosophie, and vaine deceit, through the traditions of men, according to the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.

9 For in him dwelleth all the fulnes of the Godheade bodily.

10 And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principalitie and power.

Rom. 3. 29. 11 In whom also ye are circumcised with * circumcision made without hands, by putting of the sinfull bodie of the flesh, through the circumcision of Christ,

Rom. 6. 4. ephes. 1. 19. 12 In that ye are * buried with him through baptisme, in whome ye are also raysed vp together through the fayth of the operation of God, which raised him from the dead.

Ephe. 2. 1. 13 * And ye which were dead in sinnes, and in the vncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, forgiuing you all *your* trespaces.

Ephe. 2. 15. 14 And putting out the * hande writing of ordinances that was against vs, which was contrarie to vs, he euen tooke it out of the way, and fastened it vpon the crosse.

15 And hath spoiled the Principalities, and Powers, and hath made a shewe of them openly, and hath triumphed ouer them in the same *crosse*.

16 Let no man therefore condemne you in meate and drinke, or in respecte of an holie day, or of the newe moone, or of the Sabbath *daies*,

17 Which are *but* a shadowe of things to come: but the bodie is in Christ.

18 Let no man at his pleasure beare rule ouer you by humblenes of minde, and worshipping of Angels, advancing him selfe in those things which he neuer saw, rashly puft vp with his fleshly minde,

19 And holdeth not the head, whereof all the bodie furnished and knit together by ioynts and bands, increaseth with the increasing of God.

20 Wherefore if ye *be* deade with Christ from the ordinances of the worlde, why, as though ye lined in the worlde, are ye burdened with traditions?

21 *As* Touch not, Taste not, Handle not.

22 Which all perishe with the vsing, *and are* after the commandements and doctrines of men.

23 Which things haue indeede a shewe of *wisedome*, in voluntarie religion and humblenes of minde, and in not sparing the bodie, which are things of no value, *saue they pertaine* to the filling of the flesh.

1 *Against earthly exercises, which the false apostles vrged,* 2 *he setteth heauenly:* 5 *And beginneth with the mortifying of the flesh,* 8 *whence he draweth particular exhortations,* 18 *and particular duties which depende on eche mans calling.*

1 IF ye then be risen with Christ, seeke those thinges which are aboue, where Christ sitteth at the right hand of God.

2 Set your affections on things which are aboue, *and* not on things which are on the earth.

3 For ye are dead, & your life is hid with Christ In God.

4 When Christ which is our life, shall appeare, then shal ye also appeare with him in glorie.

5 * Mortifie therefore your members which are on the earth, fornication, vncleannes, the inordinate affection, euill concupiscence, and couetousnes which is idolatrie. *Ephes.* 5. 3.

6 For the which things sake the wrath of God commeth on the children of disobedience.

7 Wherein ye also walked once, when ye liued in them.

8 But now put ye away euen all these things, wrath, anger, maliciousnes, cursed speaking, filthie speaking, out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye haue put of the olde man with his works,

10 And haue put on the newe, which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that created him,

11 Where is neither Grecian nor Iewe, circumcision nor vncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bonde, free: But Christ is all, and in all things.

12 Now therefore as the elect of God holy and beloued, put on the bowels of mercies, kindnes, humblenes of minde, meekenes, long suffring:

13 Forbearing one another, and forgiuing one another, if any man haue a quarell to another: euen as Christ forgaue, euen so do ye.

14 And aboue all these thinges *put on* loue, which is the bond of perfectnes.

15 And let the peace of God rule in your heartes, to the which ye are called in one bodie, and be ye thankefull.

16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you plenteously in all

wisdome, teaching and admonishing your owne selues, in Psalmes, and hymnes, and spirituall songs, singing with a grace in your hearts to the Lord.

1.Cor.10.31. 17 * And whatsoeuer ye shall do, in word or deede, *do* all in the Name of the Lord Iesus, giuing thankes to God euen the Father by him.

Eph.5.22. 18 ¶ * Wiues, submit your selues vnto your husbands, as it is comely in the Lord.

1.Pet.3.1. 19 * Husbands, loue your wiues, and be not bitter vnto them.

Eph.6.1. 20 ¶ * Children, obey your parents in all things: for that is well pleasing vnto the Lord.

21 Fathers, prouoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged.

Eph.6.5. Tit.2.9. 1.Pet.2.18. 22 ¶ * Seruants, be obedient vnto them that are *your* masters, according to the flesh in all thinges, not with eye seruice as men pleasers, but in singlenes of heart, fearing God.

23 And whatsoeuer ye do, doe it heartily, as to the Lord, and not to men,

24 Knowing that of the Lord ye shal receiue the reward of the inheritance: for ye serue the Lord Christ.

25 But he that doeth wrong, shall receiue for the wrong that he hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

CHAP. IIII.

2 He returneth to generall exhortations, 3 touching prayer, and gracious speach, 7 and so endeth with greetings and commendations.

1 YE masters, doe vnto your seruants, that which is iust, and equall, knowing that ye also haue a master in heauen.

Luk.18.1. 1.Thes.5.17 2 * Continue in prayer, and watche in the same with thanksgiuing,

Ephes.6.18 2.Thes.3.1. 3 * Praying also for vs, that God may open vnto vs the doore of vtterance, to speake the mysterie of Christ: wherefore I am also in bondes,

4 That I may vtter it, as it becommeth me to speake.

Eph.5.15. 5 ¶ * Walke wisely toward them that are without, and redeeme the season.

6 Let your speach *be* gracious alwayes, and powdred with salt, that ye may know how to answere euery man.

7 ¶ Tychicus *our* beloued brother and faithfull minister, and

and fellow ſeruant in the Lord, ſhall declare vnto you my whole ſtate,

8 Whome I haue ſent vnto you for the ſame purpoſe that he might know your ſtate, and might comfort your hearts,

9 With Oneſimus a faithfull and a beloued brother, who is one of you. They ſhall ſhew you of all things here.

10 Ariſtarchus my priſon fellow ſaluteth you, and Marcus, Barnabas couſin (touching whom ye receiued commaundements, If he come vnto you, receiue him.)

11 And Ieſus which is called Iuſtus, which are of the circumciſion. Theſe onely are my worke fellowes vnto the kingdome of God, which haue bene vnto my conſolation.

12 Epaphras the ſeruant of Chriſt, which is one of you, ſaluteth you, and alwayes ſtriueth for you in prayers, that ye may ſtande perfect, and full in all the will of God.

13 For I beare him recorde, that he hath a great zeale for you, and for them of Laodicea, and them of Hierapolis.

14 * Luke the beloued phyſition greeteth you, and Demas. *2. Tim. 4. 11.*

15 Salute the brethren which are of Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the Church which is in his houſe.

16 And when this Epiſtle is read of you, cauſe that it be read in the Church of the Laodiceans alſo, and that ye likewiſe reade the Epiſtle *written* from Laodicea.

17 And ſaye to Archippus, Take heede to the miniſterie, that thou haſt receiued in the Lord, that thou fulfill it.

18 The ſalutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bandes. Grace *be* with you, Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to the Coloſſians, *and ſent* by Tychicus, and Oneſimus.

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 *He therfore beginneth with thanksgiuing,* 4 *to put them in minde that whatsoeuer was praise worthy in them, it came of Gods goodnes:* 8 *and that they are ensamples vnto others.*

1 PAVL and Siluanus, and Timotheus vnto the Church of the Theſſalonians, *which is* in God the Father, and in the Lord Ieſus Chriſt: Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Ieſus Chriſt.

2 We giue God thankes alwayes for you all, making mention of you in our prayers.

3 Without ceaſing, remembring your effectuall fayth and diligent loue, and the patience of *your* hope in our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, in the ſight of God euen our Father,

4 Knowing, beloued brethren, that ye are elected of God.

5 For our Goſpell was not vnto you in worde onely, but alſo in power, and in the holy Ghoſt, and in much aſſurance, as ye knowe after what maner we were among you for your ſakes.

6 And ye became followers of vs, and of the Lord, and receiued the worde in much affliction, with ioye of the holy Ghoſt,

7 So that ye were ensamples to all that beleeue in Macedonia and Achaia.

8 For from you ſounded out the word of the Lord, not in Macedonia and in Achaia onely: but your fayth alſo which is toward God, ſpread abroad in al quarters, that we needе not to ſpeake any thing.

9 For they themſelues ſhew of vs what maner of entring in we had vnto you, and howe ye turned to God from idoles, to ſerue the liuing and true God,

10 And to looke for his Sonne from heauen, whome he rayſed from the dead, *euen* Ieſus which deliuereth vs from that wrath to come.

1 He declareth howe faithfully he preached the Gospell vnto them, 5 seeking neither gaine, 6 nor praise of men: 10 and he proueth the same by their owne testimonie: 14 that they did courageously beare persecution of their countrey men: 17 that he desireth very much to see them.

1 FOr ye your selues know, brethren, that our entrance in vnto you was not in vaine,

2 But euen after that we had suffred before, and were shamefully entreated at * Philippi (as ye knowe) we were bolde in our God, to speake vnto you the Gospel of God with much striuing. *Act. 16. 12*

3 For our exhortation was not by deceit, nor by vncleanes, nor by guile.

4 But as we were allowed of God, that the Gospell shoulde be committed *vnto vs*, so we speake, not as they that please men, but God, which approueth our heartes.

5 Neither yet did we euer vse flattering wordes, as ye know, nor coloured couetousnes, God is record.

6 Neither sought we praise of men, neither of you, nor of others, when we might haue bene chargeable, as the Apostles of Christ.

7 But we were gentle among you, euen as a nource cherisheth her children.

8 Thus being affectioned towarde you, our good will was to haue dealte vnto you, not the Gospell of God onely, but also our owne soules, because ye were deare vnto vs.

9 For ye remember, brethren, * our labour and trauaile: for we laboured day and night, because we would not be chargeable vnto any of you, and preached vnto you the Gospell of God. *Act. 20. 34. 1. cor. 4. 12. 2. thes. 3. 8.*

10 Ye *are* witnesses, and God *also*, howe holily, and iustly, and vnblameablie we behaued our selues, among you that beleeue.

11 As ye knowe howe that we exhorted you, and comforted, and besought euerie one of you (as a father his children)

12 That ye * woulde walke worthie of God, who hath called you vnto his kingdome and glorie. *1. thes. 4. 1. phil. 1. 27. coloss. 1. 10.*

13 For this cause also thanke we God without ceasing, that when ye receiued the worde of God, which ye

heard of vs, ye receiued it not as the word of men, but as it is in deede the worde of God, which also worketh in you that beleeue.

14 For brethren, ye are become folowers of the Churches of God, which in Iudea are in Christ Iesus, because ye haue also suffered the same thinges of your owne countrey men, euen as they *haue* of the Iewes,

15 Who both killed the Lord Iesus and their owne Prophets, and haue persecuted vs away, & God they please not, and are contrarie to all men,

16 And forbid vs to preach vnto the Gentiles, that they might be saued, to fulfill their sinnes alwayes: for the wrath *of God* is come on them, to the vtmost.

17 Forasmuch brethren, as we were kept from you for a season, concerning sight, but not in the heart, we enforced the more to see your face with great desire.

18 Therefore we woulde haue come vnto you (I Paul, at leist once or twise) but Satan hindered vs.

19 For what is our hope or ioy, or crowne of reioycing? are not euen you it in the presence of our Lord Iesus Christ at his comming?

20 Yes, ye are our glorie and ioye.

CHAP. III.

1 To shew his affection towards them, he sendeth Timothie vnto them: 6 He is so moued by the report of their prosperous state, 9 that he can not giue sufficient thankes, 12 and therefore he breaketh out into prayer.

1 Wherefore since we could no longer forbeare, we thought it good to remayne at Athens alone,

Act. 16. 1 2 * And haue sent Timotheus our brother and minister of God, and our labour fellowe in the Gospell of Christ, to establishe you, and to comfort you touching your fayth,

3 That no man shoulde be moued with these afflictions: for ye your selues knowe, that we are appointed thereunto.

4 For verely when we were with you, we tolde you before that we should suffer tribulations, euen as it came to passe, and ye know it.

5 Euen for this cause, when I could no longer forbeare, I sent *him* that I might know of your fayth, lest the temp-

ter

ter had tempted you in anie sort, and that our labour had bene in vaine.

6 But nowe lately when Timotheus came from you vnto vs, and brought vs good tidings of your faith and loue, & that ye haue good remembrance of vs alwayes, desiring to see vs, as we also *do* you,

7 Therefore, brethren, we had consolation in you, in all our affliction and necessitie through your fayth.

8 For now are we aliue, if ye stand fast in the Lord.

9 For what thankes can we recompence to God againe for you, for all the ioye wherewith we reioyce for your sakes before our God,

10 Night and day, * praying exceedingly that we might see your face, and might accomplishe that which is lacking in your faith? *Rom. 1. 10. and 15. 23.*

11 Nowe God him selfe, euen our Father, and our Lorde Iesus Christ, guide our iourney vnto you,

12 And the Lord increase you, and make you abounde in loue one toward another, and toward all men, euen as we *do* toward you:

13 * To make your heartes stable and vnblameable in holines before God euen our Father, at the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ with all his Saintes. *Chap. 5. 23. 1. cor. 1. &*

CHAP. IIII.

1 *He exhorteth them 3 to holines, 9 and brotherly loue.* 13 *He forbiddeth them to sorowe after the maner of infidels.* 15 *He setteth out the historie of our resurrection.*

1 AND furthermore we beseeche you, brethren, and exhort you in the Lord Iesus, that ye increase more & more, as ye haue receiued of vs, how ye ought to walk, and to please God.

2 For ye knowe what commandements we gaue you by the Lord Iesus.

3 * For this is the will of God, *euen* your sanctification, *and* that ye should abstaine from fornication, *Rom. 12. 2. ephe. 5. 17.*

4 That euery one of you should knowe, howe to possesse his vessell in holines and honour,

5 *And* not in the lust of concupiscence, euen as the Gentiles which know not God:

6 * That no man oppresse or defraude his brother in anie matter: for the Lord *is* a venger of all such thinges, as we also haue tolde you before time, and testified. *1. Cor. 6. 8.*

1.Cor. 1. 2. 7 * For God hath not called vs vnto vncleannes, but vnto holines.

8 He therefore that despiseth *these things*, despiseth not man, but God who hath euen giuen you his holy Spirit.

9 But as touching brotherly loue, ye neede not that I write vnto you: *for ye are taught of God to loue one another.

1ohn. 13. 34 and 15. 12. 1. ohn. 2. 8. and 4. 21.

10 Yea, and that thing verely ye do vnto all the brethrē, which are throughout all Macedonia: but we beseeche you, brethren, that ye increase more and more,

11 And that ye studie to be quiet, and to meddle with your owne busines, & to worke with your owne hands, as we commanded you,

12 That ye may behaue your selues honestly towarde them that are without, and that nothing be lacking vnto you.

13 ¶ I would not, brethren, haue you ignorant concerning them which are a sleepe, that ye sorowe not euen as other which haue no hope.

14 For if we beleeue that Iesus is dead, and is risen, euen so them which sleepe in Iesus, wil God bring with him.

15 For this say we vnto you by the worde of the Lorde, that we which liue, and are remaining in the comming of the Lord, shall not preuent them which sleepe.

16 For the Lord him selfe shal descend from heauen with a showte, *and* with the voyce of the Archangel, and * with the trumpet of God: and the dead in Christ shal rise first:

1. Cor. 15. 52.

17 Then shal we which liue and remaine, be caught vp with them also in the cloudes, to meete the Lorde in the ayre: and so shall we euer be with the Lord.

18 Wherefore, comfort your selues one another with these wordes.

CHAP. V.

1 Condemning the curious searching for the seasons of Christes comming, 6 he warneth them to be readie daily to receiue him. 21 And so giueth them sundrie good lessons.

1 BVt of the times and seasons, brethren, ye haue no neede that I write vnto you.

2 For ye your selues knowe perfectly, that the day of the Lord shall come, euen as a thiefe in the night.

3 For when they shall say, Peace, and safetie, then shall come

come vpon them sodain destruction, as the trauaile vpon a woman with childe, and they shall not escape.

4 But ye, brethren, are not in darkenes, that that day should come on you, as it were a thiefe.

5 Ye are al the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, neither of darkenes.

6 Therfore let vs not sleepe as do other, but let vs watch and be sober.

7 For they that sleepe, sleepe in the night, and they that be drunken, are drunken in the night.

8 But let vs which are of the day, be sober, * putting on the brest plate of faith and loue, and of the hope of saluation for an helmet. *Isa. 59.17. Ephes.6.17.*

9 For God hath not appointed vs vnto wrath, but to obtaine saluation by the meanes of our Lord Iesus Christ,

10 Which died for vs, that whether we wake or sleepe, we should liue together with him.

11 Wherefore exhort one another, and edifie one another, euen as ye do.

12 Now we beseeche you, brethren, that ye acknowledge them, which labour among you, and are ouer you in the Lord, and admonish you,

13 That ye haue them in singular loue for their workes sake. Be at peace among your selues.

14 We desire you, brethren, admonish them that are out of order: comfort the feeble minded: beare with the weake: be pacient toward all men.

15 * See that none recompense euill for euill vnto anie man: but euer followe that which is good, both toward your selues, and toward all men. *Prou.17.13 and 20.22, mat.5.39. rom.12.17. 1.pet.3.9.*

16 Reioyce euermore.

17 * Pray continually. *Luke 18.1.*

18 In all things giue thankes: for this is the will of God in Christ Iesus toward you.

19 Quench not the Spirit.

20 Dispise not prophecying.

21 Trie all things, and keepe that which is good.

22 Abstaine from all appearance of euill.

23 Nowe the very God of peace sanctifie you throughout: and *I pray God* that your whole spirit and soule and bodie, may be kept blameles vnto the cõming of our Lorde Iesus Christ.

24 *Faith-

2.Cor.1.9. 24 * Faithfull *is he* which calleth you, which wil also do it.
25 Brethren, pray for vs.
26 Greete al the brethren with an holy kisse.
27 I charge you in the Lord, that this epistle be read vnto all the brethren the Saintes.
28 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with you, Amen.

¶ The first *Epistle* vnto the Thessalonians written from Athens.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAVL TO THE THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

3 He commendeth the increase of faith, and charitie, 4 and the patience of the Thessalonians: 6 And describing Gods vengeance against such as oppresse the godlie, 10 he teacheth the godly to wayte for the last iudgement.

1 PAul and Siluanus, and Timotheus, vnto the Church of the Thessalonians, *which is* in God our Father, and in the Lorde Iesus Christ:
2 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.
1.Thes.1.2. 3 * We ought to thanke God alwayes for you, brethren, as it is meete, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the loue of euery one of you towarde another, aboundeth,
4 So that we our selues reioyce of you in the Churches of God, because of your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye suffer,
Iude.6. 5 * *Which is* a manifest token of the righteous iudgement of God, that ye may be counted worthie of the kingdome of God, for the which ye also suffer.
6 For it is a righteous thing with God, to recompence tribulation to them that trouble you,
1.Thes.4.16. 7 And to you which are troubled, rest with vs, * when the Lord Iesus shall shewe him selfe from heauen with his

his mightie Angels,
8 In flaming fire, rendring vengeance vnto them, that do not knowe God, and which obey not vnto the Gospell of our Lorde Iesus Christ,
9 Which shalbe punished with euerlasting perdition, from the presence of the Lord, and from the glorie of his power,
10 When he shall come to be glorified in his Saintes, & to be made marueilous in all them that beleeue (because our testimonie toward you was beleeued) in that day.
11 Wherefore, we also pray alwayes for you, that our God may make you worthie of this calling, and fulfill al the good pleasure of *his* goodnes, and the worke of faith with power,
12 That the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God, and of the Lord Iesus Christ.

CHAP. II.

2 *He sheweth that the day of the Lord shal not come, till there be a departure from the faith,* 3 *and that Antichrist be reuealed,* 8 *whose destruction he setteth out,* 15 *and thereupon exhorteth to constancie.*

1 NOw we beseeche you, brethren, by the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, & by our assēbling vnto him,
2 That ye be not suddenly moued from *your* minde, nor troubled neither by spirit, nor by worde, nor by letter, as *it were* from vs, as though the day of Christ were at hande.
3 Let no man deceiue you by any meanes: for *that day shall not come*, except there come a departing first, and that that man of sinne be disclosed, *euen* the sonne of perdition,
4 Which is an aduersarie, and exalteth him selfe against all that *is* called God, or that is worshipped: so that he doth sit as God in the Temple of God, shewing him self that he is God.
5 Remember ye not, that when I was yet with you, I tolde you these things?
6 And nowe ye knowe what withholdeth that he might be reueiled in his time.
7 For the mysterie of iniquitie doeth already worke: onely

onely he which nowe withholdeth, *shall let* till he be taken out of the way.

Isa.11.4. 8 And then shall that wicked man be reueiled, *whome the Lord shall consume with the Spirit of his mouth, and shall abolishe with the brightnes of his comming,

9 *Euen him* whose comming is by the effectuall working of Satan, with all power, and signes, and lying wonders,

10 And in all deceyueablenes of vnrighteousnes, among them that perishe, because they receyued not the loue of the trueth, that they might be saued.

11 And therefore God shall sende them strong delusion, that they should beleeue lies,

12 That all they might be damned which beleeued not the trueth, but had pleasure in vnrighteousnes.

13 But we ought to giue thankes alway to God for you, brethren beloued of the Lorde, because that God hath from the beginning chosen you to saluation, through sanctification of the Spirit, and the faith of trueth,

14 Whereunto he called you by our Gospell, to obtaine the glory of our Lord Iesus Christ.

15 Therefore, brethren, stand fast and keepe the instructions, which ye haue bene taught, eyther by worde, or by our Epistle.

16 Nowe the same Iesus Christ our Lorde, and our God euen the Father which hath loued vs, and hath giuen vs euerlasting consolation and good hope through grace,

17 Comfort your hearts, and stablishe you in euery word and good worke.

CHAP. III.

1 He desireth them to further the preaching of the Gospell with their prayers, 6 and to withdrawe themselues from those, who through idlenes, 11 and curiositie peruert good order: 14 Whom he excludeth from the companie of the faithfull.

Ephes.6.19. Colos.4.3. 1 FVrthermore, brethren, * pray for vs, that the worde of the Lord may haue free passage, and be glorified, euen as it *is* with you,

2 And that we may be deliuered from vnreasonable and euill men: for all men haue not faith.

3 But the Lorde is faithfull, which will stablish you, and keepe you from euill.

4 And

4 And we are perſwaded of you through the Lorde, that
ye both doe, and will doe the thinges which we warne
you of.
5 And the Lord guide your heartes to the loue of God,
and the wayting for of Chriſt.
6 We warne you, brethren, in the Name of our Lorde
Ieſus Chriſt, that ye withdrawe your ſelues from euerie
brother that walketh inordinately, and not after the in-
ſtruction, which he receiued of vs.
7 For ye your ſelues knowe, * howe ye ought to followe 1. *Cor.* 11. 1
vs: * for we behaued not our ſelues inordinately a- 1. *Theſ.* 4.
mong you, 11.
8 Neither tooke we bread of anie man for nought: but
we wrought with labour and trauaile night and day,
becauſe we would not be chargeable to anie of you.
9 Not becauſe we haue not authoritie, but that we
might make our ſelues an enſample vnto you to followe
vs.
10 For euē when we were with you, this we warned you
of, that if there were anie, which would not worke, that
he ſhould not eate.
11 For we heare, that there are ſome which walke amōg
you inordinately, and worke not at all, but are buſie
bodyes,
12 Therefore them that are ſuch, we warne and exhorte
by our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, that they worke with quiet-
nes, and eate their owne bread.
13 And ye, brethren, be not wearie in wel doing.
14 If any man obey not this our ſaying in this letter, note
him, and haue no companie with him, that he may be
aſhamed:
15 Yet count him not as an enemie, but admoniſhe him
as a brother.
16 Nowe the Lorde him ſelfe of peace giue you peace al-
wayes by all meanes. The Lord *be* with you all.
17 The ſalutation of me Paul, with mine own hand, which
is the token in euery Epiſtle: ſo I write,
18 The grace of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt *be* with you all,
AMEN.

¶ The ſecond *Epiſtle* to the Theſſalonians,
written from Athens.

THE

THE FIRST EPISTLE OF PAVL TO TIMOTHEVS.

CHAP. I.

3 Setting forth a perfect paterne of a true Pastour, whose office especially consisteth in teaching, 4 he warneth him, that vaine questions set apart, he teach those things, 5 which further charitie and faith: 12 and that his authoritie be not contemned, 14 he sheweth what an one he is made through the grace of God.

1 PAVL an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the ‖commaundement of God our Sauiour, and of *our* Lorde Iesus Christ our hope,

‖Or, ordinance.

2 Vnto Timotheus *my* naturall sonne in the faith: Grace, mercy, *and* peace fro God our Father, and *from* Christ Iesus our Lorde.

3 As I besought thee to abide still in Ephesus, when I departed into Macedonia, *so doe*, that thou mayest warne some, that they teache none other doctrine,

4 Neither that they giue heede to fables and genealogies *which are* endles, which breede questions rather then godly edifying which is by fayth.

Rom.13.10 5 For * the end of the commandement is loue out of a pure hearte, and of a good conscience, and of faith vnfayned.

6 From the which things some haue erred, and haue turned vnto vaine iangling.

7 They would be doctours of the Lawe, and yet vnderstand not what they speake, neyther whereof they affirme.

8 And we knowe, that the Lawe is good, if a man vse it lawfully,

9 Knowing this, that the Lawe is not giuen vnto a righteous man, but vnto the lawles and disobedient, to the vngodly, and to sinners, to the vnholy, and to the prophane, to murtherers of fathers and mothers, to manslayers,

10 To

10 To whoremongers, to buggerers, to men ſtealers, to liars, to the periured, and if there be any other thing, that is contrary to wholeſome doctrine,
11 *VVhich is* according to the glorious Goſpel of the bleſſed God, which is committed vnto me.
12 Therefore I thanke him, which hath made me ſtrong, *that is*, Chriſt Ieſus our Lorde: for he counted me faithfull, and put me in *his* ſeruice:
13 When before I was a blaſphemer, and a perſecuter, & an oppreſſer: but I was receiued to mercie: for I did it ignorantly through vnbeliefe.
14 But the grace of our Lord was exceeding abounda*n*t with faith and loue, which is in Chriſt Ieſus.
15 This *is* a true ſaying, and by all meanes worthie to be receiued, that * Chriſt Ieſus came into the worlde to ſaue ſinners, of whom I am chiefe. *Matt.9.13. mark.2.17.*
16 Notwithſtanding, for this cauſe was I receiued to mercie, that Ieſus Chriſt ſhould firſt ſhewe on me all long ſuffring vnto the enſample of them, which ſhall in time to come beleeue in him vnto eternall life.
17 Nowe vnto the King euerlaſting, immortall, inuiſible, vnto God onely wiſe, *be* honour *and* glorie, for euer, and euer, Amen.
18 This commaundement commit I vnto thee, ſonne Timotheus, according to the prophecies, which went before vpon thee, that thou by them ſhouldeſt fight a good fight,
19 Hauing faith and a good conſcience, which ſome haue put away, and as concerning faith, haue made ſhipwracke.
20 Of whome is Hymeneus, and Alexander, * whome I haue deliuered vnto Satan, that they might learne not to blaſpheme. *1.Cor. 5.5.

CHAP. II.

1 He exhorteth them to make publike praiers for al men, 4.5 & that for two cauſes: 8 And therefore he willeth ♂ *men in al places to pray: 9 And declareth in what apparel 11 & with what modeſtie women ought to behaue them ſelues in holie aſſemblies.*

1 I Exhort therefore, that firſt of al ſupplications, praiers, interceſſions *and* giuing of thankes be made for al mē,
2 For Kings, & for all that are in authoritie, that we may

leade a quiet and a peaceable life, in all godlines and honestie.

3 For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Sauiour,

4 Who will that all men shalbe saued, and come vnto the acknowledging of the trueth.

5 For there is one God, and one Mediatour betwene God and man, *which is* the man Christ Iesus,

6 Who gaue him selfe a ransome for all men, *to be* that testimonie in due time,

2.Tim.1.11 7 * Whereunto I am ordeined a preacher and an Apostle (I speake the trueth in Christ, and lie not) *euen* a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and veritie.

8 I will therefore that the men pray, euery where lifting vp pure hands without wrath, or douting.

1.Pet.3.3. 9 * Likewise also the women, that they araye thēselues in comely apparell, with shamefastnes and modestie, not with broyded heare, or golde, or pearles, or costly apparell,

10 But (as becommeth women that professe the feare of God) with good workes.

11 Let the woman learne in silence with al subiection.

1.Cor.14. 34. 12 * I permit not a woman to teache, neither to vsurpe authoritie ouer the man, but to be in silence.

Gene.1.27. 13 For * Adam was first formed, then Eue.

and 2.7,21. Gene.3.6. 14 * And Adam was not deceiued, but the woman was deceiued, and was in the transgression.

15 Notwithstanding, through bearing of children she shalbe saued if they continue in faith, and loue, and holines with modestie.

CHAP. III.

2 He setteth out Bishops, 8 & christiā Deacons, with their wiues, 12 childrē and familie: 15 he calleth the church the house of God.

1 This is a true saying, If anie man desire the office of a bishop, he desireth a worthie worke.

Tit.1.6. 2 A bishop therefore must be vnreproueable, the husband of one wife, watching, temperate, modest, harberous, apt to teache,

3 Not giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthie lucre, but gentle, no fighter, not couetous,

4 One that can rule his own house honestly, hauing children

dren vnder obedience with all honestie.
5 For if anie can not rule his owne house, howe shall he care for the Church of God?
6 He may not be a yong scholer, least he being puffed vp fall into the condemnation of the deuill.
7 He must also be well reported of, euen of them which are without, least he fall into rebuke, and the snare of the deuill.
8 Likewise *must* Deacons *be* graue, not double tongued, not giuen vnto much wine, neither to filthie lucre,
9 *Hauing the mysterie of the faith in pure conscience. (Chap. 1. 19.
10 And let them first be proued: then let them minister, if they be founde blameles.
11 Likewise their wiues *must be* honest, not euil speakers, *but* sober, *and* faithfull in all things.
12 Let the Deacons be the husbands of one wife, & such as can rule their children wel, & their owne households.
13 For they that haue ministred well, get them selues a good degree, and great libertie in the faith, which is in Christ Iesus.
14 These things write I vnto thee, trusting to come verie shortly vnto thee.
15 But if I tarie long, that thou mayest yet knowe, howe thou oughtest to behaue thy selfe in the house of God, which is the Church of the liuing God, the pillar and ground of trueth.
16 And without controuersie, great is the mysterie of godlines, *which is*, God is manifested in the flesh, iustified in the Spirit, seene of Angels, preached vnto the Gentiles, beleeued on in the worlde, *and* receiued vp in glorie.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He condemneth false doctrines 3 of marriage and the choice of meates, 7 as also prophane fables: 8 And commendeth the godlie exercise, 13 and the dailie reading of the Scripture.

1 NOw the Spirit speaketh euidently, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, and shall giue heede vnto spirits of errour, & doctrines of deuils,
2 Which speake lies through hypocrisie, and haue their consciences burned with an hote yron,
3 Forbidding to marrie, *and commanding* to abstaine from

meates which God hath created to be receiued with giuing thankes of them which beleeue and knowe the trueth.

4 For euerie creature of God *is* good, and nothing *ought* to be refuſed, if it be receiued with thankeſgiuing.

5 For it is ſanctified by the word of God, and prayer.

6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of theſe things, thou ſhalt be a good miniſter of Ieſus Chriſt, which haſt bene nouriſhed vp in the wordes of faith, & of good doctrine, which thou haſt continually folowed.

7 But caſt away prophane, and olde wiues fables, and exerciſe thy ſelfe vnto godlines.

8 For bodilie exerciſe profiteth litle: but godlines is profitable vnto all things, which hath the promes of the life preſent, and of that that is to come.

9 This *is* a true ſaying, and by all meanes worthie to be receiued.

10 For therefore we labour and are rebuked, becauſe we truſt in the liuing God, which is the Sauiour of all men, ſpecially of thoſe that beleeue.

11 Theſe things warne and teache.

12 Let no man deſpiſe thy youth, but be vnto them that beleeue, an enſample, in worde, in conuerſation, in loue, in ſpirit, in faith, *and* in purenes.

13 Till I come, giue attendance to reading, to exhortation, *and* to doctrine.

14 Deſpiſe not the gift that is in thee, which was giuen thee by prophecie with the laying on of the handes of the companie of the Elderſhip.

15 Theſe things exerciſe, *and* giue thy ſelfe vnto them, that it may be ſeene how thou profiteſt among al men.

16 Take heede vnto thy ſelfe, and vnto learning: continue therein: for in doing this thou ſhalt both ſaue thy ſelf, and them that heare thee.

CHAP. V.

1 Hauing ſet downe a maner howe to rebuke all degrees, 5 he entreateth of widowes, who then were choſen for the ſeruice of the Church: 17 Then he commeth to Elders, 23 & ſpeaketh ſomewhat touching the health of the body.

1 REbuke not an Elder, but exhorte him as a father, *and* the yonger men as brethren,

2 The

2 The elder women as mothers, the yonger as ſiſters, with all puretie.
3 Honour widowes, which are widowes in deede.
4 But if any widowe haue children or nephewes, let thē learne firſt to ſhewe godlines toward their own houſe, and to recompenſe their kinred: for that is an honeſt thing and acceptable before God.
5 And ſhe that is a widowe in deede and left alone, truſteth in God, and continueth in ſupplications and prayers night and day.
6 But ſhe that liueth in pleaſure, is dead, while ſhee liueth.
7 Theſe things therefore warne *them* of, that they may be blameleſſe.
8 If there be any that prouideth not for his owne, and namely for them of his houſholde, he denieth the faith, and is worſe then an infidel.
9 Let not a widowe be taken into the nomber vnder three ſcore yere olde, that hath bene the wife of one husbande,
10 And well reported of for good workes: if ſhe haue nouriſhed her childrē, if ſhe haue lodged the ſtrangers, if ſhe haue waſhed the Saintes feete, if ſhe haue miniſtred vnto them which were in aduerſitie, if ſhe were continually giuen vnto euery good worke.
11 But refuſe the yonger widowes: for when they haue begonne to waxe wanton agaynſt Chriſt, they wil mary,
12 Hauing damnation, becauſe they haue broken the firſt fayth.
13 And likewiſe alſo being idle they learne to goe about from houſe to houſe: yea, *they are* not onely ydle, but alſo pratlers and buſiebodies, ſpeaking thinges which are not comely.
14 I will therefore that the yonger women marie, and beare children, and gouerne the houſe, *and* giue none occaſion to the aduerſarie to ſpeake euill.
15 For certaine are already turned backe after Satan.
16 If any faithfull man, or faithful woman haue widowes, let them miniſter vnto them, and let not the Church be charged, that there may be ſufficient for them that are widowes in deede.

17 ¶ The Elders that rule weil, let them be had in double honour, ſpecially they which labour in the worde and doctrine.

Deu.25.4. 18 For the Scripture ſaith, *Thou ſhalt not mouſel the
1.Cor. 9. 9. mouth of the oxe that treadeth out the corne: and,
Mat.10.10 * The labourer is worthie of his wages.
Luke 10.7.

19 Againſt an Elder receiue none accuſation, but vnder two or three witneſſes.

20 Them that ſinne, rebuke openly, that the reſt alſo may feare.

Chap.6. 13. 21 ¶ * I charge *thee* before God and the Lorde Ieſus Chriſt, and the elect Angels, that thou obſerue theſe thinges without preferring one to another, and do nothing partially.

22 Lay handes ſodenly on no man, neyther be partaker of other mens ſinnes: keepe thy ſelfe pure.

23 Drinke no longer water, but vſe a litle wine for thy ſtomakes ſake, and thine often infirmities.

24 Some mens ſinnes are open before hand, and goe before vnto iudgement: but ſome mens folow after.

25 Likewiſe alſo the good workes are manifeſt before hand, and they that are otherwiſe, can not be hid.

CHAP. VI.

1 He ſheweth the dutie of ſeruants: 10 and what a miſchieuous euill couetouſnes is: 13 and hauing ſpoken ſomewhat of rich men, he once again forbiddeth Timothie 20 to combre himſelfe with vaine babblings.

1 LEt as many ſeruants as are vnder the yoke, counte their maſters worthie of all honour, that the Name of God, and *his* doctrine be not euil ſpoken of.

2 And they which haue beleeuing maſters, let them not deſpiſe them, becauſe they are brethren, but rather do ſeruice, becauſe they are faithfull, and beloued, & partakers of the benefit. Theſe things teache and exhorte.

3 If any man teache otherwiſe, and conſenteth not to the wholeſome wordes of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, and to the doctrine, which is according to godlines,

4 He is puft vp and knoweth nothing, but doteth about queſtions and ſtriſe of wordes, whereof commeth enuie, ſtriſe, railings, euill ſurmiſings,

5 Froward diſputations of men of corrupt mindes and deſtitute of the trueth, which thinke that gaine is godlines: from ſuch ſeparate thy ſelfe.

6 But

6 But godlines is great gaine, if a man be content with that he hath.
7 For we brought nothing into the worlde, *and* it is certaine, that we can carie nothing out.
8 Therefore when we haue ſoode and raiment, let vs therewith be content.
9 For they that will be riche, fall into tentation and ſnares, and into many fooliſh and noyſome luſtes, which drowne men in perdition and deſtruction.
10 For the deſire of money is the roote of all euill, which while ſome luſted after, they erred from the faith, and pearced them ſelues through with many ſorowes.
11 But thou, O man of God, flee theſe thinges, and folowe after righteouſnes, godlines, faith, loue, patience, *and* meekenes.
12 Fight the good fight of faith: laye holde of eternall life, whereunto thou art alſo called, and haſt profeſſed a good profeſsion before many witneſſes.
13 * I charge thee in the ſight of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Ieſus Chriſt, which vnder Pontius Pilate * witneſſed a good confeſsion, *Chap. 5. 21.* *Mat 27. 11. iohn 18. 37.*
14 That thou keepe *this* commandement without ſpot, & vnrebukeable, vntill the appearing of our Lorde Ieſus Chriſt,
15 Which in due time he ſhall ſhewe, that is * bleſſed & Prince onely, the King of kings, and Lord of lords, *Chap. 1. 11. reue. 17. 14 and 19. 16.*
16 Who only hath immortalitie, & dwelleth in the light that none can attaine vnto, * whom neuer man ſaw, neither can ſee, vnto whom *be* honour and power euerlaſting, Amen. *Iohn. 1. 18.*
17 Charge them that are riche in this worlde, that they be not high minded, and that they * truſt not in vncertaine riches, but in the liuing God, (which giueth vs abonndantly all things to enioy) *Mark. 4. 19 luke 12. 15.*
18 That they do good, *and* be riche in good workes, *and* readie to diſtribute, and communicate,
19 * Laying vp in ſtore for them ſelues a good foundatiõ againſt the time to come, that they may obtaine eternall life. *Matth. 6. 2.*
20 O Timothens, keepe that which is committed vnto thee, and auoide prophane *and* vaine bablings, & oppoſitions of ſcience falſely ſo called,

21 Which whyle some professe, they haue erred concerning the faith. Grace *be* with thee, Amen.

¶ The first *Epistle* to Timotheus written from Laodicea, which is the chiefest citie of Phrygia Pacaciana.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF PAVL TO TIMOTHEVS.

CHAP. I.

5 He commendeth Timothies faith, 6 and exhorteth him to go on faithfully in the charge committed vnto him: 8 and that neyther for his bondes, 15 nor the reuolting of others, he faint. 11 He triumpheth of his Apostleship. 14 He willeth him to haue care of the thing committed vnto him: 16 and prayseth Onesimus.

1 PAVL an Apostle of Iesus Christ, by the will of God, according to the promes of life which is in Christ Iesus,

2 To Timotheus *my* beloued sonne: Grace, mercie *and* peace from God the Father, and *from* Iesus Christ our Lorde.

Act.22.3. 3 I thanke God, * whom I serue from *mine* elders with pure conscience, that without ceasing I haue remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day,

4 Desiring to see thee, mindeful of thy teares, that I may be filled with ioye:

5 When I call to remembrance the vnfayned faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, & in thy mother Eunice, and am assured that *it dwelleth* in thee also.

6 Wherfore, I put thee in remembrance that thou stirre vp the gift of God which is in thee, by the putting on of mine handes.

7 For God hath not giuen to vs the Spirit of feare, but of power, and of loue, and of a sounde minde.

8 Be not therefore ashamed of the testimonie of our Lorde,

Lorde, neyther of me his prisoner: but be partaker of the afflictions of the Gospell, according to the power of God,

9 Who hath saued vs, and called vs with an *holy calling, not according to our * workes, but according to his owne purpose & grace, which was giuen to vs through Christ Iesus before the * world was, *1.Cor.1.2. Tit.3.5. Rom.16.25*

10 But is nowe made manifest by that appearing of our Sauiour Iesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortalitie vnto light through the Gospell. *ephe.1.4. coloss.1.26. tit.1.2.*

11 *Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and Apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles. *1.Tim.2.7.*

12 For the which cause I also suffer these thinges, but I am not ashamed: for I know whom I haue beleeued, & I am persuaded that he is able to keepe that which I haue committed to him against that day.

13 Keepe the true paterne of the wholsome wordes, which thou hast heard of me in fayth and loue which is in Christ Iesus.

14 That worthy thing, which was cõmitted to thee, keepe through the holy Ghost, which dwelleth in vs.

15 This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia, be turned from me: of which sort are Phygellus and Hermogenes.

16 The Lorde giue mercie vnto the house of Onesiphorus: for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chaine,

17 But when he was at Rome, he sought me out verie diligently, and found *me*.

18 The Lord graunt vnto him, that he may finde mercie with the Lorde at that day, and in howe many thinges he hath ministred vnto me at Ephesus, thou knowest verie well.

CHAP. II.

2 The better to set out perseuerance in the Christian warfare, 3 he taketh similitudes 4 from souldiers, 6 & from husbandmen. 10 He sheweth that his bonds are for the profit of the saints: 15 Then he warneth Timothie to deuide the word of truth aright, 17 to beware of the examples of the wicked, 22 and to doe all things modestly.

1 THou therefore, my ſonne, be ſtrong in the grace that is in Chriſt Ieſus.
2 And what things thou haſt heard of me, by many witneſſes, the ſame deliuer to faithful men, which ſhalbe able to teach other alſo.
3 Thou therefore ſuffer affliction as a good ſouldier of Ieſus Chriſt.
4 No man that warreth, entangleth him ſelfe with the affaires of *this* life, becauſe he woulde pleaſe him that hath choſen him to be a ſouldier.
5 And if any man alſo ſtriue for a maſtery, he is not crowned, except he ſtriue as he ought to do.
6 The husbandman muſt labour before he receiue the fruites.
7 Conſider what I ſay: and the Lord giue thee vnderſtanding in all things:
8 Remember that Ieſus Chriſt *made* of the ſeede of Dauid, was rayſed againe from the deade according to my Goſpell,
9 Wherein I ſuffer trouble as an euill doer, euen vnto bondes: but the worde of God is not bounde.
10 Therefore I ſuffer all thinges, for the elects ſake, that they might alſo obtaine the ſaluation which is in Chriſt Ieſus, with eternall glorie.
Rom.6.5. 11 *It is* a true ſaying, For if we be * dead together *with him*, we alſo ſhall liue together *with him*.
12 If we ſuffer, we ſhall alſo reigne together *with him*: *Mat.10.33 mar.8.38.* * if we denie *him*, he alſo will denie vs.
13 If * we beleeue not, *yet* abideth he faithfull: he can not denie him ſelfe. *Rom.3.3.& 9.6.*
14 Of theſe thinges put them in remembrance, & proteſt before the Lord, that they ſtriue not about words, which is to no profit, *but* to the peruerting of the hearers.
15 Studie to ſhew thy ſelfe approued vnto God, a workman that needeth not to be aſhamed, deuiding the word of *trueth* aright.
16 Stay prophane, and vaine bablings: for they ſhall encreaſe vnto more vngodlines.
17 And their word ſhall frette as a canker: of which ſort is Hymenens and Philetus,
18 Which as concerning the *trueth* haue erred from the marke, ſaying that the reſurrection is paſt alreadie, and

do

do destroy the faith of certaine.

19 But the foundation of God remayneth sure, and hath this seale, The Lord knoweth who are his: and, Let euerie one that calleth on the Name of Christ, depart from iniquitie.

20 Notwithstanding in a great house are not onely vessels of golde & of siluer, but also of wood & of earth, * & some for honour, and some vnto dishonour. *Rom.9.21.

21 If any man therefore purge him selfe from these, he shalbe a vessell vnto honour, sanctified, and meete for the Lord, and prepared vnto euerie good worke.

22 Flee also from the lustes of youth, and followe after righteousnes, faith, loue, *and* peace, with them that * call on the Lord with pure heart. *1.Cor.1.2.

23 * And put away fooliſh, & vnlearned questions, knowing that they ingender strife. *1.Tim.1.4. & 4.7. 11.

24 But the seruant of the Lorde must not striue, but *must* be gentle towarde all men, apt to teache, suffering the euill, 3.9.

25 Instructing them with meekenes that are contrarie minded, *proouing* if God at any time will giue them repentance, that they may acknowledge the trueth,

26 And come to amendment out of that snare of the deuill, of whom they are taken prisoners, to *do* his will.

CHAP. III.

1 *He foretelleth the daungerous times that are to insue:* 9 *but with the certaine hope of victorie* 10 *he encourageth him to the combat:* 14 *Setting out especially the myght of sounde doctrine.*

1 THis knowe also, that in the * last dayes shall come perilous times. *1.Tim.4.1. 2.pet.3.3.

2 For men shalbe louers of their owne selues, couetous, boasters, proude, cursed speakers, disobedient to parents, vnthankefull, vnholy, *inde.*18.

3 Without naturall affection, trucebreakers, false accusers, intemperate, fierce, no louers at all of them which are good,

4 Traitours, headie, high minded, louers of pleasures more then louers of God,

5 Hauing a shew of godlines, but haue denied the power thereof: turne away therefore from such.

6 For of this sort are they which creepe into houses, and leade

leade captiue ſimple women laden with ſinnes, and led with diuers luſtes,

7 *Which women are* euer learning, and are neuer able to come to the acknowledging of the trueth.

Exod.7.11. 8 *And as Iannes and Iambres withſtoode Moſes, ſo doe theſe alſo reſiſt the trueth, men of corrupt mindes, reprobate concerning the fayth.

9 But they ſhall preuaile no longer: for their madnes ſhalbe euident vnto all men, as theirs alſo was.

10 ¶ But thou haſt fully knowen my doctrine, maner of liuing, purpoſe, faith, long ſuffring, loue, patience,

11 Perſecutions, & afflictions which came vnto me at Antiochia, at Iconium, and at Lyſtri, which perſecutions I ſuffred: but from them all the Lord deliuered me.

12 Yea, and all that will liue godly in Chriſt Ieſus, ſhall ſuffer perſecution.

13 But the euill men and deceiuers, ſhall waxe worſe & worſe, deceiuing, and being deceiued.

14 But continue thou in the things which thou haſt learned, and which are committed vnto thee, knowing of whom thou haſt learned *them*:

15 And that thou haſt knowen the holy Scriptures of a childe, which are able to make thee wiſe, vnto ſaluation through the faith which is in Chriſt Ieſus.

2.Pet.1.20. 16 *For the whole Scripture *is* giuen by inſpiration of God, and *is* profitable to teach, to conuince, to correct, *and* to inſtruct in righteouſnes,

17 That the man of God may be abſolute, being made perfect vnto all good workes.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He chargeth him to preach the Goſpel with all diligence, 3 in that ſo miſerable time: 6 That his death is hard at hād, 8 yet ſo, that as a cōquerour, he maketh haſt to a glorious triumph. 10 He ſheweth the cauſe why he ſendeth for Timothie, 11 euen by reaſon of his preſent ſtate.

1 I Charge *thee* therefore before God, and *before* the Lord Ieſus Chriſt, which ſhall iudge the quicke and dead at that his appearing, and in his kingdome,

2 Preache the worde: be inſtant, in ſeaſon and out of ſeaſon: improue, rebuke, exhort with all long ſuffering and doctrine.

3 For the time will come, when they will not ſuffer whol-

ſome

some doctrine: but hauing their eares itching, shall after their owne lustes get them an heape of teachers,
4 And shall turne their eares from the trueth, and shalbe giuen vnto fables.
5 But watch thou in all things: suffer aduersitie: do the worke of an Euangelist: cause thy ministerie to be throughly liked of.
6 For I am nowe readie to be offred, and the time of my departing is at hand.
7 I haue sought a good fight, & haue finished *my* course: I haue kept the faith.
8 For hence forth is laide vp for me the crowne of righteousnes, which the Lord the righteous iudge shal giue me at that day: and not to me onely, but vnto all them also that loue that his appearing.
9 Make speede to come vnto me at once:
10 For Demas hath forsaken me, and hath embraced this present worlde, and is departed vnto Thessalonica, Crescens *is gone* to Galatia, Titus vnto Dalmatia.
11 * Onely Luke is with me. Take Marke and bring him with thee: for he is profitable vnto me to minister. *Col.* 4. 10. 14.
12 And Tychicus haue I sent to Ephesus.
13 The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou commest, bring with thee, and the bookes, but specially the parchments.
14 Alexander the copper smith hath done me much euil: the Lord reward him according to his workes.
15 Of whome be thou ware also: for he withstoode our preaching sore.
16 At my first answering no mã assisted me, but al forsook me: *I pray God*, that it may not be laid to their charge.
17 Notwithstanding the Lord assisted me, & strengthened me, that by me the preaching might be fully beleeued, and that all the Gentiles shoulde heare: and I was deliuered out of the mouth of the Lyon.
18 And the Lord wil deliuer me from euerie euil worke, and will preserue me vnto his heauenly kingdome: to whom *be* praise for euer and euer, Amen.
19 Salute Prisca, and Aquila, and the * housholde of Onesiphorus. *Chap.* 1. 16
20 Erastus abode at Corinthus: Trophimus I left at Miletum sicke.

21 Make

21 Make ſpeede to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

22 The Lorde Ieſus Chriſt *be* with thy ſpirit. Grace *be* with you, Amen.

¶ The ſecond *Epiſtle* written from Rome vnto Timotheus, the firſt Biſhop elected of the Church of Epheſus, when Paul was preſented the ſecond time before the Emperour Nero.

THE EPISTLE OF PAVL TO TITVS.

CHAP. I.

3 He ſheweth what kinde of men ought to be choſen Miniſters: 10 how vaine babblers mouthes ſhould be ſtopped: 12 and through this occaſion he toucheth the nature of the Cretians, 14 and the Iewes who put holines in outward things.

1 PAul a ſeruant of God, and an Apoſtle of Ieſus Chriſt, according to the faith of Gods elect, and the acknowledging of the trueth, which is according to godlines,

2 Vnto the hope of eternall life, which God that can not lie, hath promiſed before the * world began:

Rom.16.25 ephes.3.9. col.1.26. 2.tim.1.9.

3 But hath made his word manifeſt in due time through the preaching, which is * committed vnto me, according to the commandement of God our Sauiour:

1.pet.1.10. Gal.1.1.

4 To Titus *my* naturall ſonne according to the common faith, Grace, mercie *and* peace from God the Father, *&* from the Lord Ieſus Chriſt our Sauiour.

5 For this cauſe left I thee in Creta, that thou ſhouldeſt continue to redreſſe the thinges that remayne, and ſhouldeſt ordaine Elders in euerie citie, as I appointed thee,

1.Tim.3.2.

6 * If any be vnreproueable, the husband of one wife, hauing faithfull children, which are not ſlandered of riote, neither are diſobedient.

7 For

7 For a bishop must be vnreproueable, as Gods steward, not froward, not angrie, not giuen to wine, no striker, not giuen to filthie lucre,
8 But harberous, one that loueth goodnes, wise, righteous, holy, temperate,
9 Holding fast that faithfull word according to doctrine, that he also may be able to exhort with wholsome doctrine, and conuince them that say against it.
10 For there are many disobedient & vaine talkers and deceiuers of mindes, chiefly they of the Circumcision,
11 Whose mouthes must be stopped, which subuert whole houses, teaching thinges, which they ought not, for filthie lucres sake.
12 One of them selues, *euen* one of their owne prophets saide, The Cretians *are* alwayes lyars, euil beasts, slowe bellyes.
13 This witnes is true: wherefore conuince them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith,
14 And not taking heede to * Iewish fables & commandements of men, that turne away from the trueth. *1.Tim.1.4.*
15 Vnto the pure *are* all things pure, but vnto them that are defiled, and vnbeleeuing, *is* nothing pure, but euen their mindes and consciences are defiled. *Rom. 14. 20.*
16 They professe that they know God, but by works they deny *him*, and are abominable and disobedient, and vnto euerie good worke reprobate.

CHAP. II.

1 He setteth out the duties of sundrie persons and states, 6 & willeth him to instruct the Church in maners. 11 He draweth an argument from the end of our redemption, 12 which is, that we liue godly and vprightly.

1 BVt speake thou the thinges which become wholsome doctrine,
2 That the elder men be watchfull, graue, temperate, sound in the faith, in loue, and in patience:
3 The elder women likewise, that they be in such behauiour as becommeth holines, not false accusers, not subiect to much wine, *but* teachers of honest things.
4 That they may instruct the yong women to be sobre minded, that they loue their husbands, that they loue their children,
5 That they be temperate, chast, keeping at home, good &

* subiect

Ephe.5.23. * subiect vnto their husbandes, that the worde of God be not euill spoken of.

6 Exhort yong men likewise, that they be sobre minded.

7 In all things shew thy self an ensample of good works with vncorrupt doctrine, with grauitie, integritie,

8 And with the wholsome word, which can not be condemned, that he which withstandeth, may be ashamed, hauing nothing concerning you to speake euill of.

Ephe.6.5. coloss.3.22. 9 * Let seruants be subiect to their masters, and please them in all things, not answering againe,

1.pet.2.18. 10 Neyther pykers, but that they shewe all good fayth fulnes, that they may adorne the doctrine of God our Sauiour in all things.

1.Cor.1.2. coloss.1.22. 11 * For that grace of God, that bringeth saluation vnto all men, hath appeared,

12 And teacheth vs that we should denie vngodlines & worldly lusts, and that we should liue soberly & righteously, and godly in this present world,

13 Loking for that blessed hope, & appearing of that glorie of that mightie God, & of our Sauiour Iesus Christ,

14 Who gaue him selfe for vs, that he might redeeme vs from all iniquitie, and purge vs *to be* a peculiar people vnto him selfe, zealous of good workes.

15 These thinges speake, and exhort, and conuince with all authoritie. See that no man despise thee.

CHAP. III.

1 He willeth that all generally be put in minde to reuerence such as be in authoritie: 3 That they remember their former life, and attribute all iustification vnto grace: 9 And if any brabler withstande these things, 10 he willeth that he be reiected.

Rom.13.1. 2.pet.2.13. 1 PVt them in remembrance that they * be subiect to the Principalities and powers, *and* that they be obedient, *and* readie to euerie good worke,

2 That they speake euill of no man, that they be no fighters, *but* soft, shewing all meekenes vnto all men.

2.Cor.6.11 3 * For we our selues also were in times past vnwise, disobedient, deceiued, seruing the lustes and diuers pleasures, liuing in maliciousnes and enuie, hatefull, *and* hating one another.

4 But when that bountifulnes and that loue of God our Sauiour toward man appeared,

5 * Not

5 Not by the works of righteousnes, which we had done, 2.*Tim.*1.9
but according to his mercy he saued vs, by the washing
of the newe birth, and the renuing of the holy Ghost,
6 Which he shed on vs abounda[n]tly, through Iesus Christ
our Sauiour,
7 That we, being iustified by his grace, should be made
heires according to the hope of eternal life.
8 This *is* a true saying, and these things I wil thou shoul-
dest affirme, that they which haue beleeued God, might
be carefull to shew forth good workes. These thinges
are good and profitable vnto men.
9 But stay foolish questions, and genealogies, and con- 1.*Tim.* 1.4.
tentions, and brawlings about the Lawe: for they are & 4.7.
vnprofitable and vaine. 2.*Tim.*2.23.
10 Reiect him that is an heretike, after once or twise ad-
monition,
11 Knowing that he that is such, is peruerted, and sinneth
being damned of his owne selfe.
12 When I shal send Artemas vnto thee, or Tychicus, be
diligent to come to me vnto Nicopolis: for I haue de-
termined there to winter.
13 Bring Zenas the expounder of the Law, and Apollos on
their iourney diligently, that they lacke nothing.
14 And let ours also learne to shew forth good workes
for necessary vses, that they be not vnfruitful.
15 All that are with me, salute thee. Greete them that
loue vs in the faith. Grace *be* with you all, Amen.

¶ To Titus, elect the first bishop of the Church of the Cretians, written from Nicopolis in Macedonia.

THE EPISTLE OF PAVL TO PHILEMON.

*1 Paul handling a base & small matter, yet according to his man-
ner mounteth aloft vnto God, & sending againe to Philemon
his vagabound and theeuish seruant, he entreateth pardon for
him, and very gravely preacheth of Christian equitie.*

1 PAVL a prisoner of Iesus Christ, & our brother Timotheus, vnto Philemon our deare friend, and fellowe helper,

2 And to *our* deare *sister* Apphia, and to Archippus our fellow souldier, & to the Church that is in thine house:

3 Grace *be* with you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Iesus Christ.

1. *Thess.* 1. 2. 2. *Thess.* 1. 3. 4 I * giue thankes to my God, making mention alwayes of thee in my prayers,

5 (When I heare of thy loue and faith, which thou hast towarde the Lord Iesus, and towarde al Saintes)

6 That the felowship of thy faith may be made effectuall, & that whatsoeuer good thing is in you through Christ Iesus, may be knowen.

7 For we haue great ioy and consolation in thy loue, because by thee, Brother, the Saints bowels are cõforted.

8 Wherefore, though I be very bolde in Christ to command thee that which is conuenient,

9 *Yet* for loues sake I rather beseech thee, though I be as I am, euen Paul aged, and euen now a prisoner for Iesus Christ.

Colos. 4 9. 10 I beseech thee for my sonne * Onesimus, whom I haue begotten in my bondes,

11 Which in time past was to thee vnprofitable, but now profitable both to thee and to me,

12 Whome I haue sent againe: thou therefore, receiue him, that is mine owne bowels,

13 Whome I woulde haue reteined with me, that in thy steade he might haue ministred vnto me in the bondes of the Gospel.

14 But without thy minde would I do nothing, that thy benefite should not be as it were of necessitie, but willingly.

15 It may be that he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest receiue him for euer,

16 Not now as a seruant, but aboue a seruant, *euen as* a brother beloued, specially to me: how much more then vnto thee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord?

17 If therefore thou counte our things common, *receiue* him as my selfe.

18 If he hath hurte thee, or oweth thee ought, that put on mine

mine accountes.
19 I Paul haue written *this* with mine owne hand: I will recompense it, albeit I do not say to thee, that thou owest moreouer vnto me euen thine owne selfe.
20 Yea, brother, let me obteine this pleasure of thee in the Lord: comforte my bowels in the Lord.
21 Trusting in thine obedience, I wrote vnto thee, knowing that thou wilt do euen more then I say.
22 Moreouer also prepare me lodging: for I trust through your prayers I shalbe freely giuen vnto you.
23 There salute thee Epaphras my fellow prisoner in Christ Iesus,
24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas *and* Luke, my fellowe helpers.
25 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ *be* with your spirit, Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, *and sent* by Onesimus a seruant.

THE EPISTLE TO THE HEBREWES.

The drift and end of this Epistle, is to shew that Iesus Christ the Sonne of God both God and man, is that true eternal and onely Prophet, King, and high Priest, that was shadowed by the figures of the olde Lawe, and is nowe in deede exhibited: of whome the whole Church ought to be taught, gouerned, and sanctified.

CHAP. I.

1 *To shew that the doctrine which Christ brought, is most excellent, in that it is the knitting vp of al prophecies,* 4 *he aduanceth him aboue the Angels:* 10 *And proueth by diuers testimonies of the Scripture, that he far passeth al other.*

1 GOd sundrye times and in diuers maners spake in the olde time to *our* fathers by the Prophetes:
2 in these last dayes he hath spoken vnto vs by his Sonne,
Whome he hath made heire of all thinges, by whome also he made the worldes.

Col. 1.15. 3 *Who being the brightnes of the glory, and the ingrauen forme of his person, and bearing vp al things by his mightie word, hath by himselfe purged our sinnes, and sitteth at the right hand of the Maiestie in the highest places,

4 And is made so much more excellent then the Angels, in as much as he hath obteined a more excellent Name then they.

5 For vnto which of the Angels said he at any time, Chap. 5.5. *Thou art my Sonne, this day begate I thee? and againe, Psal. 2.7. I *wil be his Father, and he shalbe my Sonne?

2. Sa. 7.14. 1 chr. 22.10 6 And again, when he bringeth in *his* first begotten Sonne into the world, he saith, * And let all the Angels of God Psal. 97.7. worship him.

Psal. 104.4 7 And of the Angels he saith, * He maketh the Spirits Psal. 45.7. his messengers, & his ministers a flame of fire.

8 But vnto the Sonne *he saith*, * O God, thy throne *is* for euer and euer: the scepter of thy kingdome *is* a scepter of righteousnes.

9 Thou hast loued righteousnes and hated iniquitie. Wherefore God, *euen* thy God, hath anointed thee with the oyle of gladnes aboue thy fellowes.

Psalm. 102 25. 10 And * Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast established the earth, & the heauens are the works of thine hands.

11 They shal perish, but thou doest remaine: and they al shal waxe olde as doeth a garment.

12 And as a vesture shalt thou folde them vp, and they shalbe changed: but thou art the same, and thy yeres shal not faile.

Psal. 110.1 1. Cor. 15.25 Ephe. 1.20. 13. 13 Vnto which also of the Angels said he at any time, * Sit at my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy foote-stoole?

14 Are they not all ministring spirits, sent forth to minister, for their sakes which shalbe heires of saluation?

CHAP. II.

1 Thereof he inferreth, that good heede must be giuen to Christes doctrine: 9 And he setteth him out vnto vs euen as our brother in our flesh, that we may with a good will yelde vp our selues wholy vnto him.

1 Wherefore we ought diligently to take heede to the things which we haue heard, lest at anye time we runne out.

2 For

2 For if the word ſpoken by Angels was ſtedfaſt, and euery tranſgreſsion and diſobedience receiued a iuſt recompence of rewarde,

3 How ſhal we eſcape, if we neglect ſo great ſaluation, which at the firſt began to be preached by the Lord, & *afterwarde* was confirmed vnto vs by them that hearde him,

4 *God bearing witneſſe thereto, both with ſignes and wonders, and with diuers miracles, and giftes of the holy Ghoſt, according to his owne will? *Mar.* 16.20.

5 For he hath not put in ſubiection vnto the Angels the world to come, whereof we ſpeake.

6 But * one in a certaine place witneſſed, ſaying, What is man, that thou ſhouldeſt be mindeful of him? or the ſonne of man, that thou wouldeſt conſider him? *Pſal.* 8.6.

7 Thou madeſt him a litle inferior to the Angels: thou crowneſt him with glory and honour, and haſt ſet him aboue the workes of thine hands.

8 *Thou haſt put al things in ſubiection vnder his feete. And in that he hath put all things in ſubiection vnder him, he left nothing that ſhould not be ſubiect vnto him. But we yet ſee not all things ſubdued vnto him, *1.Cor.* 15. 27.

9 But we ſee Ieſus crowned with glory and honour, * which was made a litle inferior to the Angels, through the ſuffring of death, that by Gods grace he might taſte death for all men. *Phil.* 2.8.

10 For it became him, for whom *are* al theſe thinges, and by whome *are* all theſe things, ſeeing that he brought manye children vnto glory, that he ſhould conſecrate the Prince of their ſaluation through afflictions.

11 For he that ſanctifieth, and they which are ſanctified, *are* al of one: wherefore he is not aſhamed to cal them brethren,

12 Saying, * I wil declare thy Name vnto my brethren: in the middes of the Church wil I ſing praiſes to thee. *Pſal.* 22.25.

13 And againe, * I wil put my truſt in him. And againe, * Beholde, here am I, and the children which God hath giuen me. *Pſal.* 18.2. *Iſai.* 8.18.

14 Foraſmuch then as the children are partakers of fleſh & blood, he alſo him ſelfe likewiſe tooke part with thē, that he might deſtroy * through death, him that had the power of death, that is the deuil, *Heſe.* 13.14 *1.Cor.* 15. 55.

15 And that he might deliuer al them, which for feare of death were al their life time subiect to bondage.

16 For he in no sorte tooke on *him* the Angels *nature*, but he tooke on *him* the seede of Abraham.

17 Wherefore in all things it behoued him to be made like vnto his brethren, that he might be mercifull, and a faithfull hie Priest in thinges concerning God, that he might make reconciliation for the sinnes of the people.

18 For in that he suffred, and was tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

CHAP. III.

1 *Now he sheweth how farre inferiour Moses is to Christ, 5. & euen so much as the seruant to the Master: and so he entreateth in certaine exhortations and threatnings taken out of Dauid, 8 against such as either stubbornely resist, 12 or els are very slowe to obey.*

1 THerfore, holy brethren, partakers of the heauenly vocatiō, consider the Apostle and hie Priest of our profession Christ Iesus:

2 Who was faithful to him that hath appointed him, euen as * Moses was in al his house.

Num. 12.7.

3 For this man is counted worthye of more glory then Moses, in as much as he which hath builded the house, hath more honour then the house.

4 For euery house is builded of some man, and he that hath built al things, *is* God.

5 Now Moses verely was faithful in all his house, as a seruant, for a witnes of the things which should be spoken after.

6 But Christ *is* as the Sonne, ouer his owne house, whose house we are, if we holde fast that confidence & that reioycing of that hope vnto the end.

Chap. 4. 7. Psal. 95. 8.

7 Wherefore, as the holy Ghost saith, * To day if ye shal heare his voyce,

8 * Harden not your hearts, as in the prouocation, according to the day of the tentation in the wildernes,

9 Where your fathers tempted me, proued me, and saw my workes fourty yeres long.

10 Wherefore I was grieued with that generation, and said, They erre euer *in their* heart, neither haue they knowen my wayes.

11 Therefore I sware in my wrath, If they shal entre into my

my rest.

12 Take heede, brethren, lest at any time there be in any of you an euil heart, and vnfaithful, to depart away from the liuing God.

13 But exhorte one another daylye, while it is called To day, lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulnes of sinne.

14 For we are made partakers of Christ, if we keepe sure vnto the end that beginning, wherewith we are vpholden,

15 So long as it is said, To day if ye heare his voyce, harden not your hearts, as in the prouocation.

16 For some when they heard, prouoked him to anger: howbeit, not all that came out of Egypt by Moses.

17 But with whome was he displeased fourtie yeres? Was he not displeased with them that sinned, * whose carkeises fel in the wildernes? *Nu.14.37.*

18 And to whom sware he that they should not enter into his rest, but vnto them, that obeyed not?

19 So we see that they could not enter in, because of vnbeliefe.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He ioyneth exhortation with threatning, lest they, euen as their fathers were, be deprived of the rest offred vnto them, 11 but that they endeuour to enter into it. 14 And so he beginneth to intreate of Christes Priesthood.

1 LEt vs feare therefore, lest at any time by forsaking the promes of entring into his rest, any of you shoulde seeme to be depriued.

2 For vnto vs was the Gospel preached as also vnto them: but the worde that they heard, profited not them, because it was not mixed with faith in those that heard it.

3 For we which haue beleeued, do enter into rest, as he said *to the other*, * As I haue sworne in my wrath, If they shal enter into my rest: although the workes were finished from the foundation of the worlde. *Psal.95.11*

4 For he spake in a certaine place of the seuenth day on this wise, * And God did rest the seuenth day from all his workes. *Gen.2.2. deut.5.14*

5 And in this place againe, If they shal enter into my rest.

6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that ſome muſt enter thereinto, and they to whome it was firſt preached, entred not therein for vnbeliefes ſake:

7 Againe he appointed in Dauid a certaine day, by To day, after ſo long a time, ſaying, as it is ſaid, *This day, if ye heare his voyce, harden not your hearts.

*Chap. 3. 7.

‖Meaning, Ioſhua.

8 For if ‖Ieſus had giuen them reſt, then would he not after this haue ſpoken of another day.

9 There remaineth therefore a reſt to the people of God.

10 For he that is entred into his reſt, hath alſo ceaſed from his owne workes, as God *did* from his.

11 Let vs ſtudie therefore to enter into that reſt, leſt any man fal after the ſame enſample of diſobedience.

12 For the word of God *is* liuely, and mightie in operation, and ſharper then any two edged ſworde, & entreth through, euen vnto the diuiding aſunder of the ſoule and the ſpirit, and of the ioyntes, and the marowe, and is a diſcerner of the thoughtes, and the intentes of the heart.

13 Neither is there any creature, which is not manifeſt in his ſight: but all things *are* naked and open vnto his eyes, with whome we haue to do.

14 Seeing then that we haue a great hie Prieſt, which is entred into heauen, *euen* Ieſus the Sonne of God, let vs holde faſt our profeſſion.

15 For we haue not an hie Prieſt, which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities, but was in all things tempted in like ſort *yet* without ſinne.

16 Let vs therefore go boldely vnto the throne of grace, that we may receiue mercy, and finde grace to helpe in time of neede.

CHAP. V.

1 Firſt he ſheweth the duetie of the hie Prieſt: 5 Secondly, that Chriſt is appointed of God to be our high Prieſt, 7 and that he hath fulfilled all things belonging thereunto.

1 FOr euery high Prieſt is taken from among men, & is ordeined for men, in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both giftes and ſacrifices for ſinnes,

2 Which is able ſufficiently to haue compaſſion on the that are ignorant, and that are out of the way, becauſe that he alſo is compaſſed with infirmitie,

3 And

3 And for the ſames ſake he is bound to offer for ſinnes, as well for his owne part, as for the peoples.
4 * And no man taketh this honour vnto him ſelf, but he that is called of God, as *was* Aaron. *1. Chron. 13 10. & 23. 13.*
5 So likewiſe Chriſt tooke not to him ſelf this honour, to be made the hie Prieſt, but he that ſaid vnto him, * Thou art my Sonne, this day begate I thee, *gaue it him.* *Chap. 1. 5. pſal. 2. 7.*
6 As he alſo in another place ſpeaketh, * Thou art a Prieſt for euer, after the order of Melchi-ſedec. *Chap. 7. 17. pſal. 110. 4.*
7 Who in the daies of his fleſh did offer vp praiers and ſupplications, with ſtrong crying and teares vnto him, that was able to ſaue him from death, & was alſo heard in that which he feared.
8 And though he were the Sonne, yet learned he obedience, by the things which he ſuffered.
9 And being conſecrate, was made the authour of eternall ſaluation vnto all them that obey him:
10 And is called of God an hie Prieſt after the order of Melchi-ſedec.
11 Of whome we haue manie thinges to ſay, which are hard to be vttered, becauſe ye are dull of hearing.
12 For when as concerning the time ye ought to be teachers, yet haue ye neede againe that we teache you what *are* the firſt principles of the word of God: and are become ſuch as haue neede of milke, and not of ſtrong meat.
13 For euerie one that vſeth milke, is inexpert in the word of righteouſnes: for he is a babe.
14 But ſtrong meat belongeth to them that are of age, which through long cuſtome haue their wittes exerciſed, to diſcerne both good and euil.

CHAP. VI.

1 He briefely toucheth the childiſh ſlouthfulnes of the Hebrues, 4 and terrifieth them with ſeuere threatnings: 7 he ſtirreth them vp to endeuour in time to go forward: 9 he hopeth well of them. 13 He alleageth Abrahams example: 17 and compareth faith that taketh holde on the word, 19 vnto an Anchor.

1 THerefore, leauing the doctrine of the beginning of Chriſt, let vs be led forward vnto perfection, not laying againe the foundation of repentance from dead workes, and of faith toward God,

2 Of the doctrine of baptiſmes, and laying on of hands, and of the reſurrection from the dead, and of eternall iudgement.

3 And this wil we do if God permit.

Chap.10.26 mat.12.45. 2.pet.2.20. 4 * For it is impoſsible that they, which were once lightened, and haue taſted of the heauenly giſte, and were made partakers of the holie Ghoſt,

5 And haue taſted of the good word of God, and of the powers of the world to come,

6 If they fall away, ſhould be renued againe by repentance: ſeeing they crucifie againe to themſelues the Sonne of God, and make a mocke of him.

7 For the earth which drinketh in the raine that cometh oft vpon it, and bringeth forth herbes meete for them by whome it is dreſſed, receiueth bleſsing of God.

8 But that which beareth thornes & briars, *is* reproued, and is neere vnto curſing, whoſe end *is* to be burned.

9 But beloued, we haue perſuaded our ſelues better things of you, and ſuch as accompanie ſaluation, though we thus ſpeake.

10 For God *is* not vnrighteous, that he ſhould forget your worke, and labour of loue, which ye ſhewed towarde his Name, in that ye haue miniſtred vnto the Saintes, & *yet* miniſter.

11 And we deſire that euerie one of you ſhew the ſame diligence, to the full aſſurance of hope vnto the end,

12 That ye be not ſlouthful, but followers of them, which through faith and patience, inherite the promiſes.

13 For when God made the promes to Abraham, becauſe he had no greater to ſweare by, he ſware by him ſelfe,

Gen.12.2. and 17.4. and 22.17. 14 Saying, * Surely I wil aboundantly bleſſe thee & multiplie thee marueilouſly.

15 And ſo after that he had taried patiently, he enioyed the promes.

16 For men verely ſweare by him that is greater *then themſelues*, and an othe for *confirmation* is among them an end of all ſtriſe.

17 So God willing more aboundantly to ſhewe vnto the heires of promes the ſtablenes of his counſell, bounde him ſelfe by an othe,

18 That by two immutable things, wherein it *is* vnpoſsible that God ſhould lye, we might haue ſtrong conſolatio-

lation, which haue our refuge to lay holde vpon that hope that is set before vs,

19 Which *hope we* haue, as an ancre of the soule, both sure and stedfast, and it entreth into that which is within the vaile,

20 Whither the forerunner is for vs entred in, *euen* Iesus that is made an hie Priest for euer after the order of Melchi-sedec.

CHAP. VII.

1 *He hath hitherto stirred them vp, to marke diligently what things are to be considered in Melchi-sedec,* 15 *wherein he is like vnto Christ.* 20 *Wherefore the Law should giue place to the Gospel.*

1 FOr this Melchi-sedec * *was* King of Salem, the Priest of the most hie God, who met Abraham, as he returned from the slaughter of the Kings, and blessed him: *Gen.14.18.*

2 To whome also Abraham gaue the tithe of all things: who first is by interpretation King of righteousnes: after that, *he is* also King of Salem, that is, King of peace,

3 Without father, without mother, without kinred, and hath neither beginning of *his* daies, neither end of life: but is likened vnto the Sonne of God, and continueth a Priest for euer.

4 Now consider how great this man *was*, vnto whome euen the Patriarke Abraham gaue the tithe of the spoiles.

5 For verely they which are the children of Leui, which receiue the office of the Priesthode, haue a * commandement to take, according to the Lawe, tithes of the people (that is, of their brethren) though they came out of the loynes of Abraham. *Num.18.21*

6 But he whose kinred is not counted among them, receiued tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises.

7 And without all contradiction the lesse is blessed of the greater.

8 And here men that die, receiue tithes: but there he *receiueth them*, of whome it is witnessed, that he liueth.

9 And to say as the thing is, Leui also which receiueth tithes, payed tithes in Abraham.

10 For he was yet in the loynes of his father *Abraham*, when

when Melchi-ſedec met him.

11 If therefore perfection had bene by the Prieſthode of the Leuites(for vnder it the Law was eſtabliſhed to the people) what needed it furthermore, that another Prieſt ſhould riſe after the order of Melchi-ſedec, and not to be called after the order of Aaron?

12 For if the Prieſthode be changed, then of neceſsitie muſt there be a change of the Lawe.

13 For he of whome theſe things are ſpoken, perteineth vnto another tribe, wherof no man ſerued at the altar.

14 For it is euident, that our Lord ſprung out of Iuda, concerning the which tribe Moſes ſpake nothing, touching the Prieſthode.

15 And it is yet a more euident thing, becauſe that after the ſimilitude of Melchi-ſedec, there is riſen vp another Prieſt,

16 Which is not made *Prieſt* after the Lawe of the carnal commandement, but after the power of the endleſſe life.

Chap.5.6. *Pſal.110.4.* 17 For he teſtifieth *thus*, * Thou art a Prieſt for euer, after the order of Melchi-ſedec.

18 For the commandement that went afore, is diſanulled, becauſe of the weakenes thereof, & vnprofitablenes.

19 For the Lawe made nothing perfite, but the bringing in of a better hope *made perfite*, whereby we draw nere vnto God.

20 And for as much as it is not without an othe(for theſe are made Prieſts without an othe:

21 But this is *made* with an othe by him that ſaid vnto him, *Pſal.110.4* * The Lord hath ſworne, and wil not repent, Thou art a Prieſt for euer, after the order of Melchi-ſedec)

22 By ſo much is Ieſus made a ſuretie of a better Teſtament.

23 And among them manie were made Prieſts, becauſe they were not ſuffered to endure, by the reaſon of death.

24 But this man, becauſe he endureth euer, hath a Prieſthode which cannot paſſe from one to another.

25 Wherefore, he is able alſo perfectly to ſaue them that come vnto God by him, ſeeing he euer liueth, to make interceſsion for them.

26 For ſuch an hie Prieſt it became vs to haue, *which is* holie, harmeles, vndefiled, ſeparate from ſinners, and made

made hier then the heauens:

27 Which needeth not daily as those hie Priests to offer vp sacrifice, * first for his owne sinnes, and then for the peoples: for that did he once, when he offred vp himselfe. *Leui.16.12*

28 For the Lawe maketh men hie Priests, which haue infirmitie: but the word of the othe that was since the Lawe, *maketh* the Sonne, who is consecrated for euermore.

CHAP. VIII.

1 To proue more certainly that the ceremonies of the Law are abrogated, 5 he sheweth that they were appointed to serue the heauenlie paterne. 8 He bringeth in the place of Ieremie, 15 to proue the amendement of the olde couenant.

1 NOw of the things which we haue spoken, *this is* the summe, that we haue such an hie Priest, that sitteth at the right hād of the throne of the Maiestie in heauēs,

2 And is a minister of the Sanctuarie, and of that true Tabernacle which the Lord pight, and not man,

3 For euerie hie Priest is ordeined to offer both giftes & sacrifices: wherefore it was of necessitie, that this man should haue somewhat also to offer.

4 For he were not a Priest, if he were on the earth, seing there are Priests that according to the Law offer gifts,

5 Who serue vnto the paterne and shadowe of heauenly things, as Moses was warned by God, when he was about to finish the Tabernacle. * See, said he, that thou make all things according to the paterne, shewed to thee in the mount. *Exo.25.40. Act.7.44.*

6 But now *our hie Priest* hath obteined a more excellent office, in asmuch as he is the Mediatour of a better Testament, which is established vpon better promises.

7 For if that first *Testament* had bene vnblameable, no place should haue bene sought for the second.

8 For in rebuking them he saith, * Behold, the daies wil come, saith the Lord, when I shal make with the house of Israel, and with the house of Iuda a new Testament: *Chap.10.16 Iere.31.31, 32,33,34.*

9 Not like the Testamēt that I made with their fathers, in the day that I tooke them by the hand, to leade them out of the land of Egypt: for they continued not in my Testament, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord. *Rom.11.27.*

10 For this is the Testament that I will make with the

house of Israel, After those daies, saith the Lord, I wil put my Lawes in their minde, and in their heart I wil write them, & I wilbe their God, & they shalbe my people,

11 And they shall not teach euerie man his neighbour & euerie man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall knowe me, from the least of them to the greatest of them.

12 For I wilbe merciful to their vnrighteousnes, & I will remember their sinnes and their iniquities no more.

13 In that he saith a new *Testament*, he hath abrogate the olde: now that which is disannulled and waxed olde, is readie to vanish away.

CHAP. IX.

2 Comparing the firme of the Tabernacle, 10 and the ceremonies of the Law, 11 vnto the trueth set out in Christ, 15 he concludeth that now there is no more neede of an other Priest, 24 because Christ himselfe hath fulfilled these duties vnder the new couenant.

1 THen the first Testament had also ordinances of religion, and a worldly Sanctuarie.

2 For the first Tabernacle was made, wherein was the candelsticke, and the table, and the shewbread, which *Tabernacle* is called the Holie places.

3 And after the second vaile *was* the Tabernacle, which is called the Holiest of all,

4 Which had the golden censer, & the Arke of the Testament ouerlaid round about with gold, wherein the golden pot which had Manna, *was*, & * Aarons rod that had budded, and the * tables of the Testament.

Num.17.10.

5 * And ouer the Arke were the glorious Cherubims, shadowing the mercie seate: of which things we will not now speake particularly.

1.King.8.9. 2.chro.5.10 Exo.25.22.

6 Nowe when these thinges were thus ordeined, the Priests went alwaies into the first Tabernacle, and accomplished the seruice.

7 But into the second went the * hie Priest alone, once euerie yere, not without blood which he offred for him selfe, and for the ignorances of the people.

Exo.30.10. Leuit.16.2.

8 Whereby the holie Ghost this signified, that the way into the Holiest of all was not yet opened, while as yet the first Tabernacle was standing,

9 Which was a figure for that present time, wherein

were offred giftes & ſacrifices that could not make holy, concerning the conſcience, him that did the ſeruice,
10 Which onely ſtoode in meates and drinkes, & diuers waſhings, and carnal rites, which were inioyned, vntill the time of reformation.
11 But Chriſt being come an hie Prieſt of good things to come, by a greater and a more perfect Tabernacle, not made with hands, that is, not of this building,
12 Neither by the blood of goates and calues: but by his owne blood entred he in once vnto the holy place, and obteined eternal redemption *for vs*.
13 * For if the blood of bulles and of goates, & the aſhes of an heifer, ſprinkling them that are vncleane, ſanctifieth as touching the purifying of the fleſh, *Leui.16.14 num.19.4.*
14 How much more ſhall the * blood of Chriſt which through the eternal Spirit offred him ſelfe without fault to God, * purge your conſcience from dead workes, to ſerue the liuing God? *1.Pet.1.19 1.iohn.1.7. reuel.1.5. Luke.1.74.*
15 And for this cauſe is he the Mediatour of the newe Teſtament, that through * death which was for the redemption of the tranſgreſſions *that were* in the former Teſtament, they which were called, might receiue the promiſe of eternal inheritance. *Rom.5.6. 1.pet.3.18.*
16 For where a Teſtament *is*, there muſt be the death of him that made the Teſtament.
17 * For the Teſtament is confirmed when men are dead: for it is yet of no force as long as he that made it, is aliue. *Galat.3.15*
18 Wherefore neither was the firſt ordeined without blood.
19 For when Moſes had ſpoken euery precept to the people, according to the Law, he tooke the blood of calues and of goates, with water and purple wolle & hyſſope, & ſprinkled both the booke, and all the people,
20 * Saying, This is the blood of the Teſtament, which God hath appointed vnto you. *Exod.24.8.*
21 Moreouer, he ſprinkled likewiſe the Tabernacle with blood alſo, and all the miniſtring veſſels.
22 And almoſt all thinges are by the Lawe purged with blood, and without sheading of blood is no remiſſion.
23 It was then neceſſarie, that the ſimilitudes of heauenlie thinges ſhould be purified with ſuch things: but the heauenly

heauenly things them ſelues *are purified* with better ſacrifices then are theſe.

24 For Chriſt is not entred into the holie places that are made with handes, which are ſimilitudes of the true *Sanctuarie*: but *is entred* into verie heauen, to appeare now in the ſight of God for vs.

25 Not that he ſhoulde offer him ſelfe often, as the hie Prieſt entred into the Holy place euery yere with other blood,

26 (For then muſt he haue often ſuffred ſince the foundation of the world) but now in the end of the world hath he bene made manifeſt, once to put away ſinne by the ſacrifice of him ſelfe.

27 And as it is appointed vnto men that they ſhall once die, and after that *commeth* the iudgement:

Rom.5.8. 1.Pet.3.18. 28 So * Chriſt was once offred to take away the ſinnes of manie, & vnto them that looke for him, ſhal he appeare the ſecond time without ſinne vnto ſaluation.

CHAP. X.

1 He proueth that the ſacrifices of the Lawe were vnperfit, 2 becauſe they were yerely renued: 5 But that the ſacrifice of Chriſt is one, and perpetual 6 he proueth by Dauids teſtimonie: 19 Then he addeth an exhortation, 29 and ſeuerely threatneth them that reiect the grace of Chriſt. 36 In the end he praiſeth patience, 38 that commeth of faith.

1 FOr the Lawe hauing the ſhadowe of good things to come, and not the verie image of the things, can neuer with thoſe ſacrifices, which they offer yere by yere continually, ſanctifie the commers thereunto.

2 For would they not then haue ceaſed to haue bene offred, becauſe that the offerers once purged, ſhould haue had no more conſcience of ſinnes?

3 But in thoſe *ſacrifices* there *is* a remembrance againe of ſinnes euerie yere,

4 For it is vnpoſſible that the blood of bulles & goates ſhould take away ſinnes

5 Wherefore when he commeth into the world, he ſaith, *Pſal.40.7.* * Sacrifice and offring thou wouldeſt not: but a bodie haſt thou ordeined me.

6 In burnt offrings, and ſinne offrings thou haſt had no pleaſure.

7 Then I ſaid, Lo, I come (In the beginning of the booke

it is

it is written of me) that I should do thy wil, O God.
8 Aboue, when he said, Sacrifice & offring, and burnt offrings, and sinne offrings thou wouldest not haue, neither hadst pleasure *therein* (which are offred by the Lawe)
9 Then said he, Lo, I come to do thy wil, O God, he taketh away the first, that he may stablish the second.
10 By the which wil we are sanctified, *euen* by the offring of the bodie of Iesus Christ once *made*.
11 And euerie Priest standeth daily ministring, and oft times offreth one maner of offring, which can neuer take away sinnes:
12 But this man after he had offred one sacrifice for sinnes, * sitteth for euer at the right hand of God, *Chap. 1. 13.*
13 And from hence forth tarieth, * til his enemies be made his footestoole. *psal. 110. 1. 1. corinth. 15. 25.*
14 For with one offring hath he consecrated for euer thē that are sanctified. *Chap. 2. 11.*
15 For the holie Ghost also beareth vs record. for after that he had said before,
16 * This *is* the Testament that I will make vnto them after those daies, saith the Lord, I wil put my Lawes in their heart, and in their mindes I wil write them. *Chap. 8. 8. iere. 31. 33. rom. 11. 27.*
17 And their sinnes and iniquities will I remember no more.
18 Now where remission of these thinges *is*, there *is* no more offring for sinne.
19 Seeing therefore, brethren, that by the blood of Iesus we may be bolde to enter into the Holy place,
20 By the new and liuing way, which he hath prepared for vs, through the vaile, that *is*, his flesh:
21 *And seeing we haue* an hie Priest, *which is* ouer the house of God,
22 Let vs drawe neere with a true heart in assurance of faith, our hearts being pure from an euil conscience,
23 And washed in our bodies with pure water, let vs keepe the profession of our hope, without wauering, (for *he is* faithfull that promised)
24 And let vs cōsider one another, to prouoke vnto loue, and to good workes,
25 Not forsaking the felowship that we haue among our selues, as the maner of some is: but let vs exhort *one another*, and that so much the more, because ye see that

the day draweth neere.

Chap.6.4. 26 * For if we ſinne willingly after that we haue receiued and acknowledged that trueth, there remaineth no more ſacrifice for ſinnes,

27 But a feareful looking for of iudgement, and violent fire, which ſhall deuoure the aduerſaries.

28 He that deſpiſeth Moſes lawe, dieth without mercie

Deut.19.15 * vnder two, or three witneſſes.

Iſai.18.16. 29 Of how much ſorer puniſhment ſuppoſe ye ſhall he be

iohn.8.17. worthie, which treadeth vnder foote the Sonne of God,

2.cor.13.1. and counteth the blood of the Teſtament as an vnholie thing, wherewith he was ſanctified, and doth deſpite the Spirit of grace?

Deut.32.35 30 For we know him that hath ſaid, *Vengeance belongeth*

rom.12.19. *vnto me: I wil recompence*, ſaith the Lord. And againe, The Lord ſhall iudge his people.

31 It is a feareful thing to fall into the hands of the liuing God.

32 Now call to remembrance the daies that are paſſed, in the which, after ye had receiued light, ye endured a great fight in afflictions,

33 Partly while ye were made a gazing ſtocke both by reproches & afflictions, & partly while ye became companions of them which were ſo toſſed to and fro.

34 For both ye ſorowed with me for my bonds, & ſuffered with ioye the ſpoyling of your goods, knowing in your ſelues how that ye haue in heauen a better, and an enduring ſubſtance.

35 Caſt not away therefore your confidence which hath great recompence of reward.

36 For ye haue neede of patience, that after ye haue done the wil of God, ye might receiue the promes.

37 For yet a verie litle while, and he that ſhall come, will come, and will not tarie.

Habak.2.4. 38 * Now the iuſt ſhal liue by faith: but if *anie* withdraw

rom.1.17. him ſelfe, my ſoule ſhall haue no pleaſure in him.

Galat.3.11. 39 But we are not they which withdrawe our ſelues vnto perdition, but *follow* faith vnto the conſeruation of the ſoule.

CHAP. XI.

1 *He declareth in the whole chapter, that the Fathers, which from the beginning of the world, were approued of God, attained*

ioined saluation no other way then by faith, that the Iewes may knowe, that by the same only, they are knit vnto the Fathers in an holie vnion.

1 NOw faith is the ground of things, which are hoped for, and the euidence of things which are not seene.
2 For by it *our* elders were well reported of.
3 *Through faith we vnderstand that the worlde was ordeined by the word of God, so that the things which we see, are not made of things, which did appeare.* *Gen.1.1. Iohn.1.10.*
4 By faith Abel * offred vnto God a greater sacrifice then Cain, by * the which he obtained witnes that he was righteous, God testifying of his giftes: by the which *faith* also be being dead, yet speaketh. *Gen.4.4. Mat.23.35.*
5 By faith was * Enoch translated, that he should not see death: neither was he found: for God had translated him: for before he was translated, he was reported of, that he had pleased God. *Gen.5.24.*
6 But without faith it is vnpossible to please *him*: for he that commeth to God, must beleeue that *God* is, & that he is a rewarder of them that seeke him.
7 By faith * Noe being warned of God of the thinges which were as yet not seene, moued with reuerēce, prepared the Arke to the sauing of his housholde, through the which *Arke* he condemned the world, & was made heire of the righteousnes, which is by faith. *Gene.6.13.*
8 By faith * Abraham, when he was called, obeyed *God*, to go out into a place, which he shoulde afterward receiue for inheritance, and he went out, not knowing whither he went. *Gen.12.4.*
9 By faith he abode in the land of promes, as in a strange countrey, as one that dwelt in tents with Isaac & Iacob heires with him of the same promes.
10 For he looked for a citie hauing a foundation, whose builder and maker *is* God.
11 Through faith * Sara also receiued strength to cōceiue seede, & was deliuered of a child whē she was past age, because she iudged him faithful which had promised. *Gen.17.19. and 21.2.*
12 And therefore sprang there of one, euen of one which was dead, *so manie* as the starres of the skie *in* multitude, & as the sād of the sea shore which *is* innumerable.
13 Al these died in faith, and receiued not the promises, but sawe them a farre of, & beleeued *them*, and receiued

ned *them* thankefully, and confeſſed that they were
ſtrangers and pilgrems on the earth.

14 For they that ſay ſuch things, declare plainely that
they ſeeke a countrey.

15 And if they had bene mindfull of that *countrey*, from
whence they came out, they had leaſure to haue return-
ned.

16 But now they deſire a better, that is an heauenlie:
wherefore God is not aſhamed of them to be called
their God: for he hath prepared for them a citie.

Gen.22.10. 17 By fayth * Abraham offred vp Iſaac, when he was tri-
ed, and he that had receiued the promiſes, offred his
onely begotten ſonne.

Gen.21.12. 18 (To whome it was ſaid, * In Iſaac ſhall thy ſeede be
rom.9.7. called.)

19 For he conſidered that God was able to raiſe *him vp*
euen from the dead: from whence he receiued *him* alſo
after a ſort.

Gen.27.28, 20 By faith * Iſaac bleſſed Iacob and Eſau, concerning
39. things to come.

Gen.48.15. 21 By faith * Iacob when he was a dying, bleſſed both the
Gen.47.31. ſonnes of Ioſeph, and * *leaning* on the end of his ſtaffe,
worſhipped *God*.

Gen.50.25. 22 By faith * Ioſeph when he died, made mention of the
departing of the children of Iſrael, and gaue comman-
dement of his bones.

Exod.2.2, 23 * By faith Moſes when he was borne, was hid three
act.7.20. moneths of his parents, becauſe they ſawe he was a pro-
Exod.1.16. per childe, neither feared they the kinges * comman-
dement.

Exod.2.11. 24 By faith * Moſes when he was come to age, refuſed to
be called the ſonne of Pharaos daughter,

25 And choſe rather to ſuffer aduerſitie with the people
of God, thē to enioy the pleaſures of ſinnes for a ſeaſon,

26 Eſteeming the rebuke of Chriſt greater riches than
the treaſures of Egypt: for he had reſpect vnto the re-
compence of the reward.

27 By faith he forſooke Egypt, and feared not the fierce-
nes of the King: for he endured, as he that ſawe him
which is inuiſible.

Exo.12.22. 28 Through faith he ordeined the * Paſſeouer and the
effuſion of blood, leaſt he that deſtroyed the firſt borne,
ſhould

shonld touch them.

29 By faith they * passed through the red sea as by drie land, which when the Egyptians had assaied to do, they were swallowed vp. *Exo.14.22.*

30 By faith the * walles of Iericho fell downe after they were compassed about seuen daies. *Iosh.6.20.*

31 By faith the harlot * Rahab perished not with them which obeyed not, when * she had receiued the spies peaceably. *Iosh.6.23.* *Iosh.2.1.*

32 And what shall I more say? for the time would be to short for me to tel of * Gedeon, of * Barac & of * Sampson, and of * Iephte, also of Dauid, and Samuel, and of the Prophets: *Iudg.6.11.* *Iudg.4.6.* *Iudg.13.24.*

33 Which through faith subdued kingdomes, wrought righteousnes, obteined the promises, stopped the mouthes of lyons, *Iudg.11.1.* *and* 12.7.

34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, of weake were made strong, waxed valiant in battel, turned to flight the armies of the aliants.

35 The women receiued their dead raised to life: other also were racked, and would not be deliuered, that they might receiue a better resurrection.

36 And others haue bene tried by mockings and scourgings, yea, moreouer by bondes and prisonment.

37 They were stoned, they were hewen asunder, they were tempted, they were slaine with the sword, they wandred vp & downe in sheepes skinnes, and in goates skinnes, being destitute, afflicted, *and* tormented:

38 Whome the worlde was not worthie of: they wandred in wildernesses and mountaines, and dennes, and caues of the earth.

39 And these all through faith obteined good report, and receiued not the promes,

40 God prouiding a better thing for vs, that they without vs should not be made perfite.

CHAP. XII.

1 He doeth not onely by the examples of the Fathers before recited, exhort them to patience and constancie, 3 but also by the example of Christ. 11 That the chastnings of God can not be rightly iudged by the outward sense of our flesh. *Rom.6.4.* *col.3.3.*

1 WHerefore, * let vs also, seeing that we are compassed with so great a cloude of witnesses, cast away euc- *ephe.4.24.* *1.pet.2.1.*

rie thing that preſſeth downe, and the ſinne that hangeth ſo faſt on: let vs runne with patiẽce the race that is ſet before vs,

2 Looking vnto Ieſus the authour and finiſher of our faith, who for the ioye that was ſet before him, endured the croſſe, & deſpiſed the ſhame, and is ſet at the right hand of the throne of God.

3 Conſider therefore him that endured ſuch ſpeaking againſt of ſinners, leſt ye ſhould be wearied and faint in your mindes.

4 Ye haue not yet reſiſted vnto blood, ſtriuing againſt ſinne.

5 And ye haue forgotten the conſolatiõ, which ſpeaketh vnto you as vnto children, * My ſonne, deſpiſe not the chaſtening of the Lord, neither faint when thou art rebuked of him. *Prou.3.11.*

6 For whome the Lord loueth, he chaſteneth: and he ſcourgeth euerie ſonne that he receiueth:

7 If ye endure chaſtening, God offreth him ſelf vnto you as vnto ſonnes: for what ſonne is it whome the father chaſteneth not?

8 If therefore ye be without correction, whereof al are partakers, then are ye baſtardes, and not ſonnes.

9 Moreouer we haue had the fathers of our bodies which corrected vs, & we gaue them reuerence: ſhould we not much rather be in ſubiection vnto the Father of ſpirits, that we might liue?

10 For they verely for a fewe daies chaſtened vs after their owne pleaſure: but he *chaſteneth vs* for our profite, that we might be partakers of his holines.

11 Now no chaſtiſing for the preſent ſeemeth to be ioyous, but grieuous: but afterward, it bringeth the quiet fruite of righteouſnes, vnto them which are thereby exerciſed.

12 Wherefore lift vp *your* hands which hang downe, and *your* weake knees,

13 And make ſtraight ſteppes vnto your feete, leſt that which is halting, be turned out of the way, but let *it* rather be healed.

14 * Followe peace with al men, and holines, without the which no man ſhall ſee the Lord. *Rom.12.18*

15 Take heede, that no man fall away from the grace of God:

God: let no roote of bitternes spring vp and trouble you, lest thereby manie be defiled.

16 Let there be no fornicator, or prophane person as * Esau, which for one portion of meat sold his birth right. *Gen.25.33*

17 *For ye know how that afterward also when he would haue inherited the blessing, he was reiected: for he found no place to repentance, though he sought that *blessing* with teares. *Gen.27.38.*

18 For ye are not come vnto the * mount that might be touched, nor vnto burning fire, nor to blackenes and darkenes, and tempest, *Exo.19.16.*

19 Neither vnto the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of wordes, which they that heard it, excused them selues, * that the word should not be spoken to them any more, *Exo.20.19.*

20 (For they were not able to abide that which was commanded, * Yea, though a beast touch the mountaine, it shalbe stoned, or thrust thorowe with a dart: *Exo.19.12*

21 And so terrible was the sight which appeared, that Moses said, I feare and quake.)

22 But ye are come vnto the mount Sion, and to the citie of the liuing God, the celestial Hierusalem, and to the companie of innumerable Angels,

23 And to the assemblie & congregation of the first borne, which are written in heauen, & to God the iudge of all, and to the spirits of iust and perfite men,

24 And to Iesus the Mediatour of the new Testament, & to the blood of sprinkeling that speaketh better thinges then that of Abel.

25 See that ye despise not him that speaketh: for if they escaped not which refused him, that spake on earth: much more shall we *not escape*, if we turne away from him, that *speaketh* from heauen.

26 Whose voice then shooke the earth, and now hath declared, saying, * Yet once more wil I shake, not the earth onely, but also heauen. *Aggeus.2.7*

27 And this *word*, Yet once more, signifieth the remouing of those thinges, which are shaken, as of *those* thinges which are made *with handes*, that the thinges which are not shaken, may remaine.

28 Wherfore seeing we receiue a kingdome, which cannot be shaken, let vs haue grace whereby we may so serue God, that we may please him with reuerence & feare.

Deut.4.24. 29 For * euen our God *is* a conſuming fire.

CHAP. XIII.

1 *He giueth good leſſons not onely for maners,* 2 *but alſo for doctrine.*

Rom.12.10 1 LEt * brotherly loue continue.

1.Pet.4.9. 2 * Be not forgetfull to intertaine ſtrangers: for there-
Gen.18.3. by ſome haue * receiued Angels into their houſes vn-
and 19.3. wares.

3 Remember them that are in bondes, as though ye were bound with them: and them that are in affliction, as if ye were alſo *afflicted* in the bodie.

4 Marriage *is* honorable among al, & the bed vndefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God wil iudge.

5 Let your conuerſation be without couetouſnes, and be content with thoſe things that ye haue, for he hath ſaid,

Ioſh.1.5. 6 * I wil not faile thee, neither forſake thee:

Pſal.118.6 7 So that we may boldely ſay, * The Lord *is* my helper, neither wil I feare what man can do vnto me.

8 Remember them which haue the ouerſight of you, which haue declared vnto you the word of God: whoſe faith followe, conſidering what hath bene the ende of their conuerſation. Ieſus Chriſt yeſter day, and to day, the ſame alſo *is* for euer.

9 Be not caried about with diuers & ſtrange doctrines: for it is a good thing that the heart be ſtabliſhed with grace, *and* not with meates, which haue not profited thé that haue bene occupied therein.

10 We haue an altar whereof they haue no authoritie to eat which ſerue in the Tabernacle.

Leuit.4.11. 11 * For the bodies of thoſe beaſtes whoſe blood is
and 6.30. brought into the Holie place by the hie Prieſt for ſinne,
and 16.27. are burnt without the campe.

12 Therefore euen Ieſus, that he might ſanctifie the people with his owne blood, ſuffred without the gate.

13 Let vs go forth to him therfore out of the campe, bearing his reproche.

Mich.2.10. 14 * For here haue we no continuing citie: but we ſeeke one to come.

15 Let vs therefore by him offer the ſacrifice of praiſe alwaies to God, that is, the * fruite of the lippes, which confeſſe his Name.

Hoſ.14.13

16 To doe good, and to diſtribute forget not: for with

ſuch

such sacrifices God is pleased.

17 Obey them that haue the ouersight of you, and submit your selues: for they watch for your soules, as they that must giue accoumpts, that they may do it with ioye, and not with griefe: for that is vnprofitable for you.

18 Pray for vs: for we are assured that we haue a good conscience in al things, desiring to liue honestly.

19 And I desire you somewhat the more earnestly, that ye so do, that I may be restored to you more quickely.

20 The God of peace that brought againe from the dead our Lorde Iesus, the great shepheard of the sheepe, through the blood of the euerlasting Couenant,

21 Make you perfect in al good workes, to doe his will, working in you that which is pleasaunt in his sight through Iesus Christ, to whome *be* praise for euer and euer, Amen.

22 I beseeche you also, brethren, suffer the words of exhortation: for I haue written vnto you in fewe wordes.

23 Know that our brother Timotheus is deliuered, with whome (if he come shortly) I wil see you.

24 Salute al them that haue the ouersight of you, and all the Saintes. They of Italie salute you.

25 Grace *be* with you all, Amen.

¶ Written to the Hebrewes from Italie, *and sent* by Timotheus.

THE GENERALL EPISTLE OF IAMES.

CHAP. I.

1 *He entreateth of patience,* 6 *of faith,* 10 *and of lowlines of minde in rich men.* 13 *That tentations come not of God for our euill,* 17 *because he is the authour of al goodnes.* 21 *In what maner the word of life must be receiued.*

1 IAmes a seruant of God, and of the Lord Iesus CHRIST, to the twelue Tribes, which are scattred abroad, salutation.

2 My brethren, count it exceeding ioy, when ye fal into diuers tentations,

3 * Knowinge that the trying of your faith bringeth forth patience. *Rom. 5. 3.*

4 And let patience haue *her* perfect worke, that ye maye

be

be perfect and entier, lacking nothing.

5 If any of you lacke wisdome, let him aske of God, which giueth to all men liberally, and reprocheth no man, and it shalbe giuen him.

Mat.7.7. mar.11.24. luk.11.9. 6 * But let him aske in faith, and waner not: for he that wauereth, is like a waue of the sea, tost of the winde, and caryed away.

iohn.14.13. & 16.23. 7 Neither let that man thinke that he shall receiue any thing of the Lord.

8 A double minded man is vnstable in all his wayes.

9 Let the brother of lowe degree reioyce in that he is exalted:

10 Againe he that is rich, in that he is made lowe: for as *Isai.40.6.* the flower of the grasse, shal he * vanish away.

1.pet.1.24. 11 For *as when* the sunne riseth with heat, then the grasse withereth, and his flower falleth away, and the goodly shape of it perisheth: euen so shall the rich man wither away *in all* his wayes.

Iob.5.17. 12 * Blessed *is* the man, that endureth tentation: for when he is tryed, he shall receiue the crowne of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that loue him.

13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God can not be tempted with euill, neither tempteth he any man.

14 But euery man is tempted, when he is drawen away by his owne concupiscence, and is entised.

15 Then when lust hath conceiued, it bringeth forth sinne, and sinne when it is finished, bringeth forth death.

16 Erre not, my deare brethren.

17 Euery good giuing, and euery perfect gift is from aboue, and commeth downe from the Father of lightes with whome is no variablenes, neither shadowe of turning.

18 Of his owne wil begate he vs with the word of trueth that we should be as the first fruites of his creatures.

Pro.17.27. 19 Wherefore my deare brethren, * let euery man be swift to heare, slowe to speake, *and* slowe to wrath.

20 For the wrath of man doeth not accomplish the righteousnes of God.

21 Wherefore laye apart al filthines, & superfluitie of malicionsnes, *and* receiue with meekenes the word that is graffed *in you*, which *is* able to saue your soules.

22 * And

22 * And be ye doers of the word, and not hearers onely, deceiuing your owne selues. *Mat.7. 21. rom.2.13.*

23 For if any heare the word, & doe it not, he is like vnto a man that beholdeth his natural face in a glasse.

24 For when he hath considered himselfe, he goeth his way, and forgetteth immediatly what maner of one he was.

25 But who so looketh in the perfect Law of libertie, and continueth *therein*, he not being a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the worke, shalbe blessed in his deede.

26 If any man among you seemeth religious, and refraineth not his tongue, but deceiueth his owne heart, this mans religion is vaine,

27 Pure religion and vndefiled before God, euen the Father, is this, to visite the fatherles, and widowes in their aduersitie, *and* to keepe him selfe vnspotted of the world.

CHAP. II.

1 *He saith, that to haue respect of persones is not agreeable to Christian faith,* 14 *which to professe in wordes is not enough, vnlesse* 15 *we shew it also in deedes of mercy and charitie,* 21 *after the example of Abraham.*

1 MY brethren, haue not the faith of our glorious Lord Iesus Christ * in respect of persones. *Leu.19.15. deut.1.17. and 16.19. pro.24.23.*

2 For if there come into your company a man with a gold ring, and in goodly apparel, & there come in also a poore man in vile raiment,

3 And ye haue a respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say vnto him, Sit thou here in a goodly place, & say vnto the poore, Stand thou there, or sit here vnder my footestoole,

4 Are ye not partiall in your selues, and are become iudges of euil thoughtes?

5 Hearken my beloued brethren, hath not God chosen the poore of this worlde, *that they should be* rich in faith, and heires of the kingdome which he promised to them that loue him?

6 But ye haue despised the poore. Doe not the rich oppresse you by tyrannie, and do not they draw you before the iudgement seates?

7 Do not they blaspheme the worthy Name after which ye be named?

8 But

8 But if ye fulfill the royall Law, according to the Scripture, *which saith*: Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe, ye do well.

9 But if ye regarde the persones, ye commit sinne, & are rebuked of the Law, as transgressours.

10 For whosoeuer shal keepe the whole Law, *and* yet faileth in one *point*, he is guiltie of all.

11 For he that said, Thou shalt not commit adulterie, said also, Thou shalt not kill. Now though thou doest not adulterie, yet if thou killest, thou art a transgressour of the Law.

12 So speake ye, and so do, as they that shalbe iudged by the Lawe of libertie.

13 For there shal be condemnation mercilesse to him that sheweth not mercy, & mercy reioyceth against condemnation.

14 What auaileth it, my brethren, though a man saith he hath faith, when he hath no workes? can that faith saue him?

15 For if a brother or a sister be naked and destitute of dayly foode,

16 And one of you say vnto them, Depart in peace: warme your selues, and fill your bellies: notwithstanding ye giue them not those thinges which are needefull to the body, what helpeth it?

17 Euen so the faith, if it haue no works, is dead in it self.

18 But some man might say, Thou hast the faith, and I haue workes: shew me thy faith out of thy workes, and I wil shew thee my faith by my workes.

19 Thou beleeuest that there is one God: thou doest well the deuils also beleeue it, and tremble.

20 But wilt thou vnderstand, O thou vaine man, that the faith *which is* without workes, is dead?

21 Was not Abraham our father iustified through workes, when he offred his sonne Isaac vpon the altar?

22 Seest thou not that the faith wrought with his workes, and through the workes was the faith made perfect.

23 And the Scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham beleeued God, and it was imputed vnto him for righteousnes: and he was called the friend of God.

24 Ye see then how that of works a man is iustified, and not of faith onely.

25 Likewise

Gen.22.10.

Gen.15.6. rom.4.3. galat.3.6.

25 Likewise also was not * Rahab the harlot iustified through workes, whē she had receiued the messengers, and sent them out another way? *Iosh. 2.*

26 For as the body without the spirit is dead, euen so the faith without workes is dead.

CHAP. III.

3 To shewe that a Christian man must gouerne his tongue with the bridle of faith and charitie: 9 he declareth the commodities and mischefes that insue thereof: 15 and howe much mans wisdome 17 differeth from heauenly.

1 MY brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we shal receiue the greater damnation.

2 For in many things we ‖ sinne al. If any man sinne not in word, he is a perfect mā, & able to bridle al the body. ‖ Or, *fayle.*

3 Beholde, we put bittes into the horses mouthes that they should obey vs, & we turne about al their bodie.

4 Behold also the shippes, which though they be so great, and are driuen of fierce windes, yet are they turned about with a very small rudder, whithersoeuer the gouernour listeth.

5 Euē so the tongue is a litle mēber, & boasteth of great things: behold, how great a thing a litle fire kindleth.

6 And the tongue is fire, *yea*, a worlde of wickednes: so is the tongue set among our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature, and it is set on fire of hel.

7 For the whole nature of beasts, and of birdes, and of creeping things, and things of the sea is tamed, and hath bene tamed of the nature of man.

8 But the tongue can no man tame. *It is* an vnruly euil, full of deadly poyson.

9 Therewith blesse we God euen the Father, and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God.

10 Out of one mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing: my brethren, these things ought not so to be.

11 Doeth a fountaine send forth at one place sweete *water* and bitter?

12 Can the figge tree, my brethren, bring forth oliues, either a vine figs? so can no fountaine make both salt water and sweete.

13 Who is a wise man & endued with knowledge among you?

you? let him shewe by good conuersation his workes in meekenes of wisdome.

14 But if ye haue bitter enuying and strife in your hearts, reioyce not, neither be liars against the trueth.

15 This wisdom descendeth not from aboue, but is earthly, sensual and diuelish.

16 For where enuying and strife *is*, there *is* sedition, and al maner of euil workes.

17 But the wisdome that *is* from aboue, is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, easie to be entreated, full of mercy & good fruites, without iudging, and without hypocrisie.

18 And the fruite of righteousnes, is sowen in peace, of them that make peace.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He reckoneth vp the mischiefes that precede of the workes of the flesh. 7 He exhorteth to humilitie, 8 and to purge the heart 9 from pride, 10 backebiting, 14 and the forgetfulnes of our owne infirmitie.

1 FRom whence *are* warres and contentions among you? are they not hence, *euen* of your pleasures, that fight in your members?

2 Ye lust, and haue not: ye ennie, and desire immoderately, and cannot obteine: ye fight and warre, and get nothing, because ye aske not.

3 Ye aske, and receiue not, because ye aske amisse, that ye might lay the same out on your pleasures.

4 Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the amitie of the world is the enimitie of God? Whosoeuer therefore wilbe a friend of the world, maketh himself the enemie of God.

5 Do ye thinke that the Scripture saith in vaine, The spirit that dwelleth in vs lusteth after ennie?

6 But *the Scripture* offereth more grace, *and* therefore saith, * God resisteth the proude, and giueth grace to the humble.

Prou.3.34. 1.pet.5.5.

Ephes.4.27 7 * Submit your selues to God: resist the deuil, and he wil flee from you.

8 Drawe neere to God, and he wil drawe neere to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners, and purge your hearts, ye double minded.

9 Suffer afflictions, and sorowe ye, and weepe: let your laughter be turned into mourning, and *your* ioye into heauines

heauines.

10 * Cast downe your selues before the Lord, and he will lift you vp. 1. Pet. 5.6

11 Speake not euil one of another, brethrē. He that speaketh euil of his brother, or he that condemneth his brother, speaketh euil of the Law, & condemneth the Law: and if thou condemnest the Law, thou art not an obseruer of the Law, but a iudge.

12 There is one Lawgiuer, which is able to saue, and to destroy. * Who art thou that iudgest another man? Rom. 14.4.

13 Go to now ye that say, To day or to morowe we will go into such a citie, and continue there a yere, and bye and sel, and get gaine,

14 (And yet ye cannot tell what *shalbe* to morowe. For what is your life? It is euen a vapour that appeareth for a litle time, and afterward vanisheth away)

15 For that ye ought to say, * If the Lord will, and, If we liue, we wil do this or that. 1. Cor. 4.19

16 But now ye reioyce in your boastings: all such reioycing is euil.

17 Therefore, to him that knoweth how to do well, and doeth it not, to him it is sinne.

CHAP. V.

1 *He threatneth the rich with Gods seuere iudgement, for their pride, 7 that the poore bearing the miserable end of the rich, 8 may patiently beare afflictions, 11 as Iob did, 14 euen in their distresses.*

1 GOe to now, ye riche men: weepe, and howle for your miseries that shal come vpon you.

2 Your riches are corrupt, & your garmēts are moth eatē.

3 Your gold and siluer is cankred, and the rust of them shalbe a witnes against you, and shal eate your flesh, as *it were* fire. Ye haue heaped vp treasure for the laste daies.

4 Beholde, the hire of the labourers, which haue reaped your fieldes (which is of you kept backe by fraud) cryeth, and the cryes of them which haue reaped, are entred into the eares of the Lord of hostes.

5 Ye haue liued in pleasure on the earth, and *in* wantonnes. Ye haue nourished your heartes, as in a daye of slaughter.

6 Ye haue condemned *and* haue killed the iuste, and he hath

hath not resisted you.

7 Be patient therefore, brethren, vnto the comming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman wayteth for the precious fruite of the earth, and hath long patience for it, vntil he receiue the former, and the latter rayne.

8 Be ye also patient therefore and settle your hearts: for the comming of our Lord draweth neere.

9 Grudge not one against another, brethren, least ye be condemned: behold, the iudge stādeth before the doore.

10 Take, my brethren, the Prophetes for an ensample of suffering aduersitie, and of long patience, which haue spoken in the Name of the Lord.

11 Behold, we count them blessed which endure. Ye haue heard of the patiēce of Iob, & haue knowē what end the Lord *made*. For the Lord is verie pitifull and mercifull.

Mat.5.34. 12 But before all things, my brethren,* sweare not, neither by heauen, nor by earth, nor by any other othe: but let your yea, be yea, and *your* nay, nay, lest ye fal into condemnation.

13 Is any among you afflicted? Let him pray. Is any merie? Let him sing.

14 Is any sicke among you? Let him cal for the Elders of the Church, and let them pray for him, and anointe him

Mar. 6.13. with * oyle in the Name of the Lord.

15 And the prayer of faith shal saue the sicke, and the Lord shall raise him vp: & if he haue committed sinnes, they shalbe forgiuen him.

16 Acknowledge your faultes one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed: for the prayer of a righteous man auaileth much, if it be feruent.

1.Kin.17.1. and 18. 45. Luk.4.25. 17 * Helias was a man subiect to like passions as we are, and he prayed earnestly that it might not raine, and it rained not on the earth for three yeares and sixe moneths.

18 And he prayed againe, and the heauen gaue raine, & the earth brought forth her fruite.

Mat.18.15. 19 Brethren, * if any of you hath erred from the trueth, & some man hath conuerted him,

20 Let him know that he which hath conuerted the sinner from going astray out of his way, shal saue a soule from death, and shall hide a multitude of sinnes.

THE

THE FIRST EPISTLE GENERALL OF PETER.

CHAP. I.

He extolleth Gods mercie shewed in Christ, which we lay holde on by fayth, and possesse through hope: 10 whereof the Prophets foretolde. 13 He exhorteth 15 to renounce the worlde, 23 and their former life, and so wholy yelde themselues to God.

1 PETER an Apostle of Iesus Christ, to the strangers that dwell here and there throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia and Bithynia,

2 Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father vnto sanctification of the Spirit, through obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Iesus Christ: Grace and peace be multiplied vnto you.

3 Blessed *be* God, euē the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ, which according to his aboundant mercie hath begotten vs againe vnto a liuely hope by the resurrection of Iesus Christ from the dead,

4 To an inheritance immortall and vndefiled, and that withereth not, reserued in heauen for vs,

5 Which are kept by the power of God through fayth vnto saluation, which is prepared to be shewed in the last time.

6 Wherin ye reioyce, though now for a season (if need require) ye are in heauines, through manifold tentations,

7 That the tryall of your faith, being much more precious then golde that perisheth (though it be tryed with fire) might be founde vnto *your* praise, and honour and glorie at the appearing of Iesus Christ:

8 Whom ye haue not seene, and yet loue *him*, in whome now, though ye see him not, yet do you beleeue, and reioyce with ioy vnspeakeable and glorious,

9 Receiuing the ‖ end of your faith, *euen* the saluation of *your* soules. ‖ Or, reward

10 Of the which saluation the Prophets haue inquired & searched, which prophecied of the grace that should come vnto you,

11 Searching when or what time the Spirit which teſtified before of Chriſt which was in them, ſhoulde declare the ſuffrings *that ſhould come* vnto Chriſt, and the glorie that ſhould folow.

12 Vnto whome it was reueiled, that not vnto themſelues, but vnto vs they ſhoulde miniſter the thinges which are nowe ſhewed vnto you by them which haue preachtd vnto you the Goſpell by the holy Ghoſt ſent downe from heauen, the which thinges the Angels deſire to beholde.

13 Wherefore, gird vp the loynes of your minde: be ſober, and truſt perfectly on that grace that is brought vnto you, in the reuelation of Ieſus Chriſt,

14 As obedient children, not faſhioning your ſelues vnto the former luſtes of your ignorance:

15 But as he which hath called you, is holy, ſo be ye holy in * all maner of conuerſation,

Luk.1.75.

16 Becauſe it is written, * Be ye holy, for I am holy.

Leu.11.44. & 19.2. & 20.7.

17 And if ye call him Father, which without * reſpect of perſon iudgeth according to euery mans worke, paſſe the time of your dwelling here in feare,

Deu.10.17.

18 Knowing that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as ſiluer and golde, from your vaine conuerſation, receiued by the traditions of the fathers,

rom.2.11. gal.2.6.

19 *But with the precious blood of Chriſt, as of a lambe vndefiled, and without ſpot.

1.Cor.6.20 & 7.23.

20 Which was * ordeined before the foundation of the world, but was declared in the laſt times for your ſakes,

Heb.9.14. 1.iohn.1.7. reuel.1.5.

21 Which by his meanes do beleeue in God that raiſed him from the dead, and gaue him glorie, that your faith and hope might be in God,

Rom.16.25 ephe.3.9. coloſ.1,26.

22 Hauing purified your ſoules in obeying the trueth through the ſpirit, to * loue brotherly without fayning, loue one another with a pure heart feruently,

2.tim.1,10. Tit.1.2.

23 Being borne anewe, not of mortall ſeede, but of immortall, by the worde of God, who liueth and endureth for euer.

Heb.2.17. rom.2.10. ephes.4.2.

24 For all * fleſh *is* as graſſe, and all the glorie of man as the flower of graſſe. The graſſe withereth, & the flower falleth away.

Iſa.40.6. rom.1.10.

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for euer: and this is the worde which is preached among you.

1 *He exhorteth the newborn in faith, to lead their liues answerable to the same: 6 and lest their faith shoulde stagger, he bringeth in that which was foretold touching Christ. 11 The he willeth them to be obedient to Magistrates, 21 & that they patiently beare aduersitie after Christs example.*

1 WHerefore, *laying aside al maliciousnes & al guile, Rom. 6.4.
and dissimulation, and enuie, & all euill speaking, ephe. 4. 23.
2 As newe borne babes desire that syncere milke of the col. 3.8.
word, that ye may grow thereby, hebr. 12.1.
3 Because ye haue tasted that the Lord *is* bountifull.
4 To whom comming as vnto a liuing stone disalowed of
men, but chosen of God, *and* precious,
5 Ye also as liuely stones, be made a spirituall house, an
holy * Priesthode to offer vp spirituall sacrifices ac- Reuel. 1.6.
ceptable to God by Iesus Christ.
6 Wherefore also it is cõteined in the Scripture, *Behold, Ise. 28.16.
I put in Sion a chiefe corner stone, elect and precious: rom. 9.33.
and he that beleeueth therein, shall not be ashamed.
7 Vnto you therefore which beleeue, it is precious:
but vnto them which be disobedient, the * stone which Psa. 118.22
the builders disalowed, the same is made the head of mat. 21.42.
the corner, act. 4.11.
8 And a * stone to stumble at, and a rocke of offence, euen Isa. 8.14.
to them which stumble at the worde, being disobedient, rom. 9.33.
vnto the which thing they were euen ordeined.
9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royall * Priesthode, an Exod. 19 6.
holy nation, a people set at liberty that ye should shew
forth the vertues of him that hath called you out of
darkenes into his marueilous light,
10 * Which in time past were not a people, yet *are* now Hose. 2. 23.
the people of God: which in time past were not vnder rom. 9.25.
mercie, but now haue obtained mercie.
11 Dearely beloued, I beseeche you, as strangers and pil-
gremes, * abstein from fleshly lusts, which fight against Rom. 13.14
the soule, galat. 5.16.
12 *And haue your conuersation honest among the Gen- Chap. 3.16.
tiles, that they which speake euill of you as of euill do-
ers, may by your * good workes which they shall see, Mat. 5.16.
glorifie God in the day of visitation.
13 * Therefore submit your selues vnto all maner ordi- Rom. 13.1.
naunce of man for the Lords sake, whether it be vnto the

King, as vnto the superiour,

14 Or vnto gouernours, as vnto them that are sent of him, for the punishment of euil doers, and for the praise of them that do well.

15 For so is the will of God, that by well doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of the foolish men,

16 As free, and not as hauing the libertie for a cloke of maliciousnes, but as the seruants of God.

Chap.1.22. rom.12.10. 17 Honour all men: * loue brotherly fellowship: feare God: honour the King.

Ephes.5.6. col.3.22. 18 * Seruants, be subiect to your masters with all feare, not only to the good & courteous, but also to the froward.

2.Cor.7.10 19 * For this is thanke worthie, if a man for conscience toward God endure griefe suffering wrongfully.

20 For what prayse is it, if when ye be buffeted for your faultes, ye take it patiently? but and if when ye doe well, ye suffer *wrong* and take it patiently, this is acceptable to God.

21 For hereunto ye are called: for Christ also suffred for you, leauing you an ensample that ye shoulde followe his steppes.

Isa.53.9. 1.iohn.3.5. 22 * Who did no sinne, neither was there guile founde in his mouth.

23 Who when he was reuiled, reuiled not againe: when he suffred, he threatned not, but committed it to him that iudgeth righteously.

Isa.53.5. mat.8.17. 24 * Who his owne selfe bare our sinnes in his bodie on the tree, that we being deade to sinne, shoulde liue in righteousnes: by whose stripes ye were healed.

25 For ye were as sheepe going astray: but are now returned vnto the shepheard and bishop of your soules.

CHAP. III.

1 That Christian women should not contemne their husbands though they be infidels, 5 he bringeth in examples of godly women. 8 Generall exhortations, 14 patiently to beare persecutions, 15 and boldly to yelde a reason of their faith. 18 Christs example.

Col.3.18. ephe.5.22. 1 LIkewise * let the wiues be subiect to their husbands, that euen they which obey not the word, may without the worde be wonne by the conuersation of the wiues,

2 While they beholde your pure conuersation, which is with feare.

3 * Whose

3 * Whose apparelling, let it not be that outwarde, with broyded heare, and golde put about, or in putting on of apparell. *1.Tim. 2.9.*

4 But let it be the hid man of the heart, *which consisteth* in the incorruption of a meeke & quiet spirit, which is before God a thing much set by.

5 For euen after this maner in time past did the holy women, which trusted in God, tier them selues, and were subiect to their husbands.

6 As Sara obeyed Abraham, and * called him Syr: whose daughters ye are, whiles ye do well, not being afraied of any terrour. *Gen. 18.12.*

7 * Likewise ye husbandes, dwell with them as men of knowledge, giuing honour vnto the woman, as vnto the weaker vessell, euen as they which are heires together of the grace of life, that your praiers be not interrupted. *1.Cor. 7.3.*

8 Finally, be ye all of one minde: one suffer with another: loue as brethren: *be* pitifull: *be* courteous,

9 * Not rendring euill for euill, neither rebuke for rebuke: but contrariewise blesse, knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye shoulde be heires of blessing. *Pro. 17.13. & 20.22. mat. 5.39.*

10 * For if any man long after life, & to see good daies, let him refraine his tongue from euill, and his lippes that they speake not guile, *rom. 12.17. 1.thes. 5.15 Psal. 34.13*

11 * Let him eschew euill, and do good: let him seeke peace, and follow after it. *Isa. 1.16.*

12 For the eyes of the Lord *are* ouer the righteous, and his eares *are open* vnto their prayers: and the face of the Lord *is* against them that do euill.

13 And who is it that will harme you, if ye followe that which is good?

14 * Notwithstanding blessed *are* ye, if ye suffer for righteousnes sake. Yea, * feare not their feare, neyther be troubled. *Mat. 5.10. Isa. 8.12, 13*

15 But sanctifie the Lord God in your hearts: and be readie alwayes to giue an answere to euerie man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meekenes and reuerence,

16 Hauing a good conscience, that when they speake euil of you as of euill doers, they may be ashamed, which slander your good conuersation in Christ.

17 For *it is* better (if the will of God be so) that ye suffer for well doing, then for euill doing.

Rom.5.6. hebr. 9.15. 18 * For Christ also hath once suffred for sinnes, the iust for the vniust, that he might bring vs to God, and was put to death concerning the flesh, but was quickened by the spirit.

19 By the which he also went, and preached vnto the spirits that *are* in prison.

20 Which were in time passed disobedient, when once the long suffring of God abode in the dayes of * Noe, while the Arke was preparing, wherein fewe, that is, eight soules were saued in the water.

Gen.6. 14. mat.24.38. luke.17.26.

21 Whereof the baptisme *that* now is, answering that figure, (*which is* not a putting away of the filth of the flesh, but a confident demanding which a good conscience maketh to God) saueth vs also by the resurrection of Iesus Christ,

22 Which is at the right hande of God, gone into heauen, to whome the Angels, and Powers, and might are subiect.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He bringeth in Christes example, and applieth it 6 to the mortifying of the flesh, 8 especially commending Charitie: 12 And so entreateth of patience. 17 That it is necessary that correction beginne at the Church.

1 FOrasmuch then as Christ hath suffred for vs in the flesh, arme your selues likewise with the same mind, *which is*, that he which hath suffred in the flesh, hath ceased from sinne,

2 That he hence forward should liue (as much time as remaineth in the flesh) not after the lusts of men, but after the will of God.

Ephes.4.22. 3 * For it is sufficient for vs that we haue spent the time past of the life, after the lust of the Gentiles, walking in wantonnes, lustes, drunkennes, in gluttonie, drinkings, and in abominable idolatries.

4 Wherein it seemeth to them strange, that ye runne not with them vnto the same excesse of ryot: *therefore* speak they euill *of you*,

5 Which shall giue accountes to him, that is readie to iudge quicke and dead.

6 For vnto this purpose was the Gospell preached also

vnto

vnto the dead, that they might be condemned, according to men in the fleshe, but might liue according to God in the spirit.

7 Now the end of all thinges is at hand. Be ye therefore sober, and watching in prayer.

8 But aboue all things haue feruent loue among you: *for loue shall couer the multitude of sinnes. *Pro.10.12.*

9 Be ye *harberous one to another, without grudging. *Rom.12.13*

10 * Let euery man as he hath receiued the gift, minister the same one to another, as good disposers of the manifolde grace of God. *hebr.13.2. Rom.12.6. phil.2.14.*

11 If any man speake, *let him speake* as the words of God. If any man minister, *let him do it* as of the abilitie which God ministreth, that God in all things may be glorified through Iesus Christ, to whome is prayse and dominion for euer, and euer, Amen.

12 Dearely beloued, thinke it not strange concerning the fiery tryall, which is among you to proue you, as though some strange thing were come vnto you:

13 But reioyce, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christes suffrings, that when his glorie shall appeare, ye may be glad and reioyce.

14 * If ye be railed vpon for the Name of Christ, blessed *are ye*: for the spirit of glorie, and of God resteth vpon you: *which* on their part is euill spoken of: but on your part is glorified. *Mat.5.10.*

15 But let none of you suffer as a murtherer, or *as* a thiefe, or an euill doer, or a busibodie in other mens matters.

16 But if *any man suffer* as a Christian, let him not be ashamed: but let him glorifie God in this behalfe.

17 For the time *is come*, that iudgement must begin at the house of God. If it *begin* at vs, what shall the end be of them which obey not the Gospell of God?

18 * And if the righteous scarcely be saued, where shall the vngodly and the sinner appeare? *Prou.2.32.*

19 Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God, commit their soules *to him* in well doing, as vnto a faithfull Creator.

CHAP. V.

1 *He warneth the Elders not to vsurpe authoritie ouer the Church,* 5 *willing the yonger sort to be willing to be taught,*

and to be modeſt, 8 *to be ſober and watchfull to reſiſte the cruell aduerſarie.*

1 THe Elders which are among you, I beſeeche which am alſo an Elder, and a witnes of the ſuffringes of Chriſt, and alſo a partaker of the glory that ſhalbe reueiled,

2 Feede the ſtocke of God, which dependeth vpon you, caring for it not by conſtraint, but willingly: not for filthie lucre, but of a readie minde:

3 Not as thongh ye were Lords ouer *Gods* heritage, but that ye may be enſamples to the ſtocke.

4 And when that chiefe Shepheard ſhall appeare, ye ſhall receiue an incorruptible crowne of glorie.

5 Likewiſe ye yonger, ſubmit your ſelues vnto the elders, & ſubmit your ſelues euery man one to another: * decke your ſelues inwardly in lowlines of minde: for * God reſiſteth the proude, and giueth grace to the humble.

6 Humble * your ſelues therefore vnder the mighti hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time.

7 * Caſt all your care on him: for he careth for you.

8 Be ſober and watch: for * your aduerſarie the deuill as a roaring lyon walketh about ſeeking whome he may deuoure:

9 Whom reſiſt ſtedfaſt in the faith, knowing that the ſame afflictions are accompliſhed in your brethren which are in the world.

10 And the God of all grace, which hath called vs vnto his eternall glorie by Chriſt Ieſus, after that ye haue ſuffred a litle, make you perfect, confirme, ſtrengthen, and ſtabliſh *you.*

11 To him *be* glory & dominion for euer, & euer, Amen.

12 By Siluanus a faithfull brother vnto you, as I ſuppoſe, haue I written briefly, exhorting and teſtifying howe that this is the true grace of God, wherein ye ſtand. ¶

13 *The Church* that is at Babylon elected together with you, ſaluteth you, and Marcus my ſonne.

14 Greete ye one another with the * kiſſe of loue. Peace *be* with you all which are in Chriſt Ieſus, Amen. ¶

Rom.12.10 *Iam.4.6.*

Iam.4.10.

Pſal.55.23.

mat.6.25. *Iuk.12.22.* *Luk.22.31.*

Rom.16.16 *1.cor.16.* *20.2.cor.* *13.12.*

THE

THE SECOND EPISTLE GENERAL OF PETER.

CHAP. I.

3 Hauing ſpoken of the bountifulnes of God, 5 and of the vertues of faith, 6 He exhorteth them to holines of life, 12 and that his counſel may be the more effectual, 14 He ſheweth that his death is at hand, 16 and that himſelfe did ſee the power of Chriſt which he opened vnto them.

1 SImon Peter a ſeruant and an Apoſtle of Ieſus Chriſt, to you which haue obteined like precious faith with vs by the righteouſnes of our God and Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt.

2 Grace & peace be multiplied to you, through the acknowledging of God & of IESVS our Lorde,

3 According as his diuine power hath giuen vnto vs all things that *pertaine* vnto life and godlines, through the acknowledging of him that hath called vs vnto glorie and vertue.

4 Whereby moſt great, and precious promiſes are giuen vnto vs, that by them ye ſhould be partakers of the diuine nature, in that ye flee the corruption, which is in the world through luſt.

5 Therefore giue euen all diligence thereunto: ioyne moreouer vertue with your faith: and with vertue, knowledge:

6 And with knowledge, temperance: and with temperance, patience: and with patience, godlines:

7 And with godlines, brotherly kindnes: and with brotherly kindnes, loue.

8 For if theſe things be among you, and abounde, they will make you that ye neyther ſhalbe idle, nor vnfruitfull in the acknowledging of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt:

9 For he that hath not theſe things, is blind, and can not ſee farre of, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his olde ſinnes.

10 Wherefore, brethren, giue rather diligence to make your calling and election ſure: for if ye do theſe things, ye ſhall neuer fall.

11 For by this meanes an entring shalbe ministred vnto you abundantly into the euerlasting kingdome of our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ.

12 Wherefore, I will not be negligent to put you alwayes in remembrance of these thinges, though that ye haue knowledge, & be stablished in the present truth.

13 For I thinke it meete as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stirre you vp by putting you in remembrance:

14 Seeing I knowe that the time is at hande that I must lay downe this my tabernacle, euen as our Lorde Iesus Christ hath * shewed me. *Iohn.21.18*

15 I will endeuour therefore alwayes, that ye also may be able to haue remembrance of these thinges after my departing.

16 *For we followed not deceiueable fables when we opened vnto you the power, and comming of our Lorde Iesus Christ, but with our eyes we sawe his maiestie: *2.Cor.1.17 and 2.1.*

17 For he receiued of God the Father honour and glorie, when there came such a voyce to him from that excellent glorie, * This is my beloued Sonne, in whom I am well pleased. *Matt.17.5.*

18 And this voyce we heard when it came from heauen, being with him in the holy mount.

19 We haue also a most sure word of the Prophets, to the which ye doe well that ye take heede, as vnto a light that shineth in a darke place, vntill the day dawne, and the day starre arise in your heartes.

20 * So that ye first knowe this, that no propheeie of the Scripture is of any priuate interpretation. *2.Tim.3.16*

21 For the Propheeie came not in olde time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moued by the holy Ghost.

CHAP. II.

1 He foretelleth them of false teachers, 3 whose wicked sleights and destruction he declareth. 12 He cõpareth them to brute beasties, 17 and to welles without water, 20 because they seeke to withdrawe men from God to their olde filthines.

1 BVt there were false prophets also among the people, euen as there shalbe false teachers among you: which priuily shall bring in dãnable heresies, euen denying the Lorde, that hath bought them, and bring vpon themselues swift damnation.

2 And

2 And many shal folowe their destructions, by whom the way of trueth shalbe euill spoken of,

3 And through couetousnes shall they with fained wordes make marchandise of you, whose condemnation long since resteth not, and their destruction slumbreth not.

4 For if God spared not the * Angels, that had sinned, but cast them downe into hell, and deliuered them into chaines of darkenes, to be kept vnto damnation: *Iob.4.18. iude. 6.

5 Neyther hath spared the olde worlde, but saued *Noe the eight *person*, a preacher of righteousnes, & brought in the flood vpon the world of the vngodly, *Gene.7.1.

6 And * turned the cities of Sodome and Gomorrhe into ashes, condemned them and ouerthrewe them, and made them an ensample vnto them that after shoulde liue vngodly, *Gen.19.13. 24.

7 And deliuered iust Loth vexed with the vncleanly cõuersation of the wicked.

8 (For he being righteous, and dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soule from day to day with their vnlawfull deedes.)

9 The Lord knoweth to deliuer the godly out of tentation, & to reserue the vniust vnto the day of iudgement vnder punishment.

10 And chiefly them that walke after the flesh, in the lust of vncleannes, and despise gouernement, *which are* bold, and stande in their owne conceite, and feare not to speake euill of them that are in dignitie.

11 Whereas the Angels which are greater both in power and might, giue not rayling iudgement against them before the Lord.

12 But these, as naturall brute beastes, led with sensualitie, and made to be taken, and destroyed, speake euill of those things which they knowe not, and shall perishe through their owne corruption.

13 And shall receiue the wages of vnrighteousnes, as they which counte it pleasure daily to liue deliciously. ‖ Spottes *they are* and blottes, deliting them selues in their deceiuings, in feasting with you, ‖ Or, lide rockes.

14 Hauing eyes full of adulterie, and that can not cease to sinne, beguiling vnstable soules: they haue hearte exercised with couetousnes, *they are* the children of curse:

15 Which

15 Which forſaking the right way, haue gone aſtraye, fo-
lowing the way of * Balaam, *the ſonne* of Boſor, which
Num.22.23 loued the wages of vnrighteouſnes.
16 But he was rebuked for his iniquitie: *for* the dumme
beaſt ſpeaking with mans voyce, forbade the fooliſhnes
of the Prophet.
Iude.12. 17 * Theſe are welles without water, *and* cloudes caried
about with a tempeſt, to whom the blacke darkenes is
reſerued for euer.
18 For in ſpeaking ſwelling wordes of vanitie, they be-
guile with wantonnes through the luſtes of the fleſhe
them that were cleane eſcaped from them which are
wrapped in errour,
19 Promiſing vnto them libertie, and are them ſelues the
Iohn.8.34. * ſeruants of corruption: for of whomſoeuer a man is
rom.6.20. ouercome, euen vnto the ſame is he in bondage.
Mat.12.45 20 * For if they, after they haue eſcaped from the filthi-
Heb.6.4. nes of the world, through the acknowledging of the
Lord, and of the Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt, are yet tangled
againe therein, and ouercome, the latter ende is worſe
with them then the beginning.
21 For it had bene better for them, not to haue acknow-
ledged the way of righteouſnes, then after they haue
acknowledged it, to turne from the holy commaunde-
ment giuen vnto them.
22 But it is come vnto them, according to the true pro-
Prou.26.11 uerbe, * The dogge is returned to his owne vomit: and,
The ſowe that was waſhed, to the wallowing in the
myre.

CHAP. III.

1 He ſheweth that he writeth the ſame things agayne, 2 becauſe they muſt often be ſtirred vp, 4 becauſe daungers hang euer their heades through certaine mockers: 8 therefore he warneth the godly that they doe not after the iudgement of the fleſh, 12 appoint the day of the Lord, 14 but that they thinke it alwayes at hand, 15 in which doctrine he ſheweth that Paul agreeth with him.

1 THis ſecond Epiſtle I now write vnto you, beloued,
wherewith I ſtirre vp, and warne your pure mindes,
2 To call to remembrance the wordes, which were told
before of the holy Propheres, and alſo the commaunde-
ment of vs the Apoſtles of the Lord and Sauiour.

3 * This

3 * This first vnderstand, that there shal come in the last dayes, mockers, which will walke after their lustes, *1.Tim.4.1. 2.tim.3.1.*
4 And say, Where is the promes of his comming? For since the Fathers died, all things continue alike frō the beginning of the creation. *iude 18.*
5 For this they willingly knowe not, that the heauens were of olde, and the earth that was of the water and by the water, by the worde of God.
6 Wherefore the world that then was, perished, ouerflowed with the water.
7 But the heauens and earth, which are nowe, are kept by the same worde in store, and reserued vnto fyre against the day of condemnation, and of the destruction of vngodlie men.
8 Dearely beloued, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lorde, * as a thousand yeres, and a thousand yeres as one day. *Psal.90.4.*
9 The Lord of that promise is not slacke (as some men count slackenes) but is patient toward vs, and * would haue no man to perishe, but would all men to come to repentance. *Ezek.18.32 and 33.11. 1.tim.2,4.*
10 But the * day of the Lorde will come as a thiefe in the night, in the which the heauens shall passe away with a noyse, and the elements shall melt with heate, and the earth with the workes that are therein, shalbe burnt vp. *Mat.24.44 1.thes.5.2. reue.3.3. and 16.15.*
11 Seeing therefore that all these thinges must be dissolued, what maner persons ought ye to be in holy cōuersation and godlines,
12 Looking for, and hasting vnto the comming of that day of God, by the which the heauens being on fire, shal be dissolued, and the elements shall melt with heat?
13 But we looke for * newe heauens, and a new earth, according to his promise, wherein dwelleth righteousnes, *Isa. 65.17. and 66.22.*
14 Wherfore, beloued, seeing that ye loke for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blameles. *reuel.21.1.*
15 * And suppose that the long suffring of our Lord is saluation, euen as our beloued brother Paul according to the wisedome giuen vnto him wrote to you, *Rom.2.4.*
16 As one, that in all *his* Epistles speaketh of these things: among the which some things are hard to be vnderstād, which

which they that are vnlearned and vnstable, wrest, as they *do* also other Scriptures vnto their owne destruction.

17 Ye therefore beloued, seeing ye knowe these things before, beware, lest ye be also plucked away with the errour of the wicked, and fal from your own stedfastnes.

18 But growe in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ: to him *be* glorie both nowe and for euer more, Amen.

THE FIRST EPISTLE GENERAL OF IOHN.

CHAP. I.

1 He testifieth that he bringeth the eternall worde wherein is life, 5 and light. 9 God wille mercifull vnto the faithfull, if groning vnder the burden of their sinnes, they learne to flie vnto his mercy.

1 THat which was from the beginning, which we haue heard, which we haue seene with these our eyes, which we haue looked vpon, and these handes of ours haue handled of that Worde of lyfe,

2 (For that life was made manifest, and we haue seene it, and beare witnes, and shewe vnto you that eternall life, which was with the Father, and was made manifest vnto vs)

3 That *I saye*, which we haue seene and hearde, declare we vnto you, that ye may also haue felowship with vs, & that our felowship also may be with the Father, & with his Sonne Iesus Christ.

4 And these things write we vnto you, that that your ioy may be full.

5 This then is the message which we haue heard of him, and declare vnto you, that God * is light, and in him is no darkenes. *Iohn.8.12.

6 If we say that we haue felowship with him, and walke in darkenes, we lie, and doe not truely:

7 But if we walke in the light as he is in the light, we haue

haue ſelowſhip one with another, and the * blonde of Ieſus Chriſt his Sonne cleanſeth vs from all ſinne. *Hebr.9.28. 1.pet.1.19.*

8 * If we ſay that we haue no ſinne, we deceiue our ſelues, and trueth is not in vs. *reuel.1.5.*

9 If we acknowledge our ſinnes, he is faithfull and iuſt, to forgiue vs our ſinnes, and to cleanſe vs from all vnrighteouſnes. *1.Kin.8.46 2 chro.6.36 prou.20.9.*

10 If we ſay we haue not ſinned, we make him a liar, and his worde is not in vs.

CHAP. II.

1 He declareth that Chriſt is our Mediatour and aduocat, 3 and ſheweth that the knowledge of God cõſiſteth in holines of life, 12 which appertaineth to all ſortes, 14 that depende on Chriſt alone: 15 Then hauing exhorted them to contemne the world, 18 He giueth warning that Antichriſtes be auoyded, 24 and that the knowen trueth be ſtoode vnto.

1 MY litle children, theſe things write I vnto you, that ye ſinne not: and if any man ſinne, we haue an Aduocate with the Father, Ieſus Chriſt, the Iuſt.

2 And he is the reconciliation for our ſinnes: and not for ours onely, but alſo for *the ſinnes* of the whole worlde.

3 And hereby we are ſure that we knowe him, if we keepe his commandementes.

4 He that ſaith, I knowe him, and keepeth not his commandements, is a liar, and the trueth is not in him.

5 But he that keepeth his word, in him is the loue of God perfect in deede: hereby we knowe that ye are in him.

6 He that ſaieth, he remaineth in him, ought euen ſo to walke, as he hath walked.

7 Brethren, I write no newe commandement vnto you: but an olde commandement, which ye haue had from the beginning: this olde commaundement is that word, which ye haue heard from the beginning.

8 Againe, a new commandement I write vnto you, that which is true in him, and alſo in you: for the darkenes is paſt, and that true light now ſhineth.

9 He that ſaith that he is in that light, and hateth his brother, is in darkenes vntill this time.

10 * He that loueth his brother, abideth in that light, and there is none occaſion of euill in him. *Chap.3.14.*

11 But he that hateth his brother, is in darkenes, & walketh in darkenes, & knoweth not whither he goeth, becauſe

cause that darkenes hath blinded his eyes.

12 Litle children, I write vnto you, because your sinnes are forgiuen you for his Names sake.

13 I write vnto you, fathers, because ye haue knowē him that is from the beginning. I write vnto you, yong men, because ye haue ouercome that wicked one. I write vnto you, litle children, because ye haue knowen the Father.

14 I haue written vnto you, fathers, because ye haue knowen him, that is from the beginning. I haue written vnto you, yong men, because ye are strong, and the word of God abideth in you, and ye haue ouercome that wicked one.

15 Loue not this worlde, neyther the things that are in this worlde. If any man loue this worlde, the loue of the Father is not in him.

16 For all that is in this worlde (as the luste of the flesh, the luste of the eyes, and the pride of life) is not of the Father, but is of this worlde.

17 And this worlde passeth away, and the luste thereof: but he that fulfilleth the will of God, abideth euer.

18 Litle children, it is the last time, and as ye haue heard that Antichrist shall come, euen nowe are there many Antichristes: whereby we knowe that it is the last time.

19 They went out from vs, but they were not of vs: for if they had bene of vs, they should haue continued with vs. But *this commeth to passe*, that it might appeare, that they are not all of vs.

20 But ye haue an ointement from that Holy one, and knowe all things.

21 I haue not written vnto you, because ye know not the trueth: but because ye knowe it, and that no lie is of the trueth.

22 Who is a lyar, but he that denieth that Iesus is that Christ? the same is that Antichrist that denieth the Father and the Sonne.

23 Whosoeuer denieth the Sonne, the same hath not the Father.

24 Let therefore abide in you that same which ye haue heard from the beginning. If that which ye haue heard from the beginning, shall remaine in you, ye also shall continue in the Sonne, and in the Father.

25 And

25 And this is the promes that he hath promiſed vs, *euen* that eternall liſe.

26 Theſe things haue I written vnto you, cõcerning them that deceiue you.

27 But that anointing which ye receiued of him, dwelleth in you: and ye neede not that any man teache you: but as the ſame Anointing teacheth you of all things, and it is true, and is not lying, and as it taught you, ye ſhall abide in him.

28 And nowe, litle children, abide in him, that when he ſhall appeare, we may be bolde, and not be aſhamed before him at his comming.

29 If ye knowe that he is righteous, knowe ye that he which doeth righteouſly, is borne of him.

CHAP. III.

1 Setting downe the inestimable glorie of this, that we are Gods ſonnes, 7 he ſheweth that newnes of liſe muſt be teſtified by good workes, whereof charitie is a manifeſt token. 19 Of faith, 22 and praying vnto God.

1 BEholde, what loue the Father hath giuen to vs, that we ſhould be called the ſõnes of God: for this cauſe this worlde knoweth you not, becauſe it knoweth not him.

2 Dearely beloued, nowe are we the ſonnes of God, but yet it is not made manifeſt what we ſhalbe: and we know that when he ſhalbe made manifeſt, we ſhal be like him: for we ſhall ſee him as he is.

3 And euery man that hath this hope in him, purgeth him ſelfe, euen as he is pure.

4 Whoſoeuer committeth ſinne, tranſgreſſeth alſo the Lawe: for ſinne is the tranſgreſſion of the Lawe.

5 And ye knowe that he was made manifeſt, that he might * take away our ſinnes, and in him is no ſinne. *Iſa.53.6, 9,11.*

6 Whoſoeuer abideth in him, ſinneth not: whoſoeuer ſinneth, hath not ſeene him, neither hath knowen him. *1.Pet.2.22, 24.*

7 Litle children, let no man deceiue you: he that doeth righteouſnes, is righteous, as he is righteous.

8 He that * committeth ſinne, is of the deuill; for the deuill ſinneth from the beginning: for this purpoſe was made manifeſt that Sonne of God, that he might looſe the workes of the deuill. *Iohn 8.44.*

9 Whoſoeuer is borne of God, ſinneth not: for his ſeede

remaineth in him, neither can he ſinne, becauſe he is borne of God.

10 In this are the children of God knowen, and the children of the deuill: whoſoeuer doeth not righteouſnes, is not of God, neither he that loueth not his brother.

Iohn.13.34 and 15.12. 11 For this is the meſſage, that ye heard from the beginning, that * we ſhould loue one another,

Gene.4.8. 12 Not as * Cain *which* was of that wicked one, and ſlew his brother: and wherefore ſlewe he him? becauſe his owne workes were euill, and his brothers good.

13 Maruell not, my brethren, though this worlde hate you.

Chap.3.10. Iam.2.17. 14 We knowe that we are tranſlated from death vnto life, becauſe we loue the brethren: * he that loueth not *his* brother, abideth in death.

15 Whoſoeuer hateth his brother, is a manſlayer: and ye knowe that no manſlayer hath eternall life abiding in him.

Iohn 15.13 ephe.5.2. 16 * Hereby haue we perceiued loue, that he laid downe his life for vs: therfore we ought alſo to lay downe our liues for the brethren.

Luke 3.11. 17 * And whoſoeuer hath this worldes good, and ſeeth his brother haue neede, and ſhutteth vp his compaſſion from him, how dwelleth the loue of God in him?

18 My litle children, let vs not loue in worde, neither in tonge *only*, but in deede and in trueth.

19 For thereby we knowe that we are of the trueth, and ſhall before him aſſure our hearts.

20 For if our heart condemne vs, God is greater then our heart, and knoweth all things.

21 Beloued, if our heart condemne vs not, then haue we boldnes toward God.

Chap.3.14. mat.21.22, Iohn 15.7. and 16.23. Iohn 6.23. and 17.3. 22 * And whatſoeuer we aske we receiue of him, becauſe we keepe his commaundements, and doe thoſe things which are pleaſing in his ſight.

23 * This is then his commaundement, That we beleeue in the Name of his Sonne Ieſus Chriſt, and loue one another, as he gaue commaundement.

Iohn 13.34 and 15.10. 24 * For he that keepeth his commaundements, dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby we knowe that he abideth in vs, *euen* by that Spirit which he hath giuen vs.

He wylleth vs to prouve the spirites, for many false prophetes are gone out into the worlde. He that confesseth not Iesus Christ, is not of God. He that loueth not his brother, is not of God. The example of God. He that loueth his brother, is borne of God.

1 DEerely beloued, beleeue not euerie spirit, but trie the spirits whether they are of God: for many false prophetes are gone out into this worlde.

2 Hereby shall ye knowe the Spirit of God, Euery spirit which confesseth that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh, is of God.

3 And euerie spirit that confesseth not Iesus Christ to be come in the flesh, is not of God: but this is the *spirit* of Antichrist, of whom ye haue heard, howe that he should come, and now already he is in this world.

4 Little children, ye are of God, and haue ouercome them: for greater is he that is in you, then he that is in this worlde.

5 They are of this worlde, therefore speake they of this worlde, and this worlde heareth them.

6 We are of God: * he that knoweth God, heareth vs: he that is not of God, heareth vs not. Hereby knowe we the Spirit of truth, and the spirit of errour. *Iohn 8. 47.*

7 Beloued, let vs loue one another: for loue commeth of God, and euery one that loueth, is borne of God, and knoweth God.

8 He that loueth not, knoweth not God: *for* God *is* loue.

9 * Herein was that loue of God made manifest among vs, because God sent that his only begotten Sonne into this worlde, that we might liue through him. *Iohn 3. 16.*

10 Herein is that loue, not that we loued God, but that he loued vs, and sent his Sonne *to be a* reconciliation for our sinnes.

11 Beloued, if God so loued vs, we ought also to loue one another.

12 * No man hath seene God at any time. If we loue one another, God dwelleth in vs, & his loue is perfect in vs. *Iohn 1. 18. 1. Iohn 4. 16*

13 Hereby knowe we, that we dwell in him, and he in vs: because he hath giuen vs of his Spirit.

14 And we haue seene, and doe testifie, that the Father sent that Sonne *to be the* Sauiour of the worlde.

15 Whosoeuer confesseth that Iesus is the Sonne of God,

in him dwelleth God, and he in God.

16 And we haue knowen, and beleeued the loue that God hath in vs. God is loue, and he that dwelleth in loue, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

17 Herein is that loue perfect in vs, that we should haue boldenes in the day of iudgement: for as he is, euen so are we in this worlde.

18 There is no feare in loue, but perfect loue casteth out feare: for feare hath paine: and he that feareth, is not perfect in loue.

19 We loue him, because he loued vs first.

20 If any man say, I loue God, and hate his brother, he is a liar: for how can he that loueth not his brother who he hath seene, loue God whom he hath not seene?

Iohn.13.34 and 15.12. 21 *And this commandement haue we of him, that he that loueth God, should loue his brother also.

CHAP. V.

1 He sheweth that brotherly loue and faith are things inseparable: 10 And that there is no faith towards God, but by beleeuing in Christ: 14 Hence proceedeth calling vpon God with assurance, 16 and also that our prayers be auaileable for our brethren.

1 Whosoeuer beleeueth that Iesus is that Christ, is borne of God, & euerie one that loueth him, which begate, loueth him also which is begotten of him.

2 In this we knowe that we loue the children of God, when we loue God, and keepe his commaundements.

Mat.11.30 3 For this is the loue of God that we keepe his commandements: and his * commandements are not burdenous.

4 For all that is borne of God, ouercōmeth this world: and this is that victorie that hath ouercome this world, *euen* our faith.

1.Cor.15.57. 5 *Who is it that ouercommeth this worlde, but he which beleeueth that Iesus is that Sonne of God?

6 This is that Iesus Christ that came by water & blood: not by water onely, but by water and blood: and it is that Spirit, that beareth witnes: for that Spirit is trueth.

7 For there are three, which beare recorde in heauen, the Father, the Word, and the holy Ghost: and these three are one.

8 And

8 And there are three, which beare record in the earth, the ſpirit and the water and the bloud: and theſe three agree in one.

9 If we receiue the witnes of men, the witnes of God is greater: for this is the witnes of God, which he teſtified of his Sonne.

10 * He that beleeueth in that Sonne of God, hath the witnes in him ſelfe: he that beleeueth not God, hath made him a lyar, becauſe he beleeued not the record, that God witneſſed of that his Sonne. *Iohn.3.36.*

11 And this is that record, *to wit*, that God hath giuen vnto vs eternall life, and this life is in that his Sonne.

12 He that hath that Sõne, hath that life: and he that hath not that Sonne of God, hath not that life.

13 Theſe things haue I written vnto you, that beleeue in the Name of that Sonne of God, that ye may know that ye haue eternall life, and that ye may beleeue in the Name of that Sonne of God.

14 And this is that aſſurance, that we haue in him, * that if we aske any thing according to his will, he heareth vs. *Chap.3.22.*

15 And if we knowe that he heareth vs, whatſoeuer we aske, we knowe that we haue the petitions that we haue deſired of him.

16 If any man ſee his brother ſinne a ſinne that is not vnto death, let him aske, and he ſhall giue him life for thē that ſinne not vnto death. * There is a ſinne vnto death: I ſay not that thou ſhouldeſt pray for it. *Mat.12.31. mar.3.29.*

17 All vnrighteouſnes is ſinne, but there is a ſinne not vnto death.

18 We know that whoſoeuer is borne of God, ſinneth not: but he that is begotten of God, keepeth him ſelfe, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

19 We knowe that we are of God, and this whole world lyeth in wickednes.

20 But we knowe that that Sonne of God is * come, and hath giuen vs a minde to knowe him, which is true: and we are *in him* that is true, *that is*, in that his Sonne Ieſus Chriſt: this ſame is that verie God, and that eternall life. *Luk.24.45.*

21 Litle children, keepe your ſelues from idoles, Amen.

THE SECOND EPISTLE OF IOHN.

1 This Epistle is written to a woman of great renowme, 4 who brought vp her children in the feare of God: 6 he exhorteth her to continue in Christian charitie, 7 that she accompanie not with Antichrists, 10 but auoide them.

1 THe Elder to the elect Lady, and her children, whom I loue in the trueth: and not I onely, but also all that haue knoune the trueth,

2 For the truethes sake which dwelleth in vs, and shalbe with vs for euer.

3 Grace be with you, mercie and peace from God the Father, and from the Lorde Iesus Christ the Sonne of the Father, with trueth and loue.

4 I reioyced greatly, that I founde of thy children walking in trueth, as we haue receiued a commaundement of the Father.

5 And now beseeche I thee, Lady, (not as writing a new commandement vnto thee, but that same which we had from the beginning) that we * loue one another.

Iohn 15.12

6 And this is that loue, that we should walke after his commandements. This commaundement is, that as ye haue heard from the beginning, ye should walke in it.

7 For many deceiuers are entred into this worlde, which confesse not that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh. He that is such one, is a deceiuer and an Antichrist.

8 Looke to your selues, that we lose not the thinges which we haue done, but that we may receiue a full reward.

9 Whosoeuer transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God. He that continueth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father & the Sonne.

10 If there come any vnto you, and bring not this doctrine, * receiue him not to house, neither bid him, God speede:

Rom. 16.17

11 For he that biddeth him, God speede, is partaker of his euill

euill deedes. Although I had many things to write vnto you, yet I would not *write* with paper and ynck: but I trust to come vnto you, & speake mouth to mouth, that our ioye may be full.

14 The sonnes of thine elect sister greete thee, Amen.

THE THIRD EPISTLE OF IOHN.

1 *He commendeth Gaius for hospitalitie: 9 and reprehendeth Diotrephes for vainglorie: 10 he exhorteth Gaius to cõtinue in well doing: 12 and in the end commendeth Demetrius.*

1 THE Elder vnto the beloued Gaius whom I loue in the trueth.

2 Beloued, I wishe chiefly that thou prosperedst and faredst well as thy soule prospereth.

3 For I reioyced greatly when the brethren came, and testified of the trueth that is in thee, how thou walkest in the trueth.

4 I haue no greater ioye then these, *that is*, to heare that my sonnes walke in veritie.

5 Beloued, thou doest faithfully, whatsoeuer thou doest to the brethren, and to strangers,

6 Which haue witnes of thy loue before the Churches. Whome if thou bringest on their iourney as it beseemeth according to God, thou shalt do well.

7 Because that for his Names sake they went forth, and tooke nothing of the Gentiles.

8 We therefore ought to receiue such, that we might be helpers to the trueth.

9 I wrote vnto the Church: but Diotrephes which loueth to haue the preeminẽce among them, receiueth vs not.

10 Wherefore if I come, I will call to your remembrance his deedes which he doeth prattling against vs with malicious wordes, and not therewith content, neither he himselfe receiueth the brethrẽ, but forbiddeth them that would, and thrusteth them out of the Church.

11 Beloued, follow not that which is euill, but that which is good: he that doeth well, is of God: but he that doth euill, hath not seene God.

12 Demetrius hath good reporte of all men, and of the trueth it selfe: yea, and we our selues beare recorde, & ye knowe that our recorde is true.

13 I haue many things to write: but I wil not with yncke and pen write vnto thee:

14 For I trust I shall shortly see thee, and we shal speake mouth to mouth. Peace *be* with thee. The friendes salute thee. Greete the friendes by name.

THE GENERAL EPISTLE OF IVDE.

3 He warneth the godly to take heede of such men 4 that make the grace of God a cloke for their wantonnes, 5 and that they shal not scape vnpunished for the contempt of that grace, 6. 7 he proueth by three examples: 14 and alleageth the prophecie of Enoch: 20 Finally he sheweth the godly a meane to ouerthrowe all the snares of those deceiuers.

1 IVde a seruant of IESVS CHRIST, and brother of Iames, to them which are called and sanctified of God the Father, and reserued to Iesus Christ:

2 Mercy vnto you, and peace and loue be multiplied.

3 Beloued, when I gaue all diligence to write vnto you of the common saluation, it was needfull for me to write vnto you to exhort you, that ye should earnestly contend for *the maintenāce* of the faith, which was once giuen vnto the Saintes.

4 For there are certaine mē crept in, which were before of olde ordeined to this condemnation: vngodly men *they are* which turne the grace of our God into wantonnes, and * denie God the onely Lord, and our Lorde Iesus Christ.

2.Pet.2.1.

5 I wil therefore put you in remembrance, forasmuch as ye once knewe this, how that the Lord after that he had deliuered the people out of Egypt, * destroyed them afterward which beleeued not.

Nū. 14.37.

2.Pet.2.4. 6 The * Angels also which kept not their first estate, but left their owne habitation, he hath reserued in euerlasting chaines vnder darkenes vnto the iudgement of the great day.

7 As * Sodom and Gomorrhe, and the cities about them, which in like maner as they did, committed fornication, and folowed ſtrange fleſhe, are ſet forth for an enſample, and ſuffer the vengeance of eternall fire. *Gen.19.24.*

8 Likewiſe notwithſtanding theſe ſleepers alſo defile the fleſh, and deſpiſe gouernement, and ſpeake euill of them that are in authoritie.

9 Yet Michael the Archangel, when he ſtroue againſt the deuill, and diſputed about the bodie of Moſes, durſt not blame him with curſed ſpeaking, but ſaid, The Lord rebuke thee.

10 But theſe ſpeake euil of thoſe things, which they know not: and whatſoeuer thinges they knowe naturally, as beaſtes, which are without reaſon, in thoſe thinges they corrupt them ſelues.

11 Wo *be* vnto them: for they haue folowed the way* of Cain, and are caſt away by the deceite * of Balaams wages, and periſh in the gainſaying * of Core. *Gen.4.8. Num.22.23 2.Pet.2.15.*

12 Theſe are rockes in your feaſts of charitie when they feaſt with you, without all feare, feeding them ſelues: * cloudes *they are* without water, caried about of windes, corrupt trees, *and* without fruite, twiſe dead, *and* plucked vp by the rootes. *Num.16.24 2.Pet.2.17*

13 *They are* the raging waues of the ſea, ſoming out their owne ſhame: *they are* wandring ſtarres, to whom is reſerued the blackenes of darkenes for euer.

14 And Enoch alſo the ſeuenth from Adam, prophecied of ſuch, ſaying, * Beholde, the Lord commeth with thouſands of his Saintes, *Reuel.1.7.*

15 To giue iudgement againſt al men, & to rebuke al the vngodly among them of all their wicked deedes, which they haue vngodly committed, & of all their cruel ſpeakings, which wicked ſinners haue ſpoken againſt him.

16 Theſe *are* murmurers, cõplainers, walking after their owne luſts: * whoſe monthes ſpeake proude things, hauing mens perſons in admiratiõ, becauſe of aduantage. *Pſal.17.10*

17 But, ye beloued, remember the wordes which were ſpoken before of the Apoſtles of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt,

18 How that they tolde you that there ſhould be mockers * in the laſt time, which ſhoulde walke after their owne vngodly luſtes. *1.Tim.4.3. 2.Tim.3.1*

19 Theſe are they that ſeparate them ſelues from other, *2.Pet.3.3.*

naturall, hauing not the Spirit.
20 But, ye beloued, edifie your ſelues in your moſt holy faith, praying in the holy Ghoſt.
21 And keepe your ſelues in the loue of God, looking for the mercie of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt, vnto eternall life.
22 And haue compaſſion of ſome, in putting difference:
23 And other ſaue with feare, pulling thē out of the fire, & hate euen that garment which is ſpotted by the fleſh.
24 Now vnto him that is able to keepe you, that ye fall not, and to preſent you tantles before the preſence of his glorie with ioye,
25 *That is*, to God onely wiſe, our Sauiour, *be* glorie, and maieſtie, and dominion, and power, both now and for euer, Amen.

THE REVELATION OF IOHN THE DIVINE.

CHAP. I.

1 *He declareth what kinde of doctrine is here handled, & cuen his, that is the beginning and ending.* 12 *Then the myſteries of the ſeuen candleſticks and ſtarres* 20 *is expounded.*

1 THe reuelation of Ieſus Chriſt, which God gaue vnto him, to ſhewe vnto his ſeruāts things which muſt ſhortly be done: which he ſēt, & ſhewed by his Angel vnto his ſeruāt Iohn,
2 Who bare record of the worde of God, and of the teſtimonie of Ieſus Chriſt, & of al things that he ſawe.
3 Bleſſed *is he* that readeth, and they that heare the wordes of this prophecie, & keepe thoſe things which are writtē therin: for the time is at hand.
4 Iohn, to the ſeuen Churches which are in Aſia, Grace be with you, and peace from him Which * is, and Which was, and Which is to come, & from the ſeuen Spirits which are before his Throne.
5 And from Ieſus Chriſt, *which is* that * faithful witneſſe, and * that firſt begotten of the dead, and that Prince of the Kings of the earth, vnto him that loued vs, and waſhed vs from our ſinnes in his * blood,

Exod. 3. 14. Pſa. 89. 38. Iſa. 44. 6. & 48. 12.
Coloſ. 1. 18. Heb. 9. 14. 1 Pet. 1. 19. 1 Iohn 1. 9.

6 And

6 And made vs* Kings and Priests vnto God euen his Father, to him *I say* be glorie, and dominion for euermore, Amen. 1.Pet.2.5.

7 Behold, he commeth with * cloudes, and euerie eye shal see him, *yea*, euen they which pearced him through: and all kindreds of the earth shall waile before him, Euen so, Amen. Ioh.19.34. mat.24.30. iude.14.

8 I *am* Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending saith the Lord, Which is, and Which was, and Which is to come, *euen* the Almightie. Chap.21.6. and.22.13.

9 I Iohn, euen your brother, and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdome and patience of Iesus Christ, was in the yle called Patmos, for the worde of God, & for the witnessing of Iesus Christ.

10 And I was *rauished* in spirit on the Lords day, & heard behinde me a great voyce, as it had bene of a trumpet.

11 Saying, I am Alpha & Omega, that first and that last: & that which thou seest, write in a booke, & send it vnto the seuen Churches which are in Asia, vnto Ephesus, & vnto Smyrna, and vnto Pergamus, and vnto Thyatira, and vnto Sardis, & vnto Philadelphia, & vnto Laodicea.

12 Then I turned backe to see the voyce, that spake with me: and when I was turned, I sawe seuen golden candlesticks,

13 And in the middes of the seuen candlesticks, one like vnto the Sonne of man, clothed with a garment downe to the feete, and girded about the pappes with a golden girdle.

14 His head, and heares *were* white as white woll, *and as* snowe, and his eyes *were* as a flame of fire,

15 And his feete like vnto fine braise, burning as in a fornace: and his voyce as the sound of many waters,

16 And he had in his right hand seuen starres: and out of his mouth went a sharpe two edged sworde: and his face *shone* as the sunne *shineth in his strength.*

17 And when I sawe him, I fell at *his* feete as dead: then he laide his right hand vpon me, saying vnto me, Feare not: I am that * first and that last, Isa.41.4. and 44.6.

18 And am aliue, but I was dead: and behold, I am aliue for euermore, Amen: and I haue the keyes of hell and of death:

19 Write the things which thou hast seene, & the things which

which are, and the things which shall come hereafter.

20 The mysterie of the seuen starres which thou sawest in my right hande, and the seuen golden candlesticks, *is this*, The seuen starres are the Angels of the seuen Churches: and the seuen candlesticks which thou sawest, are the seuen Churches.

CHAP. II.

1 *Iohn is commaunded to write those things, which the Lord knew necessarie, to the Churches of Ephesus, 8 of the Smyrnians, 12 of Pergamus, 18 and of Thyatira, 25 that they keepe those things which they receiued of the Apostles.*

2 VNto the Angel of the Church of Ephesus write, These things saith he that holdeth the seuen starres in his right hand, and walketh in the middes of the seuen golden candlesticks.

2 I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not beare with them which are euill, and hast examined them which say they are Apostles, and are not, and hast found them lyars.

3 And thou wast burdened, and hast patience, and for my Names sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted.

4 Neuertheles, I haue *somewhat* against thee, because thou hast left thy first loue.

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and doe the first workes: or els I will come against thee shortly, and will remoue thy candlestick out of his place, except thou amende.

6 But this thou hast, that thou hatest the workes of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate.

7 Let him that hath an eare, heare, what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches. To him that ouercommeth, will I giue to eate of the tree of life which is in the middes of the Paradise of God.

8 ¶ And vnto the Angel of the Church of the Smyrnians write, These things saith he that is first, and last, Which was dead and is aliue.

9 I knowe thy workes and tribulation, and pouertie (but thou art rich) & I know the blasphemie of them, which say they are Iewes, and are not, but *are* the Synagogue of Satan.

10 Feare none of those things, which thou shalt suffer: beholde, it shall come to passe, that the deuill shall cast some

some of you into prison, that ye may be tried, & ye shall
have tribulation ten dayes: be thou faithfull vnto the
death, and I will giue thee the crowne of life.
11 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith
to the Churches: He that ouercommeth, shall not be
hurt of the second death.
12 ¶ And to the Angel of the Church which is at Pergamus
write, This saith he which hath that sharpe sword with
two edges.
13 I knowe thy workes and where thou dwellest, *euen*
where Satans throne is, & thou keepest my Name, and
hast not denied my faith, euen in those dayes when An-
tipas my faithfull martyr was slaine among you, where
Satan dwelleth.
14 But I haue a fewe thinges against thee, because thou
hast there them that maintaine the doctrine of * Ba- *Num. 24.
laam, which taught Balac to put a stumbling blocke 14. & 25.1.
before the children of Israel, that they shoulde eate
of thinges sacrificed vnto idoles, and commit fornica-
tion.
15 Euen so hast thou them, that maintaine the doctrine of
the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate.
16 Repent thy selfe, or els I will come vnto thee short-
ly, and will fight against them with the sworde of my
mouth.
17 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith
vnto the Churches. To him that ouercommeth, will I
giue to eate of the Manna that is hid, and will giue him
a white stone, & in the stone a new name written, which
no man knoweth sauing he that receiueth it.
18 ¶ And vnto the Angel of the Church which is at Thy-
atira write, These things saith the Sonne of God, which
hath his eyes like vnto a flame of fyre, and his feete like
fine brasse.
19 I know thy works and thy loue, and seruice, and faith,
and thy patience, and thy works, and that *they are* mo at
the last, then at the first.
20 Notwithstanding, I haue a fewe thinges against thee,
that thou sufferest the woman Iezabel, which calleth
her selfe a prophetesse, to teach and to deceiue my ser-
uants to make them commit fornication, and to eate
meates sacrificed vnto idoles.
21 And

21 And I gaue her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not.

22 Beholde, I wil cast her into a bed, and them that commit fornication with her, into great affliction, except they repent them of their workes.

23 And I will kyll her children with death: and all the Churches shall know that I am he which * searche the reines and hearts: and I will giue vnto euerie one of you according vnto your workes.

1. Sam. 16. 7. psal. 7. 10 ierc. 11. 20. and 17. 10.

24 And vnto you I say, the rest of them of Thyatira, As many as haue not this learning, neither haue knowen the deepnes of Satan (as they speake) I will put vpon you none other burden.

25 But that which ye haue alreadie, holde fast til I come.

26 For he that ouercommeth and keepeth my workes vnto the ende, to him will I giue power ouer nations,

Psal. 2. 9.

27 * And he shall rule them with a rodde of yron: and as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken.

28 Euen as I receiued of my Father, so will I giue him the morning starre.

29 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith to the Churches.

CHAP. III.

1. The fift Epistle sent to the Pastours of the Church of Sardis, 7 of Philadelphia, 14 and of the Laodiceans, 16 that they be not like warme, 19 but repentant to set their Gods glorie.

1 AND write vnto the Angel of the Church which is at Sardis, These things saith he that hath the seuen Spirits of God, and the seuen starres, I knowe thy workes: for thou haste a name that thou liuest, but thou art deade.

2 Be awake and strengthen the thinges which remaine, that are readie to die: for I haue not found thy workes perfite before God.

3 Remember therefore, howe thou hast receiued and heard, and holde fast and repent. * If therefore thou wilt not watch, I will come on thee as a thiefe, & thou shalt not know what houre I will come vpon thee.

Chr. 16. 15. 1. thes. 5. 2. 2. pet. 3. 10.

4 Notwithstanding thou hast a fewe names yet in Sardis, which haue not defiled their garments: and they shal walke with me in white: for they are worthie.

5 He that ouercommeth, shalbe clothed in white araye; and

and I will not put out, his name out of the * booke of life, but I will confesse his name before my Father, and before his Angels. *Chap.* 20.12 *and* 21.27. *phil.* 4.3.

6 Let him that hath an eare, heare, what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

7 ¶And write vnto the Angel of the Church which is of Philadelphia, These things saith he that is Holy, & True, which hath the keye of Dauid, which openeth and no man shutteth, and shutteth and no man openeth,

8 I knowe thy workes: beholde, I haue set before thee an open doore, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength and hast kept my worde, and hast not denied my Name.

9 Beholde, I will make them of the Synagogue of Satan, which call themselues Iewes and are not, but doe lye: beholde, *Isa.* I will make them, that they shall come and worship before thy feete, and shall knowe that I haue loued thee.

10 Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, therefore I will deliuer thee from the houre of tentation, which will come vpon all the worlde, to trie them that dwell vpon the earth.

11 Beholde, I come shortly: holde that which thou hast, that no man take thy crowne.

12 Him that ouercommeth, will I make a pillar in the Temple of my God, & he shall go no more out: & I will write vpon him the Name of my God, and the name of the citie of my God, *which is* the new Hierusalem, which commeth downe out of Heauen from my God, and *I will write vpon him* my new Name.

13 Let him that hath an eare, heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

14 And vnto the Angel of the Church of the Laodiceans write, These things saith Amen, that faithfull and true witnes, that beginning of the creatures of God.

15 I knowe thy workes, that thou art neither colde nor hote: I would thou were colde or hote.

16 Therefore, because thou art luke warme, and neither colde nor hote, it will come to passe, that I shall spewe thee out of my mouth.

17 For thou saist, I am rich & increased with goods, & haue need of nothing, and knowest not how thou art wretched,

ched,and miſerable,and poore,and blinde,and naked.
18 I counſell thee to bie of me golde tryed by the fyre, that thou maieſt be made riche: and white raiment, that thou maieſt be clothed,and that thy filthie nakednes doe not appeare: and anoint thine eyes with eye ſalue,that thou maieſt ſee.
Prou.3.12. hebr.12.5. 19 As many as I loue,* I rebuke and chaſten: be zealous therefore and amende.
20 Beholde,I ſtand at the doore, and knocke. If any man heare my voyce and open the doore,I will come in vnto him,and will ſuppe with him,and he with me.
21 To him that ouercommeth, will I graunt to ſit with me in my throne,euen as I ouercame, and ſit with my Father in his throne.
22 Let him that hath an eare,heare what the Spirit ſaith vnto the Churches.

CHAP. IIII.

1 An other viſion conteining the glorie of Gods Maieſtie: 8 Whith is magnified of the foure beaſtes, 10 and the foure and twenie Elders.

1 AFter this I looked, and beholde,a doore was open in heauen, and the firſt voice which I heard,was as it were of a trumpet talking with me,ſayng, Come vp hither, and I will ſhewe thee thinges which muſt be done hereafter.
2 And immediatly I was *rauiſhed* in the ſpirit,& beholde, a throne was ſet in heauen, & one ſate vpō the throne.
3 And he that ſate,was to looke vpon like vnto a iaſper ſtone,and a ſardine,and there was a rainebow rounde about the throne in ſight like to an emerande.
4 And rounde about the throne were foure and twentie ſeats,and vpon the ſeats I ſaw foure and twentie Elders ſitting,clothed in white raiment,and had on their heads crownes of golde.
5 And out of the throne proceeded lightnings, and thundrings, and voyces, and there were ſeuen lampes of fyre burning before the throne, which are the ſeuen ſpirits of God.
6 And before the throne there was a ſea of glaſſe like vnto cryſtal: and in the middes of the throne,and rounde about the throne were foure beaſtes full of eyes before and behinde.

7 And

7 And the first beast was like a lion, and the second beast like a calfe, and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast was like a flying egle.

8 And the foure beastes had eche one of them sixe wings about him, and they were ful of eyes within, and they ceased not day nor night, saying, Holy, holy, holy Lorde God almightie, Which Was, and Which Is, and Which Is to come.

9 And when those beastes gaue glorye, and honour, and thankes to him that sate on the throne, which liueth for euer and euer,

10 The foure and twentie Elders fell downe before him that sate on the throne, and worshipped him that liueth for euermore, and cast their crownes before the throne saying,

11 Thou art * worthy, O Lord, to receiue glory and honour, and power: for thou hast created all thinges, and for thy willes sake they are, & haue bene created. *Chap. 5. 12.*

CHAP. V.

1 The booke sealed with seuen seales, 3 which none could open, 6 but Lambe of God 9 is thought worthie to open, 12 euen by the consent of all the company of heauen.

1 AND I sawe in the right hand of him that sate vpon the throne, a Booke written within, and on the backside, sealed with seuen seales.

2 And I saw a strong Angel which preached with a loud voyce, Who is worthy to open the booke, and to loose the seales thereof?

3 And no man in heauen, nor in earth, neither vnder the earth, was able to open the Booke neither to looke thereon.

4 Then I wept much, because no man was founde worthie to open, and to reade the Booke, neither to looke thereon.

5 And one of the Elders said vnto me, Weepe not: behold, that * Lion which is of the tribe of Iuda, that roote of Dauid, hath obteined to open the Booke, and to loose the seuen seales thereof. *Gen. 49. 9.*

6 Then I beheld, and lo, in the middes of the throne, and of the foure beastes, and in the middes of the Elders, stoode a Lambe as though he had bene killed, which had seuen hornes, and seuen eyes, which are the seuen spirits

of God, sent into all the world.

7 And he came and tooke the Booke out of the right hand of him that sate vpon the throne.

8 And when he had taken the Booke, the foure beastes and the foure and twentie Elders fel downe before the Lambe, hauing euery one harpes and golden vials full of odoures, which are the prayers of the Saintes.

9 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the Booke, and to open the seales thereof, because thou wast killed, & hast redeemed vs to God by thy blood out of euery kinred and tongue, and people, and nation,

10 And hast made vs vnto our God, * Kings and Priests, and we shall reigne on the earth.

Chap. 1. 6. 1. pet. 2. 9.

11 Then I beheld, and I heard the voyce of many Angels round about the throne, & *about* the beasts and the Elders, and there *were* * ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousand thousands,

Dan. 7. 10.

12 Saying with a loude voyce, Worthy is the Lambe that was killed to receiue power, and riches, and wisdome, & strength, and honour, and glorie, and praise.

13 And all the creatures which are in heauen, and on the earth, and vnder the earth, and in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying, Praise, & honour, and glory, and power *be* vnto him, that sitteth vpon the throne, and vnto the Lambe for euermore.

14 And the foure beastes said, Amen, and the foure and twentie Elders fel downe and worshipped him that liueth for euermore.

CHAP. VI.

1 The Lambe openeth the first seale of the booke, 3 the second, 5 the third, 7 the fourth, 9 the fifth, 12 and the sixth, and then arise murders, famine, pestilence, enteryes of Saintes, earthquakes, and diuerse strange sights in heauen.

1 AFter, I beheld when the Lambe had opened one of the seales, and I heard one of the foure beastes say, as it were the noyse of thunder, Come and see.

2 Therefore I beheld, and lo, there was a white horse, and he that sate on him had a bow, and a crowne was geuen vnto him, and he went forth conquering that he might ouercome.

3 And when he had opened the second seale, I heard the

second beast say, Come and see.

4 And there went out another horse, *that was* red, and power was giuen to him that sate theron, to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another, & there was giuen vnto him a great sworde.

5 And when he had opened the third seale, I heard the third beast say, Come and see. Then I beheld, and lo, a blacke horse, and he that sate on him had balances in his hand.

6 And I heard a voyce in the middes of the foure beasts say, A measure of wheat for a peny, and three measures of barly for a peny, and oyle, and wine hurt thou not.

7 And when he had opened the fourth seale, I heard the voyce of the fourth beast say, Come and see.

8 And I looked, and beholde, a pale horse, and his name that sate on him was Death, and Hell followed after him, and power was giuen vnto them ouer the fourth parte of the earth, to kill with sworde, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beastes of the earth.

9 And when he had opened the fift seale, I sawe vnder the altar the soules of them that were killed for the word of God, and for the testimonie which they mainteined.

10 And they cryed with a loude voyce, saying, How long, Lord, which art holy and true! doest not thou iudge & auenge our blood on them that dwel on the earth?

11 And long white robes were giuen vnto euery one, and it was said vnto them, that they should rest for a little season vntil their fellowe seruants, and their brethren that should be killed euen as they were, were fulfilled.

12 And I beheld when he had opened the sixt seale, and lo, there was a great earthquake, and the sunne was as blacke as sackecloth of heare, and the moone was like blood.

13 And the starres of heauen fell vnto the earth, as a figge tree casteth her greene figges when it is shaken of a mightie winde.

14 And heauen departed away, as a scrole when it is rolled, and euery mountaine and yle were moued out of their places.

15 And the Kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chiefe captaines, & the mightie men,

and euery bondeman,& euery free man,hid them selues in dennes, and among the rockes of the mountaines,

Isa.2.19. hose.10.8. luk.23.30.

16 And said to the mountaines and rockes,* Fall on vs,& hide vs from the presence of him that sitteth on the throne,and from the wrath of the Lambe.

17 For the great day of his wrath is come, and who can stand?

CHAP. VII.

1 The Angels comming to hurt the earth, 3 are stayed vntill the Elect of the Lord 5 of all tribes were sealed. 13 Such as suffred persecution for Christes sake, 16 haue great felicitie, 17 and ioy.

1 AND after that, I sawe foure Angels stand on the foure corners of the earth,holding the foure windes of the earth, that the windes shoulde not blowe on the earth, neither on the sea,neither on any tree.

2 And I saw another Angel come vp from the East, which had the seale of the liuing God, & he cryed with a loud voyce to the foure Angels to whom power was giuen to hurt the earth,and the sea,saying,

3 Hurt ye not the earth,neither the sea,neither the trees, til we haue sealed the seruants of our God in their foreheades.

4 And I heard the number of them, which were sealed, and there *were* sealed an hundreth and foure and fourty thousand of al the tribes of the children of Israel.

5 Of the tribe of Iuda were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Ruben were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelue thousand.

6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Nephthali were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed twelue thousand.

7 Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Leui were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed twelue thousande. Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelue thousand.

8 Of the tribe of Ioseph were sealed twelue thousand. Of the tribe of Beniamin were sealed twelue thousand.

9 After these things,I beheld,and lo, a great multitude, which no man could number,of all nations and kinreds, and people,and tongues, stoode before the throne, and before the Lambe, clothed with long white robes, and

palmes

palmes in their handes.

10 And they cryed with a loude voyce, saying, Saluation *commeth* of our God, that sitteth vpon the throne, and of the Lambe.

11 And al the Angels stoode rounde about the throne, and *about* the Elders, and the foure beastes, and they fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God,

12 Saying, Amen. Praise, and glorye, and wisdome, and thankes, and honour, and power, and might, *be* vnto our God for euermore, Amen.

13 And one of the Elders spake, saying vnto me, What are these which are araied in long white robes? and whence came they?

14 And I said vnto him, Lord, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they, which came out of great tribulation, and haue washed their long robes and haue made their long robes white in the blood of the Lambe.

15 Therefore are they in the presence of the throne of God, and serue him day and night in his Temple, and he that sitteth on the throne, wil dwel among them.

16 * They shal hunger no more, neither thirst any more, neither shal the sunne light on them, neither any heat. *Isai.49.10.*

17 For the Lambe, which is in the middes of the throne, shal gouerne them, * & shal lead thē vnto the liuely foūtaines of waters, & God shal wipe away all teares from their eyes. *Chap.21.4. Isa.25.8.*

CHAP. VIII.

1 After the opening of the seuenth seale, 3 the Saints prayers are offred vp with odoures. 4 The seuen Angels come forth with trumpets. 7 The foure first blowe, and fire falleth on the earth, 8 the sea is turned into blood, 10, 11 the waters waxe bitter, 12 and the starres are darkened.

1 AND when he had opened the seuenth seale, there was silence in heauen about halfe an houre.

2 And I saw the seuen Angels, which stoode before God, and to them were giuen seuen trumpets.

3 Then another Angel came and stoode before the Altar hauing a golden censer, and much odoures was giuen vnto him, that he should offer with the prayers of all Saintes vpon the golden altar, which is before the throne.

4 And the smoke of the odours with the prayers of the

Saintes, went vp before God, out of the Angels hand.

5 And the Angel tooke the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and caste it into the earth, and there were voyces, and thundrings, and lightnings, and earthquake.

6 Then the seuen Angels, which had the seuen trumpets, prepared themselues to blowe the trumpets.

7 So the first Angell blewe the trumpet, and there was haile and fire, mingled with bloode, and they were cast into the earth, and the third part of trees was burnt, & all greene grasse was burnt.

8 And the second Angel blew the trumpet, and as *it were* a great mountaine, burning with fire, was cast into the sea, and the third part of the sea became blood.

9 And the third part of the creatures, which were in the sea, and had life, died, and the third part of shippes were destroyed.

10 Then the third Angell blew the trumpet, and there fell a great starre from heauen burning like a torche, and it fell into the third part of the riuers, & into the fountaines of waters.

11 And the name of the starre is called wormewoode: therefore the third part of the waters became wormewoode, and many men dyed of the waters, because they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth Angel blew the trumpet, and the third part of the sunne was smitten, and the third parte of the moone, and the third parte of the starres, so that the third parte of them was darkened: and the day *was smitten*, that the third part of it could not shine, & likewise the night.

13 And I beheld, and heard one Angel flying through the middes of heauen, saying with a loud voyce, Wo, wo, wo to the inhabitants of the earth, because of the soundes to come of the trumpet of the three Angels, which were yet to blow the trumpets.

CHAP. IX.

1 The fifth Angel bloweth his trumpet, 3 and shortly locustes come out. 13 The sixt Angel bloweth, 16 and bringeth forth horsemen, 20 to destroy mankinde.

1 AND the fifth Angel blew the trumpet, & I saw a starre fall from heauen vnto the earth, and to him was giuen the key of the bottomles pit.

2 And

2 And he opened the bottomles pit, and there arose the smoke of the pit, as the smoke of a great fornace, & the sunne, & the aire were darkned by the smoke of the pit.

3 And there came out of the smoke Locustes vpon the earth, and vnto them was giuen power, as the scorpions of the earth haue power.

4 And it was commanded them, that they should not hurt the grasse of the earth, neither any greene thing, neither any tree: but onely those men which haue not the seale of God in their foreheades.

5 And to them was commanded that they should not kil them, but that they should be vexed fiue moneths, and that their paine should be as the paine that commeth of a scorpion, when he hath stung a man.

6 * Therefore in those dayes shal men seeke death, and shal not finde it, and shal desire to die, and death shall flee from them. *Chap. 6. 8. Isai. 2. 19. Hose. 10. 8.*

7 And the forme of the locusts *were* like vnto horses prepared vnto battell, and on their heade *were* as it *were* crownes, like vnto gold, and their faces *were* like the faces of men.

8 And they had heare as the heare of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of lyons.

9 And they had habbergions, like to habbergions of yron: and the sound of their winges *was* like the sound of charets when many horses runne vnto battell.

10 And they had tayles like vnto scorpions, and there were stings in their tayles, and their power was to hurt men fiue moneths.

11 And they haue a King ouer them, which is the Angell of the bottomles pit, whose name in Hebrewe is Abaddon, & in Greke he is named Apollyon, *that is, destroying.*

12 One woe is past, *and* beholde, yet two woes come after this.

13 ¶ Then the sixt Angel blew the trumpet, and I heard a voyce from the foure hornes of the golden altar, which is before God,

14 saying to the sixt Angel, which had the trumpet, Loose the foure Angels, which are bound in the great riuer Euphrates.

15 And the foure Angels were loosed, which were prepared at an houre, at a day, at a moneth, & at a yeare, to slay

the third part of men.

16 And the number of horsemen of warre were twentie thousand times ten thousand: for I heard the number of them.

17 And thus I saw the horses in a vision, and them that sate on them, hauing fierie habbergions, and of Iacinth, and of brimstone, and the heades of the horses were as the heades of lyons: and out of their mouthes went forth fire and smoke and brimstone.

18 Of these three was the third parte of men killed, *that is*, of the fire, and of the smoke, and of the brimstone, which came out of their mouthes.

19 For their power is in their mouthes, & in their tailes: for their tailes were like vnto serpents, and had heads wherewith they hurt.

20 And the remnant of the men which were not killed by these plagues, repented not of the workes of their hands, that they should not worship deuils, and * idoles of golde and of siluer, and of brasse, and of stone, and of wood, which neither can see, neither heare nor go. *Psal. 115.4 & 135.15.*

21 Also they repented not of their murther, and of their sorcerie, neither of their fornication, nor of their theft.

CHAP. X.

1 Another Angel appeareth clothed with a clonde, 2 hauing a booke open, 3 and cryeth out. 8 A voyce from heauen commaudeth Iohn to take the booke: 10 He eateth it.

1 AND I saw another mightie Angell come downe from heauen, clothed with a clonde, and the raine bow vpon his head, and his face was as the sunne, and his feete as pillars of fire.

2 And he had in his hand a litle booke open, & he put his right foote vpon the sea, and his left on the earth,

3 And cryed with a loud voyce, as when a lyon roareth, and when he had cryed, seuen thunders vttered their voyces.

4 And when the seuen thunders had vttered their voyces, I was about to write: but I heard a voyce frō heauen saying vnto me, Seale vp those things which the seuen thunders haue spoken, and write them not.

5 And the Angel which I sawe stand vpon the sea, and vpon the earth, lift vp his hand to heauen,

6 And sware by him that liueth for euermore, which created

ated heauen, and the things that therein are, and the earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which therein are, that time shoulde be no more.

7 But in the daies of the voice of the seuenth Angel, when he shall beginne to blowe the trumpet, euen the mysterie of God shalbe finished, as he hath declared to his seruants the Prophets.

8 And the voyce which I heard from heauen, spake vnto me againe, and said, Go and take the litle booke which is open in the hand of the Angel, which standeth vpon the sea and vpon the earth.

9 So I went vnto the Angel, and said to him, Giue me the litle booke. And he said vnto me, Take it, and eate it vp, and it shall make thy bellie bitter, but it shalbe in thy mouth as sweete as honie.

10 Then I tooke the litle booke out of the Angels hand, and ate it vp, and it was in my mouth as sweete as honie: but when I had eaten it, my bellie was bitter.

11 And he said vnto me, Thou must prophecie againe among the people and nations, and tongues, and to many Kings.

CHAP. XI.

1 The temple is commanded to be measured. 3 The Lord stirreth vp two witnesses: 7 whome the beast murthereth, 9 and no man buryeth them. 11 God raiseth them to life, 12 and calleth them vp to heauen. 13 The wicked are terrified. 15 By the trumpet of the seuenth Angel, the resurrection 18 and iudgement is described.

1 THen was giuen me a reede, like vnto a rodde, and the Angel stoode by, saying, Rise and mete the Temple of God, & the altar, and them that worship therein.

2 But the court which is without the temple cast out, and mete it not: for it is giuen vnto the Gentiles, and the holie citie shall they treade vnder foote, two and fourtie moneths.

3 But I will giue power vnto my two witnesses, and they shal prophecie a thousand two hundreth and threescore daies, clothed in sackcloth.

4 These are two olme trees, and two candlesticks, standing before the God of the earth.

5 And if anie man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out

of their mouthes, and deuoureth their enemies: for if anie man would hurt them, thus must he be killed.

6 These haue power to shut heauen, that it raine not in the daies of their prophecying, and haue power ouer waters to turne them into blood, and to smite the earth with all maner plagues, as often as they wil.

7 And when they haue finished their testimonie, the beast that commeth out of the bottomles pit, shal make warre against them, and shall ouercome them, and kill them.

8 And their corpses shall lie in the streetes of the great citie, which spiritually is called Sodom & Egypt, where our Lord also was crucified.

9 And they of the people and kindreds, and tongues, and Gentiles shall see their corpses three daies & an half, and shall not suffer their carkeises to be put in graues.

10 And they that dwell vpon the earth, shall reioyce ouer them and be glad, and shall send giftes one to another: for these two Prophets vexed them that dwelt on the earth.

11 But after three daies and an halfe, the spirit of life *comming* from God, shall enter into them, and they shall stand vp vpon their feete: and great feare shall come vpon them which sawe them.

12 And they shal heare a great voice from heauen saying vnto them, Come vp hither. And they shal ascend vp to heauen in a cloude, and their enemies shal see them.

13 And the same houre shal there be a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the citie shall fall, & in the earthquake shal be slaine in number seuen thousand: and the remnant were sore feared, and gaue glorie to the God of heauen.

14 The second woe is past, *and* beholde the third woe will come anon.

15 And the seuenth Angel blewe the trumpet, and there were great voyces in heauen, saying, The kingdomes of this world are our Lords, and his Christs, and he shall reigne for euermore.

16 Then the foure and twentie Elders, which sate before God on their seates, fell vpon their faces, and worshipped God,

17 Saying, We giue thee thankes, Lord God almightie,

Which

Which art, and Which wast, and Which art to come: for thou hast receiued thy great might, and hast obteined thy kingdome.

18 And the Gentiles were angrie, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be iudged, & that thou shouldest giue reward vnto thy seruants the Prophets, and to the Saintes, and to them that feare thy Name, to small and great, and shouldest destroye them, which destroy the earth.

19 Then the Temple of God was opened in heauen, and there was seene in his Temple the Arke of his couenant: and there were lightnings, and voyces, and thundrings, and earthquake, and much haile.

CHAP. XII.

1 A woman appeareth trauelling with childe, 4 whose childe the Dragon would deuoure, 7 but Michael ouercommeth him, 9 and casteth him out, 13 and the more he is cast downe and vanquished, the more fiercely he exerciseth his subtilties.

1 AND there appeared a great wonder in heauen: A woman clothed with the sunne, and the moone was vnder her feete, and vpon her head a crowne of twelue starres.

2 And she was with childe, and cried trauelling in birth, and was pained readie to be deliuered.

3 And there appeared another wonder in heauen: for beholde, a great red dragon hauing seuen heads, and ten hornes, and seuen crownes vpon his heads:

4 And his taile drewe the third part of the starres of heauen, & cast them to the earth. And the dragon stoode before the woman, which was readie to be deliuered, to deuoure her childe when she had brought it forth.

5 So she brought forth a man childe, which should rule all nations with a rod of yron: and that her childe was taken vp vnto God and to his throne.

6 And the woman fled into wildernes where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feede her there a thousand, two hundreth and three score daies.

7 And there was a battel in heauen, Michael and his Angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon fought & his angels.

8 But they preuayled not, neither was their place found

found anie more in heauen.

9 And the great dragon, that olde serpent, called the deuil & Satan, was cast out, which deceiueth al the world: he was *euen* cast into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

10 Then I heard a loude voyce in heauen, saying, Now is saluation, and strength, and the kingdome of our God, & the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast downe, which accused them before our God day and night.

11 But they ouercame him by that blood of that Lambe, and by that word of their testimonie, and they loued not their liues vnto the death.

12 Therefore reioyce, ye heauens, and ye that dwell in them. Wo to the inhabitants of the earth, & of the sea: for the deuil is come downe vnto you, which hath great wrath, knowing that he hath but a short time.

13 And when the dragon sawe that he was cast vnto the earth, he persecuted the woman which had brought forth the man *childe*.

14 But to the woman were giuen two wings of a great egle, that she might flie into the wildernes, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and halfe a time, from the presence of the serpent.

15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water after the woman, like a flood, that he might cause her to be caried away of the floude.

16 But the earth holpe the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swalowed vp the floude, which the dragon had cast out of his mouth.

17 Then the dragon was wroth with the woman, & went and made warre with the remnant of her seede, which keepe the commandements of God, and haue the testimonie of Iesus Christ.

18 And I stoode on the *sea sande*.

CHAP. XIII.

1 The beast with manie heads is described, 8 which draweth the most part of the world to idolatrie. 11 The other beast rising out of the earth, 15 giueth power vnto him.

1 AND I sawe a beast rise out of the sea, hauing seuen heads, and ten hornes, and vpon his hornes were ten crownes, and vpon his heads the name of blasphemie.

2 And

2 And the beaſt which I ſawe, was like a Leopard, and his feete like a beares, and his mouth as the mouth of a lyon: and the dragon gaue him his power & his throne, and great authoritie.

3 And I ſawe one of his heads as *it were* wounded to death, but his deadlie wound was healed, and all the world wondred *and* followed the beaſt.

4 And they worſhipped the dragon which gaue power vnto the beaſt, and they worſhipped the beaſt, ſaying, Who is like vnto the beaſt! who is able to warre with him!

5 And there was giuen vnto him a mouth, that ſpake great things and blaſphemies, and power was giuen vnto him, to do two and fourtie moneths.

6 And he opened his mouth vnto blaſphemie againſt God, to blaſpheme his Name, and his tabernacle, & them that dwel in heauen.

7 And it was giuen vnto him to make warre with the Saintes, and to ouercome them, and power was giuen him ouer euerie kinred, and tongue, and nation.

8 Therefore all that dwell vpon the earth, ſhall worſhip him, whoſe names are not written in the Booke of life of that Lambe, which was ſlaine from the beginning of the worlde.

9 If anie man haue an eare, let him heare.

10 If anie leade into captiuitie, he ſhall go into captiuitie: * if anie kill with a ſword, he muſt be killed by a ſword: here is the patience & the faith of the Saintes. *Gen. 9. 6. Mat. 26. 52.*

11 And I behelde an other beaſt comming vp out of the earth, which had two hornes like the Lambe, but he ſpake like the dragon.

12 And he did al that the firſt beaſt could do before him, & he cauſed the earth, & them which dwell therein, to worſhip the firſt beaſt, whoſe deadly wound was healed.

13 And he did great wonders, ſo that he made fire to come downe from heauen on the earth, in the ſight of men,

14 And deceiued them that dwell on the earth by the ſignes, which were permitted to him to do in the ſight of the beaſt, ſaying to them that dwel on the earth, that they ſhould make the image of the beaſt, which had the wound of a ſword, and did liue.

15 And

15 And it was permitted to him to giue a ſpirit vnto the image of the beaſt, ſo that the image of the beaſt ſhould ſpeake, & ſhould cauſe that as manie as would not worſhip the image of the beaſt, ſhould be killed.

16 And he made all, both ſmal and great, riche and poore, free and bonde, to receiue a marke in their right hand or in their foreheads.

17 And that no man might bye or ſell, ſaue he that had the marke, or the name of the beaſt, or the nomber of his name.

18 Here is wiſdome. Let him that hath wit, count the nomber of the beaſt. For it is the nomber of a man, and his nomber is ſix hundreth, three ſcore and ſixe.

CHAP. XIIII.

1 The Lamb ſtandeth on mount Sion, 4 with his cheſt worſhippers. 6 One Angel preacheth the Goſpel: 8 an other foretelleth the fall of Babylon: 9 the third warneth that the beaſt be auoided. 13 A voice from heauen pronounceth them happie who die in the Lord. 16 The Lords ſickle is thruſt into the harueſt, 18 and into the vintage.

1 THen I looked, and lo, a Lambe ſtoode on mount Sion, and with him an hundreth, fourtie and foure thouſand, hauing his Fathers Name written in their foreheads.

2 And I heard a voice from heauen, as the ſound of manie waters, and as the ſound of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harpes.

3 And they ſung as it were a new ſong before the throne, and before the foure beaſts, and the Elders: and no man could learne that ſong, but the hundreth, fourtie and foure thouſand, which were bought from the earth.

4 Theſe are they, which are not defiled with women: for they are virgins: theſe followe the Lambe whitherſoeuer he goeth: theſe are bought from men, being the firſt fruites vnto God, and to the Lambe.

5 And in their mouthes was found no guile: for they are without ſpot before the throne of God.

6 ¶ I ſaw another Angel flie in the middes of Heauen, hauing an euerlaſting Goſpel, to preach vnto them that dwell on the earth, and to euerie nation, and kinred, and tongue, and people,

7 *Saying

7 * Saying with a loude voyce, Feare God, and giue glo- *Psal.145.6*
rie to him: for the houre of his iudgement is come: and
worship him that made * heauen and earth, and the sea, *Act.14.15*
and the fountaines of waters.

8 And there followed another Angel, saying, *Babylō that *Chap.18.2.*
great citie is fallen, it is fallen: for she made all nations *Isai.21.9.*
to drinke of the wine of the wrath of her fornication. *Ier.51.8.*

9 ¶And the third Angel followed them, saying with a
loude voice, If anie man worship the beast & his image,
and receiue *his* marke in his forehead, or on his hand,

10 The same shall drinke of the wine of the wrath of
God, yea, of the pure wine, which is powred into the
cuppe of his wrath, and he shalbe tormented in fire and
brimstone before the holie Angels, and before the
Lambe.

11 And the smoke of their torment shal ascend euermore:
and they shal haue no rest day nor night, which worship
the beast and his image, and whosoeuer receiueth the
print of his name.

12 Here is the patience of Saints: here are they that keepe
the commandements of God, and the faith of Iesus.

13 Then I heard a voyce from heauen, saying vnto me,
Write, The dead which die in the Lord, are fully blessed.
Euen so saith the Spirit: for they rest frō their labours,
and their workes follow them.

14 ¶And I looked, and beholde, a white cloude, and vpon
the cloude one sitting like vnto the Sonne of man, hā-
uing on his head a golden crowne, and in his hand a
sharpe sickle.

15 And another Angel came out of the Temple, crying
with a loude voyce to him that sate on the cloude,
* Thrust in thy sickle and reape: for the time is come to *Ioel.3.13.*
reape: for the * haruest of the earth is ripe. *Mat.13.39.*

16 And he that sate on the cloude, thrust in his sickle on
the earth, and the earth was reaped.

17 Then another Angel came out of the temple, which is
in heauen, hauing also a sharpe sickle.

18 And another Angel came out from the altar, which had
power ouer fire, & cried with a loude crie to him that
had the sharpe sickle, and said, Thrust in thy sharpe sic-
kle, and gather the clusters of the vintyard of the earth:
for her grapes are ripe.

19 And

19 And the Angel thrust in his sharpe sickle on the earth, and cut downe the vines of the vineyarde of the earth, and cast them into that great wine presse of the wrath of God.

20 And the wine presse was troden without the citie, and blood came out of the wine presse, vnto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and six hundreth furlongs.

CHAP. XV.

2 The seuen Angels hauing the seuen last plagues. 3 They that conquered the beast, praise God. 6 To the seuen Angels, 7 seuen vialles full of Gods wrath, are deliuered.

1 AND I sawe another signe in heauen, great and marueilous, seuen Angels, hauing the seuen last plagues: for by them is fulfilled the wrath of God.

2 And I saw as *it were* in a glassie sea, mingled with fire; and them that had gotten victorie of the beast, and of his image, and of his marke, and of the number of his name, stand at the glassie sea, hauing the harpes of God,

3 And they sung the song of Moses the seruant of God, and the song of the Lambe, saying, Great and marueilous *are* thy workes, Lord God almightie: iust and true *are* thy * waies, King of Saintes.

Psal.145. 17.

4 * Who shall not feare thee, O Lord, and glorifie thy Name? for thou only *art* holy, and all nations shall come and worship before thee: for thy iudgements are made manifest.

Iere.10.7.

5 And after that, I looked, and beholde, the temple of the tabernacle of testimonie was open in heauen.

6 And the seuen Angels came out of the temple, which had the seuen plagues, clothed in pure and bright linnen, & hauing their breasts girded with golden girdles.

7 And one of the foure beastes gaue vnto the seuen Angels seuen golden vialles ful of the wrath of God, which liueth for euermore.

8 And the Temple was full of the smoke of the glorie of God and of his power, and no man was able to enter into the Temple, til the seuen plagues of the seuen Angels were fulfilled.

CHAP. XVI.

2 & 17 The Angels powre out the seuen vialles of Gods

wrath

wrath giuen vnto them, and so diuers plagues arise in the world, 18 *to terrifie the wicked,* 19 *and the inhabitants of the great citie.*

1 AND I heard a great voyce out of the Temple, saying to the seuen Angels, Go your wayes, and powre out the *seuen* vialles of the wrath of God vpon the earth.

2 And the first went, and powred out his vial vpon the earth: and there fel a noysome, and a grieuous sore vpon the men, which had receiued the marke of the beast, & vpon them which worshipped his image.

3 And the second Angell powred out his vial vpon the sea, and it became as the blood of a dead man: and euery liuing thing died in the sea.

4 And the third Angel powred out his vial vpon the riuers & fountaines of waters, and they became blood.

5 And I heard the Angell of the waters say, Lord, thou art iust, Which art, and Which wast: and Holy, because thou hast iudged these things.

6 For they shed the blood of the Saintes, and Prophets, and therefore hast thou giuen them blood to drinke: for they are worthy.

7 And I heard another out of the Sanctuarie say, Euen so, Lord God almightie, true and righteous are thy iudgements.

8 And the fourthe Angell powred out his viall on the sunne, and it was giuen vnto him to torment men with heat of fire.

9 And men boyled in great heate, and blasphemed the Name of God, which hath power ouer these plagues, & they repented not, to giue him glory.

10 And the fift Angel powred out his vial vpon the throne of the beast, and his kingdome waxed darke, and they gnawed their tongues for sorow,

11 And blasphemed the God of heauen for their paines, & for their sores, and repented not of their workes.

12 And the sixt Angel powred out his vial vpon the great riuer Euphrates, and the water thereof dryed vp, that the way of the Kings of the East should be prepared.

13 And I saw three vncleane spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of that dragon, & out of the mouth of that beast, and out of the mouth of that false prophet.

14 For they are the spirits of deuils, working miracles, so

go vnto the Kings of the earth, and of the whole world, to gather them to the battel of that great daye of God Almightie.

Chap.3.3. mat.24.44. Luk.12.39. 15 (*Behold, I come as a theefe. Blessed is he that watcheth and keepeth his garments, least he walke naked, & men see his filthines.)

16 And they gathered them together into a place called in Hebrew Arma-gedon.

17 ¶ And the seuenth Angel powred out his viall into the ayre: and there came a loude voyce out of the Temple of heauen from the throne, saying, It is done.

18 And there were voyces, and thundrings, & lightnings, and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were vpon the earth, euen so mightye an earthquake.

19 And the great citie was diuided into three partes, & the cities of the nations fell: and that great Babylon came in remembrance before God, * to giue vnto her the cup of the wine of the fiercenes of his wrath. *Iere. 25.15*

20 And euery yle fled away, and the mountaines were not founde.

21 And there fel a great haile, like talents, out of heauen vpon the men, and men blasphemed God, because of the plague of the hayle: for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

CHAP. XVII.

1 That great whore is described, 2 with whome the kings of the earth committed fornication. 6 She is dronken with the blood of Saintes: 7 The mystery of the woman and the beast that caryeth her, expounded: 11 their destruction: 14 The Lambes victorie.

1 THen there came one of the seuen Angels, which had the seuen vials, and talked with me, saying vnto me, Come: I will shewe thee the damnation of the great whore that sitteth vpon many waters,

2 With whome haue committed fornication the Kinges of the earth, and the inhabitants of the earth are dronken with the wine of her fornication.

3 So he caryed me away into the wildernes in the Spirit, and I saw a woman sit vpon a skarlet coloured beast, ful of names of blasphemie, which had seuen heads, and ten hornes.

4 And

4 And the woman was arayed in purple and skarlet, and gilded with gold, and precious stones, and pearles, and had a cup of golde in her hand, full of abominations, and filthines of her fornication.

5 And in her forehead was a name written, A Mysterie, that great Babylon, that mother of whoredomes, and abominations of the earth.

6 And I sawe the woman drunken with the blood of Saintes, and with the blood of the Martyrs of Iesus: & when I saw her, I wondred with great marueile.

7 Then the Angel said vnto me, Wherefore marueilest thou? I will shew thee the mysterie of that woman, & of that beast, that beareth her, which hath seuen heades, and ten hornes.

8 The beast that thou hast seene, was, and is not, and shal ascend out of the bottomles pit, and shall go into perdition, and they that dwel on the earth, shall wonder (whose names are not written in the Booke of life from the foundation of the world) when they beholde the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

9 Here is the minde that hath wisdome. The seuē heads are seuen mountaines, whereon the woman sitteth: they are also seuen Kings.

10 Fiue are fallen, and one is, and another is not yet come: and when he commeth, he must continue a shorte space.

11 And the beast that was, and is not, is euen the eight, & is one of the seuen, and shall go into destruction.

12 And the ten hornes which thou saweſt, are ten Kings, which yet haue not receiued a kingdome, but shall receiue power, as Kings at one houre with the beast.

13 These haue one minde, and shal giue their power, and authoritie vnto the beast.

14 These shal fight with the Lambe, and the Lambe shall ouercome them: * for he is Lord of Lordes, and King of Kings: and they that are on his side, called, and chosen, and faithfull. *Dan.2.47. 1.Tim.6.15.*

15 And he said vnto me, The waters which thou saweſt, where the whore sitteth, are people, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.

16 And the ten hornes which thou saweſt vpon the beast, are they that shall hate the whore, and shal make her

desolate and naked, and shall eate her flesh, and burne her with fire.

17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfill his will, and to do with one consent for to giue their kingdome vnto the beast, vntill the wordes of God be fulfilled.

18 And that woman which thou sawest, is that great citie, which reigneth ouer the Kings of the earth.

CHAP. XVIII.

2 The horrible destruction of Babylon is set out. 11. 16. 18. The marchantes of the earth, who were enriched with the pompe & luxuriousnes of it, weepe and wayle: 20 But al the elect reioyce for that iust vengeance of God.

1 AND after these thinges, I sawe *another* Angell come downe from heauen, hauing great power, so that the earth was lightened with his glory.

2 And he cryed out mightily with a loude voyce, saying, * It is fallen, it is fallen, Babylon that great *citie*, and is become the habitation of deuils, and the holde of all fowle spirits, and a cage of euery vncleane and hatefull byrde.

Chap. 14. 8. Isai. 21. 9. Ierem. 51. 8.

3 For all nations haue drunken of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the Kings of the earth haue committed fornication with her, and the marchants of the earth are waxed rich of the aboundance of her pleasures.

4 And I heard another voyce from heauen say, Go out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sinnes, & that ye receiue not of her plagues.

5 For her sinnes are come vp into heauen, and God hath remembred her iniquities.

6 Reward her, euen as she hath rewarded you, and giue her double according to her works: *and* in the cup that she hath filled to you, fil her the double.

7 In as much as she glorified her selfe, and lined in pleasure, so much giue ye to her torment and sorowe: for she saith in her heart, I sit being a queene, and am no widowe, and shal see no mourning.

8 Therefore shal her plagues come at one day, death, and sorow, and famine, and she shalbe burnt with fire: for that God which condemneth her, is a strong Lord.

9 And the Kings of the earth shall bewayle her, and lament for her, which haue committed fornication, and lined in pleasure with her, when they shall see that

smoke

smoke of that her burning,

10 And shal stand afarre of for feare of her torment, saying, Alas, alas, the great citie Babylon, that mighty citie: for in one houre is thy iudgement come.

11 And the marchants of the earth shall weepe and waile ouer her, for no man byeth their ware any more.

12 The ware of gold and siluer, and of precious stone, & of pearles, and of fine linen, and of purple, and of silke, & of skarlet, & of al maner of Thyne woode, and of al vessels of yuory, and of all vessels of most precious woode, and of brasse, and of yron, and of marble,

13 And of cinamon, and odoures, and ointmentes, and frankincence, and wine, and oyle, and fine flowre, and wheat, and beastes, and sheepe, and horses, and charets, and seruants, and soules of men.

14 (And the apples that thy soule lusted after, are departed from thee, and al things which were fat and excellent, are departed from thee, and thou shalt finde them no more)

15 The marchãts of these things which were waxed rich, shall stand afarre of from her, for feare of her torment, weeping and wayling,

16 And saying, Alas, alas, that great citie, that was clothed in fine linnen & purple, and skarlet, and gilded with gold and precious stone, and pearles.

17 For in one houre so great rickes are come to desolation. And euery shipmaster, and all the people that occupie shippes, and shipmen, and whosoeuer trafike on the sea, shall stand afarre of,

18 And crye, when they see that smoke of that her burning, saying, What *citie was* like vnto this great citie?

19 And they shal cast dust on their heades, and cry weeping, and wayling, and say, Alas, alas, that great citie, wherein were made rich all that had shippes on the sea by her costlines: for in one houre she is made desolate.

20 O heauen, reioyce of her, and ye holy Apostles and Prophets: for God hath punished her to be reuenged on her for your sakes.

21 Then a mightie Angel tooke vp a stone like a great *Ier. 51. 63.*
milstone,* and cast it into the sea, saying, With such vi-
olence shal that great citie Babylon be cast, and shalbe
found no more.

22 And the voyce of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpetters shalbe heard no more in thee, & no craftesman, of whatsoeuer craft *he be*, shalbe founde any more in thee: and the sound of a millstone shalbe heard no more in thee.

23 And the light of a candle shal shine no more in thee: & the voyce of the bridegrome and of the bride shalbe heard no more in thee: for thy marchants were the great men of the earth: and with thine inchantments were deceiued al nations.

24 And in her was found the blood of the Prophets, & of the Saintes, and of all that were slaine vpon the earth.

CHAP. XIX.

1 *The heauenly companie praise God, for auenging the blood of his seruants, on the whore.* 9 *They are written blessed, that are called to the Lambes supper.* 10 *The Angell will not be worshipped.* 11 *That mightie King of Kings appeareth from heauen.* 19 *The battell,* 20 *wherein the beast is taken,* 21 *and cast into the burning lake.*

1 AND after these things I heard a great voyce of a great multitude in heauen, saying, Hallelu-iah, saluation and glory, and honour, and power *be* to the Lorde our God.

2 For true and righteous *are* his iudgements: for he hath condemned that great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, & hath auenged the bloode of his seruants *shed* by her hand.

3 And againe they said, Hallelu-iah: and that her smoke rose vp for euermore.

4 And the foure and twentie Elders, & the foure beastes fel downe, and worshipped God that sate on the throne, saying, Amen, Hallelu-iah.

5 Then a voyce came out of the throne, saying, Praise our God, all ye his seruants, & ye that feare him, both small and great.

6 And I heard like a voyce of a great multitude, and as the voyce of many waters, and as the voyce of strong thundrings, saying, Hallelu-iah: for the Lord that God that almightie one hath reigned.

7 Let vs be glad and reioyce, and giue glorie to him: for the marriage of that Lambe is come, and his wife hath made her selfe ready.

8 And to her was graunted, that she should be arayed with pure fine linnen and shining, for the fine linnen is the righteousnes of Saintes.

9 Then he said vnto me, Write, * Blessed are they which are called vnto the Lambes supper. And he said vnto me, These words of God are true. *Mat.22.2.*

10 And I fel before his feete, * to worship him: but he said vnto me, See thou do it not: I am thy fellow seruant, and one of thy brethren, which haue the testimonie of Iesus. Worship God: for the testimonie of Iesus, is the Spirit of prophecie. *Chap. 22.9.*

11 And I sawe heauen open, and behold a white horse, & he that sate vpon him, was called, Faithful and true, and he iudgeth and fighteth righteously.

12 And his eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crownes: and he had a name written, that no man knew but him selfe.

13 And he was clothed with a garmēt dipt in blood, & his name is called, THE WORD OF GOD.

14 And the hostes which were in heauen, folowed him vpon white horses, clothed with fine linnen white and pure.

15 And out of his mouth went out a sharpe sworde, that with it he should smite the heathen: for he * shall rule them with a rod of yron: for he it is that treadeth the wine presse of the fiercenes and wrath of almightie God. *Psal.2.9.*

16 And he hath vpon his garment, and vpon his thigh a name written, * THE KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDES. *Dan.7.14. 1.Tim.6.15.*

17 And I sawe an Angel stand in the sonne, who cryed with a loude voyce, saying to all the foules that did flye by the middes of heauen, Come, and gather your selues together vnto the supper of the great God,

18 That ye may eate the flesh of Kings, and the flesh of hie Captaines, and the flesh of mightie men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all free men, and bondemen, and of small and great.

19 And I saw the beast, and the Kings of the earth, & their hostes gathered together to make battel against him, that sate on the horse, and against his armie.

20 But the beast was taken, and with him that false pro-

phet that wrought miracles before him, whereby he deceiued them that receiued the beastes marke, and them that worshipped his image. These both were aliue cast into a lake of fire, burning with brimstone.

21 And the remnant were slaine with the sworde of him that sitteth vpon the horse, which commeth out of his mouth, and al the foules were filled ful with their flesh.

CHAP. XX.

1 The Angel bindeth Satan for a thousand yeres: 8 being loosed, he stirreth vp Gog and Magog, that is, priuie and open enemies, against the Saintes, 11 but the vengeance of the Lord cutteth off their insolence. 12 The bookes are opened, by which the dead are iudged.

1 AND I saw an Angel come downe from heauen, hauing the keye of the bottomles pit, and a great chaine in his hand.

2 And he tooke the dragon that olde serpent, which is the deuill and Satan, and bounde him a thousande yeres:

3 And cast him into the bottomles pit, and he shut him vp, and sealed *the dore* vpon him, that he should deceiue the people no more, til the thousande yeeres were fulfilled: for after that he must be loosed for a litle season.

4 And I saw seates: and they sate vpon them, & iudgement was giuen vnto them, and *I saw* the soules of thē that were beheaded for the witnesse of Iesus, and for the word of God, and which did not worship the beast, neither his image, neither had taken his marke vpō their foreheads, or on their hands: and they liued, and reigned with Christ a thousand yere.

5 But the rest of the dead men shal not liue againe, vntil the thousand yeres be finished: this is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed and holy is he, that hath part in the first resurrection: for on such the second death hath no power: but they shal be the Priestes of God, and of Christ, and shal reigne with him a thousand yere.

7 And when the thousand yeres are expired, Satan shal be loosed out of his prison,

8 And shal go out to deceiue the people, which are in the foure quarters of the earth: euen * Gog and Magog,

Ezek. 39.

to gather them together to battel, whose number is as the sand of the sea.

9 And they went vp into the plaine of the earth, & they compassed the tents of the Saintes about, and the beloued citie: but fire came downe from God out of heauen, and deuoured them.

10 And the deuil that deceiued them, was cast into a lake of fire and brimstone, where that beast and that false prophet are, and shalbe tormented euen day and night for euermore.

11 And I sawe a great white throne, and one that sate on it, from whose face fled away both the earth and heauen, and their place was no more found.

12 And I sawe the dead, both great and small stand before God: and the bookes were opened, & * another booke was opened, which is *the booke* of life, and the dead were iudged of those things, which were writtē in the bookes, according to their workes. *Chap.3.5. and 21.27. Philip.4.3.*

13 And the sea gaue vp her dead, which were in her, and death and hel deliuered vp the dead, which were in them: and they were iudged euerie man according to their workes.

14 And death and hel were cast into the lake of fire: this is the second death.

15 And whosoeuer was not found written in the Booke of life, was cast into the lake of fire.

CHAP. XXI.

2 He describeth new Hierusalem descending from heauen, 9 the Bride the Lambes wife. 12 and the glorious building of the citie, 19 garnished with precious stones: 22 whose temple the Lambe is.

1 AND I sawe * a new heauen, and a new earth: for the first heauen, and the first earth were passed away, and there was no more sea. *Isai.65.17. and 66.22. 2.Pet.3.13.*

2 And I Iohn sawe the holie citie new Hierusalem come downe from God out of heauen, prepared as a bride trimmed for her husband.

3 And I heard a great voice out of heauē, saying, Behold, the Tabernacle of God *is* with men, and he wil dwell with them: and they shalbe his people, and God himselfe shalbe their God with them, *Chap.7.17.*

4 * And God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes: *Isai.25.8.*

and there shalbe no more death, neither sorow, neither crying, neither shall there be anie more paine: for the first things are passed.

Isai.43.19. 2.cor.5.17. 5 And he that sate vpon the throne, said, * Beholde, I make all things new: and he said vnto me, Write: for these wordes are faithfull and true.

Chap.1.8. and 22.13. 6 And he said vnto me, * It is done, I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I wil giue to him that is a thirst, of the wel of the water of life freely.

7 He that ouercommeth, shall inherit all thinges, and I wil be his God, and he shalbe my sonne.

8 But the feareful and vnbeleeuing, and the abominable and murtherers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars shall haue their part in the lake, which burneth with fire and brimstone, which is the second death.

9 And there came vnto me one of the seuē Angels, which had the seuen vialles full of the seuen last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come: I wil shew thee the Bride, the Lambes wife.

10 And he caried me away in the spirit to a great and an hie mountaine, and he shewed me that great citie, that holie Hierusalem, descending out of heauen from God,

11 Hauing the glorie of God: and her shining was like vnto a stone most precious, as a Iasper stone cleare as crystal,

12 And had a great wall and hie, and had twelue gates, and at the gates twelue Angels, and the names written, which are the twelue tribes of the children of Israel.

13 On the East parte *there were* three gates, *and* on the Northside three gates, on the Southside three gates, *and* on the Westside three gates.

14 And the wall of the citie had twelue foundations, and in them the Names of the Lambes twelue Apostles.

15 And he that talked with me, had a golden reede to *measure* the citie withal, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

16 And the citie lay foure square, & the length *is* as large as the bredth of it, and he measured *the citie* with the reede, twelue thousand *furlongs*: and the length, & the bredth, and the *height* of *it* are equal.

17 And he measured the wall thereof, an hundreth, four-

tie

tie and foure cubites, by the measure of man, that is, of the Angel.

18 And the building of the wall of it was of Iasper: and the citie was pure golde, like vnto cleare glasse.

19 And the foundations of the wall of the citie were garnished with all maner of precious stones: the first foundation was Iasper: the second of Saphire: the third of a Chalcedonie: the fourth of an Emeraude:

20 The fift of a Sardonyx: the sixt of a Sardius: the seuenth of a Chrysolite: the eight of a Beryl: the ninth of a Topaze: the tenth of a Chrysoprasus: the eleuenth of a Iacinth: the twelueth an Amethyst.

21 And the twelue gates were twelue pearles, and euery gate is of one pearle, and the streete of the citie is pure golde, as shining glasse.

22 And I sawe no Temple therein: for the Lord God almightie and the Lambe are the Temple of it.

23 * And this citie hath no neede of the sunne, neither of the moone to shine in it: for the glorie of God did light it: and the Lambe is the light of it. *Isai.60.19.*

24 * And the people which are saued, shall walke in the light of it: and the Kings of the earth shall bring their glorie and honour vnto it. *Isai.60.3.*

25 * And the gates of it shal not be shut by day: for there shalbe no night there. *Isai.60.11.*

26 And the glorie, and honour of the Gentiles shalbe brought vnto it.

27 And there shall enter into it none vncleane thing, neither whatsoeuer worketh abomination or lies: but they which are written in the Lambes * Booke of life. *Chap.3.5. and 20.12. philip.4.3.*

CHAP. XXII.

1 The riuer of water of life is shewed, 2 and the tree of life: 6.7 Then followeth the conclusion of this prophetie, 8 where Iohn declareth, that the thinges herein conteined are most true: 13 And now the third time repeateth these wordes, All thinges come from him who is the beginning and the end.

1 AND he shewed me a pure riuer of water of life, cleare as crystall, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of the Lambe.

2 In the middes of the streete of it, and on either side of the riuer, was the tree of life, which bare twelue maner

of

of fruites, & gaue fruite euerie moneth: and the leaues of the tree *serued* to heale the nations with.

3 And there shalbe no more curse, but the throne of God and of the Lambe shalbe in it, and his seruants shal serue him.

4 And they shall see his face, & his Name shalbe in their foreheads.

Isai.60.19. 5 * And there shalbe no night there, and they neede no candle, neither light of the sunne: for the Lord God giueth them light, and they shall reigne for euermore.

6 And he said vnto me, These wordes are faithfull and true: and the Lord God of the holie Prophets sent his Angel to shew vnto his seruants the things which must shortly be fulfilled.

7 Behold, I come shortly. Blessed *is* he that keepeth the wordes of the prophecie of this booke.

8 And I am Iohn, which sawe and heard these thinges: *Chap.19.10* and when I had heard and seene, * I fel downe to worship before the feete of the Angel which shewed me these things.

9 But he said vnto me, See thou *do it* not: for I am thy fellowe seruant, and of thy brethren the Prophets, and of them which keepe the wordes of this Booke: worship God.

10 And he said vnto me, Seale not the wordes of the prophecie of this Booke: for the time is at hand.

11 He that is vniust, let him be vniust stil: and he which is filthie, let him be filthie stil: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous stil: and he that is holie, let him be holie still.

12 And beholde, I come shortly, and my reward is with *Rom.2.6.* me, * to giue euerie man according as his worke shalbe.

Chap.1.8. 13 I am * Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, *and 21.6.* the first and the last.

Isai.41.4. 14 Blessed *are* they, that do his commaundements, that *and 44.6.* their right may be in the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the citie.

15 For without *shalbe* dogges and enchanters, and whoremongers, and murtherers, and idolaters, and whosoeuer loueth or maketh lies.

16 I Iesus haue sent mine Angel, to testifie vnto you these

things

things in the Churches: I am the roote and the generation of Dauid, and the bright morning ſtarre.

17 And the Spirit and the Bride ſay, Come. And let him that heareth, ſay, Come: and let him that is a thirſt, come: and * let whoſoeuer wil, take of the water of life freely. *Iſai.55.1.*

18 For I proteſt vnto euerie man that heareth the words of the prophecie of this Booke, If anie man ſhall adde vnto theſe things, God ſhal adde vnto him the plagues, that are written in this Booke:

19 And if anie man ſhall diminiſh of the wordes of the booke of this prophecie, God ſhal take away his part out of the Booke of life, and out of the holie citie, and from thoſe things which are written in this booke.

20 He which teſtifieth theſe things, ſaith, Surely, I come quickely. Amen. Euen ſo, come Lord Ieſus.

21 The grace of our Lord Ieſus Chriſt *be* with you all, Amen.

THE ENDE.



BRITISH
14 OC 1915
MUSEUM

A TABLE OF THE PRINCIPAL THINGS THAT ARE CONTEINED in the New Testament, after the order of the Alphabet.

The first number noteth the chapter, and the second the verse.

A

Aaron. Hebr. 5. 4.

Abel offred by faith. Hebr. 11. 4.

¶ Abomination set vp in the holie place. Mat. 24. 15. mar. 13. 14. luk. 21. 20. reuelat. 17. 4. & 21. 27.

That which man esteemeth excellent, is abominable before God. Luke 16. 15.

¶ Abraham the father of beleeuers. Rom. 4. 16.

He offred Isaac by faith. Hebr. 11. 17.

¶ Abuse of the Scripture. Mat. 4 6. 2. cor. 2. 17. gal. 1. 8. 2. thes. 2. 2. ephe. 5 6. 2. pet. 3. 16. iude. 4

Abuse through Antichrist. 2. Thes. 2. 10.

Abuse by the Pharises. Mat. 23. 23.

Abuses. 2. Tim. 3. 5. titus. 1. 10. 2. ioh. 7. 2. pet. 2. 1. iude. 4. Reade False prophets.

Abused. Gal. 3. 1. 2. thes. 2. 3. 2. tim 3. 4. tit. 1. 10. iude 9. reuel. 18. 3, 23.

¶ Acception of persons is not with God. Act. 10. 34. rom. 2. 11. gal. 2. 6. ephe. 6. 9. col. 3. 25. 1. pet. 1. 17.

Acception of persons is forbidden. Iam. 2. 3.

¶ Adam, which was first. Luk. 3. 38. rom. 5. 14. 1. cor. 15. 22, 45. 1. tim. 2. 13.

The second. Rom. 5. 14. 1. cor. 15. 45. Reade Christ.

Adoption. Rom. 8. 15. & 9. 4. gal. 4. 5. ephe. 1. 5.

¶ Adulterie forbidden. Mat. 5. 27, 28, 32. & 19. 9. mar. 10. 11. luk. 16. 8. ioh. 8. 5. rom. 7. 3. & 13. 9. gal. 5. 19. 1. cor. 6. 9. heb. 13. 4. iames 4. 4. 2. pet. 2. 14.

Vsed for idolatrie. Reuel. 2. 14. & 14. 11. & 17. 1. & 18. 3.

¶ Affection godly. Mat. 6. 33. luk. 11. 28. 2. cor. 12. 10.

According to the flesh. Mat. 6. 25 & 16. 22. & 20. 21. & 26. 51. luk 9. 33, 54. & 11. 38. 10. 8, 6. 10, 2

Agabus a prophet. Act. 11. 28, 21, 10.

Agar. Galat. 4. 25.

Agrippa king. Act. 25. 13.

¶ Alliance ancient. 2. Cor. 3. 14. galat. 4. 24.

The newe. Mat. 26. 28. 1. cor. 11. 25. gal. 4. 26. hebr. 8. 8. & 9. 15. & 12. 24. & 13. 20.

Ananias and Sapphira. Act. 5. 1.

Ananias the disciple. Act. 9. 10.

Ananias

Ananias the Priest. Act. 24. 1.
¶Ancient men & women ought to be honored. 1. Tim. 5. 1.
Of what sort they ought to be. Tit. 2. 2. Of them which are Elders. Reade Elders.
¶Angels good which are in heauen. Mar. 12. 25.
Created by Christ, or in Christ. Colos. 1. 16.
The seruants of Christ. Mat. 4. 11 mar. 1. 13.
They comfort him in the garden. luk. 22. 43.
Seruants to the faithful. Mat. 18. 10. act. 12. 11. hebr. 1. 14.
Their appearing to persons. Mat. 1. 20. & 2. 13, 19. luk. 1. 11, 26. & 2. 9.
Seene in forme of men. Mar. 16. 5. luk. 24. 4. ioh. 20. 12. act. 1. 10 & 10. 3, 30.
They shall accõpanie Christ at the iudgement. Matth. 25. 31. mar. 8. 38. luk. 9. 26. 2. thes. 1. 7.
Of euil Angels, reade Deuils.
¶Anger or wrath must be ouercome by gentlenes. Mat. 5. 22. ro. 12. 19. eph. 4. 26, 31. col. 3. 8
We must be slow to anger. Iam. 1. 19.
If we be angrie with our brother, let vs be reconciled before we pray. 1. tim. 2. 8.
By nature we are children of wrath. Ephe. 2. 3.
Christ hath deliuered vs frõ the wrath to come. 1. thes. 1. 10.
The wrath of God vpon the infidels. 1. thes. 2. 16.
The riche of the worlde heape vpon them a treasure of anger. Iam. 5. 3.
Anna the Propheteſſe. luk. 2. 36.
Annas & Caiaphas. Luk. 3. 2. iob. 18. 13. act. 4. 6.
¶Antichrist and his kingdome frõ the time of the Apostles. 2. thes. 2. 3, 4. 1. ioh. 2. 22. & 4. 3 2. ioh. 7. mar. 13. 22. re. 13. 1, 2.
Of his destruction. 2. thes. 2. & reue. 19. 20.
Apollos. Act. 18. 24. 1. cor. 3. 6.
¶Apostles or ambassadours, & messengers were twelue chosen by Christ Mat. 10. 2. luk. 6. 14. iob. 6. 67. act. 1. 2, 13.
They are the light of the world. Mat. 5. 14.
The salt of the earth. Mat. 5. 13. mar. 9. 50. luke. 14. 34.
Dispensers of the mysteries of God. 1. Cor. 4. 1.
The ministers of Christ. 1. cor. 4. 1.
Helpers with God. 1. Cor. 3. 9.
Ordeined to be witnesses of the death and resurrection of Iesus Christ, to preach it to all nations. Matth. 28. 19, 20. mar. 16. 15. luk. 24. 47. act. 1. 8. & 2. 32. & 10. 42.
Of the twelue principal. Matth. 10. 1.
Their speciall office to preache. 1. Cor. 12. 28. ephe. 4. 11.
The Apostle of the Gentiles. rom. 1. 5. & 11. 13. galat. 2. 7. 1. tim. 2 7. 2. tim. 1, 11.
The Apostle of the Iewes. gal. 2. 7
False Apostles. 2. Cor. 2. 17. & 11. 13. reade Preachers.
Aquila & Priscilla. Act. 18. 2, 26. 1. cor. 16. 19

Armour ſpiritual. Rom. 6. 13. & 13.12. 2.cor.6.7.&10.4.ephe. 6,11.1.theſ.5.8.1.pet.4.1.

Almes. Mat.6.1.luk.11. 41.& 12. 33.& 14.13. and 16.21. act.2. 45.& 9.36.and 10.2. & 20.35. and 24. 17.philip.4.10.1.ioh. 3.17.

B.

BAbylon which ſignifieth a place of confuſion (as Rome) where Antichriſt doth reigne. Reuel.14.8.& 16.19.& 17.5.

Babylon hath made drunke all nations with the wine of the wrath of her fornication, it is the lodging of the deuils, the place of vncleane ſpirits, the ſtewes of princes and kings, and the poiſoning of all nations.reuel.18.2,21.

Balaam.2.Pe.2.15.iude 11.reue. 2.14.

¶Banket prepared by Matthew for Chriſt.Mat.9.10.mar.2.15. luk.5.29.

Contemners of God pollute the Chriſtians Bankets. 2. Pet. 2. 13.iude.12.

They which are called to Bankets or ſeats ought to ſit loweſt, & why.Luk.14.10.

Whom Chriſtians ought to bid to dinner and ſupper.Luk.14. 13.

¶ Baptiſme is commanded to be miniſtred to all that beleeue.Mat.28.19.mar. 16.16.

There is but one Baptiſme.Eph. 4.5

By the water of Baptiſme we are conſecrate to Ieſus Chriſt, and puriſied by faith in the worde of the Goſpel. Ephe.5. 26.

It ſignifieth vnto vs,that we are buried with Ieſus Chriſt,dead to ſinne, & deliuered therefrom by the death of Chriſte, and haue put on Chriſte, and are made the children of God, by whom alſo we are al made one.Rom.6.3. gal. 3.27. coloſſ.2.12.

Without faith it profiteth not. Mar.16.16.1.cor.10.2.1.pet. 3.21.

Men are but the miniſters therof.Mat.3. 11. iohn. 1.26. and 3.23,27.and 4.1. act.8.16.and 9.18.

Chriſt giueth the vertue.Mat 3. 11.luk.3.16.iohn.1.26.

It is taken for the viſible giftes of the holy Ghoſt. Mat.3.8. mar.1.8.act.1.5.

It ſignifieth alſo to ſuffer tribulations or death. Mark.10. 38.luk.12.50.

Chriſt Baptized not. Iohn.4.2.

Barnabas. Act.4.36.and 13.1.

Barabbas. Mat. 27. 21. mar.15. 7.luk.23.18.iohn.18.40.

Bartimeus the blinde man. Mar. 10.46.

Beame, or poſt in the eye. Mat. 7.3.

Beggers or loyterers ought not to be ſuffred. 2.Theſſalo.3.10 1.tim.5.16.

¶ Benignitie,gentlenes, or liberalitie Gal.5.22,epheſ.4.32. col.3.12.

The bountcouſnes of God to-

wards vs. Tit. 3. 4.
They which haue mutuall loue are courteous. 1. Cor. 13. 4.
We muſt be gentle one toward an other. Ephe. 4. 32. col. 3. 12.
¶ Blaſphemie condemned. Mat. 15. 19. luk. 23. 35. act. 13. 45. rom. 2. 24.
Blaſphemie againſt the Sonne of man may be forgiuen, but blaſphemie againſt the holy Ghoſt can not be forgiuen. Matth. 12. 31. mark. 3. 29. luk. 12. 10. 1. tim. 1. 13.
The beaſt ſpeaketh blaſphemies againſt God and his Name. Reuel. 13. 1, 5. and 17. 3.
Bleſſed or happie folke. Mat. 5. 3. luk. 6. 20. & 11. 28. iohn. 20. 29. rom. 4. 7.
Chriſt aſcending to heauen bleſſeth his Apoſtles. Luk. 24. 51.
He bleſſeth litle children. Mark. 10. 16.
Bleſſing and curſing proceede both out of one mouth. Iam. 3. 10.
Bleſſing taken for praiſe. Luke. 1. 28, 68. and 2. 28. rom. 1. 25. and 9. 5. 1. cor. 14. 16, 17. eph. 1. 3. iam. 3. 10.
Alſo for wiſhing, enriching, and aboundance. Mat. 25. 34. acts. 3. 25. galat. 3. 8. ephe. 1. 3. 1. per. 3. 9.
¶ Body ſenſuall and mortall. Ro. 6. 12. & 7. 24. & 8. 11.
Called a tabernacle. 2. Cor. 5. 1. 2. per. 1. 13.
A veſſell and houſe of earth. 2. Cor. 4. 7. & 5. 1.
The temple of the holy Ghoſt. 1. Cor. 6. 19.
It ſhal riſe againe ſpirituall. Ro. 8. 11. 1. cor. 15. 44. 2. cor. 4. 14.
We muſt mortifie it. Rom. 8. 13. 1. cor. 9. 27. col. 3. 5.
It is taken for the number of the elect. reade Church.
Booke of liſe. Phil. 4. 3. reue. 3. 5. & 13. 8. & 17. 8. & 20. 12. & 21 27. & 22. 19.
Bragging & boaſting. Luk. 18. 11. rom. 1. 30. gal. 6. 13.
Good and lawfull. 2. Cor. 11. 18. phil. 3. 7.
¶ Brethren of Chriſt or kinſmen. mat. 12. 47. iohn 7. 3. 1. cor. 9. 5. gal. 1. 19.
Brethren ſpirituall of Chriſt are the faithfull. Read Faithfull.
All Chriſtians are brethren. Mat. 23. 8. rom. 1, 13. & 8. 29. 1. cor. 6. 6. & 8. 11. ephe. 6. 21. col. 4. 15, 1 theſſ. 5. 14.
Falſe brethren. 2. Cor. 11. 26. gal. 2. 4.

C

CAiaphas propheſieth. Ioh. 11. 50.
He examineth Chriſt. Mat. 26. 62
Cain. 1. Iohn. 3. 12. iude 11.
Called are many. Mat. 20. 16.
Capernaũ reproued. Mat. 11. 23.
Chananean. Mat. 15. 22.
Centurion. Mat. 8. 5. & 17. 54.
¶ Charitie or loue of God towardes vs. Ioh. 3. 16. & 13 1. & 16. 27. rom. 5. 8. eph. 2. 4. Reade God.
It is a ſigne to knowe the faithfull by. Ioh. 13. 35.
It is the gift of God. Ephe. 3. 19. phil. 1. 9. 1. theſ. 3. 12. 2. the. 1. 3

The band of perfe&ió.Col.3.14.
The fulfilling of the Lawe. Mat. 7.12.rom.13.9.gal.5.14.1.tim. 1.5.
Waxing cold in the latter times Mat.24.12.
¶ Children are embraced of Christ & blessed.Mar.10.16.
They praise Christ. Mat. 21. 15.
Taken for yong Christians and of smal capacitie.1.Cor.3.2.& 14.20.ephe.4.14.hebr.5.12.
They that are humble,simple, & without malice. Mat.18.3. 1. cor.14.20.1.pet.2.1.
Children of God.Lu.20.36.iohn. 1.12.rom.8.14.2.cor.6.18,32. 3.26.& 4.7.ephe.1.5.hebr.12. 6.1.ioh.3.1.
Children of the resurrection, which can not die. Luk. 20. 35,36.
Children of the kingdome. Mat. 13.38.
Children of light. Iohn. 12. 36. ephe.5.8.1.thes.5.5.
The true children of Abraham. Rom.4.16.gal.3.7.
Children ought to obey their fathers.Ephe.6.1.col.3.20.
¶ Christ is God euerlasting, the beginning & the end. Iob.1.1. & 10.30. & 20.28. act.20.28. rom.9.5.& 14.18.phi.2.6.col. 2.2.1.tim.3.16.hebr.1.8.1.ioh 5.20.reue.1.5.
Christ is the word of God.1.Iob. 1.1.reuel.19.13.
Christ is the Image of God.2. Cor.4.4.col.1.15,heb.1.3.
The sonne of God.Mat.3.17.and 16,16.& 17.5. mar. 3.11.& 5. 7.luk.1.32, 35. iohn.1.18,34, 49. & 3.15,14,16,17. & 6.62. & 9.35.& 10.36. & 11.27.act. 4.30. & 8.37.10.1.4.& 8.32.92. 2.20.& 4.4.col.1.13.heb. 1.2, 5.& 3.6 & 4.14.2.pet.1.17.1. ioh.1.3.& 4.15.
The power and wisdom of God. 1.Cor. 1.24.& 2.7.
The Creator. Ioh.1.1.col.1.16.
By him all things consist. Iob.1. 3.col.1.16,17.heb.1.2.
He is the searcher of the heart. Mat.9.22.28.lu.6.8. & 11.17. & 9.47. iohn.2.24. hebr.4.13. reuel.2.23.
The Prince of life.3.& 3.15
The Lord of glorie.1.Cor.2.8.
The Prince of saluation. Hebr. 2.10.
The Prince of faith.Heb.12.2.
Christ is the sonne of Abraham and Dauid, according to the flesh.Mat.1.6.luke.3.34. act. 13.23.rom.1.3.2.tim.2.8.heb. 2.16.
Descended of the fathers.Mat.1 1.rom.9.5.
Come in flesh.Ioh.1.14.1.ioh.4. 2.heb.2.14.
Conceiued by the holy Ghost, and borne of the virgin .Mat. 1.18. luk.1.35.
Was circumcised, & presented to the temple.Luk.2.22,27.
Was subiect to Ioseph & Marie his mother.Luk.2.51.
He growed in wisdome and age, Luk.2.40.
He was baptized.Mat.3.16.
He was tempted of the deuill. Mat.4.1.

He preached the kingdome of God, and confirmed it with miracles. Mat. mar. luk. iohn.

Sonne of man. Mat. 8.20. & 12.8. & 16.13. & 24.27. & 26.2. mar. 2.10. & 10.33, 45. luk. 9.22. & 17.22. ioh. 1.51. & 3.13. & 5.27. & 6.53. & 12.23.

Sent & come of God. ioh. 3.16. & 5.34. & 6.29. & 7.28. & 8.16, 26, 42. & 10.36. & 12.44. and 17.21. & 20.21. rom. 8.3.

All promises are accomplished in him. 2. Cor. 1.20.

In him we see the Father. Iohn. 8.19 and 14.9.

He is heire of al things. Heb. 1.2

The onely Lord. Mat. 22.43. luk. 2.11. ioh. 13.13. & 20.28. act. 9.5. & 10.48. 1. cor. 2 8. & 8.6. & 12.3. & 15.47. ephe. 4.1. phil. 2.11. reue. 17.14. & 19.16.

The onely Sauiour. Mat. 1.21. lu. 1.31, 32, 68, 69. ioh. 3.16. and 4.42. act. 4.12. 1. tim. 1.15. tit. 2.13. 1. ioh. 4.9.

He is our hope and consolation. Mat. 12.21. rom. 15.12.

Our wisedome, iustice, sanctification, & deliuerance. 1. Cor. 1.30. Our peace. Lu. 2.14. ioh. 16.33. rom. 5.1. ephe. 2.14, 17. phil. 4.7. col. 1.20.

Onely Mediatour and Aduocat. Mat. 11.27 iohn. 10.9. and 14.6. act. 4.12. rom. 5.1. and 8.34. ephe. 2.18. & 3.12. 1. tim. 2.5. hebr. 7.25. & 8.6. & 9.15. and 12, 24 and 13, 15. 1. iohn. 2, 1.

We must call vpon God in his Name. Iohn. 14, 13. and 15, 16. and 16, 23.

He onely forgiueth sinnes. Mat. 9.2. act. 10, 43. rom. 8, 4. 2. cor. 5, 18. ephe. 1, 7. and 4, 30. col. 1, 14. 1. iohn. 2, 12.

He is the onely Master, whome we must heare. Mat. 17, 5. & 23, 8. mark. 9, 7. ioh. 13, 13. act. 3, 22.

The way, trueth, and life. Iohn. 1, 4. and 5, 26. and 11, 25. & 14, 6. act. 3, 15. 1. ioh. 1. 1, 5. and 5, 11. col. 3. 4.

The true light. Iohn. 1, 4. and 8. 12. and 9, 5. & 12. 46.

The giuer of water of life. iohn. 4, 10. & 7, 38. reuel. 22, 17.

The accomplishment and ende of the Lawe. Mat. 5, 17. rom. 10, 4.

Who hath abolished the Lawe of decrees. Ephes. 2, 15. col. 2. 14. 2. cor. 3, 6.

The onely foundation and the chiefe stone. 1. Cor. 3, 11. col. 2, 10. mat. 21, 42. act. 4, 11. eph. 2, 20. 1. pet. 2, 6.

The stone of offence. Mat. 21, 44. luk. 2, 34. rom. 9, 32. 1. pet. 2. 4, 8.

The bread of life. Iohn. 6. 35, 48.

The victorie of the world. iohn. 16, 33.

The second Adam and heauenly. 1. Cor. 15, 45.

Of whome we haue receiued al thing. Iohn. 1, 16.

The good shepherde, the doore of the sheephouse, and prince of shepherdes. Iohn. 10. 7, 11, 14 hebr. 13, 20. 1. pet. 2, 25. & 5. 4.

King, & prince of kings. Mat. 21. 9. &

9.& 27.11.luk.1,33. ioh.1,40. & 12,15.and 18, 37. reuel.1, 5.and 17,14.&19,16.
Come to serue.Mat.20,28. mar. 11.luk.22,27.iohn.13,5.
To call,to heale,and to comfort sinners.Mat.1,21.& 9,13.& 11 28.& 18.10, 45.luk.4,19. and 19,10.1.tim.1,15.
He is subiect to mani infirmities & passions. Mat.4, 2. mark. 8, 2.luk 19, 42. iohn.4,6. & 11, 38.& 12,27.hebr.2.14.
Without sinne.hebr.4,15.1.pet. 2,22. 1.iohn.3,9 .2. cor. 5.21.
Poore and humble. Mat.8,20.2. cor.8.9.
Hated of the worlde. Luk. 4,29. iohn. 1,10. and 5,16. & 7,7.& 15. 18,23.
Was iniuried,despised,and blasphemed.Mat.11, 19.& 12,24. & 13,55.& 17.20,30.mar 15, 29.luk.23,11. iohn.6, 43.and 7, 11.and 8,48.
Vtterly cast of & set at naught. Mat.27.frō the 30.& 31.verse to the ende of the chapter. Mar.15. from the 16. verse to the 36.iohn.19.1. &c. phil.2, 7.hebr.2,9.& 4,15.
Crucified, and dead for vs.Mat. 27.46,47, 48, 49. rom.5,8. 1. cor.15,3. 2.cor.5, 15. 1.pet. 3.18.
He is risen againe. Mat. 28. 6. luk.24,46.rom. 4,25. & 8,34. 1.cor.15.4,11.1.thes.1.10.
Asceded into heauē.Mar.16, 19 luk.24,51.act.1,9.ephe.4,8.
The eternall Priest. Hebr. 2,17. & 3,1.& 4,14.& 5,5.& 7,17.& 8,1. and 9,11.& 10,12.
Who offered vp him self. Iohn. 10,18.gal.1.4.hebr.7,27. and 9,26.and10,10.1.tim.2,6. tit. 2,14.
He was onely once offered, and can be offered no more.hebr. 7, 27.& 9,26.and 10, 10.rom. 6,10.1.pet.3,18.
He is our altar.Hebr.13,10.
And hath caried, taken away, & purged our sinnes. Iohn. 1, 29.hebr.9, 26.1. pet.2, 24. 1. iob.3,5.
And is the only purgatorie,propitiatiō,reconciliatiō,appeasement, ransome, & satisfaction for our sinnes.Ro.5,10.1. cor. 1,30.2.cor.5,18.ephe.1,7 col. 1,20.1.tim.2,5.1.iohn.2,2. & 4,10.mat. 20, 28.1. pet.1.15, gal.3,13.1euel.5.9.
He is absent from vs as touchinge his bodily presence. Mat.26,11.iob.7,33. & 16,16, act.1,11. 2.cor.5,20.
And sitteth at the right hande of the Father in heauen. Mar. 16,19.luk.24,52.act.7,55.rom 8.34.ephe.1,20.colo.3,1 heb. 1,3 & 8,1.& 10,12.1.pe.3,28.
Accomplishing al in all.Eph.1.23.
On whom we must call. Mat. 8, 25.& 20,30.mar.1,40,and 10. 47.luk.5,12.& 17,13.& 18,38. act.7.60.1.cor.1,2.
We must beleeue in him.Ioh.3, 15.& 6,40.& 14,1.gal.2,16.1. iohn.3,23.
He is onely head of the Church. Ephe.1.22.& 4.15.& 5,23.col. 1,18.& 2,19.

And is alway present with them after a spirituall sort, & dwelleth in thē. Mat. 18,20. and 28, 20. iohn. 14, 18. ephes. 5, 12. 2. cor. 13, 5.

All thing is subiect to him. Mat. 11, 27. & 28, 18. io. 3. 35. & 13. 3 17. 7. rom. 14. 8. 1. cor. 15, 27. eph. 1, 22. phil. 2, 10. col. 1. 17. heb. 2, 8. 1. pe. 3, 22. reue. 1. 18.

And he shal come againe visibly to iudge the quicke and the dead. Mat. 24. 27, 30, 39. lu. 17. 24, 30. & 21, 27 act. 1, 11. & 3, 20. ro. 2. 16. 1. cor. 4, 4. 2 cor. 5, 10. 1. thes. 5, 2. 2. the. 1, 7. 2. ti. 4, 1. 2. per. 3, 10. reuel. 16, 15.

He is worshipped. Mat. 2, 11. & 8, 2. & 14. 33. & 15, 25. & 28, 9 luk. 24, 52. iohn. 9, 38. phil. 2, 10. hebr. 1, 6. rom. 14, 11.

He is our example. Iohn. 12, 26. & 13, 15. 1. cor. 4, 16. & 11, 1. ephe. 5, 2. phil. 2, 2. hebr. 13. 8.

We must confesse him before mē. Mat. 10, 32. luk. 9. 26 & 12, 8. ioh. 12, 42. rom. 10, 9. 2. cor. 4, 2. 2. tim. 2, 12.

We must giue him honour and glorie. Iohn. 5, 23. reuel. 5, 12.

¶ Circumcision which is in the flesh. rom. 2, 28. 1. cor. 7, 18. ga. 5, 6. ephes 2, 11.

Spirituall Circumcision. Rom. 2, 29. phil. 3. 3. col. 2, 11.

Circumcision and vncircumcision are nothing. 1. Cor. 7, 19. gal. 6. 15.

¶ Citie of God. Hebr. 11. 16. and 12. 22. & 13. 14. reue. 3. 12. and 21. 10.

Cities menaced by Christ. Mat. 11. 21. & 23. 37. luk. 19. 43, 44.

Collection or gathering for the poore brethren. Acts. 11, 29. rom. 15. 26, 27. 1. cor. 16. 1. 2. cor. 8. 9.

¶ Cōmandement of God. Mat. 5. 19. & 15. 3. & 19. 17. & 22. 38. mar. 7. 8. & 12. 29. iohn. 13. 34. & 14. 15. & 15. 10. rom. 7. 12 & 13. 9. 1. cor. 7. 19. 1. iohn. 2. 3. & 3. 23. & 4. 21. 2. ioh. 4. re. 12. 17.

The Commandements of man, which are contrarie to God ought not to be obserued. Mat. 15. 9. mar. 7, 7. luk, 11. 46. act. 4. 19. col. 2. 22. 1. tim. 4. 1. tit. 1. 14.

¶ Communion of Supper of the Lord, & of the institutiō therof. Mat. 26, 26. mar. 14. 24. luk. 22. 17. 1. cor. 11. 24.

How all ought to vse it, and that without eyther adding to it or taking from it. 1. Cor. 11. 23.

The often vse of the same in the primatiue Church. Act 2. 42 & 20. 7.

Compassion, Reade mercie.

¶ Concupiscence taken for all our corrupt affections. Mat. 4 19. rom. 6. 12. & 7. 7. gal. 5. 24 2. per. 1. 4. 1. ioh. 2. 16.

The mother of sinne. Iam. 1. 15.

¶ Confession of faith, Reade Christ.

It is taken for praise. Mat. 11. 25 luk. 2. 38. and 10. 21.

Confession of sinnes to God, luk. 15. 18. & 18. 13. 1. Iohn. 1. 9.

Confession publike. Matth. 3. 6. mar. 1. 5. act. 19. 18.

Con-

Confession to reconcile lone & friendship. Mat. 5. 24. iam. 5. 16
¶ Coniurers are torne of the deuils. Act. 19. 13.
The bookes of Coniuring burned. act. 19. 19.
¶ Conscience, which is made good by grace. Heb. 13. 9.
A good conscience toward God and men. Act. 24. 16. 2. cor. 1. 12 1. tim. 1. 5. 1. pet. 3. 16, 21.
An euill conscience. 1. Tim. 4. 2. tit. 1. 15.
Counsel which is good. Iohn. 7. 51. act. 5. 35. 1. cor. 7. 25.
Euill Counsell against Christ. Mat. 12, 14. & 22. 15. & 26. 4. & 27. 1. & 28. 12. mar. 3. 6. ioh. 11. 47.
Counsel of God. Act. 2. 23. and 4. 28 & 20. 27.
Consolation which commeth of God. 2. cor. 1. 4. 6. & 7. 6. phil. 2. 1. 2. thes. 2. 16.
Which commeth of the Scripture. Rom. 15. 4.
Towarde our brethren. 1. the. 4. 18. and 5. 14.
Of Christ to his disciples. Mat. 14. 27. luke. 10. 23. iohn. 15. 14, 15, 16.
Consolation in worldly things is euil. Luk. 6. 24.
Constancy, Read Perseuerance.
Contention is condemned. Rom. 2. 8. & 13. 13. 1. cor. 1. 11. 2. cor. 12, 20. gal. 2. 5, 20. philip. 2, 3. 1. tim. 6. 4. tit. 3. 3. iam. 3. 14, 16.
Contention among the Apostles. Luk. 22. 24.
Betweene Paul and Barnabas. act. 15. 39.
Contempt of the faithfull minister, is the contempt of God. 1. thes. 4. 8.
Contentation, luk. 3. 14. 1. cor. 7. 17. phil. 4. 11. 1. tim. 6, 6. heb. 13. 5.
¶ Conuersation of preachers, read preachers.
Of maried, Reade Maried.
Conuersation approued. phil. 1. 27. 1. thes. 4. 12. 1. pet. 1. 15. 2. pet. 3. 1.
That conuersation which is forbidden. ephes. 2, 3. 1. pet. 1, 18. and 4. 3.
¶ Conuerting to God commeth of God. Luk. 22. 61, 62. iohn. 6. 44. act. 9. 4.
Cornelius the Centurion, act. 10. 1
¶ Correction which God vsed toward his. 1. cor. 11. 32. heb. 12. 5. 1. pet. 4. 17. reue. 3 19.
Brotherly correction. Mat. 18. 15 gal. 6. 1. 1. tim. 5. 1.
¶ Couetousnes condemned, Lu. 12. 15. & 16. 9, 10. acts. 5. 3. 1. cor. 6. 10. ephe. 5 3. col. 3. 5. 1. tim 6. 10. heb. 13. 5.
¶ Creatures of God are al good. 1. tim. 4. 4.
Creature subiect to vanitie. Ro. 8. 20.
Waiting for the reuelation of the children of God. Ro. 8 23.
The newe creature which is regenerate by fayth in Iesus Christ. 2. cor. 5. 17. gal. 6. 15.
¶ Crosse, vnto whereunto the faithfull are called. Mat. 10. 38. & 16. 24. luk. 9. 23. & 14. 27. reade Persecution.
¶ Crowne of thorne. Mat. 27. 29.

Crowne of life, of righteousnes, incorruptible, and of glorie is prepared for the faithfull. Iam. 1.12. reuel. 2.10. 2. tim. 4.8. 1. pet. 5.4.

¶ Church or congregation take for the whole nomber of the elect. Act. 14.27. rom. 16.4. 1. cor. 11.22. & 16.19. col. 4.15.

One bodie, & the body of Christ, Eph. 1.23. col. 1.24. rom. 12.5.

The heade thereof is Christe, Read Christ.

It is the house of God. 1. Tim. 3. 15. hebr 3.5.

The piller and assurance of the trueth. 1. Tim. 3.15.

The accomplishment of Christ, Ephes. 1.23.

The heauenly and newe Ierusalem. Gal. 4.26. reuel. 3.12. and 21.10.

Mother of the faithful. Gal. 4.26.

Citie of God. Reuel. 3.12.

Of which Christ is the temple, Reuel. 21.22.

Holie, Ephes. 5.26. 1. cor. 1.2. 2. cor. 1.1.

Also it is taken for the faithfull of one countrey or towne. act. 14, 13. ro. 16. 1. 1. cor. 1.2. & 16. 1. 2. cor. 1. 1. gal. 1.2 reue. 2

Likewise for the faithful of one house. Rom. 16. 23. 1. cor. 16. 19. col. 4.15.

Women may not teache in it. 1. cor. 14.34. 1. tim. 2.12.

Al things must be done in it orderly. 1. Cor. 14.40.

We must heare it. Mat. 18.17.

She heareth not, nor hath anie other doctrine then Christs worde. Ihon. 8. 47. and 10.3. & 18.37. 2. iohn. 9. 10, 11.

Curiositie. Act. 17.22. 2. the. 3.11. 1. tim. 5.13.

D

DAyes of them selues are indifferent. Mat. 12.5. luke 13. 15, 26. iohn. 5.10, 11. rom. 14. 5. gal. 4.10. col. 2.16.

Since the comming of Christ is the latter Dayes. Hebr. 1.2. 1. Iohn. 2.18. 1. tim. 4.1. 2. tim. 3. 1. 2. peter. 3.3.

Euill Dayes. Ephes. 5.16.

Obseruation of Dayes reproued. Gal. 4.10.

It sheweth a weake fayth. Rom. 14.5.

¶ Darkenes when Christ suffered. Mat. 27.45.

Taken for sinne. Rom. 13. 12. 1. ioh. 1.6. ephe. 5.11. 1. thes. 5.4.

Taken for blindnes of minde, & lack of spiritual light. Mat. 4. 16. luk. 1.79. iohn. 8. 12. & 12. 46. act. 26.18. col. 1.13. 1. the. 5.4. 1. pet. 2.9. 1. iohn. 2.8.

David eateth the shewe bread. Mar. 2.26.

Deacons, Act. 6.5. 1. tim. 3.1.

¶ Dead men can not communicate nor teache vs any thing Luk. 16.31.

The dead that die in the fayth, are blessed. Reuel. 14.13.

They are with Christ. Luk. 23. 43. phil. 1.23.

They are present with God. 2. cor. 5 8.

And partakers of the first resurrection. Reuel. 20.6.

The infidels being dead, are tor-

tormented in hel. Luk.16.25.
Delites. Luk.7.25. & 16.19. 1. tim.5.6.reuel.18.7.
Desires of youth, worldly & carnal, ought to be auoyded. 2. Tim.2.22.tit.2.12.1.pet.1.14.
Desolation. Luk.21.20. reuel. 6. 14,15,16,17.
Despaire. Mat. 27. 5. act. 1. 18. reuel.9.6.
Detraction, or backbiting. Iam. 4.11.1.pet.2.1.
¶Deuill, the tempter. Mat.4. 1. mar.1.13.1.cor.7.5.1.the.3.5
He is a murtherer from the beginning. Iohn.8.44.1.iohn.3.8.
Sinning from the beginning. 1 iohn.3.8.
A liar & father of lies. Ioh.8.44
A deceiuer of the worlde. Reue. 12.9.
The father of infidels. Mat.13. 19.ioh.8.44.
The prince of this world. Ioh.12 31.& 16.11.luk.4.5.ephe.2.2.
The dragon & old serpent. reue. 12.9.and 20.2.
The god of this world. 2.cor.4.4
Malicious and euill. 1. Iohn.2. 10,11.and 3.10. and 5.16,17. mat.13.19.and 28.
The powers and dominions of the world. Ephe.6.12.
The prince of the aire. Eph.2.2.
The accuser of the faithful. Reu. 12.10.
An euill spirit, Reade Spirit.
Our aduersarie & enemie. Mat. 13 39.luk.10.19.
He transfigureth him selfe into an Angel of light. 2 Cor.11.14
To whō & to his angels is prepared eternal fire. Mat. 25.41, 2.pet.2.4.iud.6.reuel.12.9.
Deuils chased out of men by Christ. Mat.8.32. & 9.33.& 12 22. and 17.18.mar.1.25.
They confesse Christ. Mat. 8.29. mar.1.24.& 3.11.& 5.7.
They are commaunded into the swine. Mat.8.32.
Diana of the Ephesians, Act.19. 28.
¶ Disciples of Christ. Matth. 10. 42.luk.14.27. iohn 8.31. and 12.35.act.1.15.
The disciples of the false prophetes. Act.20.30.
¶Disobedience to the Gospel & to the trueth. Roma. 10. 16, 21.2.thes.1.8.and 3.14.
To parents. Rō.1.30.2.tim.3.2.
To rulers. 2. Pet.2.10. iude 8.
Dispute by the Scripture. Acts. 17.2.
¶ Doctrine true & wholesome, of God and of Christ. Iohn 7. 16. 1.tim.1.15. 2.tim.3.16.
Doctrine of the Scripture. Rom. 15.4. 2.tim.3.16.
Doctrine of men false. Mat.15. 5.mar.7.11.ephe.4.14. col.2. 8,22.hebr.13.9.
Doctrine of deuils. 1.Tim.4.1.
Doctors appoited in the church Act.13.1.1.cor. 12. 28. ephe. 4.11.
False teachers must be auoided Col.2.8. 1.tim.1.7.and 4.1.2. tim.3.2.tit.1.14.& 3.9.2.pet. 2.1. & 3.17. 2.iohn.10.
¶To doe all thinges to the glorie of God, and in the Name of Christ. Matth.5.16. 1. cor. 10.31.

10.31.col.3.17. 1.pet.4.11.
To do to another, as we would should be done to our selues. Mat.7.12.luke 6.31.
To doe good to all, but chiefly to the housholde of faith. Luke 6.30. gal.6.10.
¶To doe good to our enemies, read, To loue.
We ought not to be wearie in well doing. Gal.6.9. 2 thes.3. 13.
¶ Drunkennes and drunkardes. Mat.24.49.1.cor.11.21. luke. 21.34.rom.13.13.gal.5.21.
They shal not inherit the kingdome of God.1.cor.6.10.
Their companie must be auoyded.1.Cor.5.11.
It is taken for that stupiditie that they haue which forget God. 1.thes.5.7.

E

EDificatiō must be sought in al things.Rom.14.19. and 15. 2. 1.cor.14.26. 2. cor. 10. 8. 1. thes.5.11. 1.tim.1.4.
Eye, simple or wicked. Mat.6.22
To pul out the right eye. Mat.5. 29.
Election eternall to saluation. Iob.13. 18. actes. 13. 48. and 22. 14.rom 8.29.and 9.11. & 11.5.ephe.1.4, 11.1.the. 1.4. 2.thes.2.13.2.pet.1.10. Reade Vocation.
¶ Elect and chosen to office or ministerie.Iohn 15.16. act. 1. 2. and 6.5.& 15.22.1.tim.5.9.
The Elect. Matt. 20. 16. and 22. 14.mar.13.20.luke 18.7. rom. 8.33. 2.tim.2.10. heb.12. 23. 1.pet.1.2. reuel.17.14.
Elias is come. Mat.11.14. & 17. 12.
Elias and Eliseus. Luke 4.26,27. iam.5.17.
Elymas the sorcerer.Act.13.8.
Enoch.Heb.11.5.
¶Epistle of the Apostles.act. 15 23.
In the Epistles of S. Paul there are some hard things. 2.Pet. 3.16.
¶ Enemie must be loued, Reade To loue, and to do wel.
Enemie of the crosse of Christ. Phil 3.18.
Enuie is condemned, Matth.27. 18.act.17.5. rom.1.29. gal. 5. 21.1.timot.6.4. tit.3.3. 1.pe. 2.1.
Esau.Rom.9.13.heb.12.16.
¶ Eunuches or gelded are after three sortes.Mat.19.12.
The Eunuche of Queene Candace.Act.8.27.
¶ Excommunication out of the Church.Matt.18.17. 1.cor.5. 5,11.2.thes.3. 14. 1.tim.1.20.
Out of the Synagogue.Ioh.9.22.
¶ Euil proceedeth out of the heart.Matt.12.34.and 15.11. mar.7.21.
We must hate it.Rom.12.9.
We must not render euill for euill.reade Iniurie.

F

FAbles may not be preached. 1.Tim.4.7. 2.pet.1.16.
All men ought to anoyde them, 1.Tim.1.4. tit.1.14.
The wicked vse them. 2. Timo. 4.4.

¶Faith

¶ Faith or confidence in God & in Christ. Iohn 14.1.
The definition therof Heb. 11.1
There is but one faith. Ephe. 4.5
It is the gift of God. Mat. 11.27. and 13.11. and 16.17. luk. 17. 22,32. ioh. 6.44,65. act. 15.8. & 16.14. rom. 12. 3. 1. cor. 2. 5. ephe. 1.14. & 2.8. phil. 1.29. 2. thes. 3.2. 2. pet. 1.3. 1. ioh. 5.20
It cōmeth of hearing. rō. 10. 17.
It ought to be certaine & sure. Mat. 21.21. ephe. 3. 12. col. 1. 23. & 2.7. heb. 10.22. iam. 1. 6.
By reason of it sinnes are forgiuen. Mat. 9.2. luk. 7.50. act. 10. 43.
By it we obteine life euerlasting. Ioh. 3.15,36. & 5.24. and 6.40,47. and 11.25. and 20.29 31. act. 16.3. rom. 1.12. 1. ioh. 5.13.
By it we are made the children of God. Iohn 1.12. gal. 3.26.
By it we are iustified, purified, viuified, regenerate, and sanctified. Act. 13.39. & 15 9. & 26 18. rom. 3.24,26. & 4.5,11,23. & 5.1. & 9.30. & 10.10. gal. 2. 16. & 3.11,24. phi. 3.9. col. 1.23
By it we receiue the holy ghoſt. Gal 3.2.
By it Christ dwelleth in vs. ephe. 3.12.
By it we haue peace with God. Rom. 5.1.
By it we obteine health. Mat. 8. 3. and 9 6,22,29. and 15. 28. mar. 9.25. & 10.52. luke. 7. 48. and 8.48. act. 3. 16. and 14,9. heb. 11.34. iam. 5.15.
By it all thinges are possible. Mat. 17.20. and 21. 22. mar. 9. 23. and 11.23. phil. 4.13.
Without it, it is impossible to please God. Heb. 11.6.
Without it, euery thing is sinne Rom. 14 23.
It is the victorie of the worlde. 1. Iohn. 5.4.
It is our armour against the assaultes of the deuill. Ephe. 6. 16. 1. thes. 5.8. 1. pet. 5,9.
The ende thereof is the saluation of our soules. 1. pet. 1. 9.
The noble deedes and great effectes which the ancient fathers did by it. Heb. 11.
Examples of strong faith. Mat. 8 10. luke 7.7. rom. 14. 1. thes. 1. 3. heb. 11.
It is declared by workes. Gal. 5.6. 1. tim. 1.2. phi. 1.5. 12.2.18
Without works it is dead, Iam. 2. 17.
Affliction is the triall of our faith. 1. pet. 1,7.
¶ Faithful, who are elect frō before al beginning to life euerlasting, reade Elect. & Elect.
They are the children of God, &c. Reade Children.
The heires of god. Rō. 8.17. gal. 4.7. ephe. 3.6. tit. 3.7. iam. 2.5.
Brethren & fellowe heires with Christ. Mat. 25. 40. and 28.10. ioh. 20.17. rom. 8.17. heb. 2.11
Temples of God, and habitation of the holy Ghost whom they haue receiued of God, Iob. 14 17. rom. 5.5. & 8.9. 1. cor. 3.16. & 6.19. 2. cor. 1.22. & 5.5. and 6.16. gal. 3.2. and 4.6. ephe. 2. 22. 1. thes. 4.8. 2. tim. 1.14. tit. 3.5.

New

New creatures.2.Cor.5.17. gal. 6.15.
Anoynted of God. 2.Cor.1. 21. 1.iohn.2.20,27.
Signed and sealed with the holie Ghost.2.Cor.1.22.ephe. 1. 13.and 4.30.
They are holie.Act.9.32, 41. rō. 8.27.and 12.13.and 15. 25,31 and 16.2. 1.cor.6.2. & 14.33. and 16.1,15.2.cor.1,1. and 8. 4.and 13.12.ephe.1.1,18. and 4.12.colos.1.4.1.thes.5. 27.1. tim.5.10.phile.5.heb.3.1.and 13.24. 1.pet.2.9.iude.3.reue. 17. 6.
The sheepe of Christ,and onely heare his voyce.Ioh.10.27.
Called to holinesse and good conuersation. Luke 1.75.rom. 1.7. 1.cor.1.2.ephe.1. 4. & 4. 24.colos. 1.22.1.thes.4.7 1.timot.2.15.tit.2.12. 1.pet.1.15
They are vessels of mercie and honour.Rom.9.23.2.tim.2.20.
They are all one bodie in christ Iohn 17.21.rom.12. 5. 1.cor. 10.17.and 12.12.galat. 3. 28. ephes.1.23.and 4.6.col.1. 22.
They are dead,buried,and risen againe with Christ by faith. Rom.6.3.ephe.2.1.col.2.12.
Cladde with Christ.Rom.13.14. gal.3.27.
Kings and priests.1. pet. 2. 5, 9. reue.1.6. and 5.10.and 20.6.
All things are theirs, and they are Christs.1.Cor.3.22.
They are called to the crosse & affliction,Reade Crosse.
They are hated and persecuted of the worlde. Matth. 10. 22. mar.13.13. iohn 15.18. & 16. 2. rom.8.35.2.tim.3.11.
They are dead to the worlde, and aliue with Christ to God Col.3.3.
They are made like to the image of Christ.Rom.8.29.
They can not perish.Iohn.5.24.
There is no condemnation for them Rom.8.1.
They ought not to haue to doe with the infideles, neither to be conuersant with Christiās of wicked life.1.Cor.5. 11. & 2.cor.6.14,17. ephes. 5. 7. 2. thes.3.6.
At what time they were first called Christians. Act.11.26.
¶ False prophetes, Reade Preachers.
False witnesse, reade Witnesse.
Familie, it ought to be well gouerned and prouided for. 1. Tim.3.4.and 5.8.
Fasting and abstinence.Matt. 6. 16.and 9.15.act.13.2. and 14. 23. 1.cor.7.5.
Father & mother must be obeyed & honoured , Reade Children,and Honour.
We must not loue them more then Christ. Mat. 10. 37. luke 14.26.
Fathers taken for predecessours.Matth.23.30.act.15.10. heb.1.2.
We must not follow their follies,abuses, and vngodly customes.Mat.15.2. marke.7. 2. luke 11. 38.gal.1.10.act.3.17. and 7.51. 1.pet.1.18.
¶ Feare of God, suche as children

dren beare towarde their fathers. Luk. 1. 29. & 9. 31. and 10. 2. 2. cor. 5. 11. & 7. 1. ephe. 5. 21. col. 3. 22. 1. pet. 2. 17.
Such feare as seruauntes beare to their Masters. Roma. 8. 15. ephe. 6. 5. reuel. 21. 8.
It is vsed for obedience and reuerence toward men. Rom. 13 4. 2. cor. 7. 15. ephe. 6. 5. 1. pet. 3. 14.
Worldly and carnall feare. Ioh. 9. 22. & 12. 42. & 19. 8.
We ought not to set by it. Mat. 10. 26. 1. pet. 3. 14.
It is taken for trembling and astonishing. Mat. 14. 26. and 27. 54. & 28. 4. luke 1. 12. and 2. 9. act. 2. 43. and 5. 5, 11. & 19. 17. reuel. 11. 11.
Felix the president. Act. 24. 22.
Feastes, Reade Dayes.
Festus the president. Act. 25. 1.
Figge tree accursed of Christ. Mat. 21. 16.
¶ Flesh taken for the whole man. Mat. 24. 22. act. 2. 17. rom. 3. 20. 1. cor. 1. 26.
For the corrupt nature, affection or carnal wisdome. Mat. 16. 17. iohn 3. 6. rom. 7. 14. and 8. 5, 6.
The fruites and workes of the flesh. Gal. 5. 19. ephe. 2. 3.
It fighteth against the Spirit. Gal. 5. 17. 1. pet. 2. 11.
The flesh and bloud of Christ are our spirituall meate and drinke. Iohn. 6. 51.
To flie in persecution is lawfull. Mat. 2. 13. and 10. 23. and 24. 16. Iohn 8. 59. act. 9. 25. and 13. 51. & 14. 6. 2. cor. 11. 33.
¶ Forgiuenes of sinnes by the preaching of the Gospell. Matt. 16. 19. iohn 20. 43.
Sinnes freely forgiuen. Rom. 4. 7.
Onely by Christ. Ephe. 1. 7. act. 5. 31. Reade Christ.
Free will, Reade Workes.

G

GAbriel declareth the birth of Iohn Baptist. Luke 1. 13.
He saluteth the virgin Marie. Luk. 1. 28.
Gamaliel. Act. 5. 34.
Gate streight or large. Mat. 7. 13 luke 13. 24.
¶ Gentiles, or heathen are left for a time to walke in their owne wayes. Act. 14. 15. ephe. 2. 2.
They are receiued to the grace of the Gospel. Act. 11. 17. and 14. 27. ephe. 3. 6.
¶ Giue we ought to whosoeuer desireth. Luke 6. 30. 38.
It is better to giue then to receiue. Act. 20. 35.
¶ Gifts of God. Iohn 4. 10. and 10. 28. ephe. 2. 8. iam. 1. 17. 2. pet. 1. 3.
God giueth them, and repenteth not. Rom. 11. 29.
They are different and peculiar. Rom. 12. 6. 1. cor. 7. 7. ephe. 4. 7. 1. pet. 4. 10.
¶ Glorie ought to be to Godwards. 1. Cor. 1. 31. 2. co. 10. 17.
We ought to glorie in Christ, and his crosse. Gal. 6. 14. phil. 3. 3.
Also in our tribulations. Rom. 5. 3.

None

None ought to glorie in him ſelfe. 1. Cor. 1. 29. ephe. 2. 9.
Vaine glorie is forbidden. Mat. 23. 6, 7, 8. gal. 5. 26. phil. 2. 3.
Gluttonie & drunkenneſſe are forbidden. Luke 21. 34. rom. 13. 13. 1. cor. 5. 11. and 6. 10. gala. 5. 21. heb. 13. 9. 1. pet. 4. 3
¶ God is one. Mar. 12. 26. 1. corin. 8. 4. ephe. 4. 6. 1. tim. 2. 5.
He is a ſpirit. Iohn 4. 24.
He is light, & dwelleth in the light. 1. Iohn. 1. 5. 1. tim. 6. 16.
He is inuiſible. Iohn. 1. 18. col. 1. 15. 1. tim. 1. 17. & 6. 16. 1. iohn 4. 12.
Immortal. 1. tim. 1. 17. and 6. 16.
Father of all. ephe. 4. 6.
Creator of al things. Act. 17. 24. 1. cor. 8. 6. and 11. 12. epheſ. 3. 9. heb. 3. 4. reuel. 4. 11. and 10. 6.
The beginning and the ende. Reuel. 21. 6.
He worketh al in all things. 1. cor. 12. 6. ephe. 1. 10.
Nothing is impoſsible to him. Mat. 19. 26. luke. 1. 37. and 18. 27.
All goodneſſe commeth of him. Mat. 7. 7. Iohn 3. 27. rom. 11. 36. 1. cor. 4. 7. 2. cor. 9. 8. epheſ. 4. 7. 1. tim. 6. 17. iam. 1. 17. 2. pet. 1. 3.
He giueth life, and being to all. Act. 17. 25. 1. tim. 6. 13.
He onely is good. Mat. 19. 17.
Wiſe. Rom. 16. 27. 1. tim. 1. 17. Iude. 25.
Holy. Reuel. 15. 4.
True & faithfull & cannot lye. Iohn 3. 33. rom. 3. 4. 1. cor. 1. 9. 1. theſ. 5. 24. 2. theſ. 3. 3. tit. 1. 2. hebre. 6. 18. and 10. 23. 1. iohn 1. 9. and 5. 20.
Onely prince, king of kings. &c. 1. tim. 6. 15.
The knower and examiner of hearts. Act. 1. 24. & 15. 8. rom. 8. 27. 1. theſ. 2. 4. 1. iohn 3. 20.
The knower of his. 2. tim. 2. 19.
The onely forgiuer of ſinnes. Mar. 2. 7.
The iuſtifier, ſanctifier, & quickner. Iohn 17. 19. rom. 3. 24. and 4. 25. and 8. 30. 1. theſſ. 5. 23.
The onely Sauiour. 1. Tim. 2. 3. tit. 3. 4. iude. 25.
Iudge of al. Heb. 12. 23. 1. pet. 1. 17.
He is the onely Lawemaker, which can deſtroy and ſaue. Iam. 4. 12. He onely teacheth and giueth the true wiſedome. Iohn 6. 45. ephe. 1. 8, 17. col. 1. 9. heb. 8. 11. iam. 1. 5. 1. iohn 5. 20.
None is counſeller vnto him. Rom. 11. 24. 1. cor. 2. 16.
He onely ought to be worſhipped. Mat. 4. 10. reuel. 19. 10. and 22. 9.
He dwelleth not in temples made with handes. Act. 7. 48. and 17. 24.
But dwelleth in his, to wit, the faithfull. Ioh. 14. 17. 1. ioh. 4. 15. reade Faithful.
He hath care ouer vs, Heb. 13. 5. 1. Pet. 5. 7.
He heareth vs in our requeſtes. Matth. 7. 7. and 18. 19. and 21. 22. 1. iohn 5. 15.
He chaſteneth & proueth his. Heb. 12.

Heb.12.6.iam.1.12.1.pet.1.7. & 4.12,13.reuel.2.10. & 3.19
He exhorteth to repentance, & attendeth,Rom.2.4.2.pet.3.9
We muſt followe, and be like him,Matth.5.44.ephe.5. 1. 1. iohn 2.6.
Gods,for princes & iudges,iohn 10.34.
Falſe gods,as idoles and deuils, Act.14.15.and 19.26.1.cor.8. 1. and 10.20.gal.4.8.
¶ Goſpell,that is, good tidings, or newes.Rom.1.16.
It is the myſterie or ſecrete of the will of God, Rom. 16.25. ephe.3.7.& 6.19.col.1.23.
The word of trueth, Ephe.1.13.
The adminiſtration of the Spirit and of iuſtice,2.cor.3.8.
By it we obtaine ſaluatiō, Rom. 1.16.1.cor.15.2.ephe.1.13.
It ought to be preached publikly through al the world to euery creature,Mat.24.14.and 28.19.mar.16.15.a&.1.8. col. 1.23.
Whatſoeuer is not conteyned in it, though the Angels of heauen bring it,ought not to be heard,Gal.1.8.
It is the matter and occaſion of diuiſion and diſcorde,Mat.10 35.mar.13.12.luke 12.53.act. 13.50. and 14.4.and.16.22. & 19.23.and 21.30.
It is hid from the wiſe & mightie of the world,and contemned of them,& is receyued of the poore and ſimple,Mat.11 25.ioh.7.48.1.cor.1.21,25. & 3.7.
What things hinder the receyuing of it,Mat.13.22. mar.4. 19.luke 8.14.iohn 12.42.rom. 9. 32.and 10.3.2.cor.4.4.
The effect & ſumme of it,1.cor. 15.2. 1.tim. 3.16.
¶ Grace of God through Chriſt, iohn 1.17.
By it we are ſaued,Act. 15. 11. rom.11.5.ephe.2.5.tit.3.7.
we ought to truſt in it,1.pe.1.13
Whoſoeuer truſteth in another loſeth it,Gal.5.2.
Grace or thankes rendred to God before meales,and after Mat.14.19.and 15.36. and 26. 26. 1.tim.4.4,5.
We muſt render thankes to God for all things,Ephe.5.20. 1.theſ.5.18.

H

HAnd dried,healed of Chriſt, Mat.12.13.
To cut off the hand & the foot. Mat.5.30.and.18.8.
To put the hand to the plough, Luke 9.62.
Laying on of handes,Act.6. 6.& 13. 3. 1.tim.4.14.and 5.22.2. tim.1.6.
¶ Hardening of the heart commeth of God,Mat.13.15.iohn 12.40.a&.28.27.rom.11.8.
God hardeneth whome he will, rom.9.18.
¶ Harneſt is ripe and we muſt pray God to ſend forth labourers,Mat.9.38.
Chriſt ſendeth his Apoſtles to mowe the harueſt which they had not ſowen,Iohn 4.38.
¶ Hate of the worlde againſt Chriſt,

Christ, Reade Christ. Against the faithful, Reade Faithfull.
To hate one another is forbidden. Mat. 5.44. tit. 3.3. 1. ioh. 2. 9. and 3.15. and 4.20.
We must hate the euill, Roma. 12. 9.
¶ Heauinesse which is cõmendable. 2. Cor. 7.9.
Discommendable. Luk. 18.23. 2. cor. 7.10.
¶ Heauen, the place of GOD. Mat. 5.34. 2&. 7.49.
Heauen and earth shall passe away. Mat. 24.35. hebr. 1. 11. 2. pet. 3.10. reuel. 21.1.
Heauen and earth new. 2. pet. 3. 13. reuel. 21.1.
Heauen open. Mat. 3.16. 2&. 7.56
¶ Head of Christ, God. 1. Cor. 11.3.
Of the church, Christ. Ephe. 1.22 and 4.15. and 5.23. col. 1.18. and 2.10.
Of the man. 1 Cor. 11.3.
The man head of the woman. 1. Cor. 11.3. ephe. 5.23.
¶ Hell. Luk. 10.15. 2. pet. 2.4. iud. 6, 13. phil. 2.10. reuel. 6.8.
Taken for the graue. Act. 2.27, 31.
Whose fire is vnquencheable. Mat. 3.12. and 18.8. mar. 9.44. luke 3.17.
The worme shall not die there. Mar. 9.44.
Darkenesse where shalbe weeping and gnashing of teeth. Mat. 8.12. and 22.13. & 25.30.
¶ Heires of God, Reade Faithfull.
The inheritance of God in his Saintes. Ephe. 1. 18. col. 1.12. 1. pet. 1.4.
The inheritance is giuen by the promise. Gal. 3.18.
¶ Heresies & sects must needes be in the worlde, and wherefore. 1. Cor. 11.19. 2. pet. 2.1.
We must flye from heretikes. tit. 3.10.
¶ Herod called also Ascalon killeth the infants. Mat. 2.16.
Herod Antipas putteth Iohn Baptist to death. Mat. 14.10.
He contemneth and mocketh Christ. Luke 23.11.
Herod Agrippa putteth Iames to death. Act. 12.2.
He is deuoured with vermine. Act. 12.23.
Hypocrisie & hypocrites, Mat. 6.2. and 7.5. luke 12.1. col. 2. 23.1. tim. 4.2. Reade Pharises.
¶ Honour to God & to Christ, Iohn 5.23.
To father and mother. Mat. 15.4 and 19.19. ephe. 6.2.
To Kings & Magistrates. 1. pet. 2.13.
To ministers. 1. tim. 5.17.
To masters. 1. Tim. 6.1.
Men must honour their wiues. 1. Pet. 3.7.
To giue honour to euery man that deserueth. Rom. 13.7.
To all. Rom. 12.10. 1. pet. 2.17.
It is vsed, for to helpe, prouide, and to intreate wel. Mat. 15.5 2. pet. 3.7. 1. tim. 5.8.
¶ Hope is one. Ephe. 4.4.
It is of God. Rom. 15.13. 2. thes. 2.16.
It is of thinges which are not seene.

ſeene.Rom.8.24.
By it we are ſaued, In the ſame place.
We muſt haue it in God.1.Tim. 6.17. 1.pet.1.21.
And in Chriſt.Mat.12.21. roma. 15.12.ephe.1.12.
It bringeth not ſhame.Rom.5.5.
It muſt be ſure & ſtedfaſt. Col. 1.23.heb.3.6.and 10.23.
We muſt be ready to giue account of it.1.Pet.3.15.
It is our ſpirituall armour. 1. Theſ.5.8.
We muſt be glad, and reioyce in it.Rom.5.2.and 12.12.
¶ Hoſpitalitie, which is to receiue the poore and ſtraungers, muſt be vſed.Mat.25.35. roma.12.13.heb.13. 2. 1 pet. 4.9.
Houſholde,reade Familie.
¶ Humilitie or humbleneſſe toward God.Mat.18.10 luk.18. 14.iam.4.10.1.pet.5.6.
Among men.Matt.18. 4. and 23. 12.luke 14.11. rom.12. 16. ephe.4.2. phi.2.3. col.3. 12. 1. pet.5.5.

I

IAcob.Act.7.12.rom.9.13.hebr. 11.20.
Iames ſonne of Zebede,brother of Iohn, is called of Chriſt. Mat.4.21.
He was killed of Herod.Act. 12.2.
Iannes & Iambres reſiſt Moſes. 2.Tim.3.8.
Idleneſſe is condemned.2.Theſ. 3.12.1.tim.5.13.
Idle talke,Mat,12.36.
¶ Idolatrie or worſhipping of images or creatures is condemned.Act.7.43. and 14.11, 18.& 15.20.29. and 17. 16. & 19. 28.rom.1.25.1.cor.8,7.& 10.7,19, 20. gal.5.20.col.3.5. 1.cor. 6.9.1.pet.4.3. 1.iohn.5 21.
Idolaters muſt be auoided. 1. Cor.5.11.and 6.9. 2.cor.6.16 reuel.2. 20.
They are puniſhed and condemned.reuel.9.20.and 21.8. and 22.15.
¶ Ieruſalem the earthly. Matth 5.35.
Chriſtes entrie into it. Mat. 21. 1, 18.
The deſtruction therof foretold Mat.23.37.
The heauenly Ieruſalem.Gal.4. 26.heb.12.22.
The new Ieruſalem.Reuel.3.12. and 21.2.
Ieſus the name of Chriſt. Mat.1. 25. luke 1.31.and 21.8.
Iewes & their excellecie. Rom. 3.2. 9.and 9.5.
Yet they haue bene blinded & beleeued not. Iohn 12. 38. rom. 11.7.2.cor.3.14.
They were reiected, & the Gentiles receiued.Mat.8. 11. and 21.43.rom.11.11.
They ſhalbe reſtored againe if they remaine not in their vnbeleefe.Rom.11.23.
They are not to be caſt off, but to be loued and prayed for. Rom.1.10.and 10.1. and 11.28
There is no difference betwene Iewe & Gentile.Rom. 10. 12.

Of the inward & outward Iewe Rom.2.29.
Iezabel the ſpiritnall whore. Reuel.2.20.
¶ Ignorance of God.Act.17.30. rom.10.3. 1.cor.15.34 gal.4. 9. ephe.4.18.1.theſſ.4.5.
Such as may be pardoned.Act 3. 17.1.tim.1.13.
That which is indurate and irremiſſible.2 Theſ.1.8. 1.tim. 1.6.2.pet.2.12.
Image of God is Chriſt, Reade Chriſt.
Man is the image of God.1.Cor. 11.7. col.3.10.
Inconſtancie.2.Co.1.17. gal.1.6 2.tim.4.10.iam.1.8.
¶Infidelitie is in al.Rom.11.30.
In the faithfull.Mat.14.31.& 17 20.mar.9.24.and 16.14. luke 24.25.iohn 20.27.
In the reprobate, Matth.23.39. iohn 6.64. and 10.25. act. 19. 9.rom.11.10. 2.theſ.1.8.
Infideles and reprobate, the children of incredulitie or diſobedience, Epheſ.2.2. and 5.6.col.3.6.
Childrē of the deuil,Mat.13.38. iohn 8.44. 1.ioh.3.8.
Curſed and the children of malediction,Mat.25.41. 2.pet.2. 14.
Veſſels of wrath & of diſhonor, appointed to perdition, rom. 9.22. 2. tim.2.20. 2.pet.2.12. inde 4.
Abominable and reprobate in euerie good worke,tit.1. 16.
Blinded of the deuil,2.Cor.4.4
Cōdemned,Mar.16.16.ioh.3.18
The anger of God remaineth vpon them,Iohn 3.36.
They ſhall goe into hell fyre, Mat.3.12.and 25.41.marke.9. 43.iohn 15.6. 2.theſ.1.9.heb. 10.27.reuel.20. 14. and 21.8.
We may not haue to doe with them,Reade Faithfull.
¶Infirmitie and infirme in faith ought to be borne with, that they may be wonne, Rom.14. 1. and 15.1. 1.cor.9.22. 1. theſ.5.14.
We muſt not offend them,rom. 14.13. 1.cor.8.9.
The vertue of God worketh in infirmitie, 2.Cor.12.5.
God chuſeth the weake things of the world,1.Cor.1.27.
Infirme in the bodie are healed of Chriſt,Mat 4.23. and 8.13. and 9.7.and 12.13.and 14.36 and 15.28.and 19.2. luke 14. 4. iohn 4.50.and 5.8.
Infirmities and diſeaſes ſometimes come for ſinne,Ioh.5.14
Sometimes for the glorie of God,Iohn,9.3.and 11.4.
Iniury or wrong ought not to be done nor rendred, but to be borne,Mat.5.39. rō.12.17. 1.cor.6.7.1.theſſ.5.15. 1.pet. 3.9.
Iob ought to be an enſample of patience vnto vs,Iam.5.11.
Iohn Baptiſt ſēt of god to beare witneſſe to Chriſt,Ioh.1.6.
Ioye,Reade Glory.
Ioſeph the huſbād of Marie the virgine Mat.1.16. luke 1.27.
Ioſeph of Arimathea,Mat.27. 57.iohn 19.38.

Ioseph the Patriarke, Act. 7. 9. heb. 11.22.
Ioseph called Barnabas, 2&. 4.36
Israelites which are indeede, Rom. 9.4, 8.
¶ Iohn Baptists birth, Luk. 1.57.
He preacheth, baptizeth, and declareth Christ, Mat. 3. 1, 6, 11. luke 3.3. and 7.19. iohn 1. 23, 26, 34. and 3.29.
Christ witnesseth of him, Matt. 11.11. luke 7.28.
His death, Mat. 14.10.
He is Elias, Mat. 11. 14. and 17. 12.
¶ Iudas selleth and betrayeth Christ, Mat. 26.15, 48.
Christ discouereth him to Iohn Iohn 13.26.
He repenteth and hangeth him selfe, Mat. 27.5.
¶ Iudgement of God, taken for his secret counsel & workes, are incõprehensible, true, & iust, Rom. 11. 33. reuel. 19.2.
Iudgement of God taken for correctiõ, 1. Cor. 11.32. 1. pet. 4.17.
Taken for damnation, Marke 3. 29. 1. cor. 11.29.
The vniuersall iudgement, Mat. 11.24. act. 17.31. heb. 9.27.
After what sorte it shalbe, Mat. 25.31.32.
What signes shall goe before, Mat. 24.29.
The day & houre is not knowẽ. Mat. 24.36. mar. 13.32. 1. thes. 5.2. 2. pet. 3.10. reuel. 3.3.
We must waite for it frõ houre to houre, Mat. 24.44. luke. 12. 36. iam. 5.7, 8.
Then all things shalbe discouered, and euery man shall receyue his rewarde, Rom. 2.6. 2. tim. 4.8.
To iudge our brother is forbidden, Mat. 7.1. rom. 2.3. and 14. 3, 13. 1. cor. 4.5. iam. 4.11.
We must iudge iustly & not after the persone, Iohn 7.24.
Iustice and iustification, Looke Christ and Faith.

K

KEyes of the kingdome of heauen (either to open it, or to shut it) Mat. 16.19. and 18. 18. ioh. 20.23.
The keyes of knowledge. Luke 11.52.
The keyes of hel and death, Reuela. 1.18.
¶ Kingdome of God, or of heauen by his spiritual gouernement of the faithfull in the persone of Iesus Christ. Mat. 3.2. mar. 1.15.
It is not with obseruation, but is within vs, Luk. 17.20, 21.
It is taken for the preaching of the Gospell, Mat. 3.31. mar. 4.30, 31.32.
It is taken for life euerlasting, Iohn 3.3.
It is prepared for the elect, Mat. 25.34.
Who are shut thence, Mar. 10. 15. iohn 3.3. 1. cor. 6.9. and 15 50. gal. 5.21. ephe. 5.5. reuel. 21.8. and 22.15.
We must enter into it by many tribulations, Act. 14.22.
The Kingdome of Christ eternall, Luke 1.33. 2. pet. 1.11.

A Kingdome diuided, Mat. 12.25
¶ Knowledge of God, Iohn. 17.3.
It is giuen of Christ, Mat. 11.27. iohn 1.17. & 14.7. and 17.22. 1. iohn 5.20.
The world hath not the Knowledge of God, Iohn 1. 10. and 8. 55. and 17. 25. 1. cor. 1. 21. 1. iohn 3.6.
The knowledge of sinne by the Law, Rom. 3. 20. and 7.7.

L

LAbour and trauaile commanded to all, 1. Thes. 4. 11. 2. thes. 3. 8, 12.
Saint Paul laboured with his owne handes, Act. 18. 3. & 20. 34. 1. cor. 4. 12. 2. thes. 2. 9. 2. thes. 3. 8.
¶ Law ceremonial was a schole maister and a, b, c. to leade to Christ, Gal. 3. 24. and 4. 2.
A shadowe of good thinges to come, Heb. 10. 1.
It was weake, and impotente to saue by, Gal. 4. 9. heb. 7 18. and 10. 4.
It is abolished by Christ, Reade Christ.
The Law morall, good, iust, and holy. Rom. 7. 12. 1. tim. 1. 8.
The law spirituall which requireth perfect and pure obedience of the heart, Rom. 7. 14.
It is giuen to make sin knowen, Rom. 3. 20. and 7. 7, 21. galat. 3. 19.
And to cause it to abounde, Rō. 5. 20.
It is the force of sinne, 1. Cor. 15 56.
It it the administratiō of death, and damnation, 2. Cor. 3. 7, 9.
A yoke importable, Act. 15. 10.
Procuring anger, Rom. 4. 15.
No man can obserue and keepe it, Act. 15. 10. rom. 7. 8. galat. 3. 13.
It cannot iustifie, Act. 13. 39. rō. 3. 20. and 4. 15. and 5. 20. and 7 8. 2. cor. 3. 6. galat. 2. 16, 19. & 3. 11, 21, 24.
He that is vnder it, is accursed, Gal. 3. 10.
Christ hath delinered vs from the curse thereof, Gal. 3. 13. and 4. 5.
It is writtē of God in the heart of the faithfull, Heb. 8. 10.
Yet they do not fulfil it perfectly, Rom. 7. 23.
It is not giuen for the iust, but for the vniust, 1. Tim. 1. 9.
The summe thereof, Mat. 22. 37. rom. 13. 9. gal. 5. 14.
¶ Lazarus the poore man, Luke 16. 20.
The brother of Martha, Ioh. 11. 1, 11, 43.
Leaue we must all things to followe Christ, Mat. 19, 29. luke 14. 26, 33.
Leapers healed of Christ, Mat. 8. 2. luke 17. 14.
Letter, and Spirit, Rom. 7. 6. 2. cor. 3. 6.
¶ Leuain taken for euill doctrine, Mat. 16, 6.
The olde leuain ought to be purged, 1. Cor. 5. 7.
Libelle of diuorce, Reade Mariage.
¶ Libertie spirituall frō the bōdage of sin, Iohn. 8. 35. rom. 6. 20. & 8. 2.

From

From the ſubiection and curſe of the Lawe, Rom. 7.6. gal. 3. 13. and 4.5. and 5.1.
From the tyrannie of the deuil, death, and hell Rom. 8. 2. 1. cor. 15.55. heb. 2.14.
Frō the ceremonies of the law, Gal. 2.4. and 5.1. coloſ. 2.14.
From all thinges indifferent, 1. tim. 4.4. tit. 1.15.
This libertie muſt not be turned to the offēce of our brother, but muſt be meaſured by charitie, Roma. 14. 15. 1. cor. 6.12. and 8.7, 10. and 9.22 gal. 5.13.
Carnall libertie, Gal. 5.13. 1. pe. 2.16. 2. pet. 2.19.
¶ Life bodily is a thing that fadeth, Iam. 4.14.
We ought not to diſquiet our ſelues, howe to maintaine it, Mat. 6.25.
We muſt render it, and forſake it for Chriſtes cauſe, Matt. 10. 39. ſohn 12.25. act. 20.24. reuel. 12.11.
¶ Life euerlaſting, Iohn 17.2.
It is the gift of God, Iohn 6.27. and 10.28. rom. 6.22. tit. 1. 2. and 3.7. 1. iohn 2.25.
¶ Lying forbidden, Coloſ. 3. 9. iam. 3.14. reue. 21.27. & 22.15
Lying in doctrine, 2. Theſ. 2. 11. 1. tim. 4.1. reuel. 2.2.
Euery man is a liar, Rom. 3.4.
And whoſoeuer doeth not confeſſe himſelf to be a ſinner, 1. Iohn 1.10.
And he that ſaieth he knoweth God, and keepeth not his cōmaundements, 1. Iohn 2.4.
Alſo he that denieth Ieſus to be Chriſt, 1. Iohn 2.22.
And he that ſayeth he loueth God, and hateth his brother, 1. Iohn 4.20.
Lot, 2. Pet. 2.7.
His dayes, Luke 17.28.
¶ To loue God, Mat. 22.37. mar. 12.30.
To loue Chriſt, Mat. 10.37.
To loue our neighbour, Matt. 5. 43. and 22.39. luke 10.27. gal. 5.14. iam. 2.8.
To loue one another, Ioh. 13.34 rom. 12.10. and 13, 8. 1. theſ. 4.9. 1. pet. 1.22. 1. ioh. 3.11.
To loue our enemies, Mat. 5.44. luke 6.35. rom. 12, 20.
The loue of God and Chriſt towards vs, Iohn 3.16. rom. 8. 35. ephe. 5.2. reuel. 1.5.
Luke the Phyſition. Coloſ. 4. 14.
Lunatike healed of Chriſt, Mat. 4.24. and 17.18.
Luxurie, reade Adulterie.

M

MAgiſtrates are ordeined of God, and to what end, Rom. 13.4, 6. 1. pet. 2.13.
We ought to obey them, tit. 3.1
To pay them tribute, Luke 20. 25. rom. 13.6.
We muſt pray for them, 1. tim. 2.2.
We muſt not contemne them, nor ſpeake euill of them, 2. Pet. 2.10. iud. 8.
But if they commande any thing againſt God, we muſt not obey them, Act. 4.19.
Malice is condemned, Rom. 1.29

2.cor.5.8.and 14.20.ephe.4.31. col.3.8. tit.3.3. 1.pet.2.1.
¶ Man which is earthly & heauenly,1.Cor.15.47.
The olde and new man,Rom. 6. 6.ephe.4.22,24.col.3.9.
Carnall, and solde vnder sinne, Iohn 3. 6.rom.7.14.
Sensuall,1.Cor.2.14.
Spirituall,Iohn 3.5. 1.cor.2.15.
The outwarde man or body, 2. Cor.4.16.
The inward, or spirituall cōceiued by the word,2.Cor.4.16. ephe.3.16. 1.pet.3.4.
Euery man is a sinner,Rom.3.9, 23.& 5.12.gal.3.22. 1.ioh.1.8
Is a lyar,Rom.3.4.
Vnbeleeuing,Rom.11.30.
Naturally the childe of wrath, Ephe.2.3.
Death and damnation haue raigned ouer euery man,Rom.5. 14. 1.cor.15.21.
¶ Marie the virgin, wife of Ioseph,Mat.1.16,20.
She is saluted of the Angel,Luk. 1.28.
She beareth Christ, Luke 2.7.
Her song,Luke 1.46.
She sendeth vs toChrist,Ioh.2.5
¶ Marie the sister of Martha, Luk.10.39.iohn 11.1,31.
She anointeth Christes feete, Iohn 12.3.
¶ Mariage is an inseparable cōiunction of the husband and the wife,Mat. 19. 5. 1. cor.7. 4,10.
It is ordeined of God,Mat.19.5
It is graunted to all, 1.Cor.7.2.
It is honorable to al folke,Heb. 13.4.
It is necessarie for whosoeuer hath not the gifte of continencie,Mat.19.12. 1.corinth. 7.2,9.
Christ honored it with his presence, and first miracle, Iohn 2.2.
It is compared to the ioyning of Christ with his Church, Ephe.5.29.
¶ Man cannot vndoe it,Mat.19.6
Fornication dissolueth & breaketh it,Mat.5.32. and 19.9.1 cor.7.10.
The bond betwene the husband & the wife, also betwene the wife and the husband, & how they ought to behaue themselues the one to the other,1. Cor.7.3,12,13,14,34.ephe.5. 28,33.colos.3.18.19. 1.tim.2. 12.tit.2.5.1.pet.3.1,7.
Martha,Luke 10.38.iohn 11,20.
Masters howe they shoulde behaue thē selues toward their seruants,Ephe.6.9 col.4.1.
Matthew called Leui, Matt.9.9. Luke 5.27.
Matthias is elected Apostle,Act. 1.26.
¶ Meate that endureth, & spirituall,Iohn 6.51. 1.cor.10.4.
Corporall meates make vs not acceptable to God, 1.Cor.8. 8. hebr.13,9.
There is no difference betwixt these bodily meates, as touching matter of conscience, Mar.7.18. luke 10.8.actes 10. 13.rom.14.14. 1.cor. 10.25. colos.2.16. 1.tim.4.3.
Melchisedec,Heb.7.1.

Members one of another, are the faithful, Rom. 12. 5. 1. cor. 12, 25. ephe. 4. 25.
Of Christ, our bodies are members, 1. Cor. 6. 15. ephe. 5. 30.
Our members are the temple of the holy Ghost, 1. Cor. 6. 19
Our members ought to serue in holinesse, Rom. 6. 19.
We must mortifie thē, Col. 3. 5.
¶Mercie of God through Christ Ephe. 2. 4. heb 4. 16. 1. pet. 1. 3
By it we haue saluation, Tit. 3. 4 1. per. 1. 5.
God sheweth it to whome it pleaseth him, Rom. 9. 15.
It is shewed to the Gentiles, Rom. 11. 30. and 15. 9.
God will shewe it to them that feare him, Luke 1. 50.
And to them that repent, Luke 15. 20.
Also to the faithfull, 1. Pet. 2 10.
It is commaunded among men, Luke 6. 36. ephe. 4. 32. colos 3. 13. 1. pet. 3. 8.
God will haue mercie and not sacrifice, Mat. 9. 13. & 12. 7.
Blessed are they that do it, Mat. 5. 7.
He that doeth it not, let him not looke for it of God, Iam. 2. 13.
It is one of the chiefest thinges that ought to be done, Matt. 23. 23.
We ought to shewe it towards all, Luke 10. 33. 37.
Michael the Archangel, Iude 9. reuel. 12. 7.
¶Ministration of the worde, or preaching the Gospel, Act. 20. 24. 2. cor. 5. 20.
Ministers, Reade Preachers.
¶Miracles true, are of God to confirme his trueth, Mar. 16. 17. iohn. 5. 36. & 10. 25. and 20 31. act. 2. 22. and 4. 30. & 14. 3. 2. cor. 12. 12. heb. 2. 4.
They are wrought in the Name of Iesus Christ, Marke 16. 17. actes 3. 16. and 4. 10, 30. and 9. 34.
False miracles are of the deuill to deceiue and confirme his, falsely, Mat. 24. 24. 2. thes. 2. 9. reuel. 13. 14. and 16. 14.
Workers and despisers of the Gospel, Act. 2. 13. and 17. 32. 2. pet. 3. 3. iude 18.
No man ought to be despised, Mat. 18 10.
¶Moses, Act 7. 20. heb. 11 23.
Why he hid his face, 2 Cor. 3. 13
¶Mortifying of our selues, Rom. 8. 13. colos. 3. 5.
It is to dye to sinne, Rom. 6. 2.
Mortification by the crosse, 2. Cor. 4. 10.
Mote in the eye, Mat. 7. 3.
Murmure and grudging ought to be auoyded, 1. Cor. 10. 10. philip. 2. 14.
Murmurers, Mat. 20. 11. lu. 5. 30. and 15. 2. and 19. 7. iohn 6. 41, 61. rom. 1. 29. iude 16.
¶Murther and murderers condemned. Mat. 5. 21 and 15. 19 and 19. 18. rom. 1. 29. and 13. 9. gal. 5. 21. 1. tim. 1. 9. 1. pet. 4. 15. reuelat. 21. 8. and 22. 15.
He that hateth is a murtherer, 1. Iohn 3. 15.

N

NAthanael, Iohn 1.46.
Neighbour, is euery man, Luke 10.36.
We ought to loue him as our selfe, Reade Loue & Charitie.
Newnes of life, is of the spirit, Iohn 3.6.
New man, Reade Man, & Creature.
Nicodemus, Iohn 3.1. and 7.50. and 19.39.
¶ Noe, Heb.11.7. 2.pet.2.5.
His daies, Mat.24.37.1.pe.3.20

O

OBedience to God rather thē to man, Act.4.19. and 5.29.
To the Gospell & to the trueth, Rom.1.9. and 15.20. and 16.25. 2.cor.9.13. 1.pet.1.12.
To Fathers, Reade Children. to Princes, reade Magistrates. to preachers, reade Preachers. to Masters, reade Seruants.
We must not obey sinne, Rom. 6.16.
Oblation, Reade Sacrifice.
¶ Offence, slander, let, or hinderance to come to God, and to Christ, or occasion giuen to drawe backe, or to fal by any meanes into sinne and destruction, Mat.18.7.
We ought not to giue it, Matt. 17.27. rom.14.13.1.cor.8.9,13
Wo be to him that gineth it, Mat.18.7.
Offence taken vniustly, Mat.24. 10. and 26.31. mar.6.3. ioh.6. 61.1.cor.1.23. gal.5.11.
Happy is he, that taketh it not, Matth.11.6.
We ought to put away from vs al things that should giue offence, be thei neuer so deare, Mat.5.29. and 18.8.
Wicked men are called offences or slanders, Mat.13.41.
Oliue tree wilde, Rom.11.17.
Christ is the true oliue tree, Rom.11.17.
Onesimus, Philem.10.
Onesiphorus, 2.Tim.1.16.
¶ Othe of God, Heb.6.17. & 7.21.
To what ende an othe is made among men, Heb.6.16.
It is prohibited in our priuate cause, Mat.5.34. iam.5.12.

P

PAtience is necessarie for the faithfull, Luke 21.19. rom.5.3. and 8.25. and 12.12. and 15.4. col.1.11. and 3.12. 1.thes.5.14. heb.10.36. and 12.1. iam.1.3. and 5.7.
Palsie healed of Christ, Matt.9.2,6.
¶ Parable or similitude. Of the candle light, Matt.5.15. luke 11.31.
Of the house built vppon the sand Mat.7.26.
Of the children in the streete, Mat.11.16.
Of the piece of new cloth, Mat. 9.16.
Of the sower, Mat.13.3,18.
Of the darnel or cockle, Mat.13 27.
Of the graine of mustard seede, Mat.13.31.
Of leuain. Mat.13.33.
Of the treasure hid, of the marchant, and the pearle, of the net, Mat.13.44.

Of the loſt ſheepe, Mat. 18. 12.
Of the ſeruant that pitieth not his companion, Mat. 18. 28.
Of the workmen ſent to labour in the vineyarde, Mat. 20. 2.
Of two Sonnes. Mat. 21. 28.
Of the vineyarde hired foorth. Mat. 21. 33.
Of the king that maketh the mariage, Mat. 22. 2.
Of the faithfull or naughtie ſeruant. Mat. 24. 25, 48.
Of the ten virgines, Mat. 25. 1.
Of the talentes, Mat. 25. 15. luke 19. 13.
Of the ſeede that groweth and increaſeth. Mar. 4. 27.
Of the Samaritan, Luke 10. 33.
Of the importunate friend, Luk. 11. 8.
Of the ſtrong man armed, Luke 11. 21.
Of the m̄ that gathereth much fruite, Luke 12. 16.
Of the barren fig tree, Luk. 13. 6
Of him that was bid to the feaſt and ſeeketh him ſelfe in the chiefeſt place, Luke. 14. 8.
Of the draume or piece of ſilver loſt, Luke. 15. 8.
Of the prodigall ſonne, Luke. 15 12.
Of the vniuſt ſteward, Luk. 16. 1
Of the importunate widowe, Luke 18. 3.
Paradiſe, Luke, 23. 43.
Pardone we muſt him that offendeth vs, Mat. 6. 14. & 18. 22 35. mar. 11. 25. luk. 17. 3. ephe. 4. 32. col. 3. 13.
Parents, Reade Father.
¶ Paul, his vocation, & his actes, his preachinges, miracles, iourneis, trauailes, perſecutions, perils, and other afflictions, from the 8. chapter of the Actes euen to the laſt, and throughout all his Epiſtles.
The ambaſſadour of Chriſt. 2. Cor. 5. 20.
The Apoſtle of the Gentiles. Rom. 11. 13. galat. 2. 8. 1. tim. 2. 7.
He hath laid the foundation. 1. Cor. 3. 10.
He laboureth with his handes to gaine his liuing without charging any man, Reade Labour.
Howe much he ſuffred for the Goſpell. 1. Cor. 4. 9. 2. cor. 4. 9. and 11. 24. and 12. 7. 2. tim. 3. 10. & 3. 11.
His example of life & doctrine ought to be followed. 1. Cor. 4. 16. & 11. 1. phil. 3. 17. 1. theſ. 1. 6. 2. the. 3. 9.
His reuelations. 2. Cor. 12. 1.
¶ Peace of God and of Chriſt by the Goſpell. Luk. 2. 14. & 24. 36. ioh. 14. 27. & 16. 33. act. 10. 36. rom. 5. 1. epheſ. 2. 14. phil. 4. 7. col. 3. 15.
Peace with our neighbour. Mat. 5. 9. mark. 9. 50. rom. 12. 18. and 14. 19. 1. cor. 14. 33. 2. cor. 13. 11. epheſ. 4. 3. 1. theſ. 5. 13. 2. tim. 2. 22. hebr. 12. 14. 1. pet. 3. 11.
Peace of the worlde, which Chriſt giueth not. Mat. 10. 34. ioh. 14. 27. 1. theſ. 5. 3.
¶ Perſecution, followeth the true Chriſtians. Luk. 1. 12.

2.2 im.3.11.
The verie kinsfolkes doe sometimes persecute. Mat. 10. 21, 35.luk.21.16.
Blessed are they that suffer it willingly.Mat.5.10,11.1.pet. 4.14.
In time of persecution we may flie,Reade Flye.
It commeth by the will of God. 1.Pet.2.19.& 3.17.& 4.19.
Examples of the same.Mat. 26. 50.act.4.3.& 6.12.& 7.58.and 8.1.& 12.1.& 13.50. &.14. 5. & 16.22.& 17.6.& 18.17. and 19.29.and 21.30.rom.8.35. 2. cor.11.24.heb.11.36,37.
They that persecute through ignorance are receiued to repentance.Actes.3.17. 1.tim.1. 13.
The obstinate persecuters are punished.Luk.23.28.act.12.23 2.tim.4.15.
¶Perseuerance.mat.10.22.
It is the gift of God who onely can confirme his in goodnes. Rom.16.25. 1.cor.1.4. 2.cor. 1.21.philip.1.6.1.thes.3.13.& 5.23.2.thes.2,16.& 3.5.1.pet. 5.10.
¶Peter called Cephas of Christ. Iohn.1.42.
He and Andrew his brother are called Mat.4.18.
He is called Satan.mat.16.23.
He denieth Christ.mat.26.70.
He preacheth Christ.act.2.22.& 3.13.& 10.36.
His vision.act.10.11.
He is put in prison.act.12.4.
¶ Pharises and Scribes are reproued of Christ for their hypocrisie and malice.mat.9.12 & 12.all the chapter.& 15.37 & 19.8.& 22.18.& 23. all the chapter.
Philip the Apostle.Iob.1.43.and 14.8.
Philip the deacon. act.8.5,30.& 21.8.
Philosophie, whereof we must take heede.col.2.8.
Pilate and his behauiour towarde Christ.iohn. 18.29,30, 38.& 19.1.&c.
Poets alledged.act.17.28.1.cor. 15.33.tit.1.12.
Pompe and russeling.mar.12.38. &c.luk.7.25.1.Iob.2.16. reue. 17.4 and 18. all the chapter.
¶Poore must be succoured.Luk. 14.13.gal.2.10. Read Almes.
We must not contemne them. Iam.2.2.
Poore in spirit.mat.5. 3.Ia.6.20.
To them is the Gospel preached mat.11.5.
¶ Prayer howe it ought to be made.mat.6.5.
In spirit.ephes.6 18.inde.20.
It must be in faith.matth.21.22. mar. 11.23.ioh.15.7.Iam.1.6. and 5.15.
In the Name of Christe.Reade Christ.
Continuall and perseuering.luk. 11.8.& 18.1.& 21.36.actes.1. 14.& 2 42.rom.2.12.ephes.6. 18.col.4.2.1.thes.5.17.1.tim. 5.5.1 pet.4.7.
In euerie place.1.tim.2.8.
One pray for another. iames.5. 16.

For the Saints. ephe. 6. 18. 1. thes. 5. 26. heb. 13. 24.
For Kings & Magistrates. 1. tim. 2. 2.
For the enemies & persecuters, Mat. 5. 44. luke. 6. 35. & 23. 34. actes. 7. 60.
For al men. 1. tim. 2. 1.
Against tentations. mat. 26. 41. luk. 22. 40.
In affliction. actes. 12. 5. rom. 15. 30. iam. 5. 13.
With fasting, reade Fasting.
The forme of prayer. Matth. 6. 9. luk. 11. 2.
¶ Publike, and in the assembly of many. act. 1. 14. 24. & 4. 24. 31. & 12. 5. & 20. 36. & 21. 5.
It must be in that language which the assembly doeth vnderstand. 1. cor. 14. 13.
Of private prayer we haue the example in Christ. mat. 14. 23. & 26. 39. luke. 5. 16. & 6. 12. & 22. 32.
¶ Preachers or ministers of Christ to preach his Gospell, & to feede his flocke, with the worde of God, Ioh. 21. 15. act. 20. 28. 1. cor. 3. 5. & 4. 1. 2. cor. 3. 6. ephe. 3. 7. col. 1. 7. 1. tim. 4. 6. 1. pet. 5. 2.
They are sent of God. Mat. 16. 15 ioh. 20. 21. rom. 10. 15.
They may not preache but that which Christ hath commanded, that is, the onely worde of God. mat. 28. 20. 1. cor. 2. 13 1. tim. 1. 5. 1. peter. 4. 11. 2. ioh. 9.
According to Christes example. Ioh. 7. 17.
We must heare such and obey them. luk. 10. 16. 2. cor. 2. 9. phil. 2. 12. 2. thes. 3. 4, 14. hebr. 13. 22.
We must receiue such, nourish them and esteeme them. Mat. 10. 40. iohn. 13. 20. galat. 6. 6. 1. thes. 5. 13. 1. tim. 5. 17. 3. ioh. 8.
They may liue of the Gospell. Rom. 15. 26, 27, 28. 1. cor. 9. 7, 9.
They are helpers of the faithful and not lords of their faith. 2. cor. 1. 24. 1. pet. 5. 3.
They are seruants of the faithful. Mat. 20, 27. lu. 22. 27. 2. cor. 4. 5.
Their power is to edifie and not to destroy. 2. cor. 13. 10.
They must be appointed particularly through all Churches. Act. 14. 23. tit. 1. 5.
What things and conditions are required in them. 1. Tim. 3. 26. tit. 1. 6, 9. 1. pet. 5. 2.
They ought to be a good example to others. phil. 3. 17. 2. the. 3. 9. tit. 2. 7. 1. pet. 5. 3.
False preachers are prophesied to come, and to deceiue many. mat. 24. 11. act. 20. 29. 1. tim. 4. 1. 2. tim. 3. 2. & 4. 3. 2. pe. 2. 1.
With wonderful signes & miracles. Mat 24. 24. 2. thes. 2. 9. reuel. 13. 13.
They make marchandise of the worde of God. 2. cor. 2. 17.
They teache the commandements and doctrine of men, & deuils. col. 2. 8. 1. tim. 4. 1, 3.
They serue their bellie, which is their

their God. rom.16.18. philip. 3.19.
Predestination, Reade Election.
¶ Pride & arrogancie condemned. Mark.7.22. rom.11.25. & 12.16.1.cor.4.6,18.2.cor.12. 20.phil.2.3. 1.tim.3.6.& 6.4. 2.tim.3.2. iam.4.16.2.pet.2. 18. 1.ioh.2.16.iude.16.
God resisteth the proude. Luk. 1.51.iam.4.6.1.pet.5.5.
¶ Priesthood, Leuiticall according to the Lawe. hebr.7. 5, 11.
Of Christ according to the order of Melchisedec.Heb.7.all the chapter.
The perpetuall Priest, and hie bishop of the New testamēt, reade Christ.
The faithful are spiritual Priests made of Christ. 1.pet.2. 5.9. reuel.1.6.and 5.10.
The Priestes procure Christes death.Mat. 21. 45. and 26.3. and 27.1.
They persecute his, and his doctrine.Act.4.3.
Prisoners must be visited. Mat. 25.36,43.Heb. 13.3.
Proces in lawe must be auoyded. Mat.5.40. 1.cor.6. 1, 2, 3.4.
¶ Promes made to the Gentiles.Act.2. 39.rom.4.16. gal. 3.8,22.
The same that was made to the fathers. 2.cor.7.1.
¶ Prophets for shewers of things to come.act.11.27.
For interpreters of the Scriptures, and how they ought to exercise their office in the Church.1.Cor.14
Prophecie is the gift of God, & no worldly thing. rom. 12.6. 1.cor.12. 1.pet.1.21.
¶ Prone the spirits. 1.ioh.4.1.
Euerie man proue him selfe. 1. cor.11.28.2.cor.13.5.
To proue euerie thing.1.thes.5. 21.
¶ Punishment of euerie crime, that is openly knowen, is cōmitted to the magistrate.ro. 13.4.1.pet.2.14.
No punishment chanceth to the faithfull sane for a time to correct them.1.cor.5,5.& 11. 32.1.pet.4.12.
But the vnbeleeuers haue euerlasting punishment.mat.3.12. & 25.41. mar.9.44. reuel.20. 15.& 21.8.

Q

QVeene of the South. Matth. 12.42.
Questions, disputations, and contention of wordes ought to be auoyded. Rom. 14. 1. phil.1.14.1.tim.1. 4. & 6.4.2. tim.2.23.tit.3.9. Looke contention.

R

RAhab the harlot.Hebr.11.31. iam.2.25.
¶ Rayment should not be cared for.Mat.6.25,28.
We must take away the superfluitie thereof.Luke.3.11. and 7.25.iam.2.2,3.1.john.3.17.
It must be simple and honest.1. tim.2.9.1.pet.3.5.

Rayment spirituall. Mat. 22.11. luk.24.49.rom. 13. 12.2. cor. 5.2.galat.3.27.epheſ.4.24.col. 3.10.Reade Armour.
Rayment and meat muſt not be ſought for carefully, Reade Life, and Rayment.
We muſt be content with what ſoeuer God ſendeth. 1. tim. 6.8.
Rancour or malice. Epheſ.4. 31. heb.12.15.
¶ Reconciling towarde God. Looke Chriſt.
Towarde our neighbour.Matth. 5.24.
Regeneration ſpirituall. Iohn. 3.3.1. peter. 1.3.Looke Baptiſme.
¶Reioyce we ought alwayes. 2. corinthi.6.10.& 13.11.philippians.3.1.& 4.4.1.theſſalo.5. 16.
In tribulations and perſecutions.Matth.5.12.actes. 5.41.1. theſ.1.6.heb.10.34.iam.1.2.1 pet.4.13.
With whome we ought to reioyce.rom.12.12.
We ought to reioyce that our names are written in heauen Luk.10.20.
¶Religion true,Iam.1.27.
Falſe and ſuſpitious. Coloſſ.2. 23.
Renounce or forſake him ſelfe, and all that he hath to followe Chriſt.Mat. 16.24. luke. 14.33.
¶Repentance, that is, ſorowing for our ſinnes, with amendement of life by turning to God,Mat.3.2.& 4.17. luk.15. 7,10.& 24.47. act.2. 38.& 3. 19.& 17.30.
It muſt be ioyned with fayth. mar.1.15.act.20.21.
It is the gift of God.Ioh.12.40. act.5.31.and 11. 18. & 26.20. 2.tim.2.25.
Reprobate.Ioh.10.26.rom.1.28. 1.theſ.2.12.iude.4.
Reade Iewes,and infidels.
¶Reſurrection ſpiritual by faith. Luk.2.34.ioh.11.25.col.2.12. and 3.1.
The vniuerſall reſurrection of the bodies.Act.24.15.rom.14. 9.2.cor.5.15.
Of the righteous, to life euerlaſting, and of the vnrighteous to euerlaſting damnation Mat.25.46.ioh.5.29.
In what ſort and after what order it ſhalbe.1.cor.15.42,43, 44,45.1.theſ 4.17.
The reſurrection of Chriſt is the foundation of our reſurrection.1.cor.15.13,14,15, 16,17, 18,19,20.1.thel.4.14.
Chriſt wil raiſe them vp againe whome his Father hath giuen him.Ioh.6.39.
The ſtate of them that are raiſed vp.Luk.20.35.
¶Reuenging belongeth onely to God. Rom.12.19. 1.theſſ.4.6. heb.10.30.
He will declare it againſt the perſecuters of his elect,and againſt all rebelles, Luke. 18. 7.2.theſſa.1.8. reuel.6. 10. & 19.2.
It is alſo committed to the magiſtrate.

gistrate. Rom.13. 4. 1.peter. 2.14.
It is forbidden to priuate persons. Mat.5.39. rom. 12.19. 1. thes.5.15. 1.pet.3.9.
¶ Rewarde of hypocrites is in this world. Mat.6.2.
The rewarde of sinne are other sinnes. Rom.1.28, 29,30,31.2. thes.2.
The death euerlasting. Rom.6. 23.
The reward of the faythfull is in heauen. mat.5.12.
It is life euerlasting. Mat.19. 29. & 25.46. rom.6.23.
¶ Riches must be well vsed and spent. Luke.12.33.& 16.10. 1. tim.6.17.1.ioh.3.16.
The riche with great paine receiue the Gospell. Mat. 19. 24.
Yet some of them receiue it. Mat.27.57 luk.19.3.
We ought not to trust in riches Mat.10.24.1.tim.6.17.
We can not serue God, & them both. mat.6.24.
They choke the word of God in some. Mat.13.22.
Wo be to the riche which are wicked. Luk.6.24. iam.5.1.
How dangerous a thing it is to will to be riche. 1.tim.6.9.
Rich men ought not ambitiously to seeke honour. iam.2.3.
Of the riche man, that lued in pleasure, and poore Lazarus, Luk.16.19.

S

SAbbath, or rest which was a figure Iudaicall, and is nowe taken away by Christ. Col.2 16. Reade Dayes.
The Christian & spirituall. Heb. 4.12.
¶ Sacrifices for sinnes in shadowe and figure. Hebr.8.3.& 9.10.
In effecte and treth but one onely which is Christ, Reade Christ.
The spirituall sacrifice, and of praise. Rom.12. 1. phil 4. 18. heb.13.15.1.pet.2.5.
Sadducees were a sect, which denyed the resurrection of the dead. Mat.22.23.act.23.6.
Saints, Reade Faithfull.
Salnation is by the onely grace of God. Ephes.2.5.titus.3.7. Read Faith and Christ.
Samaritane. Ioh.4.9.
Sanctification. Looke Christ.
Sara. Heb.11.11.1.pet.3.6.
Satan, Looke Deuill.
Satisfaction, Reade Christ.
Scribes, Reade Pharises.
¶ Scripture is written for our cause. Rom.4.24. 1.cor.9.10. & 10.11.
For our doctrine, consolation, correction, and ful instruction to saluation. Ioh.20.31. rom. 15.4.2.tim.3.16.
It beareth witnes of Christ. Luk. 24.27,46. iohn 5.39. & 20.9. actes.17.2. and 18.28. rom.16. 22.
It was necessarie, that it should be fulfilled. Mat.26.54,56. luk. 24.26,27,44,46. Ioh.12.38.& 13.18.& 17.12. & 19.28,36. act.1.16.

All

All doctrine is tried by it. Actes. 17.11.
It is written & falsely alleaged by the deuill, and the wicked. Mat.4.6.2.pet.3.16.
¶Seniours, called also Ancients, which are take for ministers of the worde, or gouerners of discipline in the Church. Act. 15.22. and 20. 17.1.timothie. 4.14. and 5.17. Reade Preachers.
Separate vs from that loue that God beareth vs, nothing can. Rom 8.39.
Sergius Paulus deputie. Actes. 13.7.
¶ Seruants ought to obey and serue their masters. Ephe.6. 5. col.3.22.1. tim.6.1. tit.2.9.1. pet.2.18.
We are al vnprofitable seruants Luk.17.10.
The seruant that knoweth the will of his master, &c. Luke. 12.47.
¶Serue we must onely God. Mat 4.10.
We must serue one another through charitie. Gal.5.13.
We ought not to serue sinne any longer. Rom.6.6.
We can not serue two masters. Reade Riches.
¶ Shepherds in Bethlehem. Luk. 2.15.
In the Church. Ephes.4.11 Read Preachers.
Sickenes. Reade Infirmitie.
Simeon. Luk.2.25.
Simon Peter. Reade Peter.
Simon the Pharise, in whose house Christ ate. Luk.7.40.
Simon the sorcerer. Act.8.9.
¶Sinne is in all men, Reade Man. It ingendreth death. Rom. 7. 13.
The punishment thereof, Loose Death.
What sinne is irremissible. Mat. 12.31. hebr. 6.4. and 10.29. 1. ioh.5 16.
He that obeyeth sinne is the seruant thereof. Ioh.8.34. ro. 6.16.2.pet.2.23.
He that sinneth is of the deuill. 1.Ioh.3.8.
The sinnefull woman. Luke.7.37 44.
Sinners are called to repetance Mat.9.13.2.pet.3.9.
Slander, Reade offence.
Sobrietie is required in Christians. 1.Thes.5.8. 1.pet.1.13.& 5.8.
Sorcerers or diuiners. Act.8.9.& 13.8.& 16.16.
¶Soule taken for life. Mat.2.20. & 10.39.& 16.25.iohn.10.15, 15,17.
Taken for the spirit whereby we liue. Mat.10.22.mark.8.35. 1. pet.1.21.& 4.14.
Taken for the affection of the heart. Mat.26.38. luke.1.47.& 2.32.ioh.12.27.
Taken for the will ioyned with vnderstanding. 1.Thes.5.18.1. pet.1.22.
Taken for the person. Rom.13.1. 1.pet.3.20.
¶Spirite, or holy Ghost is God. Matth.28.19.luke.3.22. actes. 2.4.and 5.3.and 10.2.& 16.6.

and 23.28.1.cor.12.11.
The Spirit of God. Matth. 3.16. and 12.28. act. 2.17. and 5.9. rom.8.9.14.1.cor.3.16.1.thes. 4.8.
The Spirite of Christ. Rom.8.9. gal.4.6.1.pet.1.11.
He is one. 1.cor.12. 13. epheſi. 2.18.
The comforter. Iohn. 14.16,26. & 15.26.act.9.31.
The quickener. Ioh.6.63. 2.cor. 3.6.
The Spirit of trueth.iohn.14.17. & 15.26.& 16.13.
The maſter and teacher of the faythfull, Luke. 12. 12. iohn. 14.26. 1.cor.2. 13. 1. iohn.2. 24.
He is the ſhewer of thinges to come.Ioh.16.13.1.tim.4.1.2. pet.1.21.
He is the witnes of Chriſt. Ioh. 15.16.act.5.32.1.ioh.5.6.
The diſtributer of all the gifts. 1.cor.12.11.
Onely he knoweth the things of God.1.cor.2.11.
He dwelleth in the faythfull, Reade Faithful.
He beareth them witnes, that they are the children of God. Rom.8.16.
He helpeth their infirmities, and maketh petition for them Rom.8.26.
He is giuen and ſent of the Father.Ioh.14.26. & 15.26. act. 2.17.& 5.32. 2.cor.1.22. & 5. 5.gal 4.6.
He is giuen and ſent of Chriſt. Iohn.4.14.and 15.16. and 16. 7.and 20.22.ephe.4.7.
The Spirit of Adoption.Rom.8. 15.gal.4.5.
He is the pledge of our inheritance.2.Cor.1.22.& 5.5.ephe. 1.14.
He is the water of life. Iohn.4. 14.& 7.38.
The vnction or anoynting. luke. 4.18. actes.10.38. 1. iohn.2. 20,27.
His comming vpon the Apoſtles. act.2.3.
His workes and fruites.galat.5. 22.
The Spirit of man.Matth.27.50. luke.8.55.& 23.46.rom.8.16. 1.cor.2.11.and 5 3.1.thes.5. 23.heb.12.23.1.pet.3.19.
A ſpirit hath neither fleſhe nor bones.Luk.24.39.
The wicked and vncleane ſpirits.Reade Deuill.
¶Steuen is elect Deacon. Actes. 6.5.
He diſputeth with the Iewes, and is accuſed falſely.Actes.6. 9,13.
He anſwereth conſtantly in the councill.act.7.
He is ſtoned, and dyeth. Actes. 7.58.
He is buried. act.8.2.
Strife and debate muſt be auoyded.Mat.5.25. 1.cor. 5.26.1am.4.1.
¶Sworde of the ſpirite. Looke worde of God.
It is taken for a ſiſt. luke. 2.35.
For diſcord.Mat.10.34.
For the materiall ſword, the

whereof is committed to the magistrate.Rom.13.14.
It is prohibited to priuate persons.Mat.5.39.& 26.52.reuel. 13.10.

T

TAbitha is raised to life.Act.9. 36,40.
Temple spirituall.Reade faythfull.
The materiall Temple. Mat.21. 12.& 24.2.1.ioh.2.14.
God dwelleth not in temples made with hands,Reade God.
Tentation, good when God proueth the faith and constancie of his by the crosse and afflictions.1.cor.10.13.heb.11.17. iam.1.2,12,1.pet.1.6.
Euill tentation whereby Satan draweth one away from God, and leadeth him to destruction.Mat.4.1.luk.8.13.act.5.3.1. cor.7.5.gal.6.1. 1. thes.3. 5.1. tim.6.9.reuel.2.10.
God onely deliuereth vs out of it.Matth.6. 13. 1.cor.10.13.2. pet.2.9.reuel.3.10.
We must pray to him to deliuer vs.Mat.6.13.& 26.41. luk.22. 40.
God tempteth not to euill. iam. 1.13.
We must not tempt God.Mat.4 [illegible].9. and 15.10. 1.cor. [illegible]
¶ Testament, Olde . Rom.9.4.2. cor.3.14.heb.8.9.& 9.15.
The blood therof was of bulles [illegible],&c.Heb.9.12,19. & 10.4.
Newe Testament , Rom.11. 27.2.cor.3.6.heb.8.8. & 9.15. & 12.24.
The blood thereof is Christes blood. Mat.26,28.luk.22.20.1 cor.11.25.heb.9.12,14. & 10. 19,29.& 12.24.& 13.20.
The allegorie of the two testaments.Gal.4.24.
It is taken for the promise made to Abraham and his posterity. Luk.1.72.
¶ Testimonie or witnes which God rendreth of him selfe, & of his bountifulnes.Act.14.17.
Which he rendreth of Christ, & his Gospell. Ioh.5.32. & 8.18. 2&.14.3. & 15.8. 1.cor.2.1.1. ioh.5.6.
The witnes that Christ beareth to him self, and to the trueth of his Gospell. Iohn. 3. 11, 28. and 8.14.1.corinth. 1.6.1. tim.6.13.
Whiche he testifieth of the world.ioh.7.7.
The witnes which the spirit beareth of Christ.Looke Spirit.
Of the three witnesses in heaue & three in earth.1.Ioh.5.7.
Of the Scriptures and the Prophets which witnes of Christ. Reade Scripture, and Act.10. 43.
Of Iohn Baptists witnes. Ioh.1. 15.19,32.
Of Iohn the Euangelists.Ioh.19. 35.& 21.24.
Of the Apostles , & of the faithful which they bear to Christ and his Gospel.Mat.1.18.luk. 21.13.2&.2.32.& 3.15.& 4.33. & 5.32.& 10.39. 1.cor.15.15. 2.thes.

2.thes.1.10. 2.tim.1.8. reuel. 1.2.& 6.9.& 19.10.& 20.4.
The testimonie of the conscience.Rom.2.15. & 9.1. 2.cor. 1.12.
To receiue testimonie of God by faith.Heb.11.1,2,39.
The testimonie of two or three is sufficient.Mat.18.16.ioh.8. 17.2.cor.13.1.heb.10.28.
False witnes is forbidden. Mat. 15.19.& 19.18.rom.13.9.
Thankes to God before meales and after,Looke Graces.
Theft forbidden. Mat.19.18.ro. 2.21.& 13.9.1.cor.6.10.ephe. 4.28.1.pet.4.15.
¶Thought and care must be put away. Mat.6.34. luk.12.22.1. cor.7.33.
It must be referred to God. 1. pet.5.7.
We must take care for others. 2.Cor.11.2.phil.1.24.
Tyrannie and crueltie.Mat.2.16 & 14.10.act.7.59.& 12.2.
¶Time to come, appertaineth not to vs to know.Act.1.7.
The time of Christ is the time of grace.Mar.1.15.rom.5.6.2. cor.6.2.gal 4.4.
Our time is short.1.cor.7.29.
We ought to recouer the time. Ephes.5.16.col.4.5.
The last times, Looke Dayes.
Timothie.Act.16.1.1.cor.4.17.
Tithes of the Leuites.heb.7.5.
¶Tongue, the nature thereof. Iam.3.8.
We ought to restraine it from euill.Iam.1.26, & 3.5. 1.pet. 3.10.
To speake diuers tongues is the gift of the holy Ghost.Act.2.4 and 10.46. & 19.6. 1.cor.12. 28.
In the Church we must vse that tongue which is vnderstanded. 1.cor.14.all the chapter.
Traditions, Reade commandements.
Transfiguration of Christ.Mat. 17.2.
Treason and traitours. Mat.26. 24.mar.14.21.luk.6.16. act.7. 52.2.tim.3.4.
¶Treasure is to be laide vp in heauen.mat.6.20.
All the treasures of God are in Christ. col.2.3.
The treasure of the Gospel.Mat. 13.44.2.cor.4.7.
Treasure vaine and transitorie. Luk.12.iam.5.2.
¶Tribulation commeth to them which are married.1.corinth. 7.28.
To the faithfull.Mat.24.9. act. 10.& 14.21.2.cor.4.8.& 6.4. 8.2.heb.11.36,37.
We must beare it patiently. 1.pet. 2.12.2.thes.1.4.
And ioyfully, Looke Reioyce.
It worketh patience. Rom.5.3.
God sendeth vs comfort in our tribulations, that we might comfort others in theirs. 2. Cor. 1 4. Reade Crosse & persecutions.
Tribute ought to be payed to princes and magistrates. Mat. 17.27.& 22.21.rom.13.6.
Trueth, Reade Christ, Spirit, Gospel.

To be of the trueth. Ioh.18. 37. 1.ioh.3.19.
To do it,and to followe it.Iohn. 3.21.ephes.4.15.1.iohn.1.6.& 3.18.
Againſt them which draw them ſelues from it , and reſiſt.Ro. 2.8. gal.3.1.& 5.7.2.tim.2.18 & 3.8.& 4.4.tit.1.14. heb.10. 26.1.pet.2.

V

VAnting,Reade boaſting.
Vengeance, Reade Reuenging.
Vertue of God. Mat.22.19.luke. 21.69.
It worketh in his, to ſaluation. rom.1.16.1.pet.1.5.
The Vertue or power of Chriſt. 2.Cor.12.9.
The Vertue of the holy Ghoſt. Act.1.8.
By myracles,Mat.11.20. and 13. 58.act.2.22.and 19. 11. hebr. 2.4.
Veſſels, ſome to honour,& ſome to diſhonour. Ro.9.21.2.tim. 2.20.
Virgins,& of their containing or marying,1.cor.7.25.
Viſite the ſicke and priſoners. mat.25.36.
To viſite the fatherles and widdowes,James.1.27.
Vnitie and concorde .Act.2.44. & 4.32. rom.12.16. & 15.6.1. cor.1.10.ephe.4.3.philip.1.27 & 3.16.1.pet.3 8.
To be vnited in God & Chriſt. iohn.17.21.
¶ Vocation,or calling to follow Chriſt. mat. 8.22.& 9.9. iohn. 1.43.
To preach. Mat.4.7. mark.3.14. luke 6.13.rom. 1.1.1.cor. 1. & gal.1.16.Reade Election.
To liſe euerlaſting,& to ſaluation.Rom.1.1.& 8.29.& 9.24 & 11.29 1.cor. 1.9, 24. gal. 1.5. eph.4.1, 1.the. 2.12, and 5.24. 1.timot,6,12.2.tim.1.9.1.pet. 2.9.& 5.10.2.pet.1.3,10.
¶ Vocation of the gentiles.iohn. 10.16. rom.9. 24.& 11..12.& 15.9.
Let euery man remaine in his vocation.1. cor.7.20.
Voluptuouſnes and diſſolution is forbidden.Luk.8.14.tit.1.6. and 3.3.1.pet.4.4.
Voluptuous and giuen to plezſures,being aline are dead.1. tim.5.6.2.tim.3.4.
¶ Vowes vſed for giftes & ceremonies.Act.21.23.
Taken for promiſe to do euil, actes. 23.14.
Vſury prohibited.mat.5.42.lu.6. 30.

W

WAtch we ought and be redy continually. mat. 24. 42. and 26.41. mar .13.33.luk.12. 37.act. 20. 31. 1. cor. 16.13. 2.cor.6.5.eph.6.18.col.4.2.1. the.5.10.1.pet.4.7.&5.8.reue. 3.2.& 16.15.
Weapons,reade Armour.
Well doing. Reade doing well.
Whoredome, Looke Adulterie.
¶ Widowes muſt be prouided for.1.tim.5 3.iam.1.27.
Of their miniſtery.Act.6.1.1.tim 5.9.

Of their continencie. 1. Cor. 7. 8, 1. tim. 5. 11, 16.
The poore widow that offred in the temple. Mar. 12. 42.
Powlers of widowes. Mat. 23. 14. mar. 12. 40. luk. 20. 47.
Will of God according whereunto he worketh and determineth all things. Mat. 18. 14. rom. 9. 19. 1. cor. 1. 1. ephes. 1. 5. heb. 2. 4. 1. pet. 3. 17. & 4. 19. reuel. 4. 11.
According to the which he cõmandeth vs, and requireth of vs euerie thing. Mat. 12. 50. ioh. 7. 17. 10. 2. 18. 1. the. 4. 3. & 5. 18. heb. 10. 36. 1. pet. 2. 15. 1. ioh. 2. 17.
We must seeke to vnderstand it, and fulfill it. Mat. 7. 21. rom. 12. 2. ephe. 5. 17. 1. pet. 4. 2.
We ought to desire & pray that it may be done. Mat. 6. 10. and 26. 42. col. 1. 9. & 4. 12. hebr. 13. 21.
To it we must referre al things. act. 18. 21. & 21. 14. rom. 1. 10. & 15. 32. 1. cor. 4. 19. & 16. 7. iam. 4. 15.
Mans will howe it is able to do nothing of it selfe, no not in the regenerate, Reade works.
Winder and sea appeased by Christ. Mat. 8. 26. & 14. 32.
¶ Wisdom of God. Looke Christ and Gospell.
The wisdome of this worlde is foolishnes before God. 1. cor. 1. 20, 25. & 3. 19.
Earthly, iam. 3. 19.
Heauenly, there also.
We must aske it of God, ia. 1. 5.
Wiues, of their duetie, and office towarde their husbands. Reade mariage.
Woman is of man, and made for man. 1 cor. 11. 8.
Howe she ought to be apparelled. 1. tim. 2. 9. 1. pet. 3. 3.
She ought not to teache in the Church. 1. cor. 14. 34. 1. tim. 2. 12.
The women that follow Christ. Luk. 8. 2.
Women maried to the bishops and ministers of the Church. 1. tim. 3. 2, 11. tit. 1. 6.
Word of God, for the Sonne of God. ioh. 1. 1, 14. reuel. 19. 13.
Which created all things. ioh. 1. 3. heb. 11. 3.
It is the power of God. 1. cor. 1. 18.
The efficacie thereof. Heb. 4. 12.
The worde of life. Mat. 4. 4. ioh. 6. 63. act. 5. 20.
The worde of trueth. ioh. 17. 17. 2. cor. 6. 7. ephes. 1. 13. col. 1. 5. 2. tim. 2. 15. iam. 1. 18.
The worde of saluation. Act. 13. 26. iam. 1. 21.
Of reconciliation. 2. cor. 5. 19.
The sworde of the spirit. ephes. 6. 17.
It is liuely, effectuall and iudgeth the thoughtes. Hebrues 4. 12.
Endureth for euer. 1. pet 1. 23.
It worketh in the faithful. 1. the. 2. 13.
It sanctifieth al creatures. 1. tim. 4. 4.
It is the incorruptible seede. 1. pet. 1. 23.

Compa-

Compared to the ſeede that groweth and fruſtiſeth. Luke 8.11.&6.7. and 12.24. col. 1.5.
We ought to keepe this worde and put it in practiſe. Matt.7. 24. iohn 14.21. iam. 1.23. 1. iohn 2.5. Reade Goſpell and Scripture.
¶ Workes which are good are of God. Ephe.2.10.phil.1.6. & 2.13. col.1.10. 2. theſ. 2.17. tit.2.14.heb.13.21.
Workes that pleaſe God follow faith. Luke 19.8.heb.11.
They are the fruites of the Spirit.gal.5.22.ephe.5.9.
They are onely done by the faithfull.Mat.7.17. and 12.33. luke 6.44.
They are fruites and teſtimonies of true repentance and faith.Mat.3.8.and 7.18.luk.6. 45. iohn 8.13,14.&1.16,20. gal.5.22. 1.timoth.5. 10. tit. 1.16. iam.2.17.
They aſſure vs of our election, 2.pet.1.10. 1. iohn 3.17, 18, 19,20.
The faithfull muſt walke in the. Epheſ.5.15. heb.10.24.1.pet. 2.12.
They muſt be done for the glorie of God. Matth.5.16.1.pet. 2.12.
They folowe the faithfull after their death.Reuel.14.13.
God will rewarde them, Matt. 10.42.and 16.27. and 25. 34. luke 6.38.and 14. 14. iohn 5. 29.rom.2.7. 1.cor. 3.8, 13.
God hath iuſtified vs without them and before them. Rom. 4.3. and 11.5.ephe.2,8.2.tim. 1.9.tit.3.5.
Without faith no worke is good,Rom.14.23.heb.11.6.
Euill workes are of the fleſhe, Gal.5.19.
They are wrought of the deuill in the infideles.Ephe.2.2.
Chriſt is come to deſtroy them. 1.Iohn 3.8.
We muſt lay them away, and abſtaine from them.Rom. 13. 12. ephe.4.17.and 5.11. 1.pet. 4.3.
Euery man ſhall receyue according to his workes.Mat.16.27 rom.2.6. 2.cor.5.10.gal. 6. 5. 2.pet.1.17.reuel.2.23. and 20 12.and 22.12.
We can worke nothing of our ſelues.Mat.15. 26. iohn 3. 27. and 6.44.and 14.6.and 15. 4. and 19.11.act.3.15.rom.7.18, 17,18,19,20,21.and 8.1,2,3. and 9.11,12,13,14,15,16,17, 18.1.cor.1.27.and 2.14.and 3 1.and 12.3.and 15. 10. 2.cor. 3.5.gal.5.17.ephe.1.phil.2.13 1. iohn 2.14. reade Faith and God.
¶ Worlde was made by Chriſt. Iohn 1.10.
Yet neyther knoweth him nor the Father.Iohn 1.11.and 17. 25.
It is fully bent on wickednes. 1. Iohn 5.19.
The deuill is the prince thereof,Reade Deuil.
We muſt not lone it.1.Ioh.2.15
Chriſt praieth not for it,Io.17.9

Chriſt

Christ hath ouercome it. Iohn 16.33.
The faithfull ouercome it by faith. 1. Iohn 5.4.
The friendship thereof is enmity with God. Iam. 4. 4. & Iohn 2.16.
It hateth Christ and his, Iohn 7.7. and 15.18. 1. Iohn 3.13.
It passeth away. 1. Cor. 7.31. 1. Iohn 2.17.
The faithfull shall iudge it. 1. Cor. 6.2.
The faithfull are not of it, Iohn 17.14.19. and 17.11.
Worshipping of God. Mat. 4. 10. Luke 4.8. Act. 14.15. and 17. 27. 1. Cor. 14.25. 1. Thes. 1. 9. Reuel. 4.9. and 14.7. and 15.4. and 19. 10. and 22. 8. Reade God and Christ.
Worshipping in spirit & trueth. Iohn 4.23.
Superstitious worshipping. Act. 10.25. and 14.12. Reuel. 19.10 and 22.9.
Worshipping of the beast. Reue. 13.4. and 14.11. and 16.2. and 19.20. Reade Idolatrie.
Wrong ought not to be done nor rendred, but suffred. Mat. 5.39. Rom. 12.17. 1. Cor. 6.7. 1. Thes. 5.15. 1. Pet. 3.9.

Y

Yoke of Christ, Mat. 11.29.
Neither the ancient fathers nor the Apostles were able to beare the yoke of the Lawe, therfore the Christians ought not to be burdened with it. Act. 15.10.
Yong folke howe they should order themselues. Tit. 2.6. 1. Tim. 5.1. 2. Tim. 5.14.
What sinne yong desires and lustes. 2. Tim. 2.22.
Yong folke that are learned not to be reiected. 1. Tit. 2.7.

Z

Zacharias, Elizabeth. Luke. 1. 5, 12, 21.
His song. Luke 1.68.
Zacharias the sonne of Barachias slaine betweene the altar and the temple. Mat. 23.35.
Zacheus. Luke 19.1.
Zeale without knowledge. Ro. 10.2.

FINIS.

Imprinted at London by Christopher Barker, dwelling in Paternoster Rowe, at the signe of the Tygres head.

Anno 1577.

BRITISH MUSEUM 14 OCT 1915 LIBRARY